

## Introduction

The most annoying sound woke me up! My 8pm alarm! Most people's alarms go on at 5 or 6am yet my day starts at 8pm. I woke up and got dressed putting on my uniform and a black long coat on top. Packed my make up bag and all my necessary props for the night.

Me: Venes!

Venes: Mmmmh

Me: I'm off, see you in the morning.

I waited for the uber and it took me to work. Work, it's one job I'm not proud of but it puts food on my table and I

am able to send some money home. I got to my changing room and took off my coat then fixed my make up.

Gena: Looking good Cleo.

Cleo, Cleopatra in full. That's what they call me here but my name is Nasiphi Amahle Dlamini and I'm a exotic dancer yet most refer to it as a stripper. I've danced for almost 8years now. Life has been hard, so hard that I ended up as a stripper. The money I make has been able to pay for my high schools fees and university fees. I started dancing when I was 17years old doing grade 11, my mother thought I was working

at a restaurant where I get 5% everyday on each of the orders I take so getting paid after a month it was alot of money and I was able to save up and pay for my fees. My mother, she's my world. Although she's not my biological mother, I don't know my biological parents. My adoptive parents adopted me when I was just a year old and they raised me together until I was 14 where my mother had to stop working because she was sick. My father not being a kind and loving man that I thought he was, left when my mother had stroke when I was 15 and he left us with

nothing but divorce papers and my moms suitcase with clothes enough for just a week. My mother was able to get us a small place to stay, it was enough just for the both of us. Most of the money she had got used up paying hospital fees for her treatment. I started working and being able to assist her in financially, It was hard juggling work and school but I had to. Most people didn't think I'd pass matric but I proved them wrong, I got A's in all my subjects including mathematics and physical sciences. I applied for bursaries, scholarships etc yet I was unlucky. I applied at the

University of KwaZulu Natal and was accepted, I've had to hustle since then to pay for my fees, studying medicine. I graduated passing with 90% and above in all modules yet still, luck wasn't on my side. Getting a proper job with my degree and all my qualifications of being a cardiologist has been hard for the past few months that's why I'm still a stripper. I'm 25 years of age soon to be 26 in November the 11th. I've always found it so strange how I don't get a job, there is a crucial need for Cardiologists in South Africa yet I have not been able to get a job, not

many people take this career stream and my results are very good, I guess bad luck is just my middle name. I put on my mask, that's what I love about this job, the customers don't get to see our faces so nobody runs into me in the street and says there's that stripper from club 411. I looked at myself in the mirror once more, each time I do this I get reminded of how much I hate what I do but it's a must. People will judge yes, but they don't know the struggle of not finding any job at all. I fixed my stockings, I'm wearing black lingerie and black stiletto heels. God knew what he was

doing when he created me, he took his time. I'm gifted in all the right places, growing up I was just always the fat kid yet when I was in grade 10, my body started to just shape itself into a fit curvicious body. I fixed myself once more and walked to my table. It's a Friday, my best clients are here. These people really have money so it will help, I'll be sending money home tomorrow. I got onto my podium and danced. Doing Gymnastics in secondary school really helped, my body is really flexible so the pole and I are best friends. There's this old man with a huge potbelly who always

wants to take me home, he's so stupid, yes he does have money but I'd just never go home with him. I never go home with anyone, I dance, make money and go to my own home. This club doesn't allow prostitution yet some girls do that out of the club just to make extra cash. The money I make satisfies me and I don't need to do all that to make enough money to pay for my bills. There's some new guys I'm spotting here, the other two are also becoming regulars on my table. Well they've showed up for the past two Fridays. I didn't really believe that woman do go to strip



clubs until I started working here, they actually do also spend money here. After two hours I changed to another table, strangely these two guys followed me to my next table and they didn't stop splashing their money on me. Weird, but I'm not complaining, as long as the money keeps rolling in. Around 1am, I went back to my changing room and wore my coat. My boss came to my room and he was very impressed. I made alot of money, every night I get 50% of the money I make, I work three nights in a week. He gave me an envelope full of money and I walked

out the club. While walking in down the streets I heard footsteps behind me. The streets of Durban aren't safe at all, especially at this time. I walked faster yet the footsteps got closer and closer. Breathe in, Breathe out Nasi. Okay I'm going to scream! I felt someone grab me from the back forcefully and pinned me to the wall.

Me: I don't wanna die, just take whatever you want just don't kill me.

Guy: I won't kill you if you do as I say. You're not going to scream but you're going to follow me to the car and we'll leave peacefully, understood??

I nodded and started walking slowly next to him. He seemed very scary so I wasn't going to do anything stupid that will risk my life. Just as we were about to reach his car another man came walking towards us.

Guy2: Leave her alone.

Guy1: Or what?

Guy2:(Giggles) You're questioning me? You're signing your Death wish.

He laughed a bit and his face just turned instantly and he was just different. He looked at me and told me to walk away, I chose to trust this stranger and walked away with my

heart beating fast. What if this other man does something to me as I walk away? After a few seconds I heard a car drive off, what if the guy who just saved me is the one that just drove off leaving me with a guy that's about to kill me.

Voice: Begging someone not to kill you is just a low move, you showed him that you fear death so he used it to threaten you. Be smart

I turned, Its the guy that saved me. Funny how I didn't notice that he's drunk, or the alcohol went away for a few minutes and it just came back?

Me: I won't do it next time and thank you.

Guy: You have beautiful eyes, I would be complementing your beauty but all I see is a mask.

Mask? Oooh! I was still wearing my mask. I forgot to take it off, anyways, I'll take it off once I get home. This guy was standing next to me and staring into my eyes which was a bit creepy.

Guy: Your eyes, they sparkle in the dark

Me: Really? You're using a Shekinah line on me? Douche

He laughed a bit and looked at me for a few seconds. He's just getting creepy and he.... no! No! No way!

Me: Aaah!! Really! On me!! Dude!!  
Nooo!!!

The way I screamed I swear everyone who stays on this block just woke up. He vomited on me! It's going down all over my clothes! He burped and walked away. Argh! Disgusting son of a!!! Argh! I got home after a few minutes, I was so damn irritated and angry. Like who does that! He didn't even say sorry, he just walked away! Nxx! I took a long warm shower and changed into my pyjamas. I soaked

my clothes and left them. This night has just been a bad night, the only good thing out of it was the money I made. Argh let me just sleep before it gets any worse.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

## Insert 1

It's been a week since the incident happened, since that douche bag decided to vomit on me. He did come to the club one of the days but he stayed for just an hour and left, he was sober. I don't know why I kept on paying attention to him but I just did, maybe if he would just apologize for his doings than I'd move on and stop being angry at a stranger that saved me from a man whom I don't know what he would have done to me and I have never seen him ever since that night. He was a regular yet he seems to have just vanished. I'm doing my



last round, I don't usually dance during the day but I took Gena's shift and she'll take my shift for tonight. My mom was very happy about the money I sent home and I made a mental note to go see her as soon as I can. Most probably the upcoming school holidays and I'll go home. I was walking around the club when I was done, I need something to drink.

Me: Martini please?

Bartender: Coming right up

Voice: Add a double shot of whiskey and I'll pay for her drink as well.

Bartender: Yes Bra' D

It's the idiot that vomitted on me.

Him: Do you ever take that off?

Me: Yes I do

Him: Your eyes sparkle.

Me: I guess it really wasn't a Shekinah line.

Him: What line?

Me: You've told me that before.

Him: Told you what?

He's beginning to irritate me! Doesn't he remember?

Me: "Your eyes sparkle in the dark"  
you told me that, the night you saved me from that other guy and you

vomitted all over me.

He's eyes widened and his cheeks turned red like a tomato. He really didnt remember.

Me: You were drunk

Him: Really Drunk! I'm so sorry about that, I don't remember anything at all. I'm really sorry

Me: I was angry at you the entire week, it felt stupid you know. Being angry at a stranger, I guess I just wanted an apology.

I winked at him and went to my changing room and changed, took my mask off and left. I got home and

made myself a small sandwich.

Venes: Hurry so we can go to Pavilion.

Me: What for? I wanted to just read and sleep.

Venes: Incase you haven't noticed we have no groceries and you need to just get out of this house.

Me: Let me change.

She rolled her eyes at me, well I love clothes and I do change almost like 4times a day just for fun. I don't really go out and I don't get to wear all the clothes I have as much as I want to so thats why I change alot.

Personality wise, I'm the most boring

and most anti-social person ever. I was wearing black Roche Nike sneakers, tight high waist jeans and black long sleeve t'shirt. We waited for the uber and it drove us to Pavilion.

Venes: We'll shop a bit, have lunch then go grocery shopping.

Me: Sounds fun

Venes: You don't even seem excited? Let loose, people don't bite Nasi.

Me: I know, I just don't like being in crowded areas. Maybe it will really be fun

Venes is the only person I call a

friend, well when we met she literally forced herself onto me saying I need a friend, more than I realized and she was right. She is indeed a very good friend. We did some shopping, well she bought more than I did and we went to have lunch. While we were eating she was going on about her boyfriend who apparently has been cheating on her.

Venes: You know what he's stupid excuse was?

Me: What was it?

Venes: He said, I quote "You're a stripper, how do I know you're not

also cheating on me?" That's when I slapped him and left his cheating ass.

Me: You did good babe! Like really?

That was so stupid. Just because we're strippers doesn't mean we cheat and sell our bodies. People just never understand, the world is just too cruel and judgemental.

Venes: He was soo good in bed though! I'm going to miss his dick more.

Me: Venes! We're eating.

Venes: What? Girl you got a fine ass body, you're beautiful with no stretch mark or cellulite. You're a perfection

and many man want you but you!  
You're just such a nun!

Me: Being a virgin ain't no crime. Plus  
I just haven't met the right guy.

Venes: You only have two ex  
boyfriends and you never give any  
guy a chance Nasi.

Me: I have alot on my plate and  
having a boyfriend who won't  
understand why I do what I do isn't  
something I can handle right now.

We were done, settled the bill and  
went to checkers.

Me: Did you write a list?

Venes: It's in my bag, and we'll get



other things we see here. You know how you are with junk food.

We were strolling at the aisle with household cleaning materials

Venes: I'm short, I cannot reach that Omo Bleach.

I rolled my eyes at her and reached for it.

Me: Two?

Venes: Yes, and the Sunlight liquid.

I took all we needed and I heard Venes scream.

Venes: Didn't your momma tell you it's rude to stare!!!!

The coloured in her has woken up. I wonder who is she shouting at and why?

Me: Babe, I think I got all we.....

I wasn't able to finish my sentence because I saw just who Venes was talking too. He was with some other dark tall guy. I've never really took time and admired his well built body structure and physic or is it because he's wearing a tight vest showing off his sexy body. I'm sure he's a beast at the gym. He's looking deep into my eyes as I'm looking deep into his eyes too.

Him: I'm sorry for staring so much.

OtherGuy: You just look like someone we know.

Him: Yes, uhm I know this is weird and you might not give out your number to strangers but may I please have your number?

The other guy pushes him on the shoulder. Venes was just quiet throughout the whole encounter. I blinked twice and nodded. I gave him my number and he walked away. I remembered that he has never seen me without my mask on, he only knows my eyes that's why he doesn't

remember me. Plus most times, he wasn't exactly sober when we talked. I stood there and took it all in, he has a really good body.

Venes: Back to Earth Nasiphi Dlamini!

Me: Sorry.

Venes: And then?

Me: I'll explain when we get home.

We continued shopping and called an uber when we were done. We got home and unpacked all the groceries. I cooked while she just drank wine waiting for me to tell her more about today

Me: He's the guy that vomited on me,

after saving me from some guy who wanted to forcefully leave with me. After that he didn't remember me at all since he was damn drunk. Earlier today, we talked and he paid for my martini. He apologized.

Venes: Why did he act like its the first time he saw you?

Me: He has only seen my eyes. I've always been wearing a mask when I'm with him.

Venes: That explains it. Sounds like a Disney fairytale

Me: You're crazy. I'm done, we'll dish up later.

Venes: Your phone is ringing!

Might be my mom, I never receive any other calls besides my mom and Venes, I'm with Venes right now so it's obvious that it's my mom. Oh, it's an unknown number.

Me: Hello

Voice: Thought you wouldn't pick up.

Oh.... it's him.

Me: Hi

Him: I need to see you.

Me: Now?

Him: Yes, if you don't mind. I know this might be strange, I won't harm

you at all. I just need to see you.

He really doesn't know that he knows me.

Me: uhm okay.

Him: Send me your address I'll pick you up in 15mins.

Me: That's not a good idea, I can't be sending a stranger my address. Meet me at Daven Port Square in 15mins.

Him: Okay.

He ended the call, what did I just agree to?! What if he kidnaps me?

Me: He wants to see me, in 15mins

Venes: Call an uber! You don't want

to be late, and I don't get why you didn't just send him your address.

Me: So he can come one day and kidnap us in our sleep, no thank you.

I called an Uber, what would I be without ubers though?

Me: Venes, how do I look?

Venes: Gorgeous babe.

Me: Do you think he'll remember me?

Venes: Put the mask in your bag, if he doesn't remember you, wear it and it will help him remember.

Me: Don't you think that's just stupid?

Venes: No it's not.



Me: I don't need to change my shoes?  
Like is it appropriate that I'm wearing  
slippers?

Venes: They are not really slippers.  
You look cute.

I was wearing my yellow inlove emoji  
slippers. The uber arrived and took  
me to Daven port. I stood for a few  
minutes until he came out of a black  
Jeep Grand Cherokee that has been  
parked across the road. He looked  
good, he was wearing black tight long  
sleeve tshirt and grey shorts with  
flipflops.

Him: Hey

I nodded and we got into the car, mind you, I'm getting into a car with someone whom I don't even know his name. I don't know where did I get this bravery from. We've been driving for some time, I don't even know where he is taking me.

Me: Where are we going?

Him: My house.

Me: You cannot take me to your house.

Him: Why?

Me: It's just inappropriate.

Him: Okay, we'll go to my apartment.

Me: That's just the same as taking me to your house.

He looked at me, he seemed to be annoyed and continued driving.

Me: Fine.

Him: To my house or apartment?

Me: Apartment.

He made a U-turn and drove off to his apartment. We got there around 18:15pm. It was beautiful, well decorated and it seemed as if he did come here often. It was dirty, and the kitchen was filled with many empty beer bottles.

Him: Argh, I should've remembered it

was a mess in here. We can go somewhere else.

Me: No it's fine. We'll just clean up.

He locked the door, my heart beat paced up. Just breathe and calm down, he won't do anything to me.

Me: You drink alot.

He giggled and continued putting the bottles in a black plastic bag.

Him: I don't know your name

Me: Nasiphi... Nasiphi Amahle Dlamini.

Him: I'm Danny... Danny McKenzie.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's  
of friends

#LBAR

Insert 2

We cleaned in silence after we told each other our names. I don't know, it just felt weird. I felt as if he's name is heavy, full of power and authority. I don't know why I felt that way, I guess

he noticed because he just kept quiet and let me be. He's not the guy that vomitted on me anymore, he's no stranger, he's name is Danny McKenzie.

Me: Where do I put these?

Danny: The cupboard on your left.

I did as he said and we were done. I sat on the couch and played with my fingers. He put my bag on the kitchen counter and sat there.

Danny: Should I order something to eat?

Me: Yeah sure.

Danny: Will pizza be okay?

Me: Yes. No avocado

Danny: Spicy Chicken?

I nodded and he ordered on his phone. Everything looked beautiful and expensive. I could easily take in the beauty of this apartment now that its clean and fresh.

Danny: I feel like I know you but I just cannot pinpoint it. It's your eyes

Me: They sparkle in the dark and they sparkle during the day too, you said that to me. On two different days though. You do know me Danny.

Danny: You're the??

I stood up and went to my bag, stood

next to him and put my mask on. He's eyes widened and looked at me.

Me: Yes I'm the stripper you vomitted on.

Danny: Damn! Shit, I'm so embarrassed right now. We talked earlier on today?

Me: Yes and you were sober.

Danny: I am sober right now.

Me: Yes, yes you are.

The pizza was delivered and we sat and ate while watching a movie.

Me: Why did you want to see me?

Danny: I honestly don't know Nasiphi.



I really don't know but I needed to see you.

Me: Oh

Danny: I know it's strange.

Me: Your phone is ringing.

I passed it over to him, the caller was "Naye" maybe its his girlfriend. Oh gosh! Why didn't I notice this before?! He has a ring on, his damn ass is married. That might be the wife calling.

Danny: "I'm fine Naye honestly, kiss my kids goodnight for me... okay bye."

Oh it's the babymama. He has kids,

this guy should be at home tucking his kids in bed.

Danny: Kids...(giggles) sorry about that.

Me: No problem, you have kids?

Danny: Yes, two. A boy and a girl, Onika and Danver.

I nodded and focused on whatever it is that we're watching. It's a boring comedy movie. When we were done eating I cleared up and sat on the kitchen stool.

Danny: Why aren't you coming back to the couch?

Me: The movie is boring.

Danny: Oh sorry, we'll watch whatever you want to watch.

I smiled and changed the channel.

We watched Keeping up with the Kardashians. I saw him roll his eyes and smile.

Danny: I don't get what's interesting with watching people just living their daily life.

Me: It's interesting plus their lives are fascinating and good lives.

Danny: No it's not interesting and they just living a normal life

Me: Utsho njeh ngoba impilo yakho inoba ifana neyabo. Mlungu odla

iCheppies ngeFork.

I said in a low voice, Its not like he'll hear me anyways.

Danny: Ndyaphoxeka yaz, and andiyidli iCheppies ngeFork kwaye impilo yam ile kude kuneyabo.

Oh lord! Where will I hide my embarrassed ass! I buried my face in a pillow and laughed. I couldn't stop laughing at myself.

Me: Danny! Oh my god!

Danny: I'm not just a typical white guy, and why do you speak Xhosa thought you'd be Zulu?

Me: I speak both Xhosa and Zulu. My

mom's Xhosa. And I'm sorry for what I said.

Danny: It's okay no harm done. How old are you?

Me: 25 well I'll be 26 soon and yourself?

Danny: 34, how soon is that?

Me: 11 November.

Danny: That's so not soon, that's in 7months.

Me: But still.

I got a call from Venes

Me: Vee

Venes: You're still alive, where are

you?

Me: I'm not dead Venes and I'm with Danny.

Venes: Danny? The guy who vomited on you

Me: Yes the guy who vomited on me and yes his name is Danny. I'll be home soon don't you worry.

Venes: Okay sweetie bye.

Me: Sorry about that.

Danny: It's okay, so I'm the famous guy who vomited on you. Can I ask you a question? It's personal

Me: Why am I a stripper?

He nodded and I laughed a bit.

Me: I have to make money and provide for my family.

Danny: Do you have kids?

Me: No, by family I mean my mother. I do need to get going Danny.

Danny: Please stay for another hour or two, I promise I'll take you home afterwards.

Me: Okay. Shouldn't you be going home to your wife and kids?

Danny: My kids are sleeping over at my friends house and my wife, well that's a complicated story for another day.

I nodded, at least he didn't deny that he is married. I took off my shoes and got comfortable.

Danny: Ice cream?

Me: Yes please.

He came back with a bowl of Ice cream and chocolate syrup, just how I like it. How did he know? Oh well let me dig in. He watched me eat as he drank his beer.

Me: You stare alot

Danny: You just remind me of someone I know, well someone I used to know. You look alike, are you related to any Bhengu's?



Me: No, well I don't think so. I don't really know my biological parents so I wouldn't be too sure.

Danny: You're adopted?

Me: Yes.

Danny: Mmmh.

We talked and talked for a while. I also ended up having beers with him and he went on and on about how he loves his kids but he keeps failing them. I really didn't get why he said that. Many of the things he said didn't make any sense but I just listened to him. I texted Venes saying I'll be back late. I don't think I'll be back at all,

he's drunk and I'm tipsy too. We played a game on his phone which was just so much fun and we laughed at stupid things. After some time I realised that I was now just talking alone. He fell asleep in the middle of my thighs. Argh now I have to take him to bed. I stood up and woke him up, he was half asleep and mumbling things as he held onto me and we walked to his room. I laid him on the bed and he pulled me with.

Me: Let go of me Danny.

He mumbled and slept on my chest. Oh god! I just switched off the side lamp and watched him as he slept.

After a few minutes I feel asleep too and went off to the dream world.

#NextMorning

I wanted to move but I couldn't. There was just something heavy making me not be able to move. No this can't be... am I having a stroke? Argh! No!

Danny! He's heavy body is on me.

Me: Danny, wake up.

He mumbled and didn't wake up at all. This guy! I'm still fully dressed, that's a relief.

Danny: Zee. Zeee

He kept on calling Zee. I wonder who is Zee or is he having a wet dream

about some girl? Isn't he too old for that? I laughed to myself about it and tried to push him over.

Danny: Zee stop.

Me: You better stop calling me Zee before I slap you.

He opened one eye and smiled, opened the other and his eyes widened. I guess he realized that I'm not the Zee he keeps on calling.

Danny: Nasi

Me: Danny

Danny: I'm so sorry about that. How did we even get here?

Me: You should really stop drinking since it just wipes off all your memory. You fell asleep last night and my attempt on getting you to bed ended up like this. Now move, you're heavy and I need to use the bathroom.

Danny: Sorry, it's the door on the left. I'll organize some breakfast.

I went to the bathroom, Its very fancy and beautiful for just a bathroom. I did my business and cleaned myself up. Atleast there was a sealed toothbrush which I used. I need to get going, so I can shower properly. I went to the kitchen and he had already set up our breakfast.

Me: That was quick

Danny: I have my ways, enjoy.

We ate in silence and I cleaned up after we were done. He laid on the couch and I just looked at him.

Danny: What?

Me: I need to get going.

Danny: Already?

Me: Yes.

Danny: Stay for just an hour

Me: No Danny, an hour turned into me sleeping over last night. I need to go.

Danny: Okay, let me shower and then we'll go.

Me: Okay.

I sat and watched t.v. as he showered. An hour passed and he still wasn't done.

Me: Danny!

He didn't respond. What if he passed out in the shower? Why do I just always think of worst. I went to the room and he was walking around with a towel around his waist.

Me: I need to go so you better hurry up or I'll just call an uber.

Danny: I'm almost done.

I stood there and looked at him, he smirked... Did he just smirk at me?

Danny: I know you love what you see.

Me: Don't flatter yourself, you're not even that attractive Danny McKenzie.

He laughed at me as I walked back to the lounge. After some time he came and he looked very sexy. He is damn attractive but I won't tell him. I sense a bit of arrogance in him so I will not boost his ego.

Danny: Let's go.

We got into his car and drove off.

Danny: Where do you stay?

Me: Musgrave.

Danny: Why did you want to meet up



in Davenport?

Me: So you wouldn't know where I stay.

Danny: So I'll drop you off at Davenport?

Me: No need. You'll drop me off at my place Danny.

He nodded, it seemed as if he was thinking deeply. I kept on playing with my nails and directed him to where I stay. We got there and he parked out the gate.

Me: Guess this is goodbye.

Danny: It doesn't have to be, I will love to see you again.

Me: Uhm I'm not sure about that,  
Danny.

Danny: Why?

Me: I don't know

Danny: Can we be friends?

Me: I'm not much of a friendly person,  
I'm very anti social and boring plus  
I'm sure you have more than enough  
friends.

Danny: I do have many friends, but I  
need you to be my friend too. I don't  
have a boring anti social friend so it  
will be a good start to explore  
something new.

I just looked at him and nodded. I

looked at his ring one more time and took off my seatbelt.

Me: We're just friends. Bye Danny.

Danny: Bye Nasi.

I went inside and saw him drive off through the window.

Venes: Did you finally get some?

Me: Get some what!?

Venes: Some dick man

Me: Argh! No

Venes: So you just slept over and nothing happened?

Me: Yes. I'll go shower and tell you the details when I'm done okay?

Venes: I'll be waiting. You have a double shift tonight right?

Me: Yes.

I took a shower and wore my robe. I joined Venes in the lounge munching on some Oeros.

Me: I think he's married. Well he is married Venes, he has two kids and he really didn't specify on the wife department but he also didn't deny that he is married.

Venes: So he wants you to be his side chick?

Me: No man! No one said anything about any romantic relationship.

We're just friends

Venes: So you're telling me you guys just stared into each others eyes all night?

Me: We talked, we ate and drank some beers which led to him talking alot and me listening. He fell asleep between my thighs and I woke him up, I tried tucking him in but that attempt ended up with me being his pillow and I also fell asleep. We woke up this morning and had breakfast and he drove me here.

Venes: That's weird. Maybe he really wants a friend to talk to.

Me: I guess so.

I didn't tell her about Danny calling me Zee, Venes would've read too much into it and I myself still don't understand why he called me Zee and who is Zee? I won't put much thought to it and will just move forward from it. I decided to take a nap and woke up hours later preparing for work tonight. It's a Saturday night and I'm on a double shift, from 7pm till midnight. Gena picked us up and we got to the club. I went to my changing room and wore my outfit for the night and put my mask on. I had glitter all over my

body and gold lingerie on with gold stockings. I was Goldilocks, there just weren't any three bears. I'm the best dancer of the night, thank God Pinkie isn't working tonight that means it's more money for me and more money for my mother. I went to my podium and started dancing to the good music they played tonight. The art of stripping is blending with the music and seducing your audience, luring the audience from other podiums and giving a performance worth them taking out their money on you. It took a lot of training for me to actually have my own podium and now it is all

paying off because only big shots get the chance to enter our podiums. It was time for my break at 10pm and I had to change to. I had a small sandwich and changed into black lingerie. One of my favorite songs played "Sia\_Helium" Walking to the podium my boss, James called me.

James: Someone just booked you for a private performance.

Me: Me!?

James: Yes you, now go to the private room.

This has never happened before, I've heard the Private room costs from



R50 000 upwards. I should give a killer performance for this person who has just paid so much money just to watch me strip. I walked in and locked the door, instruments started playing. I stood by the door and started walking slowly to the pole. There he was sitting with his arms folded and a bottle of whiskey on the table next to him. I started dancing and doing my magic on the pole as he watched and seemed to be deep in thought. After my first performance he told me to take off my mask and I did as he said. I danced throughout the Sia song,

Heaven. I don't know why he only played my favorite songs and who told him, maybe Gena or Venes.

Danny: Come here

I stopped dancing and went to him, I sat next to him and he gave me a glass of whiskey

Me: I'm still at work you know.

Danny: You're talented and very flexible for a thick person.

I looked at him and he looked back.

Danny: Don't be offended, I sometimes just comment on stuff without even thinking. Sorry

Me: It's cool.

Danny: Wanna get out of here?

Me: What time is it?

Danny: 00:30am, your shift is over.

Me: I'll go to my changing room and we'll meet at the back exit.

I left him there and put on my mask, I don't want anyone seeing my face. I changed and went to James.

James: I transferred your payment in your bank out. The guy paid really good money for you, take the rest of the week off and enjoy your money.

Me: Thank you James, that's very

kind of you.

I searched for my phone in my bag so I could see how much I got from Danny. Oh lord! No! I've never had so much money in my account like never! It was R150 000. I ran to the back exit and looked around for his car.

Danny: I'm here

Oh there he is, we walked to a BMW i8. I've never seen one in person before and now I'm getting comfortable being in one.

Danny: You like it?

Me: Yes I do. It's a beast!

He laughed at my reaction and drove

off. I didn't ask where we were going, I just feel safe around him now and that's scary, I never trust anyone easily. I texted Venes telling her I'm with Danny. We got to another apartment, thank God it was fresh and clean. I took off my shoes and made myself comfortable on a heartshaped couch. He stared at me for a while and sat across me.

Danny: Hungry

I nodded and continued texting on my phone, Venes was busy asking me if I shaved or not.

Me: Danny, why did you pay me so

much money?

Danny: You deserved it. It was a really good performance.

Me: Thank you.

Danny: Do you enjoy working there?

Me: Yes I do but it's not something I want to do all my life. I mean, I'm going to be 26 soon. I should be settling down, working, getting married and starting my own family but I'm stuck in a strip club, don't have a house or a car, I pay rent, take ubers and showcase my body and strip just to put food on the table and pay for my mothers treatment. It's

really not a life I imagined for myself but then its life.

Danny: You do know you can change that. Did you finish high school?

Me: Yes, and graduated in UKZN. I actually have all the qualifications of a doctor, not just any medical doctor but a Cardiologist.

Danny: Why aren't you working as a doctor?

Me: No job, I am not getting any job  
Danny. I knew taking this field I'd immediately get a job because there aren't many Cardiologists in South Africa but I just didn't get accepted in

any hospital and some didn't even reply. I ended up thinking that maybe I just don't exist here or my application forms just disappear in thin air. I mean, how can I not get a job when I did really well in my studies. It's just frustrating and I even gave up.

Danny: I do have a friend who owns a few hospitals, I can talk to him.

Me: No Danny, as much as I need a job. I've already got so much from you already, I cannot accept that offer. I'm sorry

Danny: It's okay, I understand. I'm



sorry if all of this is overwhelming and I'm beginning to bombard your life just like that.

Me: You're not bombarding my life and knowing you has actually been great. I just don't want it to seem as if I'm being your friend because you can do things for me and I do like working hard for the money I earn.

Danny: You remind me of someone.

Me: You've said that before.

Danny: I seem to have said alot to you.

Me: And you did call me Zee, who is she?

Danny: Wanna watch a movie?

I stared at him, he's just going to ignore this and pretend as if he didn't hear my question. I just nodded and followed him to the lounge.

Me: Actually I don't want to watch a movie, can we sit at the balcony?

Danny: Sure.

Me: This is a beautiful apartment, I love it.

Danny: Thank you.

We sat there for a while in silence and I was eating my nails.

Danny: You do that alot.

Me: What?

Danny: You eat your nails and love playing with your fingers.

Me: It's a habit I got used to at a very young age. My dad used to shout at me when I do it

Danny: Your dad?

Me: Yeah, he left us with nothing after he divorced my mother when she got a stroke and stopped working. He was really a good guy but I guess that changed. He left with everything Danny, even things my mother owned and worked hard for. He took all that away.

Danny: I'm sorry about that.

Me: It's okay.

Danny: She passed away.

Me: Who?

Danny: My wife, she passed away,  
4years ago.

Me: I'm so sorry about that.

I didn't want to ask what happened, I  
didn't want him to relive that moment,  
I could see deep in his eyes that he  
was hurt by just telling me she  
passed away.

Danny: I enjoy your presence

I laughed at him and he smiled. He

has a thing of just moving on from one intense conversation to saying something random. We spent all morning just talking and he was telling me about his kids and how he wishes he was a better father. He went on and on about the things they do while he watches and how shy and quiet they are around him yet so bubbly and happy when they are with his friends. The way he is with them has led to that and it's what they've adapted to.

Me: You can still change that, they are both still very young.

Danny: I don't know, Danver has just

grown so much and he is just a difficult child who has built a shield and he covers himself and his sister, even away from me.

Me: He's just 5years old, Onika is just 4years old. They are not that grown, I'm sure you a great dad but you're just overthinking things.

Danny: I don't know.

He received a call and he ignored it.

Me: It might be important

It rang again and he answered after leaving it to ring a few times.

Danny: Jabulani... Yes I'm fine, you guys treat me like a child.... I'm not

damn lost Phila and I can hear you  
Nkosi.... Don't worry about me....  
Okay bye.

It seemed as if he was talking to  
many people at once. He smiled to  
himself and shook his head.

Danny: Those were my friends, they  
always check up on me like I'm a kid.  
They became protective of me when  
my wife died.

Me: You seem to have good friends.

Danny: They are not just my friends.  
They are my family.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's  
of friends

#LBAR

Insert 3

It's been a month, a month of fun and total bliss in my life. Danny has been there and we spend time together, too much time together. We get along very well and we get to know each other more and more everyday.



He comes to the club regularly, well he says it is just to check up on me and keep me safe from hungry savage man. He has been very protective off me and has mentioned that he hates the job I have but he also does respect me and believes that the choices I've made in my life have worked in my favour even though it it something most people wouldn't agree on or approve off. Even my mother would just have a heart attack if she would find out what is it that I really do. Which reminds me, I have to go to PMB soon so I can see her. Maybe this

coming weekend, it's just a few days till the weekend and I have to notify my boss that I will not be at work on Friday and Saturday. I've been making more money, more than I need and I keep on putting it into my savings account. I'll be able to save up and build my mother a beautiful house.

Me: Venes

Venes: Mmmmh

Me: Wake up, dress up and let's go shopping.

Venes: I have a date today.

Me: Okay enjoy, guess I'll be shopping alone.

Venes: Call Danny

Me: No, he took the day off so he can spend time with his kids. I'll just shop alone

I went to take a bath, yes at 11am. I've been watching t.v. and lazy to go take a bath. I wore a long summer dress and sandals, took my bag and waited for an uber which was 5mins away.

Me: Bye babes!

She mumbled something as I locked the door and went to the uber.

Me: Morning

Him: Morning beautiful lady, what do

you use on your skin?

Me: Nothing, well I just use whatever I have. I haven't really stuck to one face cream.

Him: You're very beautiful.

I thanked him and just laughed to myself. I'm not light in skin colour nor am I dark. I've got a big afro which I always have it plaited in "Amagoda" and I put a weave on but today I just let it loose. I'm short, thick and firm. That's just about what I can sum up about my physical features. I have this really weird beauty spot near my nose it irritates me but it looks good

on me. I got to pavilion and just walked around looked at clothes in different shops. Am I the only one who firsts looks into shops then see what I'm going to buy then comes back and gets it? Well yes, That's what I do. By the way, I still do get home and fit in all the clothes I bought. I did my shopping and it felt really really good, I never got to really shop when I was young but my mother made sure she bought me lots of new clothes in June and December. Even when things were really bad, she managed to do so even if it was just two outfits. My

mother is the best thing that has ever happened to me. I also bought her clothes and I know she'll be very happy when I give them to her this weekend. I went to have lunch at spur, eating alone at a restaurant really sucks especially if you're seated next to people who aren't alone and enjoying each others company. I enjoyed my meal while texting with Venes as she was sending me pictures of herself at her date. After I was done with my meal I paid the bill and left. While I was walking, just a few stores away from Spur. I saw Danny approaching with many guys

and kids. Our eyes met and he smiled at me, the guys were staring at me weirdly, same way he did with that dark tall guy when they first saw me. The dark guy is here too. He greets me first

Guy: Good Day Nasiphi

I smile and nodded, I guess Danny told him my name.

Danny: I didn't think I'd bump into you today, thought you with Venes

Me: She went on a date so I just spent my day shopping.

Danny: These are my friends, well you've met Nkosinathi.

I smiled and just waved at them.

Guy: I'm Bongani, this is Jabulani, Philasande, Lubabalo, L'yanda, Mpho, Athenkosi and Thabo.

Me: Pleasure to meet you all, I'm Nasiphi, Nasiphi Dlamini.

The kids were playing and not paying attention to this encounter. There was one boy who was just staring at me and it was creepy. He looked familiar, oh its Danver. Danny's son, he stood as the others walked off to Spur only him, Phila, Jabu, Athi and Danny stood there with him.

Danver: Mom



I was confused and I looked at him. He looked at me carefully and a tear fell from his cheeks.

Danver: Sorry.

He walked off and Danny followed him. Okay..... now what was that about? That was really strange and weird, sooo strange.

Phila: I'm sorry about that. We'll see you around, it was good to meet you.

I nodded and walked away as quickly as I could. I took a taxi back home and got there, Venes wasn't home yet. My mind was just puzzled by what happened today. Maybe Danver got

disturbed by his mothers death and he does that to women he meets, I mean his 5years old I'm sure he hasn't really dealt with it properly since it happened when he wasn't even fully a year old. I put the plastic bags in my wardrobe, I'll unpack after my nap. After a few hours a WhatsApp notification woke me up. It was Danny.

Danny: "I'm sorry about what happened earlier on, can we talk?"

I just read it and ignored it. Argh I'm up now and I won't be able to fall asleep again. It was around 5pm, on a normal day I'd be preparing for my

shift but I'm not going to work till next week. I looked at my clothes and fitted in some till I was bored and tired. I neatly packed them in my wardrobe and I know that won't last, I cannot keep my wardrobe neatly packed. I just never find the clothes I'm looking for if it is packed. I started cooking supper, pap, roasted chicken breasts, creamy spinach and chakalaka. I cooked lots of food because this is Venes's favourite meal and I also do enjoy it so we'll dish up more than one plate. Just as I was cooking I got a text from her, she's not coming back tonight. Argh,

this will be a long night of boredom. Loneliness rubs you out of your sanity. Anti-social syndrome side effects! It's a cure and a curse! I finished up cooking and took a tub of Ice cream, Caramel is just my favorite! I switched on the Tv and I was lucky, Keeping up with the Kardashians was playing and on omnibus. I took a small blanket and sat on the couch while watching and having my ice cream. There was a knock on the door. Who could it be?

Me: Who is it!?

Voice: Open up.

Mxm it's Danny.

Me: I'm coming.

I chose to just sit down and continue watching tv. I don't know what's going on with me but I know I'm not angry at him for some reason I'm just freaked out. My phone rang and it was him. I didn't answer. He banged the door, this dude will break my door.

Me: I'm coming!!!!

I stood up and opened the door.

Danny: Why didn't you open?

Me: I was busy

Danny: With what?

Me: I was at the bathroom.

Danny: I know you're lying.

Me: No I'm not.

He laughed and went to sit down.

He's always just soo comfortable around me.

Danny: Will you come sit down and watch this show of yours?

Me: Yes.

I went to sit down and he sat next to me and we shared the blanket. He kept on looking at me and it was freaky.

Me: Did you take him for counseling

after his mom died?

Danny: No and he is okay.

Me: Really?

Danny: He's never done that before. I don't know what happened

Me: I didn't see Onika

Danny: She didn't come with us, she wasn't feeling well so I left her at home with Nceba.

Me: Nceba?

Danny: She's like my little sister, She's my Phila's sister in law married to L'yanda's little brother. You're a year older than her.

Me: Mmmmh, where are the kids now?

Danny: Still at home with her. But she'll be leaving soon so I'll have to get going soon.

Me: Okay

We stayed in awkward silence and I stared at him for a while.

Danny: What?

Me: Nothing. Want some food?

Danny: Yes please.

I dished up for him and put his food in a tray and he washed his hands first.

Danny: Thank you.



He dug in and ate so quickly like he hasn't had food in so long. He was done before I even finished half of my plate.

Me: Woah Mr McKenzie

Danny: It tastes really good, may I have more?

Me: Sure.

I dished up for him again and he ate like theres no tomorrow.

Danny: You cooked?

Me: Yes

Danny: You're a great cook, its been a while since I had a home cooked

meal.

Me: How long ago was it?

Danny: About a month ago, Kamo cooked for me.

Me: Kamo?

Danny: Thabo's wife.

Me: Your friends are all married?

Danny: Yes.

Me: You're friends with all their wives?

Danny: Yes, we're a big family.

Me: Thats nice.

I washed the dishes as he watched me, he isn't even helping. I take it his the lazy type, okay let me not judge.

Danny: Do you have any beer here?

Me: No.

Danny: I'll be back just now.

He took his car keys and left. After 15mins he came back with a six pack of beers. I watched him as he packed some in the fridge. He's just so comfortable you'd swear he's in his house.

Danny: Want some beer?

Me: No thank you.

He drank as we watched tv and just had a random conversation. I never even know what to talk about with Danny at times and he doesn't seem

to mind. Maybe he gets bored but just doesn't want to say so. I don't get why he sticks around, maybe he enjoys my silence. I did tell him at first that I'm the most boring person he'll ever meet. He was getting tipsy and he's phone rang. It was Nceba. They talked for a while and the conversation ended.

Danny:(burps) excuse me, I need to go.

He walked but almost fell. He's drunk, one beer turned into 5beers.

Me: You cannot drive at this state.

Danny: I've driven myself home,

worse than this.

Me: I won't allow you to drive when you're drunk. You're putting your life at risk.

I went to get dressed, I wore a navy Adidas tracksuit and slippers. I took his car keys and wallet, locked the door and we walked to his car. He looked at me with his eyes wide open.

Me: What?

Danny: Can you even drive?

Me: Yes Danny, I do have a drivers license.

Danny: When last did you drive?

Me: So many years ago.

Danny: Okay I'm not putting my life at risk.

Me: Just shut up and get in the car.

Danny: Yes mam.

I got in and drove off.

Me: You'll direct me?

Danny: It's on the GPS.

I drove all the way to Hillcrest. The house this GPS directed me to seemed like this huge mansion. Well it is a mansion.

Me: Is this the right address?

Danny: Yes, It's my house.

He opened the gate with a remote and I drove into the parking area. I've never seen such a huge house. And I'm about to step my feet into it, wow! This is such a huge mansion.

Me: Where's the door?

Danny: Follow me.

We walked to the main door and he opened. A beautiful young woman came to us and she was already rushing.

Danny: Nceba

Nceba: Danny, I'm glad you're here now I'm leaving Thapelo wants me to pick him up at the airport. The kids

are asleep, bye! Oh how rude of me,  
Hi! And bye!

She wasn't really paying much attention to me, we heard her car drive off and Danny closed the gate. I followed him like a lost puppy till we reached the lounge. He's house is huge and very beautiful. There are so many beautiful and expensive things in here, much more expensive than the money I make in a year or even years.

Danny: Make yourself comfortable, I'll be back.

I nodded and sat on the couch careful



not to damage anything or even put a scratch on these beautiful couches.

Danny: I see you're not comfortable, I know you like putting your feet on the couch now do so.

Me: Uhm no... I'm comfortable with sitting like this.

Danny: Nasiphi

I put my feet on the couch and got comfortable. He came with two bowls filled with chips and the other with marshmallows.

Danny: Want anything else?

Me: No this is fine, thank you. You got a pretty big home

Danny: Thank you. It isn't really a home but just a house.

I chose not to reply to that. I just ate some snacks as we watched some movie.

Me: I need to use the bathroom

Danny: Walk straight and turn left, its the 3rd door.

I went to the bathroom and did my business. After I was done, I got lost trying to go back to the lounge. There was a passage filled with many pictures of his kids but none of his wife. Maybe he took them down when she passed away, I wonder

what happened to her. I took my phone and called him

Danny: Nasi

Me: I'm lost

Danny: Where are you?

Me: Passage with pictures

Danny: There are many passages with pictures in this house. Be specific

Me: Pictures of your kids

He ended the call and I heard his footsteps approaching.

Danny: Follow me

I followed him back to the lounge. He

laughed at me when I realized I took the wrong turn.

Me: It's not my fault, you have a huge house.

Danny: Yeah whatever

Me: What do you do anyways?

Danny: I studied Mechanical engineering, I'm a Mechanical engineer and businessman, I have many businesses that are up and running.

Me: You're rich

Danny: I'm blessed.

We heard little footsteps and a little

beautiful angel came rubbing her eyes.

Danny: Onika

Onika: My stomach hurts dada.

Danny looked pale for some reason and he was hesitating. I looked at him and he looked at me

Me: You really don't know what to do, do you?

He shook his head and I just wondered what he does when he's alone with these kids

Me: Go warm some water. Come here Onika

She looked at me for a while and came to me. I carried her and rubbed her stomach. I also don't know anything about children but someone has to try since Danny just chose to freeze.

Onika: I want to vomit

I quickly went to the bathroom with her and she vomited a little. I let her rinse her mouth and Danny came with the warm water. I made her drink it with a teaspoon and she really didn't enjoy it.

Me: Hungry?

She nodded and we went to the

kitchen.

Me: Danny!

He came running to the kitchen. I really don't understand why is he acting this way.

Me: She's hungry

Danny: There's good in the fridge.

I took it and warmed it up. I fed her and she ate.

Me: Does she have any meds?

Danny: Yes she does.

He took them and gave me. She took her meds and I carried her trying to get her to sleep. We sat on the couch

as she laid on me and I kept on rubbing her back

Me: Her temperature is okay, she'll be fine.

Danny: Thank you.

After about an hour she fell asleep and Danny showed me to her room. I tucked her in and closed the door.

Me: Where's Danver?

Danny: The next door

I opened and he was fast asleep too. I really was shocked by Danny's behavior. We went back to the lounge and he poured a glass of whiskey for himself.



Danny: Thank you, I don't know what I would've done if you weren't here. I would've probably called Babalwa since she's closer to my house.

Me: I guess Babalwa is one of your friends wife?

Danny: Yes, she's Bongani's wife.

Me: Who looks after these kids Danny?

He looked down and he seemed to be crying. I didn't move, I was actually very shocked by this. Never have I thought I'd see him cry.

Danny: I'm a bad father, I cannot be a father to my kids. They take care of them most times, my kids actually

just moved in with me. They stayed with their aunt Sneh but I took them, I wanted a chance. Just to try and be a father to them but I'm a complete mess. I don't know what to do.

Me: Why don't you get a nanny?

Danny: I don't want a stranger raising my kids.

I stepped closer to him and held him as he cried.

Me: Everything will be okay.

Danny: Nasiphi.

Me: Mmmh

Danny: Please be my nanny? Well my

kid's nanny.

Me: Danny

Danny: You don't have to answer me now, just think about it. I know you hate your job and you don't have to strip for money anymore. I'll pay you good money

Me: I'll think about it. For now you need to go sleep

Danny: Let's go

Me: Where will I sleep?

Danny: There are many bedrooms in this house. Come with me and you'll choose one.

I chose one next to the kid's bedrooms just incase Onika wakes up again. I got into bed and thought about Danny's proposal. I decided to just think about it tomorrow and sleep. I'll be going to see my mom this weekend and I'll give him an answer when I'm back. I switched off the side lamp and went off to wonderland.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

## Insert 4

I woke up and looked at my surroundings. I realized I wasn't in my room and it came to mind that I slept over at Danny's house. What he asked me yesterday came to mind again, I don't have an answer yet. I walked to the en-suite bathroom and washed my face after I peed, I brushed my teeth with an unused toothbrush and brushed my hair. I

have to do something with this afro! I went out the room hoping I won't get lost again. I heard little voices and I went to where they came from. It was in the kitchen but it wasn't the kitchen I was in yesterday, I guess there's a kitchen on each floor.

Me: Morning

Them: Morning.

Me: Danver, what are you doing?

He was fiddling with the stove and carrying eggs. He did that thing of looking at me for a while and shook his head.

Danver: I'm trying to make eggs for

Onika. She's hungry

Me: You're still very young to be able to make eggs. Sit on the stool and I'll make them.

Danver: Thank you.

I worked my way around the kitchen and made breakfast for all of us.

Me: Who makes breakfast for you in the morning?

Danver: We sometimes need to wait till Danny wakes up and he takes us out or AuntBee comes and makes breakfast for us. Most times we do sleepovers so we eat there

Me: You call your father Danny?

Danver: But he doesn't know.

Me: How old are you?

Danver: I'm 5, well I'll be 6 in November. Onika will be 5 next month.

Me: You're very young. I'm also born in November the 11th

Danver: Me too

Me: I guess I've found my twin

Danver: But you're very old.

Me: Not that old. Onika, are you okay?

She nodded and continued fiddling with her fingers

Danver: She doesn't really talk that



much around people she doesn't know.

I nodded and dished up them.

Danver: I usually feed her, she makes a mess when she tries to eat by herself.

Me: Don't worry, I'll feed her.

Seems as if Danver has been taking care of his little sister. I wonder what is it with Danny, he cannot take care of his own kids? I just feel as if there's more to this and it is affecting his kids. Has he turned a blind eye to this or he just cannot deal with it? I fed Onika and she ate alot. After they

were done, I ate and washed the dishes with Danver helping me.

Danver: Why do you look like mom?

Danny: Danver!!!

When did he show up? Danver seemed so scared and he hid behind me. What is going on here! Why is the child so scared of him? Onika moved close to me as well. Danny noticed and he put his hand through his hair and left.

Me: Want to show me to your room so we can clean up?

They nodded and pulled me to their rooms.

Me: We'll start with Onika's room.

We did her bed and tidied her toys.

Me: Lets look for what you'll wear today. Where are your clothes?

Onika: The closet, at that door.

She pointed at a pink door and i opened! The child is just 4years of age but she has such a huge closet with sooo many clothes! At least Danny makes sure his kids are well dressed. She picked out an outfit and she has many expensive sneakers. We then went to Danvers room and went through the same process. After that I bathed them and dressed

then up warmly. It was a bit chilly outside. I looked around the house and it seemed as if Danny wasn't anywhere in here.

Me: Danny! Danny!

Danver: Maybe he left. I don't think he's here.

Me: Let's go watch a movie downstairs

Onika: Why downstairs?

Me: So we can be closer to the main door.

We went downstairs and I looked through the cupboards for snacks

Me: Do you guys like pizza?

Them: Yes

I ordered pizza and we took a blanket and watched cartoons. The pizza was delivered and we tucked in. I got a call from my mother.

Me: MaThandi

Mom: Nasiphi, ulaphi? (Nasiphi where are you?)

Me: What do you mean?

Mom: Yhu lomntwana ngabe ulana ngok( You child, you were supposed to be here already)

Me: Oh shit! Uhm mamam something

came up. I'll come see you next weekend I promise

Mom: I miss you

Me: I miss you too, I'll really come next weekend. I love you

Mom: I love you too.

We watched until they fell asleep. It is around what other children say is nap time. I went to put them in Danvers bed and they slept peacefully. How can Danny just disappear and leave me with his kids! I took a shower and changed back into the clothes I was wearing with no underwear on. My phone rang again and it was Venes

Me: Venes

Venes: Where are you?

Me: At Danny's.

Venes: Oh say hi! Bring something nice for me.

Me: He's not even here

Venes: What do you mean?

Me: I'll tell you when I get home.

I ended the call and continued watching t.v. I kept on trying to call Danny but it kept on going straight to voicemail. After about two hours someone came in from the main door and I rushed to see who it was. It was

one of his friends but I just wasn't sure what his name is

Him: Nasiphi

Me: Hi, I don't remember your name but I know you

Him: Mpho, Mpho Lebone.

Me: Oh hi Mpho.

Mpho: Where is Danny? I've been trying to call him.

Me: He left in the morning, I've also been trying to call him but he isn't answering. I don't know where he is

Mpho: Where are the kids?

Me: They are sleeping. He left me



with his kids here.

Mpho: Was he okay?

Me: I don't think so. Something happened in the morning with the kids and he just left.

He looked at me with the "Explain further" look and I told him what happened.

Mpho: I'll go look for him. Take care of the kids

I nodded and he left. I went to check on the kids and they were up already.

Me: Wakey Wakey

Onika: I want to pee

She ran to the bathroom and Danver laughed at her.

Danver: She has a weak bladder. She pees on herself sometimes and Danny gets angry

Me: He's Dad not Danny.

Danver: Dad, okay he's dad.

Me: Hungry?

They nodded and we went to the kitchen. I've seen that they love following me around.

Me: What do you want to eat?

Danver: Hotdogs right Onika?

Onika: Yes! Yes!

Danver: She loves hotdogs so we'll eat them

Me: What do you love?

Danver: Waffles, can I actually have waffles?

Me: uhm okay.

I looked around and I did find a waffle maker. I made waffles for us and two hotdogs for Onika. I fed her and we enjoyed eating spending time together. I've noticed that these two eat a lot so I'll have to also prepare supper because it seems as if Danny wont be coming back anytime soon. Even Mpho has went AWOL, I wish he

had also left his number so I could contact him. We continued watching t.v. from where we left off and they told me more about themselves.

Onika is still in preschool and Danver is doing Grade R. On weekdays, they are at their aunties house so she can prepare them for school and Danny fetches them after school and sends them back in the evening. This is just too much up and down travelling for little kids. I need to talk to Danny and what he did today is just unacceptable. Who leaves his kids with a stranger. Okay I'm not a stranger but he doesn't know me that

much to trust me with his kids like this.

Onika: Where is dad?

Me: I don't know sweetie but he will be back soon.

We watched two movie and around 5pm I decided to start making supper.

Me: I'm going to the kitchen to make supper.

Danver: Can we come with?

Me: Okay.

I looked around and I found spaghetti and there was mince in the fridge so I made spaghetti and meatballs. They

helped me around and it was actually so much fun. This is my first encounter with children and I'm enjoying it so much. It's the first time I'm ever babysitting children and I'm not that bad at it. We were done with cooking supper

Me: Supper will be served at 7pm. Do you guys bath before you sleep?

Onika: Sometimes

Me: Okay lets go bath.

We went to the bathroom and they took a bath. I dried them up, lotioned them and changed into their pyjamas

Me: You'll brush your teeth just

before bedtime.

Danver: What time is bed time?

Me: 20:30pm

Onika: Okay.

They sat at the couch while I dished up for us. Whenever Danny decides to show up I'll dish up for him. We sat at the dinning table and ate. Both Danver and Onika were making a mess.

Me: Okay bring both your bowls here.

I mixed the food together and fed them both at the same time.

Onika: I'm full.

Danver finished up and I washed the dishes as they watched cartoons. I would give them a snack for dessert but they've had a lot to eat today.

Me: Let's go brush our teeth.

We went to the bathroom and they brushed their teeth and I assisted them.

Me: Let me tuck you in my angels.

We first went to Onika's room and tucked her in

Me: Let's say a little prayer.

We prayed and then Danny and I kissed Onika's forehead as she slept peacefully. We went to Danvers room



and I tucked him in.

Danver: Will you be here in the morning?

Me: I don't know, I'm not sure.

Danver: Please don't leave us

I breathed in and out. Lord, what have I gotten myself into?

Me: I won't leave you. Tell you what, I'll be here when you wake up and I won't leave without saying goodbye.

He hugged me and he slept. I went back to the lounge and sat on the couch watching Life of Kylie. I don't know when I fell asleep but I woke up because I heard some voices. I

walked to the kitchen and it was Danny, Mpho and Athi. I looked at Danny, honestly I was just so angry! I walked back to the lounge and took the blanket. They came to the lounge, busy scratching their heads and they looked nervous. I really don't know what for but Danny McKenzie is an idiot! He's worse than an idiot!

Me: I cooked, you'll dish up for yourself. The food is enough for all three of you.

Danny: Nasiphi

He tried to hold me but I looked at him.

Me: Don't you dare!

Athi: Fuck! We have another Naye.

I didn't pay attention to what Athi said. Naye is one of Danny's friends wife. I walked off and stopped as they looked at me.

Me: You're taking me home at 9am!

I got to the room I was using last night and I went straight to bed. I kept on twisting and turning and I just couldn't sleep. There was a soft knock on the door and Danny came in.

Danny: Can we talk?

Me: What about, Danny... I'm trying to sleep.

Danny: I know you're not asleep  
Nasiphi, I just want us to talk!

Me: Talk?! You want to talk now after  
leaving me the entire day with your  
children?! How do you leave your own  
flesh and blood with a stranger!?

What if something had happened?

Danny McKenzie you do not just up  
and go! You cannot do what you did  
today! I am upset, I'm really upset!

You don't walk away when there's a  
problem! Danny you!...

He shut me up using his hand and  
closed the door. Mind you, it is now  
dark in the room.

Me: Switch on the light

He switched on the side lamp and looked at me. I couldn't read the expression he had on his face.

Danny: First of all, you're not a stranger and I knew my kids were in good hands with you. If something had happened I would've known. I'm sorry for leaving you with the kids, I was just in a bad space and I needed to immediately get out of the house. I'm very sorry Nasi.

Me: Danny, do you beat up your kids?

He looked down and started having veins on his face. He kept on

scratching his head making his neatly combed hair a mess. I don't know when and how but tears started flowing down my face.

Danny: It's not something I'm proud of, it happened once or twice.

Me: How many times did it happen  
Danny!

Danny: 4 times.

He looked up and saw that I was crying. He came closer and held my cheeks. I won't lie, his touch triggered something, I felt butterflies all over my stomach.

Danny: I'm sorry, please don't cry

Nasiphi.

Me: Don't touch me!!!! Leave Danny,  
go back to wherever you come from!  
Get out!

The nerve, I'm kicking him out of his  
own house. Levels Nasiphi! Levels!

Me: Get out!!!

Danny: Nasi

Me: Get out!!!!!!

There were soft knocks on the door  
and I quickly wiped off my tears. It  
was Onika followed by Danver.

Me: Babies, what's wrong? Is your  
stomach sore again Onika?

Onika: No, can we sleep with you?

I looked at them then looked at Danny. He's eyes were wide opened, he has a tendency of doing that. I don't know why he does that because his eyes are naturally big.

Danver: Please.

Me: Sure, come lets sleep. Daddy was just leaving.

I tucked them in bed and Onika slept between me and Danver. Danny came and kissed their forehead and brushed my hand. He switched off the side lamp and when he was about to close the door. I turned and looked



at him.

Me: Make sure you eat before you sleep. Goodnight.

Danny: I will, Thank you Nasiphi.

Thank you

He's "Thank you" seemed to be deep. I don't know whether he was thanking me for staying with his kids or the food. Argh let me not stress myself about this complicated man. I checked if the kids were sleeping well and I also fell asleep.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's

of friends

#LBAR

Insert 5

I felt someone touching me, no actually they were patting me. I opened my eyes and it was Danver and Onika.

Danver: Onika wants to pee

I quickly woke up and carried her to the bathroom. She pee'd and opened

her arms for me to carry her again.  
The sun was up and it's a lovely  
Sunday. The curtains were already  
opened, I wonder who did that?

Me: Morning

Danver: Morning

Onika: I still want to sleep.

Me: Okay sleep, Danver let's get you  
some breakfast.

Danver: I'm not hungry. I'll just go  
shower and have a cereal when I'm  
done.

Me: Oh okay.

I went downstairs and there was this

really really good smell of pancakes. I walked to the kitchen and Danny was cooking. He made such a huge mess in the kitchen.

Me: Good Morning.

Danny: Morning Nasi. Sit, breakfast is almost ready.

Me: I'll clean up here first.

Danny: No, go sit and relax. The cleaners will be here soon.

Me: If you say so.

I sat on the couch and thought about yesterday. I just don't even know how to feel about it. I don't understand why Danny would hit his adorable

children. It is obvious that he has issues, huge issues he hasn't dealt with and is taking his frustrations out of these children and drinking his life away. God knows what happens when he is drunk and he's alone with his kids. I would like to believe and tell myself nothing happens. He's edgy, seems like he's short tempered and always in his own world, yet he is sweet and loving, he's also a talker and a listener. That's what I've summed up about his personality so far.

Danny: Earth to Nasiphi!

Me: Argh oh sorry, I was just thinking.

Danny: About last night's conversation?

Me: Sort of

Danny: we'll talk about it when you're done eating, where are the kids?

Me: Onika is still sleeping and Danver is bathing

Danny: Okay, I'll go check on him, he should be done by now.

Me: Okay. I have to go home

Danver: I was hoping you'd stay a bit longer

Me: I have to bath and change clothes. I still need to think about it

He went upstairs as I ate, really good breakfast maybe he knows his way in the kitchen. While I was eating I heard him scream my name. I quickly put my plates in the kitchen and ran upstairs. He was holding Danver, dripping wet and he seemed to be unconscious.

Me: What's going on?

Danny: Call an ambulance!!!

Me: Move! Don't hold him like that you're suffocating him more and this will affect his heart. Lay him on the floor. Stay with us Danver

I checked his pulse and he was still

breathing. Looks like he drowned, I did a quick CPR on him and mouth to mouth.

Me: Danver, respond!. Go get a towel

Danver: We should call an ambulance

Me: Theres no time to wait for an ambulance.

Danver: Do you know what you're doing?

Me: I didn't study medicine for all those years and get a degree in Cardiology for nothing! Get the damn towel.

He was slowly waking up and trying to breathe properly, he's face was



pale and he coughed out water.

Me: Danver, can you hear me?

Danver: Mom, mom is that you?

Oh Goodness, the poor kid is still suffering from his mom's passing. I think he misses her and Danny doesn't even comfort him. I picked him up and wrapped him with a towel. I passed him onto Danny and Danny decided to pop his eyes and look confused

Me: Hold him!

Danny: I don't know what to do, I don't think I even know how to.

Me: This is your damn child! Hold him!

I could see that he was literally shaking, I just took Danver and walked out the bathroom. I saw that Onika was standing at a far corner watching everything that just happened. He came with a first aid kit, at least he was smart enough to do that. I placed Danver in his bed and checked his temperature.

Me: You're going to be fine my baby, you'll be fine. What happened?

Danver: I fell in and hit my head.

Me: Turn around so I could check you.

He turned and he was swollen a bit. I gave him something to ease the pain.

I stayed with him until he fell asleep.

Me: Onika, come here.

She walked slowly to me carrying her  
torn teddy

Me: What happened here?

Onika: It tore.

Danny: I'll buy you a new one

Onika: I don't want a new one.

Me: Don't worry, I'll fix it, it will look  
good as new. Want to eat?

Danver: I'll go dish up for her

Me: Thank you

I bathed her quickly and dressed her.  
Went to the kitchen and fed her.

When she was done she went to watch tv as I sowed her teddy.

Me: I need my things, but I cannot leave you here with them and you cannot leave too.

Danny: What do you mean?

Me: I'll babysit them.

Danny: Thank you, thank you Nasiphi. They are really fond of you and it would be a struggle if I looked for a nanny and introduced them to someone they don't know or might not even like. As much as I am a bad father but I do love them and care for them.

Me: You're not a bad father

Danny: You've been here for a short time but I know you've seen how I am with them, you know I'm a bad father

Me: I need to call Venes to pack up my clothes for me and things I'll need.

Danver: Use my phone, and tell her I'll send a driver to pick her up.

Me: Thanks

I took his phone and went to the balcony, I've never really been at the backyard. It's really beautiful and there's a water fountain. It's really a beautiful big yard. After a few rings she finally answered her phone

Venes: Venes speaking hello

Me: Hey Veez

Venes: Oh hey stranger, where are you?

Me: I know it's alot to ask since I have so many clothes. Please pack all my clothes, toiletries and take my suitcase thats under the bed and the small bag. Just pack everything of mine and a car will come pick you up with everything.

Venes: What! Why? Whats going on?

Me: Just do as I say please

Venes: Are you in trouble?

Me: No, I'll tell you everything when you're here

Venes: Okay, you'll have to pay me. You have too many clothes. I'll see you later, lemme pack.

Me: Thank you babe.

Danny cleared his throat and I looked at him.

Danny: Are you done?

Me: Yes

Danny: I got you something to wear while you wait for your clothes. I asked Chenan to organise things for you, they in your room.

Me: Chenan?

Danny: Someone I know from a boutique.

Me: You got me something to dress, from a boutique? Really? I can see when you're lying to me

Danny: Okay, she's a designer.

Me: You're just went sooo overboard. Thanks anyways

I left him there scratching his head, he messes up he's hair when he does that and honestly it's very sexy. I took a shower and lotioned my body. The dress was on the bed, wow really, its short. I wore it, it was a short dress,



gold and very right.

Me: Danny! Danny!!!

He quickly came in and stood by the door with his mouth wide opened.

Me: I cannot wear this! Like I just can't. Just a tracksuit would've been fine.

He didn't respond, he's mouth was still hanging opened.

Me: Danny!

He didn't respond. He's just standing there. I just walked back to the bathroom and tried taking it off but I couldn't. Damn it! Really!

Danny: Nasiphi

I went to him and I was irritated

Me: Oh so you can talk now?

He kept quiet again and looked at me.  
He's played with his hair and his blue  
eyes twinkled.

Danny: Sorry, I'll get you my tracksuit.

Me: I don't think it will fit me, I'm a big  
girl Danny

Danny: I'm a big guy, I didn't spend all  
these years in the gym for nothing.

He flexed and honestly I was  
charmed by this beast in front of me.  
He's damn sexy, he came back with a  
Nike tracksuit and stood at the door.

Me: Are you just going to stand there?

Danny: Oh sorry, I'll go check on the kids.

I tried, I really tried taking off this dress but I couldn't. I just couldn't take it off till I heard it tare. Shit! It shouldn't have tared! Oh lord I wonder how much it costs. I wore the tracksuit and it fitted me but it was just really really tight. I went to the lounge holding the torn dress. He was watching T.V. with Onika.

Me: Danny

He looked at me and winked.

Danny: What's up?

Me: Uhm I was trying to take it off....

Danny: Take what off?

Me: The dress

Danny: I'm not following

Me: It tore, as I was trying to take it off.

He just laughed, really? I'm so scared right now and all he does is laugh? I couldn't help but just cry, yes I'm a cry baby when I want to. He quickly jumped from where he was seated and stood in front of me me.

Danny: Are you crying?

I just continued crying hard, he can

see that I'm crying but he's asking me nonsense.

Danny: It doesn't matter, its okay that the dress tore. We'll get you another one.

Me: I don't want another one Danny. I'm sad that it tore, it looked soo expensive. I'll pay it back, how much was it?

Danny: Theres no need to. Now stop crying please.

I nodded and he took the dress and threw it away. Perks of being rich, I was still going to sow it. I went to sit next to Onika and she laid her head

on my thighs as I brushed her hair.

Danny: They are going to school tomorrow and I'm going to work, you'll be alone during the day. Onika comes back at 12:30, I'll drop her off. Danver comes back at 14:30.

Me: Okay, I'll have to wake up a bit early and prepare them for school

Danny: Yes please, when I try to do it they end up being late. Danvers uniform is in his closet on the left, he'll show you where he keeps his books and sports bag. There's also a timetable he put on the wall for his after school activities and Onika

wears anything she wants to wear besides Fridays, its jeans and her pre-schools t'shirt and takkies.

Me: And lunch?

Danny: You'll prepare whatever you feel like doing for them. There's alot in the fridge, maybe you can add some fruits and a snack it's all up to you.

Me: And you?

Danny: What about me?

Me: What should I prepare for you?

Danny: Oh, no don't worry about me. I'll grab something at the cafeteria or come back home for lunch.

Me: Okay.

Danny: You don't have to worry about cleaning, laundry and all that stuff, I have helpers for that.

Me: Oh okay but I'll cook.

Danny: If you feel like it, I do have a chef but if you wanna cook it's okay. Oh and one more problem

Me: What is it?

Danny: My father, he likes showing up unannounced.

Me: I don't see that as a problem.

Danny: Oh yes it is. He's, he's scary. That's all I'll say.



He laughed at my confused face and went upstairs. I decided to keep myself busy in the kitchen with cooking. After some time there was a call from the phone connected to the security gate.

Me: McKenzie residence hello?

Him: It's one of the drivers, I'm with Ms Venes. Please open the gate

Me: Okay sir.

I opened and after some minutes, Venes came running in.

Venes: Am I dreaming or what!?

Me: Don't even scream! I know you, you'll wake the babies.

Venes: We really, really need to catch up! What is going on?

Danny walked in the kitchen and greeted Venes.

Danny: Your things will be packed in your room, I'll leave you two to catch up. I'll be back later, Venes don't leave until I'm back. I know she might be bored if you leave her alone

Venes: Don't you worry, we have alot to talk about so I'll be here.

Danny winked and he left. Danver walked down the stairs with a blanket.

Me: You're up already? Do you want something to eat?

Danver: No thank you. Where's Onika?

Me: She's here, watching cartoons.

Danver looked at Venes for a while and greeted. I guess he does like to observe people first. He went to the fridge and came back with yoghurt for him and Onika.

Danver: Onika, may I please change the channel?

Onika: Okay, but don't watch anything boring.

We laughed at what she said and Venes and I sat outside, we could see them from where we were sitting.

Venes: Explain

Me: Long story cut short, I'm a nanny now.

Venes: I want the long story.

Me: Okay, remember I went to see Danny the other day, so we spent time together. I met his kids, some saga happened and he left me with them the entire day, he just disappeared, went completely. After that his friend, Mpho went looking for him. When they came back he was drunk, I was angry, we argued and a whole lot happened in just a few days. To just conclude the entire story, I agreed to be a nanny to his kids. I'm now working for him

Venes: You're so bad at explaining, now, your job as a stripper?

Me: I don't want to do that anymore yes it's a part of me and I'll always appreciate what that job has done for me but it's time I do something else you know, it's not really comfortable to be showing off your body to all those men especially when you're size 34.

Venes: A very sexy size 34, well I'm happy if you're happy with your decision. I'm loosing my roommate

Me: I'll continue paying rent just until you get someone else

Venes: Thanks girl, how much is he paying you? Better be good money

Me: It might be, it does seem as if he's got a good pocket

Venes: Hell yeah he does, have you seen this house! So you're just going to be a full time parent?

Me: I'm not a parent Venes, I'm just a nanny.

Venes: That's just the same thing.

We sat and talked till she had to go, she needed to take a shift for one of the girls at the club. I went to sit at the playroom with the kids till we heard Danny call on us

Onika: We're here daddy!!

He joined us and he played with his kids. He seemed to be scared yet he was trying his best. He's face was red and he didn't make much eye contact with them.

Me: I'll go make supper

Danny: I'll join you

Me: No, why don't you just stay here with the kids. They've missed you

Danny: Uhm... I.. I don't think thats... that's a good idea.

Me: It's a great idea, bye.

He sat down and sighed as Onika

passed him a toy teapot. I laughed a little and went to cook. I cooked a full seven colours meal. A lot has happened today, my feet are starting to get itchy, they have a tendency of getting swollen and itchy. After I was done, I took a shower and lotioned my feet with a gel which stops the itch. I went to the playroom and called the kids. They had their night shower while Danny prepared the table for supper.

Onika: It was good playing with Dad today, he never really plays with us

Danver: He used to play with me when mom was around but I was



also still just a kid

Me: And you are still just a kid. You're too matured for your age Danver, remember you're a kid not an adult. Don't be hard on yourself, I'm here to take care of you and your sister, it's not your responsibility anymore. And i'll try getting Daddy to play more with you guys.

Onika: Thank you Sis Nasi

We went downstairs and I dished up for everyone.

Danny: Thank you

Onika: Daddy can you feed me?

Danny: No!

He shouted, there wasn't any need for him to shout. Onika looked down and wiped her tears.

Danver: I'll feed you

Me: No Danver, eat your food. Come Onika, I'll feed you

Danny: Excuse me.

He got up and walked out the door. I sighed, this is bigger than I thought. Whatever it is that's affecting Danny, it's totally affecting the kids as well. I'm afraid there's already too much damage that's happened in this small family. After we were done with supper, I helped them brush their

teeth and tucked them in.

Danver: Promise you'll never leave us  
Sis Nasi?

Oh God, what am I getting myself into?  
These kids are slowly winning a huge  
part of my heart over. I sighed and  
nodded. That really wasn't convincing  
to them.

Onika: Promise

Me: I promise.

I kissed their foreheads and they  
slept. I went to the kitchen and found  
Danny washing dishes.

Me: I was going to wash them after  
tucking them in.

Danny: I'm sorry I shouted at her.

Me: I'm not the one you should be apologizing to.

Danny: I'll apologize to get also. I saw the way you looked at me, you were disappointed at me.

Me: Yes, yes I am. You can do better, you can be a better father. You just need to face your demons and let go of what's holding you back.

Goodnight Triston McKenzie.

He's eyes popped and he was shocked. I'm sure he's wondering how I know he's second name, I took a sneak peak at his ID book while he

was busy washing dishes, it was next to his phone and car keys. I changed into my PJs, my clothes were neatly packed in my closet and I got in bed and went off to lala land.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

## Insert 6

I woke up at 06:00am and brushed my teeth and went to the first floor with my PJs on. I quickly prepared a full English Breakfast and made lunchboxes for the kids and Danny. I know he did say there's no need but he needs proper food, who knows what they have at his office cafeteria? I went to wake the kids up and getting Onika to wake up was a bit of a challenge. She still wanted to sleep, she was barely awake as I bathed her. I dressed her up and combed her long curly hair. I then bathed Danver

and I got him in his school uniform. Combed his hair, he's hair is similar to Danny's and we took their bags and Danvers sport bag downstairs.

Me: Come have breakfast.

They ate while I put their lunch bags in their bags and cleaned around the kitchen. Danny came rushing downstairs looking frustrated yet he was so sexy in his black swaid suit I couldn't help but stare. He hadn't buttoned the two top buttons on his shirt, the blazor wasn't on as yet. It showed his body of perfection and his hair was still a bit wet. Am I seriously eyeing my boss right now?

Danny: Morning kids

Them: Morning

Danny: Morning Nasi.

Me: Morning, you look frustrated.

Danny: I don't usually wear a tie, but today I really have to wear it. I have important back to back meetings, I need to be presentable.

Me: Continue

Danny: I don't know how to tie it.

Me: Where is it?

Danny: My room.

I rolled my eyes at him and he laughed as we went to his room.



Honestly these stairs are tiring! I'm definitely going to loose weight in this house. I fixed his tie and buttoned his shirt, I put it around his neck and adjusted it properly. All this time he was looking deep into my eyes and I avoided eye contact with him.

Me: Done

Danny: Thank you. I'll be down for breakfast in a second

I went downstairs and dished up for him, the kids brushed their teeth and I was fully convinced they are ready for school.

Me: Sit down and wait for daddy.

He had his breakfast and went back upstairs for a few minutes. It was 7:30am when he came down and put the bags in his car.

Danny: Let's go kids, will you be okay alone today?

Me: Yes

Danny: Make yourself comfortable, explore the house. The driver will drop them off, I might be come home very late tonight.

Me: Okay, have a good productive day.

Danny: Thanks Nasi.

I smiled as I walked him out and they drove off as I was waving goodbye to the kids.

Me:(sighs) What do I do now?

I went to take a shower and changed into a summer dress and flipflops. I rushed downstairs when I heard some noise and shuffling. There were some woman coming in dressed in their uniforms.

Me: Morning

One of them: Morning Mam, I'm Dora. We're cleaners here, I hope we're not disturbing you in anyway.

Me: Oh Aunt'Dora don't call me Mam,

I'm also a help here, I'm the new babysitter. My name is Nasiphi

Dora: Ngyajabula ukukwaz mntanam( Good to meet you my child)  
I'll go do my duties now

Me: Anything I can help with?

Dora: No relax yourself young lady.  
We've got it covered.

I went to the kitchen and had breakfast then washed the dishes and pots I used. I cleaned at the kitchen and took a tub of Ice cream and watched tv. When I got bored, I took my books and went to lay by the garden. It's a very peaceful place to

be and I can read properly. I don't know how it happened but I woke up to the sound of my ringtone. Oh! My phone was ringing, I must have fallen asleep, it was very peaceful.

Me: Hello

Danny: Nasi, I'm very busy I won't be able to pick up the kids. I'm going to send a driver over, so you can fetch the kids. I already notified their teachers that you'll be picking them up.

Me: Okay.

Danny: Thank you

Me: For?

Danny: Taking care of my kids.

Me: It's a pleasure plus its my job.

Now work

He laughed at me and dropped the call. I quickly rushed to the house and changed my clothes, don't judge, I did say I change alot. Plus I'm going somewehere so I need to look a bit presentable, I wore black vest and a long closely yellow skirt with black sneakers. Took my bag and waited for the driver downstairs. After a few minutes he arrived and God! You create really good looking men! Shhhisaa! Ay! I felt my legs get wobbly.

Him:(clears throat) Mam! Mam are you okay?

Me: No I think I need a doctor

I made sure I whispered that and he smirked

Him: You might have to whisper, and talk a bit softer if you wanna mumble something. My ears are sharp so I heard that loud a clear. Well I'm Gumbi

Me: Gumbi?

Him: Yes thats my surname, my name is Fezile but they all call mr Gumbi. Now may we please leave?

Me: Are you going to ask me my

name?

Fezile: I already know your name  
Nasiphi, now lets go.

Me: Fine.

He opened the door for me and I  
thanked him. We drove off to fetch  
Onika. She was very happy to see me  
fetch her, she's slowly opening up to  
me and becoming very bubbly and  
thats makes me happy because she's  
getting able to show her true self.

Me: how was school?

Onika: Boring, it's just so boring.

Me: What do you know about  
boredom? Well you have to go



anyways

Fezile: Mr McKenzie said I should take you to the mall so you can go shopping

Me: Can you please drop us at home, we'll go to the mall when Danver has also joined us.

Fezile: Okay.

We got home and he dropped us off and said he'll be back before 14:30pm. I thanked him and helped Onika change into a beautiful summer dress with flip flops.

Me: Want something to eat?

Onika: Just one hotdog, we'll eat at

the mall with Danver.

Me: Seems like you have it all planned out?

Onika: Yes sis. When am I going to grade 1?

Me: In 2years, you need to go to grade R first.

Onika: Creche is boring, they teach us things I already know.

Me: How so?

Onika: Alphabets, numbers, poems, and riddles. They are all just boring, who can't count?

Me: Getting sassy aren't we? Well can

you count?

Onika: Yes

Me: Mmmmh.

I took a paper and pen and wrote a few sums for her.

Me: Answer these

Onika:  $50+50=100$ ,  $75+45=120$ ,  $89+100=189$  and  $456+65$  is  $521$ . See?

Me: Onika, how did you calculate all that in just a minute?

Onika: That's simple math.

Me: You're in creche, this shouldn't be simple math to you, simple math is  $2+2$  for you.

Onika: That's why I'm bored in creche.

I looked at her for a very long time.

Me: You're smart

Onika: Thank you

Me: Can you solve this,  $3y(x+1) - 10(x+1)$ , note that the x's are squared.

Onika: Okay.

She stared at it for a while and I knew she couldn't answer it. She passed the paper to me and she had got the answer right, it's  $(x-1)(3y-1)$

Me: So you're telling me that a 4year old, can answer this question, what do you know about factorisation?

Onika: I didn't know its called factorisation but I knew how to solve the answer.

Me: I need to speak to your father.

Onika: Mmmh

She continue eating like nothing just happened. I was stuck in my own thoughts as I was disturbed by Fezile

Fezile: Let's go

Me: Oh okay, come Onika.

I carried her to the car and Fezile drove us to Danvers school. When he saw me he came running and hugged me.

Me: Hello! How was your day?

Danver: It was good, I had lots of fun.

Hey Uncle Gumbi

Fezile: Danver

Danver: Hey Onika

Onika: Hey, come we're going to the mall.

Danver: Yey! Will we go to sausage saloon?

Me: If you want to

We got to the mall and went to the game area and they played games.

We played some games together and I sat with Fezile.

Fezile: You're good with them

Me: Thank you

Fezile: Do you have any of your own?

Me: No, not at all and you?

Fezile: He, he was stillborn.

Me: Oh I'm sorry must've been hard.

Fezile: It was but I got over it. I do always think about him but each day I heal and I've accepted it.

Me: Oh okay, if you say so.

They played as we watched them and Fezile kept on talking and telling me about his life, he is really bubbly and he laughs alot. I like he's personality.

After playing we went to eat at sausage saloon, got burgers from McDonalds for supper and went back home

#Danny

Today has been a very hectic day, I had to go on site and attend back to back meetings. Having many companies isn't that much fun, it's hardwork and sweat but at the end of the day, it brings good money that you enjoy. I'm at my construction company, I don't really work that much here since it is something I didn't really study or pay much attention to but when this company



was going down and was being sold, I bought it and brought it back to life. There is a CEO running this company for me but I do also check in and see how my business is running and he shouldn't be too comfortable.

Nonhle: Sir, you have a call coming through, its Mr Zulu.

I nodded and took the call

Me: Zulu

Lyanda: Why are you being so formal? Where are you? We're coming to your house

Me: No! No! Uhm come to my office, I'm there.

Lyanda: Why? We want to go to your house.

Me: L'yanda, just come to my office, who are you with?

L'yanda: The Gents, well besides Nkosi. Which office, be specific.

Me: MCC.

He dropped the call and I sighed. My gents all know about Nasi but they don't know that she is now working for me and worse of all, she's staying with me. I know they'll think I'm out of my mind but I need her close to me where I can see her and I enjoy her company. Its funny how I'm slowly

falling for her but I don't want it to go there, I'm very unsure of my feelings. Let's do this again, shall we? My name is Danny Triston McKenzie, the son of the one and only Triston McKenzie, well known as Razor. I'm 34 years of age and I have two beautiful kids, a son and a daughter whom I love with all my heart but I fail to express that to them. I'm married, 5 years ago I got married to a very beautiful woman whom I love very much after being together for two years so overall we were together for 3 years because 4 years ago she passed away after giving birth to my

daughter Onika. I never got the chance to say goodbye to her, to tell her how much I love her and will always do. I never got to hold her as she breathed her last breath.

Anyways, as I was going over some documents the guys came in and it was just too noisy. Brian, Thapelo and Mayi are also here explains the noise, Brian never shuts up.

Jabu: My main man.

Me: You sound so gay right now

Phila: I just need some food up in here.

I called Nonhle and she came into my

office.

Brian: Hello sexy mamma! Nice thighs

Mpho: This is why Sbahle will never date you, you too much of a Casanova

Brian: She loves me but she's playing hard to get, no one can say no to this yummy hunk.

Me: Keep telling yourself that, Nonhle please order some food for us.

Lubah: Nandos specifically. Lots and lots of meat

Athi: You and Nandos, Nonhle, order some good braai meet from the

shisanyama down the street.

Thabo: Now you're talking

Mayi: I just need some beer, add beer there too.

Mpho: And some hot sause.

Phila: Hey! She's not some waiter, that will be it. Better run before they end up sending you to buy an entire store.

She laughed and left us. There was just a moment of silence and I didn't like where this is going, they are going to ask me about my life and how do I feel.

Me: I'm okay, I know that's what

you're going to ask.

Thapelo: I'm glad you're doing okay  
man

Me: How old are you?

Thapelo: 26, but you know we're  
almost the same age man

Me: I'm 8years older than you  
monkey, how's life now that you're  
married?

Thapelo: It's good, still in the  
honeymoon phase but with Nceba  
pregnant she's driving me nuts!

Brian: I told you don't do it! I told you,  
don't get married, use a condom, if  
you don't have one, empty your

liquids on the side not in her man!  
Now she's expecting and driving you  
insane, unnecessary drama which  
you could've prevented.

Jabu: You just sick in the head dude,  
you're 28 and getting old, settle down.

Brian: I don't know what those words  
mean.

Bonga: I just want to know why you  
didn't want us to go to your house?

Me: Because I'm here and I'm working.

Lyanda: He's hiding that fit round ass  
girl ij his house! Who is she?

Me: What!?! How do you know about  
her?



L'yanda: Dude, you don't have high fences plus we stay on the damn same street, I got eyes. Plus I saw her this morning around 12 to be specific but I couldn't see her face, she was with Gumbi. Damn she got a nice ass!

Athi: I wanna see her!!

Mayi: You're married

Athi: And I love my wife so much but I'm also not blind.

We laughed that off and continued talking about ass.

Phila: But really, who is she?

I ran my hands through my hair and sighed

Jabu: Damn she's giving you trouble already?

Me: No, she's not. It's just complicated

Lubah: Who is she?

Me: Nasiphi

They all looked at me with the "Have you lost your mind look"

Bonga: Thee Nasiphi Dlamini? Nkosi needs to hear this.

He called Nkosi and he answered, it was on speaker.

Phila: Are you with Naye?

Nkosi: Yes

Jabu: Step out a bit, she must not hear this.

There was some shuffling and he told us he's clear now.

Thabo: So Danny is having Nasiphi over her house! Just listen to that.

Phila: He's damn tapping that ass!!!

Nkosi: What the hell! Danny!

Me: Guys! You sound like your wives now come on, I didn't know you guys talk so much and no, I'm not tapping her fine ass. Plus she's more than just having a fine ass, she's smart, beautiful, sexy, has a really great laugh and she cooks really well.

Mpho: What is she doing in your house?

Me: She's, she's my babysitter.

Athi: Qeee! Angena amanzi endlini!

Wow, do you know what you're doing?

Jabu: Calm down guys, I'm sure there's a perfect explanation for this

Me: There really isn't, I just need her next to me and she's good with the kids.

Nkosi: You do know the girls won't like this at all.

Brian: Why won't they like her?

Thapelo: I'm also confused as to why

you guys are so not supporting this

Oh, they've never seen her before  
thats why they don't understand.

Mpho: Because she's a complete  
replica of Zee, they look alike you'd  
swear they are identical twins.

Me: That's the problem but they are  
different.

Nkosi: How so?

Me: She's thicker, she's anti-social  
and reads alot. She's more of a nerd  
and Zee was an adrenalin junkie.

Bonga: Are you inlove with her?

Me: Inlove is too much, I just like her.

Nkosi : You like because of who she is or because she looks like Zee?

I just sighed and laid my head on the table. I am lying to myself when I say inlove is too much, I'm falling inlove with her by the day but I'm betraying Zee and our marriage mostly because Nasi looks so much like Zee. Nkosi is frustrating me with his intense questions.

Jabu: How does she like her ice cream?

Me: Vanilla ice cream with chocolate syrup.

Jabu: How does she sit on the couch

Me: Folds one leg and slouches on it.

Mpho: How is she different from Zee?  
That's exactly what Zee does.

Phila: How old is she?

Me: 25 turning 26, 11th November.

Phila: We need to look into this girl.

Nkosi: Will be in Durban, in two days  
time. Better think quick Danny, the  
girls won't like this at all

Danny: You just won't tell them.

Lubah: They'll find out when they  
crash your house in two days time.

Danny: What the hell will they be  
doing in my house? You won't allow

them to come

Mayi: Danny, its Onika's birthday in two days time.

I sighed and ran my hands through my hair.

Me: I need to go home. It's getting pretty late, your wives are waiting for you at home.

Jabu: You need to stop avoiding this, it's her birthday, the child will not understand why her birthday isn't celebrated like all the others. The girls are throwing her a party, it's going to happen whether you like it or not.



Danny: Just not at my house please, I cannot be having a party on the day my wife died!

Athi: It will be at my house. And you will come! End of story!

I drank a glass of whiskey and went out. They followed me and Bonga was still on the phone with Nkosi. Everyone got in their cars and we left. I got home and Nasi was watching T.V. I really didn't want to see her but my frustrations just softened up and I smiled.

Nasi: You're back, sorry we didn't cook. But we brought you a burger

too.

Me: Don't worry, I ate with the gents.

Nasi: I wanted to talk to you about Onika, her birthday is coming up and she told me you never throw her a birthday party....

I cut her off, I really didn't want to talk about it all. I'm an asshole I know but I cannot control what I feel.

Me: She will have a party! It will be at Athi's house, happy now? We'll all go

Nasi: Oh, okay. No need to shout.

Me: I just don't want to talk about it.

She looked at me for a very long time

and I was getting uncomfortable,  
surely she's seeing the monster that I  
am.

Nasi: We had a great day today and  
Fezile was good company, he's  
handsome.

She's trying to change the subject  
and she's gone to a damn worse one!

Me: Who?!

Nasi: Gumbi, the driver. He's very  
handsome

Me: Your job is to take care of my  
kids! Now stare at Gumbi and say  
he's handsome.

She just laughed at me and walked

over to me.

Nasi: Aaah Mr McKenzie, you're very funny. See I do my job very well and thank very much. Plus, its not my fault that my eyes like looking at handsome faces.

She winked at me and walked upstairs. Damn! This girl is going to drive me crazy I tell you.

Hope you enjoy!

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

## Insert 7

Waking up I decided I'm going to do this alone, whether Danny wants to participate on it or not. I'm going to focus on Onika's academic life and also make sure she's happy and well taken care off. I'm happy that his friends are throwing a birthday party for her but I am also nervous about meeting them. I don't feel really comfortable with being with many

people, I'm not used to it. But its  
always good to start something new.  
I took a shower and put on my robe.  
When I got to Danvers room he was  
already up

Me: Morning Little Danny

Danver: Morning, I'm not feeling well  
today.

Me: Why what's wrong?

Danver: My stomach, and I got a  
headache

Me: You look perfectly fine to me

Danver: I don't want to go to school

Me: Why?

Danver: I'm lazy.

Me: Sorry well you're going. Come.

Danver: But sis Nasi!

Me: Don't make me repeat myself sweetie.

He sighed and went to his bathroom, I bathed him and got him ready for school.

I woke Onika up and it was a challenge but I managed to get her ready on time. I went downstairs and Danny had already made breakfast. He was wearing jeans and a Lecoste golf t'shirt with flipflops. He's a flipflops guy I tell you.

Me: Morning

He didn't greet back but he just stared at me. I sighed and dished up for the kids. They ate and went to brush thier teeth.

Danny: You're wearing a robe only

Me: Yes

Danny: And you're comfortable?

Me: Very much

Danny: It doesn't seem as if you're wearing underwear

Me: I'm not and keep your eyes to yourself McKenzie

Danny: I'm sorry about shouting last



night

Me: No harm done.

Danny: Don't you want to wear something appropriate, the driver is coming soon.

Me: Fezile knows how to keep his eyes to himself. Though I really wouldn't mind if he saw me like this

I winked at him, I don't understand why he has a problem with it. And the robe is very fluffy and puff, it's not silk and tight.

Me: Kids! Come!

Onika: Coming!

They ran downstairs and took their bags. Some guy came in and I'm very sorry to judge, I'm not beautiful either but damn this guy is ugly. I looked at Danny and he laughed a bit and winked at me. What is this guy playing at?

Danny: Nasi, meet your new driver. He'll drive you and the kids everywhere you want to go.

Him: Hi mam, I'm Phumlani.

Me: Hi.

I took the kids bags to the car and said goodbye as they drove off. I went back inside and Danny had the

biggest smile on his face.

Danny: Handsome nhe?

Me: Mxm you're just impossible, what happened to Fezile?

Danny: I gave him another job, he can't be your driver

Me: Why!?

Danny: You said he's handsome

Me: Yes he is, and so?

Danny: He'll be a big distraction.

Me: Mmmmh.

Danny: What's that supposed to mean?

Me: Nothing. Aren't you going to work?

Danny: I'm going to Lubah's just for a while then I'll come back. I'll be at home today

Me: Okay

I had breakfast and cleaned the kitchen. After that I went to my room and took out my clothes and ironed them. I laid on my bed and read a book. While I was reading I was texting Venes and just catching up. I wanted to invite her to Onika's party but I also didn't want to because I didn't want to seem forward. I got a text from Danny telling me he has left. I don't get why didn't he just come up and tell me or just disappear. I still

can't believe he actually got another driver who is very ugly just because I said Fezile is handsome! After a few hours, I got ready so I can go to Onika's school. I wore a black leather pencil skirt, white blouse and pencil heels. Fixed my hair and took my bag then went downstairs. I put my bag on the kitchen counter and got the fright of my life when Danny held my waist from behind.

Me: Danny! You scared me!

I smacked his arm and he laughed. He had this freaky smile on his face and I managed to pull away from his arms. I then went to the fridge and

took out a bottle of water.

Danny: You look beautiful and very sexy.

Me: Thank you

Danny: Where are you going?

Me: Onika's school.

Danny: Why? What's wrong? Did something happen to her?

He seemed very worried and It made me happy, he does love and care for her but I just don't know why can't he express it. It's like there's something holding him back.

Me: No there's nothing wrong. I was

going to talk to you about it last night but you shut me out.

Danny: I haven't been in a good space. I'm just dealing with alot.

I wanted to say so many things but I kept it to myself. I didn't want to upset him, he seemed to be a bit better today.

Me: Well Onika is too smart for creche, she's actually too smart for her age. Yesterday, I made her answer some math questions since she said creche bores her. She answered them all excellently. Danny, she knows factorisation, even I

struggled with it in high school. I'm going to check on her school work and speak to her teachers just to find out how she does and their input in this. Have you helped her with her homework before?

Danny: No

Me: Okay, well will you come with me?

Danny: Uhm I don't know, I wanted to finish up my uhm... I wanted to...

I just looked at him as he mumbled nonsense.

Me: Go fix your hair, you're coming with me.

Danny: But Nasi I don't think that's a



good idea and whats wrong with my hair?

Me: I don't care what you say, just do as I say.

Danny: You don't get to do demands

Me: Well I just did. Now go

He laughed at me and went to his room. He came back and he had combed his hair and he was very handsome.

Me: You're so white

Danny: I'm a black man stuck in a white mans body. Can you drive?

Me: I had a drivers license years ago,

I don't even know where it is. The last time I drove, I was 17.

Danny: Okay, I don't want to die. Lets go

I laughed at him and we went to the garage.

Me: How many cars do you have?

Danny: Many.

I rolled my eyes and we got into his Mercedes-Benz GLE SUV Coupe.

Me: Nice ride

Danny: Thank you very much.

We drove in silence and got to Onika's school. She was very excited

to see us. A teacher came to us and smiled.

Her: Mr McKenzie, hi I'm Ms Ngubo.

Danny: Hi, this is Ms Dlamini.

She just smiled at me and didn't pay much attention to me. Okay coming with Danny here was a bad idea if this damn teacher will keep on looking at Danny like he's some god.

Me:(clears throat) Are you Onika McKenzie's teacher?

Her: No

Me: We need to speak to Onika's teacher?

A lady came from another class and called us in.

Her: Hi I'm Ms James, Onika's teacher.

Me: Hi, I'm Nasiphi Dlamini, Onika's Nanny.

Danny: I'm her father.

We sat down and she was very pleased to see us.

MsJ: I'm very happy you came, I've sent a letter on Onika's message book two times before trying to get a meeting with her guardians.

Me: We were not aware, I'll make sure I check it everyday from today

onwards. I just wanted to check how she's doing at school. I have noticed that she's very smart.

MsJ: Too smart for creche, she's gifted and we'll be delaying her if we kept her in creche when she's capable of doing more than what we do at this level.

Me: So what are you suggesting maybe?

MsJ: I was suggesting we move her over to Grade RR, I know she'll do really well there. Her age doesn't allow us to move her straight to Grade R.

Danny: Won't that disturb her in anyway? I mean she already started here, and to start something new within the year, making new friends in a new class. Will she be able to adapt to it.

MsJ: Yes she will, Onika is a very bubbly young person who can easily make friends. She's very talkative and it wouldn't be a problem at all. It's still early in the year and I definately believe she'll be able to work and adapt in the new class. Take some time and think about it, don't take too long though

Danny: I'll email you about our final

decision by Sunday.

Me: You'll get a call from us by Sunday, an e-mail seems too formal.

Danny laughed and we said our goodbyes.

Me: Onika, let's go sweetie.

She ran to me and I gave Danny her bag. I carried her and she told me about her day.

Danny: Can I carry her?

Me: Yes.

I smiled as I passed her over and she was a bit hesitant about it.

Me: It's okay babe. Its Daddy.

Danny wasn't even helping because he was getting his red face.

Me: Danny, just breathe.

I smiled at him and he held Onika tightly. She slept on her fathers shoulders and I felt good, atleast there's some progress. We got to the car and Danny got into the passengers seat.

Me: What are you doing?

Danny: She's asleep, you'll drive.

Me: Uhm okay.

Danny: Drive to Danvers school, we're picking him up.



Me: But school isn't out yet.

Danny: There's something called an early leave, now drive.

I was very nervous about driving again but as soon as the car started moving, it felt right and I was in my zone. I drove like it's something I've been doing daily

Danny: Woah! Slow down will you?  
We not in a rush

Me: Sorry, am I speeding?

Danny: You're flying!

I laughed at him, he has big eyes, and the way he popped them out was funny.

Danny: You're laughing

Me: You got huge eyes

Danny: But they are sexy.

Me: Whatever.

We got to Danvers school and picked him up. He was excited to see me and he was more excited when he saw me drive.

Danver: You should teach me how to drive Sis Nasi

Me: Daddy will teach you once you're old enough.

He nodded and concentrated on looking out the window.

Me: We're going to the mall, are you excited?

Danver: Yes

Me: We'll get presents for Onika then wrap them up while she's asleep, what will you buy her?

Danver: She always wants a tea set so I'll get her that.

Danny: I'm sure she'll appreciate that.

Danver: And what will you get her, Dad?

Danny: Uhm I'm not sure maybe a doll.

Danver: Onika hates dolls, she loves teddies. You would know that if you

spent time with us.

Me: Danver

Danny just turned red and sighed.

Danver is a small child yet he has anger inside of him.

Me: We'll talk when we're home  
Danny.

We got to the mall and I left Danny with the kids at the play centre while I shopped around for presents and some things I needed. When we were all done we had lunch and drove back home. Danver wanted to go take a nap with Onika. I tucked them in and changed into a tracksuit. I found

Danny resting his head on the kitchen counter. I took a bottle of water and gave it to him

Danny: I need Vodka, not water.

Me: I'm not giving you any alcohol

Danny

Danny: Just get me the damn bottle of Vodka Nasiphi!

Me: You cannot solve your problems with alcohol

Danny: I just need a damn drink!

He banged the counter and anger flashed in his eyes. I got scared but I didn't want to show it.

Me: Go get yourself your own damn drink. I'm a nanny here not a bartender

Danny: You got that right, you're just a nanny nothing more, so stop playing mother to me and stick to your job. I'll drink alcohol whenever I want to.

Me: I wish you invested all the time and love you give to those stupid bottles of alcohol, in your kids. You're capable of being a better father and that won't happen while you still stick your throat in that alcohol.

Danny: Don't you dare tell me that,

you don't know half of the things I go through everyday. You don't know how damaged I am! You cannot judge me.

Me: Yes I don't know what you've went through, but I do know you're being selfish by focusing on those things and letting them get in the way of loving those kids. They just need your love and presence as a father. You're damaged and you're damaging everyone around you. Do you see how Danver is turning out to be? That's all on you, you have a chance to make things right. Now leave and go drink that alcohol wherever but

not in this house, I will not let these kids see you drunk and helpless. They have witnessed enough!

Danny: Bitch!

Me: You can say that, it doesn't hurt me at all. You just need to grow some balls, and grow up. Face your demons and make things right. And Danny, I'm not afraid you, I will tell you the truth that you need to hear. Yes I do respect you but I won't take any shit from you.

Danny: I'm leaving this house before I do something I'll regret.

Me: You know your way to the door.



He was so angry, I don't even know where I got this bravery from. When he banged the door, I flinched a bit and calmed down when I was finally alone.

Me: Keep him safe oh Lord, show your light and mercy upon his life. Guide him and change his life for the better. Let him be able to heal and forgive himself. In the name of Jesus I pray, amen.

I sighed and got the shock of my life when I felt him touch me. He hugged me from the back and the hug was too tight. Didn't he just leave? I closed my eyes as I felt his breathe

on my neck.

Danny: Why are you still praying for me when I've been a total jerk to you? Why didn't you leave?

Me: I believe in God and I believe in you. I want you to heal and love your children.

Danny: I don't know how to love anymore. I'm afraid of even touching my own kids, I've become something I don't even know.

Me: Trust in God, he will show you the way. Forgive yourself and put in the extra effort and be a good father, they need you.

Danny: Don't you also need me? I know I need you

Me:(sighs) I do need you but they need you more. I'm here for them as much as I'm here for you.

I turned and hugged him for a while. He's taller than me and I had my head on his chest.

Me: Let go now, I want to cook.

Danny: I'll help you

Me: Thank you

Danny: No, Thank you Nasiphi.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's  
of friends

#LBAR

Insert 8

Today is Friday and it is Onika's  
birthday. She's finally turning 5years  
and she's very happy she's the same  
age as Danver though he is older by a  
few months. I woke up and took a  
shower. Wore my robe and went to

make breakfast, the party will start at 11am. Danny bought a beautiful pink princess dress for Onika and a tiara. They were both still asleep so I let them be since its still early. I went to my closet and took out a long summer dress that I will wear. When I was going back downstairs I came across Danny, he was carrying a bottle of whiskey and walking around in his boxer shorts. I just shook my head and he blocked my way.

Danny: I really need this today.

Me: I see.

Onika and Danver woke up and we all

had breakfast together. We all wished Onika a good blessed day as she is turning 5. She was very happy and excited as I prepared her for the day and got her dressed up.

Danny: You look beautiful Princess Onika.

Onika: Thank you

Danny got Danver dressed and I was very impressed, at least it's some progress.

Danny: Go dress up so we can get going. I don't like being late

I rolled my eyes at him and got dressed. I put on some sandals and

combed my big afro. I won't tie it today, plus I won't put a weave on. I took my bag and went downstairs and they were waiting for me.

Danny: You took very long

Me: That was just 5mins

Danny: 45mins is 5minutes to you?

Me: Didn't realize I took that long.

Onika: Can we go please?

She rolled her eyes and I laughed at her.

Me: Getting sassy aren't we 5year old?

Onika: Could say so.

Me: Just for today

She laughed and nodded. She's a beautiful sassy little diva. We got into the car and drove off to Athi's it is just like a 3minute drive. My heart was beating really fast and I was very nervous.

Danny: Let's go.

We got out of the car, the house was big and it seems as if they all rich and successful. I was carrying Onika as she put her head on my shoulder and sucked her thumb. When we got in the kitchen there were many ladies. One of them just got so shocked and dropped a glass on the floor. The other just hailed and cried out loud.



What is going on here? Most of them couldn't stop staring at me. Athi took the one who was crying outside while Danny also took me outside.

Me: What is going on?

Danny: You look like someone we know

Me: So? Why should they cry like that? Is there something you're not telling me?

I put Onika down and she ran to her friends.

Danny: You look like my late wife, who is Sneh's sister.

Me: The one who cried?

Danny: Yes

Me: Danny

I sighed and just didn't even know what to do or how to take it.

Me: Is that why Danver called me mommy when he first met me?

Danny: Yes

Me: Danny McKenzie, you don't do that.

Danny: Do what?

Me: You only became my friend because I looked like your wife, you keep me around you because I look like your wife.

Danny: Sort of but you're different from her, you're just...

Me: Just shut up.

We went back inside and it was visible that he was angry. But I have every right to be angry at him. I just don't even know what to say or think about this. One lady approached me

Her: Hi, I'm Ntokozo Zulu, Lyanda's wife.

Me: Hi, I'm Nasiphi Dlamini, Onika and Danvers nanny.

Ntoko: Nice to meet you. Thats Sneh, Nangamso, Kamogelang, Phelokazi, Lebo, Siya, Nceba, Sbahle and

Babalwa. And standing there is Belinda, Zandi and Naye. The others are just all over the house so you'll meet them later

Phila: Hey Nasi, nice to see you again

Zandi: So you've met her before?

Mpho: Yes and that doesn't matter now. Lets go to the garden and enjoy the child's party.

Jabu: Without any drama

Danny: Please

Naye: Come this side Nasiphi, we wouldn't want to be bored with the guys alone.

Brian: I think it's best if we all sit together. All of us

We all went out to the garden and sat together, well I was sitting alone while the others sat with their spouses, Danny was sitting with Brian, I guess they are the only single men there. Sbahle came to sit next to me

Sbahle: Hey girl, we the only one's who don't have dick next to us. I'm dry, like really dry down there.

Mpho: Sbahle! I can hear you.

She looked down and laughed. Okay I'm confused here but I won't even

ask, the amount of eyes staring at me are enough.

Sbahle: Sorry, they all are very over protective of me, especially Mpho, he's like my father. I'm Zandi's little sister by the way.

Me: I can tell, you look alike.

Phelo: Sooo are you and Danny like a couple?

Belinda: Phelo! She did say she's Onika's nanny

Sneh: And that's where she should be, sitting with the nannys watching the kids instead of sitting here.

Kamo: That's right

Bonga: Ladies, please. That's unnecessary.

Siya: Why didn't you atleast tell us because it seems as if you all know her? A warning would've been nice.

Phila: It's not like you all would've wanted her here.

Bee: Why is she here?

Danny: Because I invited her here and because the kids love her.

Sneh: Those are my sisters kids, those are my kids!

I wanted to say something but I just kept quiet.

Danny: Those are my kids and I know what's best for them.

Zandi: And she is? You're confusing the kids.

She was very calm yet you could see she was on the verge of letting it pour. Yes! She just cried. Mpho was holding her and Ntokozo started crying too. Okay this is getting a tad bit too much for me. I sighed and closed my eyes saying a silent prayer.

Lubah: Do you want some water Nasi?

Me: Yes please

He passed me a bottle of water and his wife gave me the "bitch that's my



man" look.

Nceba: Who are you?

Me: What do you mean? I'm Nasiphi Dlamini

Another girl walked in and she seemed to be also shocked

Her: Zee? Guys, I don't think its April fools today.

Jabu: We not pulling any prank either. Nongcebo, just sit down.

I figured her name is Nongcebo. She looked very beautiful and had a nice body.

Nongcebo: Well mom is coming and

you guys better have an explanation.  
She will want to know whats going on.

Nkosi: Why is mom here?

Nongcebo: She wasn't going to miss this party at all. You know how your mother is, she mothers all of us and especially her grandkids.

Sneh: It will be good to see her, haven't seen her in a while.

So she can speak decently other than being rude. A beautiful young but old woman came in, she is in 6inch heels I tell you and she really looks like the grannies that don't age. She looked at me and than sat down.

Her: Danny McKenzie, what have you done?

How did she know I'm here with Danny?

Danny: MaQ, can we talk about this later?

MaQ: No son we can't, we need to address this issue before it gets to your fathers.

Fathers? Does she have two husbands? Damn I'm the most confused person on earth right now. They are all just playing with my mind and I've met enough people for today.

Sneh: Ma, I'll explain what's going on!

This big ass bitch did her research really good! She knew she looks like Zee and wormed herself into Danny's life! Because he is still vulnerable and hasn't accepted the fact that he'll never see Zee again. Knowing that she is a complete replica of Zee! She is with Danny because she is after his money! She is using the kids! To get to Danny and his wealthy pocket!

Kamo: What do you want! Huh? Who sent you here!

Siya: Okay, lets all just calm down please.

Naye: Yes! Calm down, see shes even

crying this is no way to treat someone.

Ntokozo: Quit the bullshit Naye! This is no time to play Queen Nokukhanya! Who knows she might be with Russians!

Phelo: Ntokozo.

Belinda: Shut up Phelokazi!

L'yanda: You all need to shut up! You're now fighting amongst yourselves. You've never done that before and it definitely won't start now.

Zandy: It has never happened and now that shes here its happening!

She's taring us apart and her plan is working perfectly! You're damaging all of us!

Everyone was nows screaming at the top of their voices and arguing. I just couldn't help but cry and stand up.

Nkosi: That is enough!

He banged the table and everyone just froze and looked at him. Damn this guy is scary.

Nkosi: Where are you going?

Me: I think it's best if I leave.

Phelo: Damn right it is.

Bee: Go back to wherever you came

from.

Danny: No one is leaving. Sit down  
Nasiphi

Me: Danny! I want to leave and you're  
not going to stop me...

He gave me such a bad eye and I  
didn't even continue speaking. As  
much as I was scared right now but  
I'm not going to sit here and listen to  
them speak to me like this. Danver  
came running to me and I carried him.

Danver: Are you crying?

Me: No hunny, I'm not. There was just  
something in my eyes. Are you having  
fun?

Danver: Yes, and Onika is having fun too. She wants you to come play with us.

Me: I'm a bit tired. I need to go home, I'll see you later.

Belinda: You stay together! It gets worse!

Danver: Why? Please don't leave.

Onika also came to me and I put Danver down and kneeled in front of them.

Onika: Where are you going? Let's go play and when I cut the cake, I want to cut it with you.

Sneh: I always do that with you Onika,



we'll do it together.

Onika: I wanna do it with Sis Nasi

Sneh: Mpho! She is taking away my kids!

She cried and honestly I was getting really annoyed and fed up by her.

Danny: Let her leave if she wants to.

Danver: No Danny! She will not leave. She's been more of a parent to us than you have been.

Danny: Don't talk to me like that!

Me: Don't shout at the kid! Danver, you don't talk to daddy like that.

Danver: If she leaves, we leave with

her.

He held Onika's hand and I just cried. These kids are just 5year olds and this is happening. Children their age shouldn't even know and experience what these two have experienced.

Danver is too matured for his age and he has taken the role of being a leader to Onika.

Me: Danver, Onika, go play. I'm not leaving. I'll be with you shortly, now smile birthday girl and have fun. I'm coming

Onika: Promise you won't leave?

Me: I promise.

I kissed their foreheads and they ran to go play.

Me: See I've sat there and listened to all of you talk bullshit about me and I'm not going to take it anymore. With all due respect, I'm not some idiot that you will run all over my head and say shit about me which is not even true! I didn't know this man until he saved me from some man who would've did unthinkable things to me that night. Yes, he met me as a stripper and you can look at me and judge me all you want but some of us didn't get everything on a silver platter.

Nangamso: You don't know the shit we've went through.

Me: Yes I don't and you also don't know my shit so lets not judge each other and keep things to ourselves. Its none of my business as much as my business is none of yours. We're all adults here and you've been behaving like kids. If you have a problem with me you should've just said so and stopped accusing me of things I have no intention of doing and things I don't even know about, me working with what Russians when I've never even left the country! When I've never even seen JHB! What the

fuck would I be doing in Russia!?

Nkosi: Mind your language

Me: Sorry. I'm sorry if I look like Zee, I didn't even know about that till today, I'm sorry if my presence here opened up old wounds which clearly you all haven't dealt with and Zandy, you said I'm damaging all of you but honestly you're just all damaged and you're looking for someone to pin it all on. You so stuck on pretending to be happy yet you're not dealing with your loss and forgiving yourselves and moving on. I don't know how she died but its visible that you all blame yourself, that you wish you could've

done something to protect her but you couldn't! Now face it and move on! You saying these are your kids Sneh! Why haven't you seen that these kids are traumatized and need help! Especially Danver! He's angry! Hes angry at you all and his father! He is 5years old but look at him! Did you see the way he was? Onika doesn't know her fathers love and it is very clear that she doesn't even know the love of a mother. You've been focusing on yourselves but haven't really focused on the affect it has on them. I haven't been around for a while but I've seen how he fails

to be a father to them, you babysit a 34year old man and sugarcoat him yet you fail to do that to his kids. He is a grown ass man! He doesnt need you to call him every hour just to check up on him, he hasn't dealt with the loss of his wife because you are all soft on him! You don't give him space to breathe and accept that his wife is gone and never coming back. I'm not telling you all to forget about her but I'm telling you to forgive yourselves and move on. Take care of those kids! They need love and support, they need you Danny but you cannot even hold them and love them!

You do not even celebrate your child's birthday, you don't even know that she hates dolls and loves teddies, you don't know that she prefers having hotdogs than having pasta. She is very bubbly smart and energetic and you don't even know most things about her, buying her clothes and fancy shoes isn't what she needs. She needs you and no body else. And, I'm not here after Danny's money, I wouldn't even care if he didn't pay me for being a nanny to his kids because I love them and I care for them. I want them to be happy, and I won't give you the



satisfaction and leave, I will stay here and be a parent to those kids, I'll be something that they don't have and that they long for. Now you stay here and sip on your alcohol, seems as if thats all you know. Thats the thing about you rich people, you think money solves everything. Face your demons before they bury you alive.

Danny: Nasiphi

Me: Don't! Don't come near me.

Nkosinathi followed me as I was walking out.

Me: Same goes for you Nkosinathi!  
Dont even say a word.

He looked at me with pleading eyes.

Me: I'm not leaving

Nkosi: Thank you

I went to the kids and they introduced me to all the other kids. We played till I was very tired and everyone was called to the dinning room. It was time for speeches and after that Onika was called to cut the cake. She dragged me along and Danny also came.

Danny: May I?

I nodded. And we held the knife together and helped Onika cut the cake. There was alot of cheering

going on and Nceba served everyone with the help of some other people.

Naye came to sit next to me followed by Nangamso

Ngamso: I'm sorry for the way we spoke to you.

Naye: We're really sorry for being bitchy. It all came as a surprise to us and it really did open up what we thought we have moved on from.

Ngamso: The way you look like Zee is really creepy.

I laughed at them and ate my cake. In all honesty I've already forgiven them, yes I do understand what they are

going through.

Me: It's okay, I forgive you two because you had the decency to come apologize to me. I understand what you're all dealing with but that didn't give you any right to talk to me that way.

I stood up and left them sitting there. I went to the bathroom and bumped into Sneh. She looked at me with glassy eyes and I just walked away.

The day continued and it was peaceful. It was awkward between all of us but Athi tried cracking a few jokes with Thapelo being the only one who really laughs at them. There

were fake laughs here and there. The creepy stares didn't stop and I wasn't comfortable at all. Danny and I went home, the kids were having a sleep over. On the way back it was just awkward silence and I wasn't going to be the one who breaks it first. I went straight to my room, I'm really tired and I'm not in the mood to bath. Just as I was about to get in bed, Danny walked in.

Me: You must learn how to knock

Danny: You're all dressed up so there's no harm done.

Me: What do you want?

Danny: We need to talk.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment.

Suggest page to friends and friend's  
of friends

#LBAR

Insert 9

#Danny

This girl is driving me crazy! Like

literally driving me crazy and I'm falling deeper inlove with her by the day. I love her attitude, I love how she can stand up to me and stands for her word and she doesn't back down. She's a strong woman and that's just all I need. She knows how to put me in the right place yet she also respects me, cares for me and she prays for me. What more would I even want? She's also so damn sexy and beautiful. She's very natural, no make up, simple afro and when she has a weave on, she just makes a pony tail. So simple yet so sophisticated. The more I'm around

her is the more I realize that she's different from Ziyanda, Zee never challenged me, she agreed with most things I said and she was just easy, we never really even argued that much yet she also had this side to her, the adrenalin junkie side, the dangerous side and she loved motor bikes so much and she had a thing for guns. I loved her, I still do love Zee and I'll always love her with all my heart but I am also falling inlove with Nasiphi. I just feel my blood boiling and whenever we argue I'm just so turned on. I know it's weird but it's true. I'm not just only physically



attracted to her but I love her. Yes I do love her and it scares me plus I do feel very guilty. Would Zee be okay if I move on from her after it just being 4years? Has it been long enough? After what happened today, I realized that I she knows how to stand up for herself. She is the most honest person and she never sugarcoats the truth. I need to be honest with her and I'm nervous about how she'll take all this. So when we got home she didn't even talk to me, atleast she allowed me to cut the cake with her and Onika. She's just such a good person, no matter how much you hurt

her she still does consider your feelings. I've been nothing but a jerk to her. And I need to apologize. I opened her door and she was irritated that I didn't knock. She wasn't naked so it isn't a big deal.

Me: We need to talk

Nasi: Talk, I wanna sleep.

Me: No need to be moody

#Nasi

I looked at this man as he said "No need to be moody" he really doesn't know me! I just stood up and went to the bathroom and changed into my pyjamas.

Danny: You were really fine in your dress

Me: You're not here to tell me about what I should or shouldn't wear. Now talk, I want to sleep.

Danny: Let's go to the lounge please, I feel as if, if we stay here longer I won't be able to contain myself.

I laughed at him and we went to the lounge.

Danny: I'm sorry about today Nasiphi

Me: I don't want an apology but I do want an explanation.

Danny: Well honestly you look like my wife as I told you earlier, you're like

identical that's why I was so  
dumbstruck when I first saw you.

Me: Why? Why am I here? Why did  
you want to keep on seeing me?

Danny: I don't know

Me: Don't tell me those lies, you kept  
wanting to see me because I look like  
your wife. You're using me to fill that  
empty space inside of you.

Danny: That's not true. I know you  
won't believe this but I like you, you're  
very different from my wife.

Me: That doesn't count. I look like her!  
So they say, it's really creepy. And all  
your friends just look at me like they

want to strangle me.

Danny: Follow me

Me: We're talking here! You need to listen to me

Danny: Babe, we have all night long. I'll listen to you.

I don't know why my emotions are betraying me! I blushed and looked down.

Me: Don't call me that.

Danny: Just come.

He held my hand and we went downstairs.

Danny: Don't freak out

Me: I'll try.

He opened the door and sighed

Me: This must not be some fifty shades shit.

Danny: I wish it was.

He laughed at me and we went inside.  
It was still dark

Danny: I need you to know that I love you for who you are and I just don't know why did you have to look like her. I love you and it scares me because I don't want you to think I'm using you to replace her. This will be a bit freaky but don't panic.

He turned on the light and there were

so many pictures of me all over the room. Oh, no this isn't me! No wait, no! Now I just understand why those girls acted that way.

Me: Is this your wife?

Danny: Yes this is Zee, Ziyanda Bhengu. The mother of my kids.

I just sat down and cried. I don't know, I usually don't just cry so easily but I know understood Sneh's pain. I don't have a sister and if I had one and she passed away, and someone so identical to her comes suddenly in my life with her husband. It's all just creepy and scary and just too

emotional. This is why Danver called me mom. This is why they love me and we get along, I look like their mom.

Danny: She died after giving birth to Onika. I never got the chance to say goodbye, Naye was there, she's a gynae. She held her hand and her last words were that she takes care of her kids. She knew I wouldn't be able to do this, that I wouldn't be able to do it alone. I failed her, we all did. I sometimes find myself blaming my daughter for my wives death, that if she wasn't conceived it would be better. That if I was given a chance to



decide who they should save, whether my wife or the child. She gave birth and she was okay for a few minutes but after that she didn't make it. We couldn't do anything to save her, I couldn't protect my wife. I lost her!

Me: It wasn't your fault or anyone else's for that matter. She knew it was her time and she accepted it. She loved you and the kids, I don't know much about her but I know she believed in you, she wanted you to take care of her children and prove all those who thought you couldn't wrong. Now what are you doing?

You're failing her Danny. You have a room full of her pictures, clothes and art pieces. You haven't moved on from her, you've had four years to mourn her and accept that she's gone but you haven't. You're standing in one place moving around in circles, you not moving forward in a straight line, you're not taking charge of your life and doing what's best for you and your kids. Danny I know there's something in there, inside your heart and beautiful soul that loves and cares for your children. You just need to learn how to express it.

Danny: I cannot, I've tried so many

times but failed. I've blamed Onika for her mothers death, from the day she was born she doesn't know the love of a father, When my wife was still around Danver and I were inseparable but now he's angry at me. So angry that he calls his own father by name at just 5years old. I've messed up my kids

Me: And you can fix that mess. It's not too late.

Danny: I need you Nasiphi, I need you to help me.

Me: I'll be here for you, I'll help you but you also need to help yourself.

Danny: What do you mean?

Me: You need to talk to someone, a therapist maybe

Danny: I'm not about to talk to some stranger about my personal life.

Me: Find someone who you can talk to and confide in.

Danny: I can talk to you

Me: No, not me Danny. Someone else

Danny: I can talk to the former King.

Me: Former King?

Danny: Nkosinathi is a King, I can talk to his father.

Me: What did MaQ mean when he

said your fathers?

Danny: We call her MaQ, she's the Queen Mother. She was talking about Nkosi's father and my father, Razor.

Me: Oh I understand. Can we get out of here?

Danny: You can go, I'll stay for a few minutes.

Me: Okay.

I left him there and went to my room. I don't know how but I just got too emotional and I cried, my pillow was getting wet. After a few minutes Danny walked in and it was visible that he had been crying. He laid on

the bed next to me and made me sleep on his chest. He held me tightly and as much as I knew this was wrong, it felt so right.

Me: Danny, don't do this please.

Danny: Please, I need to hold you.  
Just for tonight

Me: You need to stop, I'm not going to be your rebound. You just need to hold me so you can think of your wife. If there weren't any kids involved here I would've left but I can't leave because I love them. I don't want to be her replacement

Danny: I know and understand how

you feel. But this is me, being genuine to you. I'm falling inlove with you Nasiphi and I cannot control my feelings.

Me: Thats a lie, stop telling yourself that lie because you love the idea of me looking like your wife.

Danny: That's not true! I am falling inlove with you for who you are! It wasn't my intention to fall inlove with you, I fell inlove with you before I even got to see your face! I fell inlove with you the day I met you, you know what I'm saying is true. I know our situation is very complicated and it scares me too because I know I will

hurt you, I'm not perfect at all Nasiphi. I don't want you to fall inlove with me because I'm a damaged man! I'm a mess and I cannot show love anymore. I know that I will hurt you, I don't want to but I know I will. Just to save yourself from me, please don't fall inlove with me.

Me: It's too late for you to say that now, I am falling for you Danny McKenzie.

Danny: I know, I see the way you look at me and it turns me on. It makes my blood boil and thats the instant connection we had. We have a connection that even I, cannot



understand but it is dangerous. I love you and I don't want to hurt you.

That's why I choose to try and avoid these feelings, please do so too. Just for your own safety and your heart's safety.

Me: Then don't hold me, leave me alone Danny

Danny: Just let me hold you, just for tonight. I know you want it too, it's just for tonight. Don't fight me

Me: This is just too much for me. I've never been in a relationship before nor even fall in love with someone. These feelings are foreign to me and

thats scary. It hurts more that I'm falling for a man who's late wife looks so much like me and it is highly possible that you're only falling for me because I look like your wife!

Danny: Ssssh, close your eyes.

Me: No

Danny: Close your eyes Nasiphi

Me: No, I won't.

Danny: You need to stop fighting me.

Just do as I say

I sighed and closed my eyes. I felt his lips on mine and he had this minty refreshing breath. I opened my eyes and moved back.

Me: I can't do this

Danny: I'm sorry, I shouldn't have done that.

Me: No it's not you, It's just that I've never been kissed before. I don't know how to kiss

Danny looked at me with an amused face and he laughed. He literally laughed at me! I felt so shy and embarrassed.

Danny: You're really good at jokes  
Nasi.

Me: I'm not joking.

He looked at me and suddenly his expression changed. He become so

serious.

Danny: I'm sorry I laughed. I just thought you're joking

Me: It's okay

Danny: You amaze me, how can a beautiful sexy and amazing girl like you, has never been kissed ever before?

Me: I've had two boyfriends before but you know those where you can just tell they with you just so they can get some pussy. They both didn't even last a week, I was 20 then.

Otherwise growing up I was focused on working, school and taking care of

my mom. I had no time to have friends or any boyfriend.

Danny: So you're still a virgin?

Me: Yes

Danny: Wow

Me: Embarrassing I know

Danny: It's not embarrassing, It's very special and unique. I'm just amazed. Now can I do the honours of being the first guy who kisses you?

I smiled and nodded. I closed my eyes and he first baby kissed my nose and I laughed. He kissed my lips so passionately and it just sent shivers down my spine. At first I

didn't kiss him back because I didn't know what to do.

Danny: Relax

He smirked and then kissed me again. We were both now kissing each and it felt so right and so good. He squeezed my left boob and started kissing my neck. I never knew that I could feel this way. Strange sounds escaped from my mouth, dear Lord I was moaning! He laid me ontop of him and we kissed for a while as he was squeezing my butt and holding me tightly.

Danny: You're very curvy, you're a full

package.

I laughed at him and I wanted to get off him but he held me

Me: What?

Danny: Where are you going?

Me: I'm heavy Danny, I want to get off you.

Danny: You're not heavy, you need to stop feeling insecure about your body. You're thick and very beautiful. You'd be very ugly if you were thin.

Me: I was actually thinking of going on diet

Danny: Don't do that.

I laughed at him and nodded. As I was laying on him, I felt his manhood humping and pumping! I literally just laughed and he smiled. I held it and moved it to the side. He's eyes popped and he's adams apple kept on moving weirdly

Danny: What are you doing?

Me: It was making me uncomfortable so I moved it to the side.

Danny: You my lady, are very brave.

I laughed at him and we kissed again. I closed my eyes and thought about what just happened. How we are just complicating things between us. I



wonder whats in store for us but I know there'll never be a relationship between us. I just hope these feelings will go away and we'll be able to just move on and be normal. All these things of love and feelings are just bad and complicated. I just wish there wasn't anything such as feelings. I looked at him and he smiled. We started talking about crazy stuff until he fell asleep. I sighed and decided to also sleep.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's

of friends

#LBAR

Insert 10

I woke up with his head on my boobs. Like really Danny? What I do know is that Danny can take up the entire bed while you're left with just one side. Yey ulala kakubi lobhuti!(he's a bad sleeper) I slightly pushed him aside but he held onto me.

Danny: Don't leave me

Me: I have to go shower

Danny: Nasi, It's not even 7am yet.  
Just sleep

Me: Danny, move!

Danny: I'm not going to move and you  
need to sleep.

He kissed my neck and I smiled. He  
let him be and just closed my eyes  
but I wasn't asleep at all. He was still  
deep in his sleep so I took this  
chance and admired the beautiful  
creation of God. He is really  
handsome, his eyebrows aren't  
exactly black. He's got pink lips, I've

noticed they turn red when he drinks alcohol. I woke up after a few hours, I guess I must have also fallen asleep while admiring his physical attributes. I looked at the time and it was 10:50am, why didn't he wake me up! I went to the bathroom and took a bath. I wore tight jeans and a baggy t-shirt which I tied on the side and slippers. I went downstairs and Danny was busy on his laptop.

Me: Morning

Danny: Hey

I noticed something creepy and he laughed

Me: Your eyes are green?

Danny: I'm getting a flue

Me: So your eyes turn green when you get flue?

Danny: Sort of

Me: You're strange.

Danny: Your breakfast is in the microwave

Me: Thank you very much

Danny: My friends are coming over in a few minutes

Me: Oh

Danny: Don't worry its just the guys, the ladies will come in the afternoon.

We're going to have a braai cause cooking for all of them will be a lot of work.

Me: Okay

I had my breakfast and washed the dishes. As I was on my way to the TV room. There was just a really really loud noise coming over. Why couldnt they chill at the lounge.

Them: Hey Nasi!!!

Oh God! My ears will be blocked, why do they have to scream and shout. Can't they just talk decently?

Me: Hi

Phila: Remote please, we cannot

watch some girly ish. There's a soccer game we need to rewatch.

Brian: My big brother is just not a gentleman at all.

Lubah: It's not like you would've enjoyed watching Life of Kylie.

Brian: I really do enjoy watching it. It's a great show

Mayi: Stop it

Me: Stop what?

Danny: He's just trying to score points at you

Me: Low blow

They all laughed at him, Bonga is just

the loudest yet he is as scary as Nkosinathi. Mpho seems like the quiet one and Athi is the comedian, Mayi, I just don't understand him and Jabu, they are weird. Thabo is too much of a flirt and he stares alot. Then theres Brian and Thapelo, they are the young ones well Brian is older than me by a year I think and Thapelo seems like hes my age. I'm not about to ask how old they are. Lubah, seems like he's in between being serious and being a joker. L'yanda, is just the most handsome and he smiles alot. Phila, he checks on his wife every 30minutes and he teases



everyone. Than there's Danny, he seems as if he's the most confusing person here. I just cannot figure him out at all. I've just been sitting here analysing them and I don't even know what they are talking about.

Jabu: You seem a bit lost

Me: No, I was just thinking.

Bonga: You good? Don't worry about the wives, we sorted them out. They won't be any trouble.

Phila: Don't be too sure about Zandi and Sneh. Those two were just really close with Zee and Ntokozo had this strange bond with Zee yet they are

completely different people.

I nodded and tried concentrating on the game but it was really boring. I went to the kitchen and got some snacks. Just when I opened my chips, Phila dug in.

Me: You're really on a mission to abuse me.

Phila: You're sitting next to me

Me: Remind me to never sit next to you again.

Danny: Philasande we'll have a problem.

I smiled and Jabu winked at me. And did something with his fingers. I

shrugged and looked at him then he laughed

Phila: He means, Danny is turning to a softy for you.

Thabo: We need food like I'm hungry

Mpho: You're the chef, cook.

Thabo: I'm lazy.

Danny: Let's go shopping, grocery shopping.

Me: Great, theres some things I need to get for the kids as well. And some meds for your flue. Let me go change

Athi: Why?

Me: Because we're going to the mall

and I cannot go looking like this

L'yanda: What's wrong with what you're wearing?

Me: You'll never understand.

Lubah: Don't worry I understand, Belinda can change 6times a day.

I laughed and went to change. After that we left, I was in the car with L'yanda, Danny and Mayi. We got to the mall and it felt weird being the only female walking with so many guys, who have great well built bodies and are all very handsome.

Me: People are staring

Thapelo: Ladies are staring, they

looking at this hot guy.

We just laughed at him and I do know Nceba would kill him if he cheated.

Those girls seem as if they just know how to attack.

Phila: We're going to checkers

Nkosi: Why didn't we just go to Davenport if we were going to go to Checkers?

Bonga: He hates malls, he doesn't like being in a crowd, his fame made him like this.

Me: He's famous?

Thabo: Young lady, where have you been?

Phila: Have you not seen us on Tv or magazines? Nkosi's big wedding? Him working internationally?

Me: Nop

Athi: Wow

I chuckled and we continued with our shopping. After we got everything we need, we went to bluff to get some meat and bought lots of liquor. The drive back home was really awesome and I must say, they are a loud lovely bunch to hang out with. Danny was also okay, free and laughing. He seemed really really happy.

Me: I'll start making some salads and

pap

Jabu: Oh okay, the girls usually do that but go along. I'm sure they won't mind.

I nodded and started cooking. They sat around the kitchen counter, Mpho and Thabo were helping me and the others were playing cards.

Me: I'm really good at crazy 8. Can I play?

Lubah: You'll get your ass kicked

Me: I'm sure I won't.

Nkosi: Okay then, Bonga, shuffle the cards.

Mayi: He is boss on this game

Me: Make space for a new boss lady.

They all laughed and cheered

Thapelo: Woah! Lets make a bet shall we? All those in favour of Nkosi stand next to him. All those in favour of Nasiphi stand next to her.

There was movement all over, only Phila, Thabo and Mpho were on my side. We placed R100 each and I just had to win this. We started playing and it was a long intense game

Athi: I'm really starting to think twice

Lubah: It's a tight game man



Mpho: There can only be one winner

Me: And thats me, checkmate Mr Nkosinathi!

Mpho: We won!!!

We were cheering and making a loud noise! We were all happy and got caught up in the moment I guess because we were all just pretty loud and Mpho was carrying me and jumping around.

"GET OFF MY MAN YOU BITCH!!!" a voice shouted and shit! It was Zandy. She already hates me and clearly she hates me even more. There was complete silence and Athi just

laughed. Everyone looked at him and he walked away.

Sneh: I see you're all having fun huh?

Zandy: Getting all over my man now?

Mpho: It's not what you think my love

Me: Really Mpho? Bad words, never say that to a woman when you're in trouble. You're just adding fuel to the fire.

L'yanda: You're smart.

Me: Free advice

I winked at him and went to check on my pots, the ladies were all standing by the door and the kids came

running in. Onika and Khanya. Emihle and Thembelihle followed

Them: Hey

Me: Hey, you're hungry?

Khanya: No, ice cream would be fine.

Naye: I'll dish up for you while she continues cooking. Are you okay?

Me: I'm good and yourself?

Naye: I'm just tired.

Ngamso: I need something to eat

Me: Want a sandwich?

Ngamso: Yes but I'll make it myself, you just sit down and chill

Ntoko: I'm so happy someone finally

beat Nkosinathi at crazy8.

Nkosi: It's not cool, I'm the boss.

Naye: Yes baby you are.

Danny came to me and stood behind me.

Danny: Will you be okay? I'm going outside with the guys

Me: I'll be okay.

He smiled and carried Danver and they left. I smiled and shook my head. I was actually thinking to myself more especially about last night.

Phelo: Someone's blushing

Me: Who?

Kamo: You and I'm sorry about yesterday.

Me: No harm done.

Belinda, Zandi and Sneh were still just standing there with their arms folded. They are just wasting thier time by being mad and causing unnecessary drama.

Phelo: Soo, why are you blushing?

Me: I wasn't blushing.

They laughed at me and we marinated the meat and went to chill outside with the guys. The conversation was just so stupid yet so much fun. Danver was spending

time Danny, Onika came over to sit with me and we were all having a great time.

Bee: Can we just eat already?

Bonga: You can just eat me

Mayi: Argh come on you guys, get a room.

We all laughed and Danny winked at me. He's just really irritating because I am trying so much to get over him or maybe just ignore my feelings.

Danny and I cannot be together at all, while we were sitting there I realized that he is left out because everyone just sits with their partner and he's

alone. Maybe he's trying to get into a relationship because he is lonely and all his friends have wives, even the younger brothers. He has a lot to deal with before he gets into any relationship. I'm glad I'm wise and feel like I have the upper hand in this. We all served and everyone was eating while having a lovely conversation

Zandy: So did you go to school Nasi?

Sneh: She doesn't look like she's educated that's why she went from stripper to nanny

Athi: Stop being a spoilt bitch Sneh!

We're all just tired of your damn attitude.

Sneh was really shocked and sad, she has so much attitude plus she's pregnant and all that is adding onto her stinky attitude.

Me: It's okay Athi. Well for your information, I am very well education. I have a degree in Medicine and I specialized in Cardiology.

Bee: Oh wow, that's impressive. Why are you a nanny though?

Danny: Enough of the interrogation please

Me: I actually find it very very weird



but I've accepted it. I cannot get a job

Athi: Why? We are in shortage of  
Cardiologists in SA

Me: I honestly don't even know.

Athi: I will look into it and see what I  
find. I do have cardiologists in my  
hospitals but I think I can sort a few  
things out for you.

Phila: And look into how you cannot  
get a job

Mpho: We can also start by looking  
for a reason why you look like Zee

Me: You all didn't get my permission  
to do that

Nkosi: Well we're asking now

Me: Oh wow

Naye and Siya laughed at me and I looked at them

Nceba: Welcome to our world sister. I'm going to do my hair tomorrow wanna come with?

Me: No thank you. I'm still okay with my afro.

Brian: Perfect, you're saving money. You're not putting on those fake weaves, you're beautiful naturally.

Belinda: Everything is just perfect about her

Lubah: Yes because she's not dramatic and she's cool

Bonga: Really cool.

Me: I'll be back

I just left them and went to the kitchen, took some ice cream and sat on the counter.

Danny: Want them to leave?

Me: No, no, your friends can stay.

Danny: Belinda can be irritating, Zandy is really really cool and funny and Sneh is just Sneh

Me: Want some ice cream?

Danny: No thank you

Me: Where are the kids?

Danny: I put them to sleep

Me: It wasn't that bad right?

Danny: No, Danver actually called me Dad and said he loves me. That's a huge achievement.

Me: That's good, we should now book you into therapy

Danny: No!

Me: Fine but I'll keep trying, and what are we deciding about Onika?

Danny: Do you think she should move to Grade RR?

Me: Yes

Danny: Well call her teacher tomorrow morning. I hope she'll be happy about it, I was thinking I'll take her to school and see how she'll do

Me: Now that's a good idea, see this is how this works Danny. You're improving

Danny: I'm glad I am, I talked to Razor and Nkosi's dad, and they gave me good advice.

Me: I'm happy about that

He kissed my forehead and we sat and talked more. He was really opening up and it was good to get to know more about him. Nkosi came to

us and Danny excused us.

Nkosi: We need to talk Amahle

Me: Oh

This guy is creepy! And he's calling me by my second name. My legs are actually feeling very wobbly and saying I'm scared is just an understatement. I wonder what we're going to talk about. I sighed and followed him to the garden and he wasn't saying anything along the way which was making me more and more nervous.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's  
of friends

#LBAR

Insert 11

In overall the day was turning into a really nice day. I chose not to mind those 3(Sneh,Zandi and Belinda) and I was still very nervous about the talk we were about to have with Nkosinathi.

Nkosi: You may sit down.

Me: No thank you, I prefer standing

Nkosi: How is he?

Me: Who?

He gave me the "are you dumb" look and it came to my mind that he was talking about Danny

Me: Oh Danny, he is fine today

Bhut'Nkosi. But deep inside, I feel as if he's not okay. He puts up a front when he's with all of us. When he's alone, he gets really emotional and lost in his own world. He needs help, I've been trying to get him to go to a Therapist but he refuses



Nkosi: I'll take care of that, he'll see a therapist as soon as tomorrow.

Me: Thank you, and you guys should really stop looking at him with those eyes, stop feeling pity for him. He needs to be pushed a bit because he's now sitting comfortably in sorrow.

Nkosi: It's not easy for us men to get over this tragedy quickly, It took Jabu very long to when he lost his wife and kids, when we met him he was a mess but he's okay and happy now.

Me: Did his previous wife look identical to Nangamso?

Nkosi: For what we've seen in her pictures, no they didn't look alike at all.

Me: See the difference in this and how hectic it is on Danny's side. Last night he...

Nkosi: He told me what happened.

I just looked down and played with my fingers

Nkosi: Naye does that alot, you might look like Zee but your personality is like Naye. But you're more brutal

Me: But I'm not brutal! I'm very calm

We both laughed and he looked at me.

There were many unspoken words.

Nkosi: Give them time, they'll come around. They are all very cool and crazy, you'll get along very well with them

Me: I hope so

Nkosi: And thank you for taking care of the kids, you're doing what we failed to do and they are very happy. Thank you Nasiphi

Me: Its okay Bhut'Nkosi. Danny is also now improving, he's slowly becoming more of a dad than he was before.

Nkosi: That's all thanks to you, you made us realize many things. Maybe

they won't admit it but you are just what we all needed. So tell me, where are your parents?

Me: I don't know my biological parents, I was adopted and I have my mom, my dad left us when mom got a stroke and stopped working. He left with everything we had.

Nkosi: Mmmh, the Dlamini surname?

Me: It belongs to him.

Nkosi: So did you stay in a foster home or shelter before you were adopted?

Me: I'm not really sure. I was very young at that time.

Nkosi: I understand. Now stop calling me Bhut'Nkosi, you're making me older than I already am. Sbahle will be here shortly, let's go back to the others

Me: Oh okay cool

Nkosi: Don't give up on him. He needs you more than you know. And Nasi, keep a distance between you and Thabo. He can be a jerk and slip

Me: What do you mean?

Nkosi: You have a big nice body, nice ass and you're beautiful, you're single and new here. We men, we think with our dicks at times.

With that said he just left and didn't explain any further. I walked back to the others and Sbahle was already here standing with Nkosi and Mpho. You cannot deny that there's so much love in this place. Everyone cares and loves one another, what Nkosi said did scare me but I will be smart about this and not show that I am scared. Siya has this beautiful smile and her round eyes are very attractive, she smiled at me and Phila kissed her cheek. There's no denying that Phila really loves her and they are inseparable. Seeing every couple here, together and in love with one another

makes you think about what love has in store for you and how your life will turn out. It makes you wonder, will your love turn into a perfect fairytale which one day you will tell to your kids. Not knowing how it feels to be deeply loved and being in a relationship at 25 is really not cool. Some of my peers are married already, some have kids and they have settled down but I'm still just a nanny and there's no potential marriage, I don't even have a boyfriend for that matter. Siya came next to me and took my hand. We walked to one of the rooms

downstairs and she closed the door.

Me: Am I about to get a lecture?

She laughed at me and sat on the bed while I sat on the couch. I've noticed she's been drinking juice only. Maybe she's pregnant, by the amount of kids here, these woman really do their jobs of being incubators.

Siya: I hope Nkosi wasn't hard on you, he can be very protective off all of us.

Me: No he wasn't

Siya: I know you're not very comfortable around us but relax, we're all a good family and we're all we have. We have many of these



gatherings so you'll get used to us, a week never ends without you seeing our cute faces. Well besides Naye and Nkosi because they are mostly in Langelihle

Me: The Kingdom of Langelihle? The Mkhize Kingdom?

Siya: Yes, they are the King and Queen there

Me: Oh wow, I know that place but it's been a while since I've been there.

Siya: So you're from somewhere closer to there

Me: Yes, I'm from PMB.

Siya: I saw you staring at Danny

Me: Me? Staring at him, no you must be mistaken

Siya: You first stared at me then all of us, by the time your eyes landed on Danny, you kept them there.

Naye came in followed by Nceba and Phelo

Nceba: Girl party without us?

Siya: Sit down

Me: As I was saying, I was staring at you guys because I was looking at how beautiful your marriages are, it's like a fairytale

Siya: Oh no it isn't, it's not always rosey.

The others came in and we all sat together. We all poured ourselves more wine and Zandi had some snacks

Naye: You always have something to eat.

Zandi: Food is my second husband.

Siya: As I was saying, things are tough here but I know you'll be okay.

Ngamso: You look like a tough cookie so you'll survive.

Siya: Marriage isn't all fun and games, Phila and I almost divorced one time.

Nceba: She destroyed the house when found out Phila is cheating on

her, like literally destroyed things.

Kamo: I don't think I'll ever forget that night

Siya laughed and I was honestly shocked. Phila would kill for Siya, you can see that by just the way he looks at her.

Siya: When he told me he was having a child with another woman, I lost it.

Me: Wow, where is that child now?

Naye: It's Junior.

Me: Oh wow, you wouldn't even notice.

Siya: He looks too much like Phila.

And he's my child, his real mother abandoned him.

Naye: Emihle isn't Nkosi's biological child either, Kwenzokuhle isn't my biological child too but at the end of the day they are both our kids and we love them

Belinda: You guys have huge hearts. If Lubah betrayed me like that, I really don't know what I'd do but one of us would die.

Ntokozo: What you're doing is a great thing, you have a huge heart Nasiphi. We've seen how you are with the kids and its amazing

Sneh: As much as I don't want to admit it but it's true. You're really doing a good job. I'm so sorry about the way I've been towards you, you looking like my sister just brought back many things and I felt as if you're here to replace her here amongst us. I cannot really explain it, you guys even have the same fashion sense. It's really creepy but I'm sorry  
Nasiphi

Me: It's okay, I forgive you. The things you said really did hurt me but after Danny showed me your sisters pictures, I understood why you behaved that way towards me.

Zandi: I'm not really good at apologizing, but I'll swallow my pride. I'm sincerely sorry Nasiphi.

Me: That's it?

Zandi: Damn you're not going to make it easy for me aren't you?

Me: Yes. You were rude to me

Zandi: I'm sorry for all the mean things I said to you

Me: I forgive you for that only

Zandi: What else did I do?

I looked at her with the "Bitch don't try me" look.

Zandi: Oh now I remember. I'm sorry

for thinking you wanted my man. You guys were all over each other and jealousy got to me, I'm really very crazy, rude and get angry easily. But you'll get used to me. So yeah I'm sorry

Me: You're really bad at apologizing, pour me some wine please

Phelo: You guys will get along very well.

Belinda came and kissed my forehead and literally squeezed me because that wasn't a hug.

Belinda: I'm sorry

Something about her is so genuine



about her and we sat down and talked alot about men and these girls are very kinky.

Lebo: You're all just making me horny now

Naye: You don't even have a man

Lebo: Says who? My dear cousin, I'm standing with 4legs

Phelo: What! I can never have that many. Mayibongwe is enough

Lebo: He's Royal, so he surely can satisfy you!

Kamo: So our unroyal man can't satisfy us?

Bee: Elaborate further

Lebo: They can satisfy you but studies say that Royal men have that thing!

Zandi: You're crazy

Lebo: One of my men is Nigerian and damn he can do his thing!

Siya: Oh God

Sbahle: This is too much for me, my virgin ears cannot take it.

Me: Same here dear

Phelo: You're sealed?

Me: Yep

Ntoko: Wow

They all laughed and it was clear that they didn't believe me.

Me: I'm serious

Bee: You have a beautiful body

Me: Thank you

There was a knock and Danny came in

Danny: Nasi can we talk for a few minutes?

Me: Sure.

We went out and he led me upstairs

Danny: Are you okay there? They are not giving you a hard time?

Me: No they are not, we're actually

getting along just fine. Where are we going?

Danny: My room, I just missed you.

I laughed at him and we went to his room and I sat on the couch while he went to the bathroom. He came back and sat next to me.

Danny: I'll go see a therapist tomorrow.

Me: That's good, what changed your mind?

Danny: I'm being forced by Nkosi and Brian actually talked some sense into me.

Me: That's good.

Danny: They'll be spending the night here, will you be okay with the ladies all night? Me: Yes I will.

Danny: Onika and Danver are playing, I'll check on them.

Me: Lets go check on them.

We went to the playroom and Mngqobi and Onika came to me. I carried Onika and Mngqobi held my hand. We went to the room where the others are.

Siya: My boy, come to mommy. We barely ever spend time together you've abandoned me

He went to his mother and I sat down

with Onika. She was slowly falling asleep.

Sbahle: I think I'm ready to be a mother

Zandy: You need to first find a boyfriend.

Sbahle: Ayke Zandi, maybe having a boyfriend isn't for me.

Naye: What happened to Ovhayo?

Sbahle: Gosh! He was so boring! I cannot stay with someone who bores me no matter how handsome or rich he is. I want someone who is exciting!

Bee: Bonga can bore me at times, when he decides to lock himself up in

his office all day.

The conversation continued and I was having a really great time. These girls aren't bad after all, They were just going through a phase. I took Onika to her room and tucked her in. Danver also went to sleep followed by the others. The older girls have their own room and Jnr also has his own room since he's "grown"

Danny came in while I was clearing up Danvers toys

Danny: They are asleep already?

Me: Yep

Danny: I guess I missed them. I'll tuck

them in tomorrow.

He held me from the back and kissed my neck.

Me: Danny stop

Danny: I'm sorry, ignoring what I feel will be very hard.

Me: Well you should try. I'm not going to be your rebound

Danny: Babe, I'm sorry and I'm not making you a rebound. I understand why you'd think of that but my feelings are genuine.

Me: Stop calling me babe. Its too cute and I'm working on getting over you



He laughed and we hugged. The hug was long and cosy

Danny: Aah Nasiphi, what are you doing to me?

Me: Let me go

Danny: Just one kiss

I kissed him on the cheek and he smirked.

Danny: I'll let you go, just for now. I'm going to be a better man Nasiphi.

Me: Thats good. I believe in you

Danny: I'm doing this for my kids and for you. Just trust me

I nodded and we hugged again then

went our separate ways. He went outside to the guys while I went to sip on more wine with the girls.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

Insert 12

It's been two months of total

happiness and bliss. It has been filled with some tears and lots of laughter. Onika has also developed a really big talkative character which Danny loves so much but cannot answer all the questions she has. Danver has been attending therapy sessions and it has been helping him alot, he's grown to be a much more happier and funny kid. All in all the relationship between Danny and his kids is great and it improves each and everyday. I, myself has gained more weight! I must say I look cute though. That's what happens when you're well taken care of and happy. Danny and I have

just a professional and good friendship no romantic relationship. I made it clear to him that the both of us aren't right for each other and we're both not ready for a romantic relationship because I do not fully trust that he would be with me just for the way I am. Me looking like his wife is just something I cannot get off my mind and that he really just might be "inlove" with me and using me as a rebound. I don't want to be second best nor be a replacement. My life has been great, I've been happy and I love what I do, I love taking care of these kids and they do

love me too. The girls and I have been having a very good relationship, I've become really close with Nceba and Sbahle, maybe its because we're almost the same age. I've realized that Zandy is really really crazy and I fall inlove with her character everyday. We might have not been the best of friends when we met but now things are different and we are all happy. Work is great and so is the money, Danny pays me more money than some other government employed people. My mother has been very happy and she gets treatment from a private hospital and she's recovering

and thats all thanks to Danny. I'll be travelling to PMB this afternoon and I'll stay with my mom for the weekend. When I told Danny I'm leaving, he wasn't really happy but he understood that I had to go see my mom. I woke up and prepared the kids for school. We went downstairs for break

breakfast and I saw it as an opportunity to tell them that I'm leaving.

Me: Guys, I'm leaving tomorrow

Onika just started crying and I guessed I shouldn't have put it that

way.

Me: Hey don't cry

Danver: Will you come back?

Me: Yes, I'll be back Sunday afternoon. I'm going to visit my mother for the weekend.

Danver: Oh okay

Onika: Can we come with you?

Me: Uhm guys I don't think that's a good idea

Danver: Why, your mother won't like us?

Me: She will, I'm not sure that your daddy will agree.

Danny: Agree to what?

Danver: Perfect timing, Daddy can we leave with Sis Nasi?

Onika: Please Daddy, please?

Danny: I don't think that's a good idea

Danver: Why? We'll miss her and we'll be bored here

Danny: I'll be here and you guys can go over to any of your friend's house

Onika: We want to go with Sis Nasi

She started crying and she now knows that tears are Danny's weakness.

Danny: Okay fine as long as Nasi



doesn't mind

Me: I don't mind.

Danver: Yey! We won't be going to school then

Me: No, You're going to school. We'll leave when you get back from school

Danny: I'll drive you there. I'll leave work early

Me: No need, we can take a taxi

Danny: No child of mine will use a taxi.

I laughed and put their lunch boxes in their bags. The driver came and it was Fezile

Me: Fezile!!!

Fezile: Hey Nasi, you seem so excited to see me?

Me: Yes I am, I haven't seen you in so long

Fezile: Been busy working on the other side. Let's go kids, Nasi, I'll see you when I see you

Me: Hah so you're just going to disappear again?

Fezile: Yep! I'm just covering for the other driver.

We said our goodbyes and I went upstairs

Danny: You seem happy about seeing Gumbi

Me: Why do you call him Gumbi, you making him sound like an old grandpa, Fezile suits him. It's very sexy just like him

I winked at him and he was pissed off.

Danny: You're enjoying this huh?

Me: Enjoying what?

Danny: Nevermind. I'll see you later

He kissed my cheek and I decided not to overthink it. Its just a kiss on the cheek. I packed for the kids and texted my mom telling her I'm coming with them. I made a mental note that

I should do some grocery shopping on our way to PMB. While I was upstairs I heard alot of noises and people screaming out my name. I went downstairs and it was Sbahle and Zandi

Me: Aren't you guys supposed to be at work?

Sbahle: I took the day off

Zandy: I'll be late, I'm lazy plus Belinda won't even be there so I'll be bored.

Me: Want something to eat?

Sbahle: Already ordered, its on its way.

Zandy: So what are your plans today?  
Its Friday afterall

Me: I'm going home, PMB.

Sbahle: That's cool and boring  
because we'll miss you while we just  
go shopping and go to the beach

Zandy: Shit! I have a meeting in  
15mins. I totally forgot about it. How I  
wish I was a housewife like Siya and  
Naye

Me: You know you don't have to work  
and be that housewife

Sbahle: Mpho would be very happy  
about that

Zandy: Never, I'd loose my mind. I

love working and it makes me feel a bit independent. Like theres something I do other than finishing Mpho's money. I still do have something in my own name not Lebone

Me: What do you mean?

Zandy: I'm addressed as Ms Zungu at work. Mpho was so against it but he had to understand that I needed something to hold onto about myself. We don't have parents nor a family to turn to, just sticking to my Zungu surname felt good.

Me: Why didn't you just use both

surnames and be Zandile Zungu-Lebone

Sbahle: Mpho was having non of that.

Zandy: I had to be chained on the bed every night for a week for me to keep my surname at work. It was hectic but I enjoyed it anyways

Me: You're freaky

The food was delivered and Zandy took her share and left.

Me: You could help me finish packing for the kids

Sbahle: They are leaving with you?

Me: Yes

Sbahle: What freaky thing did you do for Danny to agree to that?

Me: Nothing, well Onika did use her tears a bit.

Sbahle: It's good that they'll breathe different air and have a change of scenery.

Me: My home isn't as big and lavish as theirs. I hope they'll like it.

Sbahle: They will.

We packed and yes, I'm a heavy packer. I pack things that I will know I won't need but I pack them anyways. She left after an hour of us stuffing ourselves with food and watching tv.



I eventually fell asleep on the couch and was woken up by Danny.

Me: You're home early

Danny: It's not that early, the kids will be here soon so wake up

Me: Let me go freshen up so we can leave when they get here.

Danny: Can you also pack a bag for me?

Me: Sure, where are you going?

Danny: PMB, I'll book myself into a hotel and that way I'll be able to see you guys tomorrow

Me: What why?

Danny: What do you mean "what why"?

Me: Danny, the whole point of us leaving is not to see you. You can't come with us

Danny: Why wouldn't you want to see my handsome face?

Me: Because we always see this handsome face and we don't want it to bore us.

Danny: I just don't understand Nasi

Me: Danny, please. You driving us there is enough

Danny: Fine

Me: Thank you handsome face but

you do really need to shave that beard

Danny: I look very sexy

I laughed at him and got ready. After I was done the kids had already arrived and changed

Danny: Let's go, we'll have lunch at Liberty Mall

Me: I did want to also do some groceries.

We put the bags in the car and drove off.

Danver: Will we get some goodies?

Me: Yes you will

Danny: Did you tell your mom they are coming over?

Me: Yes

We drove off as we were all listening to Onika ramble and ramble. She talks alot and its just very cute and it makes me happy because she had always hid this character and it is now slowly showing. I'm just glad she doesn't ask 21 questions like Emihle. We got to PMB and went to the mall. Did all our necessary shopping and drove to Sandanezwe

Danny: I think I've been here before

Me: Thats what Siya said when I told

her I'm from here. She said something about being kidnapped

Danny: Oh yeah, now I remember.

Me: She must've been so traumatized, why was she kidnapped?

Danny: I'm not sure, I don't remember clearly

He was now abit edgy and I didn't ask more questions. It was clear that he didn't want to talk about it. I directed him to my home and he looked at me like I was kidding. It is a two bedroom RDP.

Danny: This is your home?

Me: Yes

Danny: Wow

Me: Want to go back with your kids?

Danny: No Nasi its just that... okay  
I'm sorry

Me: It's okay, not all of us have had a  
perfect lifestyle.

Danny: Let's go inside

He took our bags and we went inside.  
Onika was just too excited and she  
was the first to go hug my mom.

Mom: Hello beautiful angel, whats  
your name

Onika: My name is Onika McKenzie.

Mom: What a beautiful name for a

beautiful Princess, and you my young charming prince

Danver: My name is Danver McKenzie  
Mam

Mom: Oh please, call me grandma.

Me: Hello mama, this is my boss,  
Danny McKenzie and these are the beautiful kids I look after.

Danny: Pleased to meet you

Mom: You're a fine handsome man,  
I'm honoured to meet you

Me: Mom!

They both laughed and we sat at the sitting room. Mom offered us some

juice and scones.

Me: Mom who baked?

Mom: I did

Me: Mama, you know you shouldn't be doing that, you shouldn't be overworking yourself

Mom: I was just baking NasNas ka mama, plus I told Dorothy to leave about a month ago, I can take care of myself.

Me: Mama, why did you do that? All this time you've been telling me Dorothy is still here assisting you but you live alone. Do you know how much danger you're putting your life



in?

Danny: Nasiphi

I just looked at him, now wasn't the time for this. Mom took a really bad decision and it's not good for her health that she takes care of herself and does the chores herself.

Mom: Trust me, I've been much better and I don't need someone to take care of me.

Me: We'll talk about this later mom.

Mom: Don't be upset now, you know how you are when you angry. I don't want us to go back there.

I just kept quiet because if I

continued Danny will ask questions. I just hope he didn't pay much attention to that. The kids were now watching tv and enjoying themselves. I put our bags in my room.

Danny: I must leave now, I'll fetch you all Sunday afternoon.

Me: Let me walk you out.

We went out and walked to his car silently. I could tell he had a lot in his mind and he kept on looking around his surroundings.

Danny: You shouldn't shout at your mother

Me: I didn't mean to but I just got

upset because she knows she shouldn't be taking care of herself. Its for her health and she just does the worst. I'm in Durban thinking she's well taken care of here but shes busy overworking herself, knowing my mother I'm sure she even does her own laundry.

Danny: I'll sort it out. What did she mean when she said she doesn't want you to be upset and doesn't want you to go back there?

Me: Nothing. What do you mean you'll sort it out?

Danny: Nasiphi, don't lie to me

Me: Argh Danny, we'll talk about it Sunday afternoon okay.

Danny: Okay, take care. Call when you need anything

Me: Why do I feel like you'll be around?

Danny: I'm everywhere sweetheart.

Now bye, take care. I have a meeting with the gents.

Me: Goodbye.

#Danny

My relationship with Nasi or should I say friendship with her has been amazing, I cannot help myself but just fall deeper inlove with her everyday but I choose to respect that

she feels as if I'd be making her my rebound and doesn't want us to be in a romantic relationship as yet. She feels as if I'm not ready and maybe I'm not but what I do know is that I love her and eventually I will be with her, I'm not letting this one go. Ever since my wife passed I've been with a few woman, never loved any of them but I'm a man and I needed to release. I've had many one night stands and some ladies still come to me complaining that I didn't call them back yet I don't even remember who they are. Seeing the condition of the place that Nasiphi grew up in isn't

pleasing at all, and the fact that her mother still stays there doesn't sit well with me. I grew up in a good home and had everything I wanted and things I didn't even need at all, I was spoilt but I made sure that never makes me a snob plus my father was very tough on me too. He wanted to raise a man not a snob. I got into illegal things when my father introduced me to the force when I was 18. He thought I was ready and was finally a man, I know soon he'll want me to take over the force but I always wanted Nkosinathi to take over, with him being King now and

has many things in his hands. I have no choice but to accept the responsibility when the time comes. I know all the guys will say no, they don't want to put their wives in that position, being head of the force, you're hardly ever home and everything is in your hands. And the safety of all the agents is in your hands. It is a huge responsibility that I have been trained for but I still need to go through some intense training too. I saw how much my kids were excited about being there and Nasi's mother loved having them around. So I have nothing to worry about and I do

have security on standby which Nasi doesn't know about. I kept on wondering about what her mom meant when she was talking about Nasi being upset again and I will get to the bottom of it. One way or the other, I will get to the bottom of it and knowing Nasi she won't support my idea of buying her mother a house and hiring someone to take care of her and clean the house plus get a nurse that will monitor her health. I was getting close to Durban when I got a call from Mpho

Me: Lebone

Mpho: What were you doing in PMB?



Me: Why are you tracking my movements?

Mpho: Because I track all your whereabouts. I'm in HQ and you need to get here now

Me: What are you doing in HQ?

Mpho: Just come, the others will be here shortly too.

Me: This better be good, I was planning on getting some sleep

Mpho: Don't be a chicken. Speaking of chickens, pass by Nandos and get me my favorite. Thanks

Me: Whatever.

I went to Nandos and bought 5 full chickens, I know with the gents also there, one whole chicken won't be enough at all. I drove to HQ and was the last to arrive. Even Nkosi was here

Me: Weren't you supposed to be in Langelihle?

Nkosi: This is much more important right now.

Mpho: The chicken please. I need to distress because shits about to blow the fan.

Me: What do you mean?

Lubah: Sit down, it's about Nasiphi.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's  
of friends

#LBAR

Insert 13

#Danny

I wasn't thinking straight, my first

thought was if she was safe. I know by now the security team would've called me and let me know. I just stood there and wondered what is it about and I know it's important since Nkosi is also here. Which does also remind me that I need to get to Langelihle soon, it's been a while since I've went and I don't want those elders so start doubting why Nkosi chose me as part of the council team

Athi: Wake up! She's not in danger or anything

Thabo: Are you inlove with her?

Me: Sort of. Now what is it?

Jabu: Sit down, we did some research and saw that Nasi wasn't in any shelter or any adoption home. Which means she wasn't legally adopted

Bonga: There was no adoption procedure, that concludes that she was either left somewhere and found by her mother or she was stolen.

Phila: We snooped around until we found her fathers details and he isn't far from here. His name is Hector Dlamini, now married with 3kids.

Me: Bastard. Where does he stay

L'yanda: Glenwood.

Phila: There's more so its better if you just sit down and relax.

Thabo: We did some DNA tests, between Nasiphi and Sneh just to see if they are related or not so we can get an explanation as to why she looks so much like Zee.

Me: And what did you find?

Mpho: Nasi and Sneh aren't related at all, its 0.00%

Me: That means she isn't related to Zee.

Bonga: We did say there's alot so sit down. This is the confusing part, why is Zee so identical with Nasiphi?

Me: Maybe it's a coincident

Jabu: Stop being in denial, there is a connection in this and we have found out what it is.

Me: You guys just get to the point please.

Athi: Here's some whiskey. We did a test on Zee and Nasiphi, we sorry we went through the old blood samples we kept in the freezer.

Me: What!? Didn't I tell you guys to throw them away!

Phila: Yes you did but we didn't. And they've helped us today.

Me: You're all just unbelievable.

Jabu: We found that Zee and Nasiphi are related, no doubt. Its 99.99%

Me: Wow! I cannot believe this. It could be possible that they are sisters

Brian: Twins maybe

Me: Don't be stupid, Zee is 5years older than Nasiphi. 2years older than Sneh. It really doesn't make sense at all, Sneh and Zee are sisters

Lubah: That's where the twist is, Sneh and Zee aren't sisters. Its 0.00%

Me: No, this isn't true. This is all just crap

Mpho: It seems as if Sneh and Zee



met at a very young age and were made to believe that they are blood sisters.

Athi: You do know how their information isn't able to be accessed no matter what you try?

Me: Yes

Jabu: And so is Nasiphi's info. We've concluded that that's why she isn't getting any job, I'm even amazed as to why she was able to enroll in University. She's blocked in each and every system.

Mpho: Does she have a credit card?

Me: Yes and don't ask me how I got it,

but I have that information and she doesn't use Nasiphi Amahle Dlamini, she's registered as Pearl Nyathi.

Athi: Nyathi! Why does that surname ring a bell.

Phila: Remember when we were dealing with Ziyanda's things so we get her death certificate, that old man said only a Palisa Ziyanda Nyathi is showing on the system with the same date of birth?

Me: This is so confusing, could it be that they are Nyathi's and Sneh knows about all of this?

Phila: I don't know but I do know we

need to see that man again, then go see Hector Dlamini and if we don't find any convincing information. We pull out the big gun, Kamogelang.

Lubah: Sounds like a plan

Brian: Won't she tell the others?

Jabu: We can only trust that she'll be professional about this. She's always professional about other cases.

Thabo: Its a sensitive case which is close to heart, lets just hope so she'll understand and be professional about it.

Me: Tomorrow morning, at 8 we'll meet here and be on our way to the

home affairs.

Lubah: Rodger that.

We all went our separate ways and I got come, showered and got into bed trying to clear my head but all these thoughts were just all over my head. I took my phone and called Nasiphi, I don't know maybe I should call her Pearl now?

Me: Hello beautiful

Nasi: Danny, did you see the time?  
You're waking me up.

Me: I'm sorry, I was just missing you guys. Are they asleep already?

Nasi: Yes and they've deserted me,

they are sleeping with my mother.  
Are you okay? You don't sound too  
good

Me: I'm okay, just a headache.  
Nothing a panado and sleeping pills  
can't fix

Nasi: I threw those away.

Me: Why did you do that?

Nasi: Because you were getting  
addicted to them and its for your own  
good.

I just sighed and listened to her  
ramble about my health.

Me: Can I ask you something?

Nasi: Sure

Me: Why is your account registered as Pearl Nyathi?

Nasi: I honestly don't know Danny, I've also wondered why because my ID book is written Nasiphi Amahle Dlamini, there's just alot of confusing things about my identity, puzzles that I cannot put together. My mother gave those credit cards and when I asked, she said my father had made everything for me at a young age so I got them when I was 18, her explanation to why my ID book has Nasiphi Amahle Dlamini, is that she didn't want to contact my father

about making an ID for me under the Pearl Nyathi name. It also makes no sense to me at all but I chose to let it go.

Me: What is your fathers name?

Nasi: Hector Dlamini, why are you asking?

Me: Nothing, I was just confused. I'll let you sleep now. Goodnight

Nasi: Goodnight to you too Danny.

I went to the room where I stored Zee's things. There has to be some documents that I will find. I looked at everything and Zee had too many documents and too many

investigations. Why didn't she just become a detective or a PI? I looked and looked till I eventually gave up and packed everything. While I was packing a piece of paper fell and it had two numbers, Hector Dlamini and Muziwokuthula Nyathi.

Me: Ziyanda, what is going on here?

I sighed and took the paper. Honestly this was becoming very stressful. I texted my PA and told her I won't be coming in tomorrow.

**#NEXTDAY**

I woke up not looking forward to this day at all. I took a shower and got



dressed. I'll grab a cup of coffee at a cafe nearby. When I stepped out, Lubah and L'yanda were at my gate

Me: Whatsup?

L'yanda: We lazy to drive so it made sense that we walked here and you'll drive.

Lubah: And we haven't had breakfast

Me: You're buying breakfast, not me.

L'yanda: You're so stingy

I drove off, we grabbed some breakfast and then went off to HQ. The others were already there.

Me: So I called Nasi last night trying

to dig some information.

Thabo: And?

Me: She was clueless as to why she uses Pearl Nyathi, she says that she was given by her mother saying that her father had made these accounts for her while she was young. She didn't get a proper explanation as to why she's Pearl Nyathi, her ID book though is written Nasiphi Amahle Dlamini, her mothers excuse was that she didn't want to be in contact with her father who is Hector Dlamini.

Phila: I'm not convinced by her mothers story.

Bonga: Me too, and it shows that one of these documents is illegal or all of them. They all cannot have the same ID number and date of birth.

Athi: True, this gets more and more complicated.

Me: There's more. I snooped around Zee's stuff last night, just when I was giving up because I wasn't finding anything, this fell. Its Hector Dlamini's number and Muziwokuthula Nyathi's number.

Brian: Search for Muziwokuthula Nyathi

Mpho: I'm on it.

Phila received a call from Siya and he went out to answer it for a while. He came back and looked frustrated

Phila: They are suspect we're on a mission, they know we're at HQ

Jabu: Mxm, they love snooping around. Tell stix not to open for them if they come

I texted stix and briefed Stix.

Mpho: I'm not finding anything on this guy. These numbers don't help too, they were last used 3years ago.

Me: It shows that Zee was investigating her past.

Bonga: There has to be more to this, I

know when Zee is digging, she doesn't stop.

Athi: We'll look into it.

Me: Let's go see this Hector Dlamini.

We got into the cars and drove off. It was a quick drive since his house was just in Glenwood. We got there and a young girl opened for us

Brian: Damn she's pretty.

Jabu: Behave Brian. Morning young lady, we're looking for a man called Hector Dlamini

Her: I'm June, my father is in his study. Follow me

We followed her and went into the study room. He quickly stood up and took off his glasses

Hector: June! Who are these men?

Phila: I did think that we shouldn't all come here.

Athi: Why didn't you just say so?

Jabu: Can you guys just shut up?

Bonga: I'm sorry Mr Dlamini, we need to talk to you, privately.

Hector: Go to your room June.

She left and Nkosi locked the room.

Trust Nkosi to find keys and lock at a stranger's house

Nkosi: Sit down Hector

Hector: How do you know me?

Nkosi: That's not what we came for, we'll ask you a few questions and we need straight answers.

Me: Your daughter, June seems to be a very very beautiful girl. You wouldn't want something wrong to her would you?

Hector: Are you threatening me?

Me: I don't make threats.

Phila: Whiskey?

This guys is offering him whiskey in his own house. Another level of

undermining and disrespect.

Bonga: So is your adopted daughter, Nasiphi Dlamini whom you left with her mother. You're a cruel man, leaving her because she had stroke, you do not know what love is.

Hector: How do you know about her?  
Get out of my house!

L'yanda: You don't listen don't you, we ask questions and you answer, not the other way around.

Lubah: Now, we know that you registered Nasiphi as Pearl Nyathi on the accounts that you made. Why?

Hector: She couldn't use Nasiphi



Dlamini, that's what we named her and my surname. The hospital told us that she was already named and registered as Pearl Nyathi. So I didn't want to change it

Me: So why is her ID as Nasiphi Dlamini?

Hector: When she did her ID I wasn't part of her life anymore. I haven't seen her in many years, after I turned my backs on them I never made any contact with them.

Bonga: Why did you freeze all her mothers accounts?

Hector: I had no choice! If we went to

court, they would've given her everything because when I met her I was nothing. Most of our things belonged to her and yes I was selfish, I had to get out of the deal with something in hand

Athi: You got out with everything!

Hector: I left her with Nasiphi.

Me: What deal is it that you're talking about?

Hector: What deal?

Me: Don't make me a fool! You said you needed to get out of the deal with something!

Hector: Our marriage was fake, she

couldn't give birth and she asked me to marry her so she can be able to adopt a child and the process could be quicker.

Me: And then?

Hector: I agreed to it because it was good money, we got the child and then we raised her. It got too much for me and I was still able to get out with all her money. She got what she wanted and I got what I wanted.

Nkosi: You're cruel, you disgust me.

Me: Who is Muziwokuthula Nyathi?

Hector: I'm not familiar with the name, maybe her mother would know since

she dealt with the documents. I was just there to act as her husband.

Me: Thank you, we'll be out of your way. Have a good day Hector.

We left and went to home affairs. We didn't get what we wanted and went back to HQ.

Mpho: Stressful day, we really didn't get anything convincing.

Nkosi: This leads to one of the two solutions we have left. Danny, were going to your house. We have to look for everything Zee found, it couldn't be the numbers only.

Me: Let's go.

#Nasi

Yesterday was a great afternoon, the kids get along very well with my mother and she was very happy about them being there. She literally didn't pay any attention to me at all. They both slept with her and I was all alone in my room. After Danny called, I couldn't stop but think about why he was suddenly asking me all those questions. I have really just given up about finding out about my real parents, my mother has been a good mother and father to me. I don't feel any need to know them and there's no space for them in my life. When I

was young it affected me alot but right now, it doesn't affect me at all. I woke up and made breakfast, they were still asleep and I took a bath. After dressing up I went outside and called Danny

Danny: Babe

Me: Don't babe me! Do you think I'm a fool?

Danny: What did I do know? I thought I was still charming you with my handsome face? Or you miss me that much?

Me: Don't be stupid, why is there a security team here?

Danny: How did you know?

Me: I'm not stupid and they are really not good at hiding.

Danny: I just wanted you to be safe, for the kids to be safe

Me: Mxm uyadika yaz Danny( you're annoying Danny)

Danny: I'll make it up to you. I'm a bit busy now so bye. Check on you later

Me: Bye.

I went back into the house and they were awake. I dished up for them and we sat down at ate.

Me: We'll be going to the mall today,

watch movies and shop for clothes.

Danver: We'll also buy the cups you wanted grandma, she saw them on TV.

Me: Okay we will.

Mom: We'll catch a taxi

Me: No, a driver will pick us up.

I texted Danny telling him we'll need a driver. He replied immediately, I guess he wasn't really that busy

Me: Okay, lets hurry up. We'll leave in an hour, the driver is on his way.

Mom: You're living a lavish life

Me: I guess so, mom, why is my



account registered as Pearl Nyathi?

Mom: We've talked about this before Nasiphi! We won't be talking about it ever again!

Onika: Sis Nasi don't upset grandma.

Me: I'm sorry. I'll go take out the clothes you'll wear, come to my room after you finish eating. I hope you won't mind bathing in a basin

Danver: We don't mind.

Onika just nodded, I don't think she even knows what a basin is. Danny has beautiful kids with humble and beautiful souls. I just couldn't get it out of my mind though, why is Danny

suddenly asking about this and why is it upsetting my mother? I sighed and told myself to just let go. I don't want to be angered by this at all, my life is great and I have positive things to look at in life. I know I cannot run away from this forever but for now, it is for the best.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends.

Sorry if it is short, I wanted to post two inserts today.

#LBAR

Insert 14

#Danny

After leaving HQ, we headed to my house. I got a call from Nasiphi and she was furious, those idiot's couldn't hide. She wasn't supposed to see them and she did see them, it made her angry and I will make sure that they are fired. Right now I'm focused

on much more important things and I'll deal with them Sunday afternoon. We got to my house and went straight to the room. I took out all her documents and we laid them all on the floor

Bonga: Damn! Zee was a busy woman, so many papers.

Athi: I feel tired already

Me: No use complaining, lets get to work.

We sat down and each of us had our own pile. About 4hours passed and we still had nothing.

Phila: I'm tired, my pile is finished and

there's nothing more to look at

Mpho: Come help me, I'm really not good at papers documents, the plane and computers are my stuff not this shit.

Brian: I think I found something

We went to him and he gave us the documents. It was a paper filled with numbers

Me: What the hell? What are we going to do with numbers Brian

Brian: The heading is "Nyathi investigation" she did this the same year she passed away.

Me: Maybe she passed before getting

enough information

L'yanda: Don't you think that these are codes for something. Mpho, can you solve this

Mpho: It does seem like a coded message.

Me: I think this all just leads to calling Kamo.

Nkosi: I agreee with you.

Thabo called her and told her to come over, alone with her equipment. After a few minutes she was with us. She looked confused at first and sat down.

Kamo: What mission are you up to

now? You guys should start paying me, you told us to leave the force and we did, now what do you want?

Thabo: We need your help babe, it's about Zee, Nasiphi and Sneh.

Kamo: I think you shouldn't go digging into this guys, it will ruin many things.

Me: What do you mean?

Kamo: What have you found so far?

Nkosi: What do you know?

Kamo: Lets just stop this nonsense and we get over and done with this.

Me: We know that Zee and Nasi are

related.

Kamo: I didn't know about that, how do you know?

Athi: We did a DNA test.

Kamo: I'm sure you now know that Zee and Sneha aren't sisters.

Me: You knew about this all this time!

Kamo: I told Zee to stop doing this, I knew it would come back to us one day. She wasn't able to finish up, the plan was for her to continue after giving birth because I didn't want to stress her. I always feel like she knew her days were coming to an end, the things she said and how eager she



was to look for her biological family and I just managed to stop her, I helped her with some things but they are all at the HeadQuarters house.

Bonga: See this, it's written in codes

Kamo: I remember this, I know how we'll be able to translate it but it will be a bit of a problem

Me: What do you mean?

Kamo: We won't be able to access the room Zee used, I only know the first two codes and nothing more

Me: How much more secrets was Ziyanda hiding from me!? Why would she do all thi without me knowing?

Kamo: She wanted to do this herself, you know how Zee was, she didn't depend on anyone, she wanted to do things herself and nothing stopped her. Even you couldn't stop her.

Nkosi: Do you know about Hector Dlamini and Muziwokuthula Nyathi?

Kamo: Yes, I didn't know who exactly were they, we were supposed to go see them but we couldn't, it was that hectic time where Nkosi went to the Pyramid, we needed to be there for Naye.

Lubah: Why haven't you told us all this time?

Kamo: It needed to rest and be in the past.

Athi: Does my wife know about this?

Kamo: Are you crazy? That would kill Sneh. And she isn't going to find out, she's highly pregnant.

Me: Let's get going please.

We took all we needed and headed to HQ, it was a quick drive since we were all just filled with confusion and curiosity. I was also feeling angry, how could she hide such things from me? Why didn't she say something? This is just all a mess that she left behind but it is also giving me more

determination to find out the whole truth for her, for me to finish up from where she left off and for everyone to know the truth. I just hope this will not do lots of damage, to be honest I'm afraid to even know what the truth is. We got to HQ and Kamo was immediately on our systems

Phila: You do need to brief us on what you're doing

Kamo: I'm trying to access Ziyanda's passwords and codes.

Mpho: What was her phones password, Danny?

Me: As weird as it may be, her

password was "Atmosphere" and she didn't keep anything on her phone.

Mpho: My friend was really weird

Phila: And too smart, she's just too smart.

Kamo: Zee! Why didn't I think of this?

None of you would've thought of this, she used the alphabets on each number on those old phones, you know how 2 had like ABC, 3-DEF, 4-GHI,5-JKL,6-MNO,7-PQRS,8-TUV,9-WXYZ.

Bonga: Who would've ever thought of that? This is too much.

Kamo: There's a system that is used

to translate this and she has it. Give me the first word or sentence in codes

Me: 3-1-6-3 6-1-6-3-8-1 7-4-3-2-2-1-3-1

Jabu: I'm very confused

Kamo: Those spell out "DO NOT READ"

Athi: Danny you married a tycoon! Ay Zee, you showing us flames

He raised a bottle of whiskey and drank from the bottle

L'yanda: What the fuck will we drink?

Athi: Don't act as if we've never drank from the same bottle.

Phila: So you do see that this is almost two pages of the confusing numbers, how and when will we finish this?

Me: I really do need to know too

Kamo: We need to access her secret room. Call stix

I called Stix and he came, he's the one that stays in this house and head of security

Stix: Sho boss lady

Kamo: The keys to the secret room?

Stix: Eish I'm not supposed to give you, you know I swore to Boss Zee

Me: Stix, this is no time for games.  
We appreciate your loyalty but we  
need those keys.

Stix: She said I should only give them  
up if its a matter of life and death

Me: This is a matter of life and death!  
Your very own life could be in danger!  
And all of your kids!

Nkosi: Calm down Danny, the keys  
Stix. You don't want me to repeat  
myself.

Stix: Sho boss

Phila: Couldn't you scare him earlier?  
You literally waited for a moment

Nkosi: You know me, I look for the



most perfect moments and I act on it.

Mpho: That's how you scored twins.

Nkosi: Phila is the master of scoring, he has supersperms.

We all laughed and Kamo was grossed out. She took the keys and led us to this dark room. She opened the door and there was a laptop only.

Athi: That was easy, and why is there just one laptop, I thought we'll see some crazy IT stuff.

Kamo: This is just the first entrance. Give me the codes at the bottom.

Brian: 3-1-2-1-6-2-8-3-3-2-7-3

Kamo: Okay, we're over entrance one

Me: That spelt out Danver right?

Kamo: Yes, you're slowly learning this

Thabo: I'll stick to what I know best, I cannot be cracking codes

Kamo: Like getting into every hoe's underwear is one of your specialities.

Athi: It's getting hot in here!!

Lubah: Shut up Athi! Personal matters aside for now please, Thabo you should also shut up and don't upset her

I didn't know what was going on but I do know that it has to do with Thabo

cheating again. Honestly, Thabo couldn't keep his zip closed. Its something we've talked to him about and he doesn't stop, Kamogelang deserves better.

We went through the second and third entrance.

Kamo: Fuck! Careful, there are lazor wires here.

Lubah: I can disable them.

He disabled them and we were led to a huge steel door

Nkosi: There's no way of breaking in here.

Me: I cannot believe my wife did all

this! I just cannot it. I'm upset and impressed at the same time.

Jabu: There's two other codes here, lets try them out

Kamo: Read them out please, you do know we can only try twice and it cannot open again till the next day

Jabu: 7-1-3-2-2-1-7-3-5-3 6-2-2-1-7-4-4-3

-7-1-4-2-4-3, this spells out Pearl Nasiphi, but theres a missing part.

Kamo: Shit! We've lost our one try. Pass me that paper. I'll just sit down and solve it even if it takes me the whole day.

She sat down and asked to be excused. We went to the main room and chilled there as frustrated as we were. After about 4hours she came to us

Kamo: Damn I'm hungry

Thapelo: I'll order food, just sit down and explain to us.

Kamo: Okay, it all reads as follows.

DO NOT READ, IF YOU ARE READING THIS I TAKE IT THAT YOU WERE TOO STUBBORN TO FOLLOW MY INSTRUCTIONS. I KNOW WHENEVER SOMEONE FINDS THIS AND READS IT, I WOULD BE DEAD BECAUSE I

KNOW YOU WOULD HAVE NEVER FOUND THIS IF I WAS STILL ALIVE. WHOEVER YOU ARE, I LEAVE THIS CASE TO IN YOUR HANDS. I WANT YOU TO TELL MY HUSBAND THAT I'M SORRY FOR KEEPING THIS FROM HIM, HE HAS TO UNDERSTAND THAT I COULDN'T TELL ANYONE ABOUT IT AND I'M REALLY SORRY, PLEASE DO KNOW THAT I LOVE YOU. SECONDLY, SNENHLANHLA SHOULD NEVER, EVER FIND OUT ABOUT THIS. I NEED YOU TO ACCESS MY PRIVATE ROOM, BUT I KNOW YOU WILL NOT BE ABLE TO ACCESS IT WITHOUT FINDING SOMEONE WHO GOES BY

THE NAME OR PEARL NASIPHI  
NYATHI, UNFORUNATELY, I HAVE  
BEEN UNABLE TO FIND HER BUT IT  
IS IN YOUR BEST INTEREST THAT  
YOU FIND HER AND ONLY SHE CAN  
BE ABLE TO OPEN THE ROOM, I  
KNOW IT SOUNDS ABSURD AND  
STUPID, LIKE HOW WILL SHE KNOW  
THE MISSING CODE, SHE IS SMART  
AND SHE HAS IT IN HER. I WAS ABLE  
TO FIND OUT THAT  
MUZIWOKUTHULA NYATHI MIGHT  
BE MY BIOLOGICAL FATHER AND  
PEARL MIGHT BE MY BLOOD SISTER.  
I ALSO DO NOT UNDERSTAND AND  
DONT HAVE ALL THE ANSWERS AS

KAMOGELANG MADE ME STOP INVESTIGATING. I GREW UP THINKING THAT SNEH IS MY SISTER BUT SADLY, SHE IS NOT. SHE IS REALLY SNENHLANHLA BHENGU AND I AM NOT A BHENGU. IT JUST HAPPENED THAT WE ENDED UP GROWING TOGETHER WITH THE SAME FOSTER PARENTS AND I DON'T KNOW WHAT HAPPENED AFTER. WHETHER WE ARE NOT BLOOD SISTERS, SHE WILL ALWAYS BE MY SISTER AND THIS TRUTH SHOULD BE HIDDEN FROM HER, BE WARNED THAT IF SHE FINDS OUT, SHE WILL NOT TAKE THIS WELL



AND IT WOULD DESTROY HER.  
ATHENKOSI, I TRUST THAT YOU  
WILL SUPPORT MY DECISION AND  
DO NOT TELL HER. IF YOU ALL MY  
FRIENDS ARE STILL ALIVE, YOU  
NEED TO KNOW THAT I LOVE YOU  
AND I LOVE MY KIDS, DANVER AND  
THE ONE I'M CARRYING RIGHT NOW  
AS I WRITE THIS LETTER, AND THE  
MANY MORE KIDS I MIGHT HAVE AT  
THIS MOMENT. I HAVE ALSO FOUND  
OUT THAT HECTOR DLAMINI IS THE  
ADOPTIVE FATHER OF PEARL,  
PLEASE DO LOOK FOR HIM AND GET  
TO THE BOTTOM OF ALL THIS, MY  
SISTER IS ABOUT 4 OR 5 YEARS

YOUNGER THAN ME, HER DATE OF BIRTH IS 11/11/1988 or 1989. THE PASSWORDS ARE IN CODES, YOU WILL HAVE TO FIGURE THAT OUT AND ONLY NASIPHI KNOWS THE MISSING PIECE. THANK YOU, AGAIN, DO NOT TELL SNENHLANHLA. TAKE GOOD CARE OF MY KIDS, IF BOTH DANNY AND I ARE NOT ALIVE ANYMORE AS YOU READ THIS, IT IS YOUR DUTY TO MAKE SURE MY KIDS ARE WELL TAKEN CARE OFF. IF THAPELO OR BRIAN IS READING THIS, PASS IT OVER TO YOUR BROTHERS. I DON'T TRUST YOU WITH MY KIDS, I DON'T WANT THEM

TO EAT CANDY AND FAST FOODS  
FOR THEIR ENTIRE LIVES. AND  
PLEASE DO GET MARRIED, YOU WILL  
MAKE GREAT HUSBANDS. DANNY, IF  
YOU'RE ALIVE AND READING THIS,  
DO NOT HOLD ONTO ME FOREVER  
AS I WILL BE WATCHING OVER YOU.  
MOVE ON AND GET MARRIED TO  
SOMEONE WHOM YOU WILL FALL  
INLOVE WITH. I GIVE YOU MY  
BLESSINGS. LOVE HER  
UNCONDITIONALLY LIKE YOU  
LOVED ME AND MORE. YOU WILL  
FOREVER BE IN MY HEART. YOUR  
WIFE: ZIYANDA NYATHI MCKENZIE.

When she finished that letter we were

both in tears. It felt as if my wife was there reading this note to me. I couldn't help but just cry and think of all the moments we spent together

Mpho: Its all going to be okay man, lets just fulfil all her last wishes

Brian: Yes man, we owe it to her. And yes I will get married in 100years.

We all laughed and Lubah calmed Kamo down as she wanted nothing to do with Thabo.

Phila: You know what this means right?

Me: We need to get Nasi here and tell her everything

Jabu: That will be tough, that girl seems to be very stubborn.

Me: I'm even scared to call her. I feel things I've never felt before, she's just amazing and so strong.

Nkosi: You have to call her. She must be on her way back asap.

I sighed and decided to call her immediately. She answered on the third ring.

Me: Nasi, where are you?

Nasi: On our way back home from the mall, how cute? You don't know where I'm at, that's the first.

Me:(laughs) Whatever, I need you to

get home asap, pack all your bags including your mothers and you'll be coming back

Nasi: Danny, I cannot do that.

Me: I need you not to argue with me please Nasiphi, this is important.

Your mother will stay with us for the next few weeks until I get her a house and someone to take care of her.

Nasi: Danny, I will not allow you to do that, it's too much

Me: Babe, can we just argue about this when you get home?

Nasi: Fine!

Me: Don't be upset and just do as I

say. When you get home, you'll drop off the kids and the driver will take you to where I am.

Nasi: Yes sir

Me: I love it when you listen. It makes things very easy

She laughed at me and dropped the call. The boys were giving me the eye and so was Kamo

L'yanda: Babe?

Me: I just like calling her babe, nothing is going on. She's rejecting me.

#Nasi

The day turned out to be really fun, spending time with my mom and the kids was just so much fun and I must say, it was really a memory I will never forget. Danny called me about two hours ago demanding that we go back home, I tried arguing but it didn't work. Whatever it is I just have a feeling it has something to do with my identity and Hector. What he said about buying my mom a house and getting someone to take care of her is just not going to happen, that man has done too much for me and I cannot accept this at all. I got to this beautiful simple house and was



directed by someone called Stix, he looked a bit dodgy but it's funny how I wasn't scared at all. If I had balls I'd say I'm growing a pair. We got to some room and the gents were there and Kamo, strange, the girls are just always together, you never find just one of them alone.

Me: Hello

Kamo: Hey girl, we'll give you guys some space

Jabu: Why?

Lubah: Jabu! We'll give them space and you will follow us.

I laughed as they pushed each other

out of the room. Brian and Thapelo also wanted to stay so they could here what Danny was about to say

Me: What's going on?

Danny: What I'm about to say will probably just change your life forever but I need you to trust me.

Me: Okay, you're scaring me.

Danny: Trust me I'm scared too, I need you to know that I have never felt this way about anyone else, not even my wife. Nasiphi there are many things about you that you're about to find out and that you need to help us with so we can get to the bottom off

all of this. Please just trust me and let me protect you. I know you're not ready for all this and you will be confused but trust me when I say I will take care of this and make sure we find out everything there is to know. There's a side of my life that you don't know and I never wished for you to know but under these circumstances I'm forced to reveal this world to you. Trust me Nasiphi

As much as I trusted him, I was also afraid of what he is about to tell me. It scared me but I chose to trust him, I know he would never let anyone hurt me.

Me: I'm scared Danny but I choose to trust you.

He cupped my face with his hands and kissed me.

Danny: Thank you and I love you.

Nasiphi: I love you too Danny.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

## Insert 15

When Danny told me he loves me, it felt so warm and so right. I just couldn't hide the way I felt anymore. Even though I'm afraid of what the future holds for us, I confessed my love for him. I still do know that being in a relationship with him isn't much of a good idea and what I am about to discover seems as if it is more obstacles coming our way. I looked into his eyes as I promised to trust him.

Danny: Promise that all of this won't

change anything between us

Me: Danny, I cannot promise you that. I don't want to make promises I won't be able to keep. I don't know what it is that you're about to tell me but I do know it is life changing. I don't know where will it put us. It would be wrong of me to make an empty promise

He sighed and called the others to come.

Danny: I think Kamo should be the one who'll explain all this

Kamo: Ay we'll all take turns, its too much for me.

Me: Get to the point guys please I'm

freaking out already.

Danny: Well, one thing you need to know first is that I don't only own business, that's not where all my money comes from

Me: Let me guess, you into illegal things?

Danny: Yes.

Phila: Basically, those illegal things protect you and provide for all of us. The professions are just fronts.

Kamo: We were also involved in the force but they took us out.

Me: Wow

Jabu: Thats it?

Me: I don't know how to feel about it and you're not telling me everything.

Mpho: We've killed before and would kill anytime if we had to, we import and export weapons, not involved in drugs anymore and Razor, who is Danny's father is the person we work for.

Me: Danny have you also killed someone?

Danny: I've killed people

That just made my heart drop, it means it wasn't just one person but it was many people. I looked at Kamo



hoping they would tell me they are joking but she was serious and I saw that they weren't joking. I was hurt but I wasn't going to judge them, I for one knows how hard it is to hustle, I don't know their reasons for doing what they do but I'm sure they are valid enough.

Me: Oh okay, It is shocking news but I'm not going to judge you guys and be angry for the things you do. Just as long as we are all safe and all the kids are safe

Jabu: Thank you

Danny: So with that being said, Zee

was someone who loved danger and investigating. Her and Sneh grew up not knowing their parents and before she died we've found out that she was looking for her parents and investigating everyone involved.

Nkosi: We've discovered that Zee and Sneh aren't related, they are not blood sisters at all. We suspect that they might have met a very young age or brought up by the same foster parents and grew up knowing that they are sisters from the same parents

Me: Wow, does Sneh know about this?

Danny: No

Me: She's going to flip, I think she will just lose her mind.

Phila: That's why she won't find out.

Nasiphi, you are Ziyanda's sister.

I just laughed at him, at first I just thought I didn't hear him properly but they were all just serious.

Me: You're not joking?

Danny: No

I cried, I just let it all out. I cried for having to find out this way, I cried because I'll never get to meet my sister. I cried because all my life, I have lived a lie. I had a sister, who

knows? Maybe I have more siblings? I cried for my older sister but most of all, I cried because I'm inlove with her ex husband.

Me: How?

Danny: They did DNA tests, and it was a 99.99% match. My wife hid alot from me about this investigation she was doing, only Kamogelang knew and she kept it a secret too, even after she had passed away. Now we need to access that room, we cannot go through without your help, only you can open that room Nasiphi. She digged untill she found out who you are, you're Pearl Nasiphi Nyathi and

we suspect that Muziwokuthula Nyathi is your father.

Me: Why does that name sound so familiar?

Athi: Do you think you might know him?

Me: I'm not sure Athenkosi, but it just seems so familiar. What about my father, Hector? Why did you ask me about him?

Danny: We needed to be sure that he is the one who adopted you, but we don't think you were adopted

Me: What do you mean? I was adopted from an orphanage home

Bonga: There are no legal documents for your adoption procedure. So we did pay Hector a little visit, his story is that they took you from the hospital, legally and you were already registered as Pearl Nyathi on the other hand your story is that you were adopted from an orphanage home, which is something your mother told you right?

Me: Yes

Danny: Did she tell you that her marriage to Hector was fake?

Me: That's not true! My parents loved each other!

Athi: He said it himself, listen.

We all looked at Athi, maybe they didn't know that he recorded the conversation.

"Our marriage was fake, she couldn't give birth and she asked me to marry her so she can be able to adopt a child and the process could be quicker" the voice said and I knew it was my father, or shall I say Hector. There was no denying the fact that my father was a cruel man, that he didn't love me nor my mother. That's why he left so quickly when my mom got a stroke. I couldn't stop my tears and Kamo was holding me

Kamo: Its all going to be okay

Me: My whole life was a lie! I don't even trust my mother anymore, why didn't she tell me all this

Brian: Maybe she was protecting you, all these stories don't add up. We still do need to get your mothers side to it

Danny: We'll talk to her tomorrow morning. Zee left a letter, it was in codes but Kamo was able to translate it since we cannot access the room to get to the machine that easily translates these codes. Do you want to read it?

Me: Yes



He passed me some papers and I sat alone and read it. After a while I was finished and I was in tears, Danny must have been hurting when he read this. Its all just so sad, she's gone but she left so much behind.

Me: Can you give me the coded one?

Kamo: Sure

She gave it to me and I studied it. It was really complicated but I managed as the alphabets were there on the translated one.

Me: She used numbers and alphabets from those phones with keyboards?

Kamo: Yes

Me: Smart. Why is the last one not complete?

Athi: How did you know its not complete?

Me: Its obvious, in everything she's written about me, she writes PEARL NASIPHI NYATHI, but here its only, Pearl Nasiphi, Nyathi is missing.

Kamo: Nyathi is a 6 letter word, there are 12spaces there.

Me: Lets go open the room

L'yanda: We only have one try left Nasi, if we mess this up we have to wait for long till we can open it up again, time isn't on our side.

Me: I think I know what's missing.

Danny: You have to be certain  
Nasiphi, we only have one try.

Me: I'm certain.

I was lying, I wasn't certain at all. It was just something I was suspecting, it's the only thing that made sense.

We were all nervous and I stood there and closed my eyes. As I was about to start pressing, I suddenly had what seemed to be flashbacks

Me: Aaah! My head hurts!

I felt dizzy, it's like my head was spinning. I saw two beautiful young girls playing together outside and it

seems as if I was sitting down watching them, it was me as a kid, maybe 2 or 3 years old. They were so dirty and some lady came to them and carried them while next to me was a man, old enough to be a grandfather. I was also carried and we were taken inside a house. She bathed us while she sang beautifully, she was singing "Thula Thula, nana thula sana, thul'utata uzobuya ekuseni" it is as if she was now trying to get me to sleep but I kept on crying. I couldn't see her face properly but I could see the other girls, one looked so much like me and the other, the

other one looked like Sneh. I opened my eyes when I was suddenly splashed by water.

Me: What the hell!

Kamo: You were completely out, you fainted.

Me: I didn't faint, I was having flashbacks.

Suddenly I sang as the lady was singing, "Thula, Thula, nana, Thula sana, thul'utata uzobuya ekuseni"

They laughed at me and I was confused

Athi: Normally the song says "Thul'umama uzobuya ekuseni"

Me: No! No! That's not how she sang it. I could hear her, she sang it as I was saying it.

Athi: I think she's loosing her mind

Bonga: What else did you hear?

Me: I only heard that song, they were playing and I was watching them sitting next to someone who looked old enough to be my grandpa, that lady came and carried us, she then bathed us while singing that song.

Kamo: Have you never heard that song before?

Me: No

Bonga: I think she was getting

flashbacks or visions.

Me: I need to sleep, I have a headache. Can we do all of this tomorrow please?

Mpho: Okay, tomorrow everyone must be here at 8am, exactly.

We all agreed on 8am and I got in the car with Danny, Lubah and L'yanda. I was still confused by what happened and everything that I've been told tonight. This just puts a huge strain in what seemed to be a relationship between Danny and I. I can never be in a relationship with my sisters husband, as much as I'm inlove with

him. I cannot betray my sister like that, a sister that I didn't even know. The only time I get to know about her and how much she loved me and cared for me to look for me all this time. To trust me so much with all that she's done so far and putting it all in my hands. How will I open that place, what I suspected, I think it is wrong. The timing of that flashback isn't something that happened coincidentally, it was bound to happen. I also don't understand it but it all has a meaning behind it.

Danny: We home now, you can get out of the car.



I was so stuck in my own thoughts that I didn't even realize that we're home. I didn't even realize when he dropped Lubah and L'yanda off.

Danny: Do you want something to eat?

Me: Yes please, something small though.

Danny: A sandwich is okay?

Me: Yes please.

He made me a sandwich with Guava Juice. I looked at him irritated because he knows how much I hate it.

Danny: Sorry, it always slips my mind. It was always Zee favourite so I got

used to it too.

Me: What else did my sister like?

I saw that it hurt him a bit when I called Zee my sister, it also felt so foreign when I said it but I was happy. Knowing that somewhere in this world I had a sister, even though I didn't get to meet her but I know that she loved me. What's strange is what I saw on that flashback, I can't seem to put it all together.

Danny: She liked looking good, she loved clothes and you guys do have a bit of a similar sense of style. She loved crossword puzzles, sudoku, I

didn't even know how to play that game. She loved motorbikes, now that was what she was really into. She was always just on the run, she was adventurous, loved danger, she went hiking, sky diving. She lived on the edge, she was a true definition of someone who is an adrenaline junkie.

Me: Sounds so fascinating

Danny: She was fascinating, you didn't know what she would do next but what was weird was that, she was too respectful and calm at the same time, she agreed with everything I said, we didn't argue that much. But the way she argued with

Mpho, I wished she would argue with me like that. You know when you need someone who will push you, test you and fight with you, that's what I wanted. Even when I did her wrong, she would keep quiet and sometimes just forgive me. That side of her was weird because for someone with her dangerous character, I thought she would argue with me alot. I would sometimes just start a fight and she would just laugh at me, as time went by, I accepted how she was and I loved her more.

Me: You still do love her?

Danny: Yes I do, I'll always love Zee,

she'll always be in my heart.

I smiled and finished up my sandwich. After putting the dishes in the sink I poured myself orange juice and I washed the dishes I used. Danny just suddenly carried me

Me: Danny! Put me down! Put me down!

He wasn't putting me down and I was laughing alot.

Danny: You have a beautiful but weird laugh.

Me: Just put me down please

He put me on the kitchen counter and I couldn't move from him because he

was holding my legs around him

Danny: I do still love my wife, and I know one day I'll get over her but that doesn't mean I'll forget about her.

She's the mother of my kids and has played an important role in my life but all that doesn't change the way I feel about you Nasiphi. My feelings for you are genuine, I'm deeply inlove with you

Me: Its almost 1am Danny, let's go sleep.

Danny: Stop avoiding this, you told me you love me earlier on.

Me: And that wasn't a lie, I do love

you.

He tried to kiss me but I pushed him away

Me: I love you so much it hurts because of the situation we in right now. Danny, you are my late sisters husband and that won't change. I just found out tonight that she's my older sister and here I am, so inlove with her husband. That alone just makes me feel so bad, I'm betraying her. She loved me and looked for me, she cared for me without even knowing me, that alone just shows what a big warm heart she had, how could I betray her like this? How could we

betray her like that? This, us, whatever is going on here should just come to an end Danny.

Danny: I know, I did feel guilty when I stopped thinking about her and all that was in my mind was you, finding out that you are sisters also hurt me deeply because I know I'm betraying her but this, us, we cannot be ignored Nasiphi! You know we've tried! You know what I feel for you is real! We cannot keep avoiding it!

Me: Dont you think it hurts me too!? That I cannot express my love for you the way I want to! That I don't get to be wrapped around your arms, that I



crave for you to touch me and kiss me! That you're the only one on my mind all day long, Danny McKenzie I also have feelings for you and they are deep but we cannot pursue them. It was hard being with you just knowing that I look like Zee and you'd be using me as a rebound but it's even worse now that I know she's my older sister! That we share the same blood! Now I'm inlove with her husband, a man she loved! A man she slept with every night, a man she trusted and a man she made love with and made those beautiful kids! Now I love the same man! How

twisted is that! Everyday when I see you walking down those stairs looking damn handsome! Making my blood boil and making me horny without even touching me could be the very same way she felt as she stood right here and waited to fix your tie just like I do. You were her support system, you loved her and was there for her at all times and that is how you are with me, Danny, this isn't right. This isn't right at all

Danny: I didn't choose to fall inlove with you, I didn't look for you and plan to fall inlove with you, I was attracted to you before I even saw your face! I

saw those big bright eyes and when I met you when you had no mask on, I still saw those eyes and felt some kind of way. I know you didn't choose to fall inlove with me either but love chose us for one other. Love broke me! When it took my wife away from me, when it allowed me to love her unconditionally knowing that it will soon after rip me into pieces when life took her away from me. But you came along, you came into my life for a purpose, within the short amount of time I've known you, you've managed to restore me. Love Breaks And Restores! You are the one for me

Nasiphi.

I was now crying and I was out of words. I was hurting and I wanted to hold him and kiss him but I just couldn't.

Me: I can't Danny

Danny: Why?

Me: You're my sisters husband.

With that said he let me down and I walked away. I heard him bang the table and scream. I flinched a bit and I continued walking upstairs. I wanted to go check on him but I didn't.

Instead I went to check on the kids and they were sleeping peacefully

and so was mom. I went to my room and took off my clothes. I got into the shower and let the water run all over my body and I closed my eyes. I got the shock of my life when I felt him touch my neck and he was breathing heavily

Me: Don't do this

Danny: Don't say a word Nasiphi.

I turned around and looked at him, he was naked! As in naked! I saw his manhood and damn was it big and scary. I laughed to myself and he smirked. He probably noticed that I was staring. I was nervous when he

suddenly took my shower gel and washed my body. I kept quiet and let him be, it felt weird when he touched my private parts and he didn't do anything inappropriate. He washed himself to as I just watched him and he held me closely and we let the water run all over our bodies. I tiptoed, since he's taller and washed his hair. I was in his arm for a while and then he switched off the water.

Danny: Let's get you dried up

He passed me a towel and I wiped myself dry, he also did the same.

Danny: Will you wear your PJs or

night dress?

Me: The night dress please

He passed it to me and I got dressed while he put his boxers on and opened the bed for me. I didn't even ask why he was doing all this. I actually don't even want to know.

Danny: Come to bed Nasiphi.

I slowly walked to the bed and I tucked in. He slept next to me and held me closely.

Me: Danny, we shouldn't be doing this

Danny: Just sleep Nasiphi. All you need to know is that I'm not letting you go, you're mine Nasiphi.

He kissed my forehead and I just closed my eyes and sighed. He repeated again

Danny: You're mine.

Hope you enjoy

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

Please like and comment

#LBAR

Insert 16



'We were sitting outside in the shade under a beautiful tree, the sun was shining bright and we had ice cream in a tub with the three of us sharing it. I could see clearly now that it is me as a kid, Zee and Sneha and the woman next to us was our mother. She was sitting there with her arms folded and looking at the gate singing her song, she sings it all the time.

"Mama, why are we sitting here? I want to go play" Zee spoke

She genuinely smiled and said; "You cannot play in the boiling sun, it is not good for your skin, especially Pearl's skin. She is a precious pearl."

We sat and watched as the neighbours kids were playing outside and we were stuck under this tree.

Mama said she will tell us a story

"When we were young, he planted this tree in his fathers yard. He knew he would one day inherit it. That him and I, and my father who raised me even when he was alone and poor would stay here. We watched it as it grew and it was our favourite tree, I would sit here and wait for him till he comes back home. From here I can see the bus stop, I would run to my husband and he would come back with alot of things for us from the city of Gold."

she said.

We sat as we listened but I couldn't hear clearly anymore. It was now blurry and I could only see and not hear anything. It was now in the night as we were inside the house but she was sitting outside. We followed grandpa to the door

"Come inside, he is not coming back. He hasn't come back home for two years, there will be no difference tonight." Mkhulu said.

Suddenly someone was shaking me, the flashback was slowly fading away

"No! No! No!" I screamed

Danny: Shit! You scared me

He took a bottle of whiskey next to him and gulped, his face was red

Danny: Don't ever scare me like that ever again

Me: What happened? Where am I?

Danny: You're in your room, you were pale and not breathing at all. Nasi, I thought you were dead.

Me: I need to pee

As I was walking to the bathroom, he was following me, still carrying his bottle of whiskey.

Me: Where are you going?

Danny: To the bathroom with you, what if something happens while you in there?

Me: You'll stand by the door and I will not lock but you cannot just come in

Danny: What are you hiding? I've seen everything that there is to see in your body.

Me: Just stand by the door and shut up Danny.

He laughed and did as I said. I did my business and then washed my hands. Tears just fell from my face as I thought of what I saw on that flashback. I didn't realise that I was

crying loudly, last thing I wanted was for Danny to hear me and come in and I'll find comfort in him, but he did hear me and I was in his arms within seconds and crying. He just held me and brushed my back.

Danny: Do you want to talk about it?

Me: No, we'll talk later.

He nodded and kissed my forehead. I kicked him out of the bathroom and I took a shower. When I came out he was still standing by the door.

Me: Seems as if I got myself a bodyguard

Danny: Your personal bodyguard, that

is.

I laughed at him and he made the bed while I got dressed. I went downstairs as he went to his room. My mom was watching T.V. and the kids were there too.

Me: Good morning, have you had breakfast?

Them: Good morning and yes

Me: Oh okay

Mom: It is in the food warmer

Me: Thank you

My mom went all out for a full greasy English breakfast. I ate and when

Danny came down, I served him his food.

Danny: Thank you, we'll be leaving in a few minutes. We're catching a lift from L'yanda.

While he ate I spent sometime with the kids, with everything that is going on I have to make sure I do not disregard them. I've just got to love them more as I now know they are my sisters kids, they are my kids.

Mom was looking at me and Onika weirdly

Me: What is it?

Mom: Its just weird how you look like



these kids. Don't you find it strange?

Me: I've never noticed.

She nodded and Danny said his goodbyes to the kids and so did I.

Onika: Will you be back to tuck us in bed?

Me: Yes sweetheart

Danver: Promise?

Me: Pinky promise.

I kissed their foreheads and we left.

L'yanda was already waiting for us

Me: This better be quick, we need to have supper with the kids, bath them and tuck them in by 8. So at 6:30pm,

we must be home Danny.

Danny: Fine.

We got to HQ and we were the first to arrive which isn't normal because lately we've been the last to arrive in any gathering. Shortly after we arrived, the others also came.

Mpho: What a morning, Zandy cried all morning.

Me: Why?

Mpho: I've been coming home late for the past I don't know how many days and she's angry.

Me: You need to get home early today.

Mpho: Its a must

Danny: And I have to be home at 6:30pm because someone promised we'd tuck the kids in bed

Mpho: I'll also leave at 6:30then

Thapelo: I guess thats departure time for all of us. Let's get working so that we can finish up quickly

I texted my mom telling her not to cook and I'll bring takeaways.

Nkosi: We do still need to talk to your mom Nasi

Kamo: Danny, Nkosi, Bonga and Phila, you'll go over to Danny's to talk to her mom.

Jabu: That could work. So did you have any visions?

Danny: She did and she was half dead. That shit is scary

Brian: How did you see her?

Danny: I was sleeping next to her and when she.... Argh! Brian!

We all laughed, Brian's plan was to actually confirm that we were on the same bed

Athi: Getting cosy aren't we?

He smirked and I smacked his arm.

Bonga: Okay, no time for jokes now. Tell us about your flashback

Me: We were sitting under a tree, with the woman who I assume is our mother, Sneh was there too. We were young and she was sitting staring into space and she didn't want us to go play in the sun because it is not good for our skin, she said especially Pearls skin, she's a precious pearl whom I figured that she is talking about me

Nkosi: So that confirms that your real name is Pearl

Me: I guess so, she was still singing the song and she told us a story about the tree we were sitting under, that her husband planted it which I

assume is our father, when she's seated there she can see the bus stop. When he got back from the city of Gold which is Joburg, she would run to him. I don't remember clearly but right after that we were behind Mkhulu as he said something about our father, he said he hasn't come back for the past two years and it won't be different tonight, she was sitting there still waiting for him in the cold.

Nkosi: That means your father left when you guys were young and she was still waiting for him. I guess this is the way Zee is communicating with

you, slowly revealing the truth.

Me: Do you believe in such things?

Bonga: We're all very cultural, especially Nkosi and I so yes. And yes, Danny also believes in such

Danny: I did tell you I'm a black man stuck in a white mans body.

I completely zoned out as they were talking and Mpho was busy on the computer systems. My head was spinning and I couldn't see properly, I was screaming but it seemed as if I was slowly loosing my voice. I was in an empty dark place with numbers flowing infront of me. Dear Lord

please save me, I am slowly loosing my mind.

Me: "Help!Help!"

No one could hear me, even Danny wasn't here to save me. It showed PEARL NASIPHI NYATHI 223422. My head was spinning again and I opened my eyes. I was on the floor again, I guess I fainted.

Kamo: Are you okay now? You were screaming for help

Thabo: And we felt so helpless,  
Bonga said we should let you be.

Me: I'm okay

I went straight to Zee's secret room



and I was able to open it using the what was shown to me in my vision.

Lubah: Guys! She opened!

The all came quickly to me as we stared at this big room filled with so many computer systems and papers all over the place. There were boards and charts, you would swear this place belonged to some hot shot detective.

Athi: I'm sorry but I think Zee was mentally disturbed somehow

Danny: You can definitely say that again. We went in and everyone just found a place to sit.

Kamo: Come look at this.

She passed me a file and it had some pictures of me, some I was with my mom and some were taken when I was at work at club 411

Me: But she said she never got to meet me

Phila: Most probably, she had someone looking for you and following you

Kamo: She never got to see these pictures, she was carrying these files when I caught her and told her to stop, I remember her putting them in here.

Me: She was really close to finding me

Mpho: Check those out, she has files on your mother, Hector, Muziwokuthula, you and Sneh. These are two other people whom I assume are Sneh's parents

Athi: Nqobile and Ndoda Bhengu, it says here they stayed in Mpumalanga.

Me: What do we do now?

Nkosi: I feel as if your visions could lead us to the truth. No computer science can help us right now

L'yanda: Why don't we call Vulamasango, maybe he can help.

Me: Who is that?

Danny: Family shrink

Nkosi called Vulamasango and put it on loud speaker

Vula: My King, Great one of Langelihle tell that Nyathi to go home and she will know the truth. Her home has been abandoned and only she can help it rise again. Go home young girl, they are depending on you to set them free

With that said he ended the call.

Danny: There he goes again, always speaking in riddles.

Me: What if he means I should go

home, the home I see in my visions

Jabu: But we don't even know where that is. We have no direction whatsoever, we have no lead, we have nothing.

Mpho: Maybe Zee had something or her mother can help us.

We spent the next hours searching and searching for leads, some were busy looking through Ziyanda's files and some were on the computers.

Me: It seems as if she investigated each and every one of you

Kamo: Her and Zandi did that when you first met.

Lubah: I remember

We continued searching and it was a mission impossible.

Thapelo: I have Muziwokuthula's address, he stays in Johannesburg, he worked at the mine for many years.

Jabu: Which shows that he really must be your father.

Phila: What is the connection between him and Hector about?

Me: Maybe he left for Joburg and never ever came back

Athi: It can't be.

We spent the whole day there putting

together puzzle pieces of this entire mystery. It was honestly so exhausting as we had so many missing pieces to all this.

Me: It's 6:30pm already, let's get going. We need to pass by Thabo's restaurant and get some food. I told mom not to cook, I hope she listened.

We closed and went to the restaurant while others went home, we were now riding with Nkosi since he's car was enough for the 6 of us. We got the takeaways and went home. The kids were happy to see me and I dished up for everyone and we ate.

Mom: I'm so happy I lived till I got to share a meal and sit on the same table with the King himself.

Me: You know him?

He had just introduced himself as Nkosinathi

Mom: Who doesn't know the King of Langelihle? I feel very honoured

Nkosi: I'm very flattered mama but please do call me Nkosinathi

Mom: I cannot MY King, that would be very disrespectful of me.

Nkosi just laughed and I excused myself and I prepared the bath for the kids. Danny came up with them and



we bathed them, Onika wasn't that interested as she was very sleepy. We dressed them up and tucked them into bed.

Danny: That was easy

Me: Only because they were already sleepy.

Danny: Are you ready? We can always stop if you don't want any of this to happen.

Me: It has to be done, I'm scared of what we will discover along the way but I'm fulfilling my sisters last wishes.

Danny: Thank you. You're really an

amazing person, you are indeed a precious pearl.

We went back downstairs and we sat at the lounge with everyone else

Me: Mama, I'm sure you must be wondering why they are here. Mama, these are our friends and we need to talk to you about something

Bonga: We do not mean to invade in your family private matters but under these circumstances we are in, we are forced to. We will ask some personal questions and we beg you to please cooperate and answer all the questions truthfully as we will not

be able to help your daughter if we do not get truthful answers

Mom: Are you a lawyer my son?

We all laughed and Bonga nodded, it is all just in the way he speaks and presents himself. You can easily tell that he is a lawyer.

Me: Mama, I now know that your marriage to Hector was fake, it was based on lies and you just wanted to adopt a baby because you couldn't have kids.

Mom: And where did you get that nonsense? I'm sure it was that bastard Hector Dlamini. My child, you

were not adopted. I don't know where on earth Hector took you from. What he told me was that he found you in the dustbin sitting there sucking your thumb, from where he worked. But something about his story wasn't convincing enough. Hector was a lowlife when we met but I loved him because he was a good man but I was blind, to him I was only just his ticket to wealth and a good life. Yes I cannot have kids, and he reminded me of that every day of our marriage life. He wanted kids and I couldn't give him any so when he came with you, I accepted you mostly because I

knew how much having a child to him meant. We instantly had a beautiful connection with you and I loved you as my own, he told me that he wants to name you Nasiphi, I wanted to name you Siphosethu because you were a gift from us. When he came home with documents saying you are Pearl Nasiphi Nyathi, he said at the home affairs they were able to indentify that you were registered as Pearl Nyathi so he used Nasiphi as your second name since he explained that he found you in the bin and was now your legal guardian. So I didn't question him more until one day he

came with a man who strangely looked a lot like you. I questioned him about where he really found you and how is that man connected to you, when you came Nasiphi, you were not a small infant, you were around 4 years old. I fought him and wanted the truth but I only got beatings for questioning him as a man and not respecting him.

Me: Was that man Muziwokuthula Nyathi?

Mom: No, he introduced himself as Ndoda Bhengu.

Phila: I give up! This keeps on going

around in circles. This Ndoda Bhengu person is the one we assume is Sneh's father. There is some connection in all of them.

Mom: I don't think that was his real name, he stayed for two days with us and he kept on forgetting that his name is Ndoda, when I called him, he wouldn't respond after some time he would respond, I guess that's when he remembered he was "Ndoda Bhengu" Hector's excuse was that this man was mentally disturbed and had a short memory.

Danny: That's a lie, there are so many different stories to this.

Me: Mom, I have a late sister and she is the mother of Danny's kids. She has been looking for me but fate found a way to bring me close to my family.

Mom: That is why you look so much like these kids.

Bonga: When you first met her, how was she?

Mom: Lost, she didn't know anything. I thought she was a dumb child but surprisingly she was very smart.

Some days Hector would go with her to the hospital saying she's sick and when she came back, she would've



forgotten many things. I was never allowed to take her to the hospital but I was told he was sick with a chronic diseases but to me she was perfectly fine. It stopped after a year she had been with us and she was a normal kid. When I got a stroke, Hector divorced me and took everything I had. That's when I put two and two together and I was able to get us the home we live in. It was tough but I was able to raise my little angel and she worked hard. I'm very proud of her

Danny: It makes sense how you do not remember your childhood and it

is now all coming back. Mam, do you have any idea where that man stayed?

Mom: No my son, but Hector said they worked together when he was still working at the mine, Hector got injured and couldn't go work again.

Nkosi: Thank you for your time. We really appreciate it

Mom: Anything to help my daughter. Please do help her find out her true home and identity, it is her right.

Me: Are you not mad?

Mom: I can never be mad at you, I knew this day would come and I can never deny you off your birth right.

Danny: Do you perhaps have any idea what happened to her back? The burnt scar

We all looked at him, and when did he notice that? Oh, he saw me naked last night. I have a burnt scar on my back and I don't know what happened

Mom: No, I don't know. When she came it was still a fresh scar and I took care of it.

Phila: Thank you, we will be on our way now. I don't want Siya to kill me for coming home late.

They said their goodbyes and Danny walked them out. Mom drank her pills

and went to sleep. Danny came back and he set next to me. I had my legs on his thighs and he was massaging them.

Me: Do you believe her?

Danny: Yes I do, do you have any reason not to trust her?

Me: No and I trust her with my life. It's just that I do not know what to believe anymore. I've never been this confused in my life.

Danny: Everything will work out, one way or the other. The truth always reveals itself.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's  
of friends

#LBAR

Insert 17

I woke up feeling tired and I prepared  
for the day. I got the kids ready for  
school and it was a mission as  
always, waking them up is really hard.  
They love sleeping. I was making

breakfast when Danny came back from his morning run that he does once a week.

Danny: Good morning, I want to hug you but I'm all sweaty.

Me: Going to work?

Danny: No and I need to leave in 30minuntes. I'm driving Nkosi to the airport, his duties await him. Soon after this ends I'll be off to Langelihle too.

Me: Oh okay.

The kids were ready and Danny drove them to school and I went upstairs to clean my room. After I was done,

mom woke up and I made breakfast for her.

Mom: How are you feeling after all this?

Me: I honestly don't know mama, it's just all overwhelming. There are too many stories to this and I'm very confused

Mom: Hang in there, the truth will eventually come out. I didn't tell you all this because I wanted to protect you. I know these boys will help you. It makes me happy to see that you're surrounded with people who are there to protect you and love you.

Me: I'm glad I am too, I appreciate them and their wives too are really good people.

Mom: Maybe I will meet them before I go.

Me: Go where? You're still going to stay here till I get you a house.

Mom: There would be no need, I will soon rest peacefully.

I looked at her and I just didn't understand why she was talking this way. I washed the dishes and we went to the tv room.

Me: What do you want to watch?

Mom: Anything, so tell me, what is



going on between you and Danny?

Me: Nothing mom, he loves me and I love him but nothing is going on between us. Mom I just feel as if we're betraying his wife, whom I just found out is my late sister. It's just so wrong

Mom: Nothing is wrong with it, yes maybe you might feel guilty but you cannot control your feelings. I believe you and Danny met for a reason and he is restoring your life and putting it together, while you are also helping him put his life together. And traditionally, a man is allowed to marry her wifes sister after the wife

passes.

Me: Mom, Danny is white.

Mom: It doesn't seem like it to me. That man loves you, I've seen the way he looks at you. He protects you, if you'd trip and fall he would completely lose his mind if he wasn't there to hold you or that the body guards allowed you to fall.

I laughed at my mother as I thought of Danny shouting at every one because I fell.

Me: He said he's never letting me go, that I am his.

Mom: Those are the words of a true

man who knows what he wants.

Me: Mama he once said that he will hurt me

Mom: And he was being honest, at least he didn't promise you bliss and roses, telling you lies that he will never hurt you. He was honest because he knows that he will eventually hurt you, in a relationship there is always going to be heartache, it's not always perfect, he will hurt you and you will hurt him.

Me: What if he hits me?

Mom just laughed at me like I was crazy.

Mom: That man will never lay a hand on you, trust me.

Me: You can never be sure.

Mom: I am sure my child even if he does, I know you will fight back. I didn't raise a weak daughter. You are strong and you stand your ground and never back down without a fight.

Me: Yes mom, you've told me those words for so many years

Mom: And what else did I tell you

Me: That I shouldn't cry over something that is not worth my tears.

Mom: Allow yourself to love, don't let what happened between me and your

father stop you from loving Danny.

Me: I'm scared mom

Mom: It's okay to be scared, take this chance and if it doesn't work out, it doesn't. If it does, it does. You don't want to wake up one day and regret not taking the chance.

Me: I understand.

After a few hours of watching T.V. and having the talk with mom, I got a text from Danny telling me to wear something comfortable. He's coming to pick me up and it's urgent. I went to change into a black Adidas tracksuit and sneakers. Tied my hair

and put on some lipstick

Mom: You look good

Me: Thank you. I'll be back before supper, someone will come deliver lunch and the kids will be dropped off around 2. Don't cook mom

Mom: I'll cook Nasiphi now go.

I went outside and Danny was at the gate waiting for me so I walked there. I got into the car and he looked at me weirdly

Me: What?

Danny: Nothing, you look beautiful.

Me: Thanks.

He drove off and I know we're off to HQ. While he was driving he held my hand and I let him be. He parked and we sat in the car for a while.

Me: Why aren't we going in?

Danny: We will, just promise me you won't freak out.

Me: I cannot promise you that.

Danny:(sighs) I'll be here to support you, Kamo will be there too if you feel as if you're mad at me.

Me: Why would I be mad at you?

Danny: Because your father is in there and I roughed him up a bit.

With that said he got out of the car and I followed him. We went downstairs and he opened the door. My eyes couldn't believe what I was seeing, Jabu, Kamo, Thabo, Thapelo and Bonga were there too just sitting as if this is normal. I wanted to puke and leave this place but I also wanted answers.

Me: Hector

He's eyes widened when he saw me and he was crying. Danny made an understatement when he said he roughed him up a bit, he had blood all over his clothes and one of his toes was missing. He was badly beaten up



and chained like a dog.

Me: Can I give him some water?

Jabu: Sure

I took a bottle and a straw and helped him drink the water. He looked at me with pleading eyes and he knew he was taking advantage of my kindness but I wouldn't let him win.

Me: Has he spoken?

Thaps: We were waiting for you

I took a wet cloth and wiped off the blood on his face. Tears fell from my eyes and I tried holding them back

Me: Why am I helping him?

Hector: Because you are my child and you love me Nasiphi. Forgive me and unchain me

I stepped away from him and looked at him

Me: You deserve to be chained like the dog you are! You left us! All you ever wanted was money, you selfish bastard

Hector: That is no way to talk to your father

Me: You are not my father!! Now tell me, where did you find me?

Hector: We adopted you

Me: Stop lying! I know the lies you

told my mother, that you found me in the bin. Does that ring a bell?

Hector: She's lying

Thaps: I know something that will get him to talk, shall I do it?

Me: Do it

I watched as he cut off another toe and Hector was screaming for my help.

Me: Speak or the other toe goes. And trust me, this time I will not hesitate to do it myself!

Okay? Is this really me? The anger inside of me was boiling up and I needed answers.

Hector: Okay! I will speak. Your mother is Ntombi Nyathi, she was married to Muziwokuthula Nyathi. I met them when you were not even born yet, Muzi was my best friend and we worked at the mine together. I met your mother when we went to Muzi's home, he wanted to introduce me to his wife and kid. His kids name was Ziyanda, she was still just a year old. After 2 few years of him helping me alot financially and I was able to survive because of him. He told me he needed to take care of some business, some man owed him and I went with him. I discovered that he

was a wealthy man who was into human trafficking. We went to see the Bhengu Family, Nqobile and Ndoda Bhengu who owed him lots of money, almost close to a million. He raped Nqobile in front of Ndoda whom I chained, he also made me rape Nqobile, I had no choice. Your father was a dangerous man. They had a small child, Snehlanhla, who saw everything that happened. He shot Ndoda twice in the leg and told me to take the kid. They begged him not to do anything but he told them he would make the child his sex slave and we left with her. Fortunately, he

didn't make Sneh his sex slave, he said it was just to scare them and he will keep the child until they pay him back. He injected Sneh with something that will make her lose her memory and it worked. He then took her to his wife and lied about finding her in the streets. Your mother was kind and she took Sneh as her own child.

Me: Continue

Hector: I need water

I helped him drink water and all this time Danny was staring at me all this time. I sat next to him and he held my

hand squeezing it.

Hector: I was now involved in everything he did, I got injured at work and I couldn't work at the mine anymore. That's when I met your Yenzolo, the mother who raised you. She loved me and took me in, we got married shortly after. I did things quick because she was rich and I loved money. She trusted me enough to take all her belongings and savings and sign them over to me after I convinced her. She couldn't have children and I knew I would soon leave her as I had got everything I wanted. Muzi had his acts of just

disappearing but he called me after years of not hearing from him. I had the money to pay him but he didn't want it, he wanted me to accompany him to his wife. He told me he now had three kids, one that he last saw when she was just a year old and Zee and Sneh. We went to his village but we didn't stay at his house but we did go see his family. He told me he had big plans for his family, especially his kids. When we got there he said I should set the house on fire. We argued until he shot my arm and I did as he said. I think he didn't know that there were people in the house



because he shortly went in and took out his children. He gave me his youngest which was you and told me to run away with you. You were crying alot and you got burnt on your back. After a day I went back home with you and I got a call from him telling me to take good care of you and he will pay me. That was more money so I took the job and said I got you from the bin from where I worked. My wife couldn't have kids so she gladly accepted you because she knew I wanted kids. Everything was going well until Muzi showed up at my house, he wanted to see you. He

introduced himself as Ndoda Bhengu and the stupid man couldn't act because he would forget he is using Ndoda Bhengu as his name. My wife got suspicious and asked many questions because you look alot like Muzi, he was your father afterall. The only way I could shut her up was by beating her up. Muzi told me the entire family was safe, he said he wanted to burn down the house because it reminded him of his late father who sexually molested him in that same house. He said he knew that you had all went to town but you were inside, he managed to save you

all. He told me he had rebuilt his home next to the one he burnt down and your mother and grandfather were okay. After that, I have never heard or seen Muzi ever again. But he still does send me lots of money to take care of you

Me: But you using that money to take care of yourself!

Hector: Yes and I deserve that money and you won't get a cent from it

Me: I don't want that filthy money! You selfish bastard, I cannot even look at you, you disgust me.

Danny: Where is that village?

Hector: All the way in the Eastern Cape, In Bizana. I do not remember the villages name properly but it was Manqofoza at that time.

Bonga wrote it down and he also told us where the Bhengu's lived.

Me: For your childrens safety, I hope you're telling the truth.

I left the room and Kamo followed me.

Kamo: Want something to eat?

Me: No thank you. I'll just drink water

All I heard was loud screams and I knew they were beating him up.

Danny came and called stix

Stix: Boss

Danny: Take a few boys with you and go leave him at the gate of his house. Clean job please

Stix: Sho boss.

He didn't look at me and he went to the bathroom. They all cleaned themselves up and changed clothes.

Me: Can you find out where my home is?

Jabu: I'll be able to look into the area and find directions to the home. I can also look into where Muzi is right now, Hectors phone still had his recent

number and I'll be able to trace where the money is sent from.

Me: I think we should tell Sneh

Thaps: But she's still taking care of a newborn baby.

Me: What? When did she give birth?

Kamo: Last night, to a beautiful baby girl whom she named Ziyanda. She's still going through alot and we don't want to stress her. We can tell her atleast a month from now

Me: Can we atleast just look for her parents?

Danny: That can be done.

Me: I want to go to my home, I need to go home. My mother and grandfather need me, I hope he is still alive.

Phila: Vulamasango said something about setting them free, maybe they are still alive and waiting to see you again.

Me: I need to rest

Danny: Lets get going. See you later gents. Kamo, take care.

Kamo: Will do. The girls and I will be having lunch tomorrow, well pick you up at 12

Me: Okay, see you.

We got into the car and drove back home. I took a shower and wore my pyjamas. The kids were back and lunch was delivered.

Danny: Dont worry, I'll dish up.

Mom: Are you okay Nasi?

Me: Yes mom, I'm okay. Just tired

Onika: Eat your food so you can go rest

Me: Thank you, will you take a nap with me?

Onika: Yes

Danver: I'll play video games with daddy and gogo



We all ate and Danny washed the dishes. Onika and I went to take a nap. After a few hours I woke up and Onika was still asleep. I went downstairs and mom was with Danver

Me: Danver, where is your father?

Danver: The study. Can we have lasagna tonight?

Me: Yes

Danver: You're the best. I love you

Me: I love you too little Danny

I went to the study and Danny looked frustrated.

Me: May I come in?

Danny: Sure

I sat on the table and he quickly covered my thighs

Danny: Do you see what your thighs are doing to me?

Me: Sorry, are you okay? You look frustrated

Danny: I'm just worried about you.

Me: Where was Zee buried?

Danny: Here in Durban, the cemetery isn't that far from here.

Me: I want to go visit her grave tomorrow before having lunch with

the girls

Danny: Okay we can go tomorrow.

Me: Thank you

Danny: When do you want to go to the EC?

Me: This weekend please. I want to get this over and done with.

Danny: I understand

Me: I still feel as if it will be wrong of me to go there without Sneha, she also grew up there and she deserves the truth

Danny: Lets call Athi, maybe we can tell her tomorrow after lunch.

We called Athi and I reasoned with him and made him see the need of Sneh knowing the truth. If she finds out later, and maybe from someone else. She will hate us for hiding this from her. We all agreed that we'll meet up at Athi's house for lunch. We won't be going out for lunch but instead we'll go over there.

Danny: I guess we're doing this tomorrow

Me: I guese so

Danny: And when are you going to be my girlfriend?

I just laughed and I really didn't

expect that from him

Me: Let's just talk about us when all of this is over okay?

Danny: So there are chances of us being together?

Me: Yes Danny but I just want to start off on a clean state.

Danny: I understand, now can I just kiss you?

Me: No!

I tried running from him but he caught me and put me against the wall. He kissed me passionately and kept on rubbing my clit.

Me: Danny

Danny: Sssssh, don't say a word  
Nasiphi.

I decided to let him be as he inserted his finger inside my honeypot. I've never done this before and it felt so good. I couldn't help but moan, he increased his pace as I felt my knees get weak and I was shaking. He squeezed my boob tightly and I was holding onto him as I felt a fluid come out of my honeypot and he licked his fingers. How did he make me feel this much pleasure with just his fingers? My cheeks were red and I couldn't stop blushing

Danny: You taste good.

I didn't know how to respond but he just held onto him and kissed my forehead.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

## Insert 18

Today is a big day for me, I'm going to see my sister in her place of rest and it is sad that we didn't get the chance to meet. The part of telling Sneh the truth is just scary but it has to be done. I woke up and took a shower. I woke the kids up and prepared them for school.

Onika: Can I wear my nike sneakers today?

Me: Sure, go grab the pair you want.

She has many nike sneakers so I didn't know which one it was. I took Danvers hockey bag and we went



downstairs.

Danny: Morning, come Onika, let me help you put your shoes on.

Me: I'll make them their cereal.

I made them cereal and they ate.

After 30minutes we were all done and the driver took them to school.

Danny: You don't look too good

Me: I'm okay.

Danny: You know you don't have to lie to me, you can trust me.

Me: I'm scared and just sad that's all. Just wondering how it would've been to have a sister.

Danny: You can always find a sister in Sneh any of the girls for that matter. You can Sneh basically grew up together it's just that you do not remember.

Me: I guess you're right. Let me go get dressed

Danny: Sure

I went to my room and wore a long black dress. Tied my hair and put a doek over my shoulders.

Went back downstairs and mom was in the kitchen

Me: Morning mom

Mom: Danny told me you found your

home and you're going to see  
Ziyanda

Me: Yeah, apparently my home is in  
the Eastern Cape somewhere in  
Bizana. I'll go there this weekend

Mom: I'll stay with the kids here. I  
wish you all the best my child.

Me: Sbahle will also be here to assist  
you mom, I don't want you  
overworking yourself.

Danny: We should get going

Me: Bye mom

I hugged and kissed her cheek. We  
got into the car and drove off

Me: Can we get some flowers?

Danny: Yeah sure, she loved lilies.

We bought the flowers and drove silently to the cemetery.

Danny: You ready?

Me: Yes

We walked to her grave and sat down next to it. The sun was blazing hot and Danny held an umbrella for me. My skin and the sun don't get along at all.

Danny: Hello Cupcake, your sister is here.

Me: You call her cupcake?

Danny: Yep, it's even engraved on her tombstone. Right there

It was really there and I laughed at him.

Danny: Should I give you some space?

Me: Yes please

I held the umbrella myself and he walked away. He stood not so far away from me.

Me: Hi, my name is Nasiphi, well I just discovered that it's actually Pearl. I'm your sister, the one you've been looking for and here I am now. Things have been really complicated and I wish I was able to meet you. I wish

we could've had some time to spend together and for me to have seen this beautiful fascinating character they tell me about. Denver and Onika are okay, they are doing very well at school and they are happy kids. They are in good hands, I love them as my own. Danny has also been a good father to them and he's slowly improving and not drinking alcohol alot anymore. Maybe one day he'll stop drinking. I don't even know what to say say.

I started crying and just poured it all out

Me: I will go look for our parents and

get all the answers I need. I know you said we shouldn't tell Sneh but it is her right to know the truth and I'm going to tell her today. Zee, I don't know how to explain this but I'm inlove with Danny. You must be probably hating on me now, I feel like we're betraying you but I fell inlove with him long before I knew that we are sisters. I need you to let him go, he's in good hands with me and I'm not here to replace you in his life or your kids lives. I'm here to give them the love and happiness that you would've given them. How I wish things were different but they are not,

I believe that everything happens for a reason and there's a reason why things happened this way. Maybe it was God's plan. You can never predict the future and I can never change the way I feel about Danny. He loves me and I love him, I want to love him without feel guilty of betraying you. It actually feels good that I have told you about this, a heavy weight on my shoulders has been lifted off. I hope you're in heaven watching over us, I promise to love and take care of your family. I need you to know that I love you too, I love you MaNyathi omuhle. I stood up



and gave Danny some space too. I watched him from the car and he was crying. Seeing him cry broke my heart but he needed to let it out and let go. I hope everything works out between us. He came into the car and drove back home in silence. I felt better than I did this morning and I changed my clothes.

Mom: How was it?

Me: It went well, it helped me alot. I feel better now.

Mom: That's good, should I prepare lunch?

Me: You can prepare some for you

and the kids. Danny and I will go to Athi's for lunch. I want to tell Sneh the truth

Mom: How do you think she'll take it?

Me: I don't know mama, I really don't. She didn't take it well at all when she met me now with everything that she'll find out, I don't know how she'll take it.

Mom: Good luck my daughter. I'm proud of the woman you've become.

Me: Thank you mom. When all of this is over, we'll sit down and look for a beautiful house suitable for you.

Mom: Okay honey.

Danny: MaNyathi, we need to go.

We left the house and headed to Athi's. My heart was pounding even before I entered the house. Everyone was here already, including Mayi, Nkosi, Naye and Phelo. It seemed to be a mini baby shower. Why didn't Danny tell me to bring something? When I turned around he was carrying gifts which were from me and him. I smiled as I just didn't know anything about the gifts.

Me: Hey Sneh, where's the little one?

Sneh: With her father, they are inseparable.

Nkosi: Athi is being unfair, we all want to carry the child and he's being stingy.

We all laughed at him for sulking until Athi gave him the baby.

Naye: She looks too much like Athi

Zandy: You can say that again, when are we eating? I'm starving

Belinda: Lets go dish up

Me: I'll help

Ntoko: You've been so scarce girl, where have you been hiding yourself?

Me: Just been busy abit. Don't worry, you'll see more of me soon.

We set the table while just catching up.

Nceba: Lunch is served, please come this side.

Athi's house was just so beautiful and it had Sneh written all over it. We sat down and I said grace.

Mayi: Let's dig in.

We were eating over a small chat and laughter. I was just too nervous to participate on the conversation

Phelo: Are you okay Nasi? You have barely even ate your food

Me: Oh, oh yes I'm okay. Excuse me, I need the bathroom.

Siya: I'll go check up on her.

She walked with me to the bathroom and I took a deep breath.

Siya: Want to talk about it?

Me: You'll hear about it soon. I just needed some air I guess.

Siya: I'll give you some space

I nodded and she left. I cried a bit then washed my face and went back to the table putting on a fake smile

Mpho: You good?

Me: Yeah sure

Kamo: Anyone up for desert?

Everyone said yes and she brought it

to the table and I ate it more than I ate my food. The helpers cleared out the table and we went to chill by the lounge together

Nangamso: Should I switch the TV on?

Jabu: No babe, we all need to talk.

Oh God, the time has come and I'm not looking forward to it.

Phila: We've been investigating a few things, just trying to find out why Nasi looks so much like Zee and our investigation escalated to us finding out more truths than we actually anticipated.

Athi: MaBhengu, we found out that

Zee and Nasiphi are sisters

Sneh: Which makes her my sister?

Me: No

Bee: What do you mean?

Bonga: We did DNA test and the results were that Sneh and Zee were not blood sisters but instead, Zee and Nasi are blood sisters.

Sneh: That's not true! Zee was my sister!

Danny: Yes and she will always be, but you are not blood related. Nasiphi and Zee are Nyathi's and you are a Bhengu. Zee had always been investigating this until Kamo found



her and told her to stop since she was heavily pregnant and didn't want to stress her

Kamo: Yes, I didn't tell anyone about what she was doing because she told me not to. She left a letter and many documents on her investigation and that's what we've been working on lately. That's why your husbands were coming home late because we were busy trying to get to the bottom of this

Sneh: Did you know all along Nasiphi?

Me: No, not until they called me to HQ telling me all this a few days ago. And

I kept on having flashbacks showing me the past and how all three of us grew up together but we all couldn't remember that because we were hypnotized at a young age. My father, well the man who I thought was my father, Hector Dlamini.

Zandy: Wait, who? The one and only Hector Dlamini?

Belinda: We have a contract with him at Shezi Logistics.

Me: Well I think we're talking about the same person, he knew the whole truth behind my identity and our real parents, my name is Pearl Nyathi and

Zee is Ziyanda Nyathi, we've discovered that our father is Muziwokuthula Nyathi and he was friends with Hector. We also managed to find that your parents are Nqobile and Ndoda Bhengu, who owed Muzi lots of money and Hector accompanied him when he went to your home, they raped your mother and shot your father in his leg.

Sneh was now crying out loud and Athi was holding him. I couldn't help but just cry too.

Kamo: He took you and hypnotized you since you saw everything, that's when he took you to stay with Zee's

mother saying he found you in the streets. After a few years he came back with Hector, they burnt the house down thinking there wasn't anyone inside, Muzi wanted to burn it down because he said it reminded him of his late father who sexually molested him in that same house. He managed to rescue you all, gave Nasi to Hector and told him to run away with her. He's been paying Hector to take care of Nasi but he has been keeping the money for himself. It all leads to that Muziwokuthula is still alive

Me: We did manage to get the

address where we stayed when we were young, I need to go back home. When we contacted Vulamasango he said he I needed to go home and set my mother and grandpa free. I'll be going this weekend and I wanted you to know the truth. In that letter Zee said we shouldn't tell you, you should read it yourself. She loved you and wanted to protect you but I believed you had to know the truth. I wanted to ask you to come with me as I'll be going back to our home.

Sneh: Thank you for telling me, I needed to know the truth and to know where exactly do I come from. I

would like to go with you but I cannot, I need some time to just adjust to this. I have a newborn and I cannot leave him or travel with him.

Bee: I can go with you

Ngamso: I'll be there too, you won't be alone. Blood or not, we're all sisters and we're always here for one another.

Mpho: So, Danny, Bonga, Jabu, Bee and Ngamso will come with you. The kids will sleep over at Dannys

Sbahle: I'll be babysitting with Nasi's mom.

Me: I guess everything is arranged

and sorted

Jabu: There's one more thing, we found Muziwokuthula's address and Sneh's parents. When you ready to meet them, you'll let me know.

Sneh: Thank you maybe a month or two from now.

Phila: That's understandable

Me: There's something else I want to say

Danny: There is? What is it?

Me: I want you all to know that I'm inlove with Danny. I'm not telling you this because I want your permission to be with him but I want to let you

know and for you not be shocked if I do happen to pursue a relationship with him. I know you might judge me for falling inlove with my late sisters husband but I have felt guilty enough until this morning when I went to Zee s grave and I told her how felt. I cannot apologize for the way I feel and I cannot control it. I loved Danny long before I knew that Zee was my sister. I don't want you to feel as if I'm here to replace my sisters place amongst you all, her kids and Danny's life. I am who I am and I'm different from Ziyanda. I know she will always have a place in your hearts, my heart



and Danny's heart. I believe I met Danny for a reason and I would be a fool not to take a chance and see where this leads us Danny and if it doesn't work out, it doesn't. I'm tired of holding back my feelings for you and when you asked me last night, asking when will I be your girlfriend? I know what I said and this is me telling you right now that I would love to be your girlfriend.

The boys cheered as Danny walked over to me. He held my hands and I stood up and looked at him. He kissed me and everyone was screaming, I felt like a teenager again.

Danny: I firstly want to thank you for finally allowing yourself to admit that you feel the same way about me. I love you Nasiphi and I know that you're scared and you think I'm just using you to replace Zee but that's not true. I genuinely love you and I will do everything I can to show that to you and for you to be happy. I know I'm a man with alot of baggage and I know somewhere along the way I'll hurt you because I don't know what the future holds for us. What I do know is that I'll never hurt you intentionally and I want whats best for the both of us. I don't even know

what to say and I cannot thank you enough for making me the happiest man on earth right now. I don't want you to ever think or feel that you're a rebound or you're second best in my heart. Yes I do still love Zee, we never divorced or anything but she passed away. I never got the chance to say goodbye or get over her. Slowly but surely I know that I will stop loving her because right now you occupy 75% of my heart. I love you Nasiphi

Me: I love you too Danny

Naye: Aaah! This is so cute!

She took a picture of us and I just

laughed. Well I was crying and laughing at the same time.

Sneh: Can I talk to you privately Nasi?

Me: Yes

We went to another room and she just held me and cried. I didn't know what to do but I tried by all means to comfort her. I never thought that this would happen.

Me: Don't cry, everything will be okay

Sneh: She was my sister, she was everything to me

Me: She's still your sister Sneh and she would've wanted you to be happy and not to cry.

Sneh: We had matching necklaces, I would like to give it to you. She was your sister as well. This one belonged to her

Me: I cannot accept this Sneh, you can keep it

Sneh: She would've wanted you to have it, it's yours. I can help you put it on

I turned around and she put it on.

Me: Thank you, it looks beautiful

Sneh: Please take good care of Danny and the kids.

Me: I will, I promise.

We hugged for a while and I think from now onwards our relationship will improve.

Sneh: You're officially baby Ziyanda's godmother

Me: Thank you, its an honour

Sneh: I'm sorry for the way I treated you when we first met

Me: It's okay, its all in the past now.

We went to join the others and Danny was looking at me. I felt really shy as he didn't take his eyes off me.

Siya: Someones blushing

Me: No I'm not

Zandy: Okay! Girl talk, spit it out?

We all went to the kitchen and closed the door.

Me: Okay something happened last night, we kissed and he inserted his fingers in my honeypot

Sbahle: Girl you got fingered!

Me: Yeah yeah and this weird but pleasurable feeling took over me and my knees got weak and it was just amazing as this fluid came gushing out of my honeypot. It was strange but good, have you felt that before?

Phelo: You had your first orgasm

Nasi

Me: I've heard people talk about it but I didn't know it felt that good.

Naye: You're so innocent!

Zandy: I just want to corrupt you already. It feels way better when the dick makes you cum!

Ntokozo: Yes Mam!

We laughed as the naughty talk continued and we were disturbed by the guys.

Phila: MakaJnr, we need to get going.

Danny: We need to go too, the kids must be waiting on us.

Me: Bye ladies



Sneh: Don't be a stranger.

Me: Don't worry, I'll call you everyday.

We hugged and Danny held my hand and we left.

Me: You can let go of my hand now so you can drive

Danny: I can do both at once. So you and Sneh are good now?

Me: You can say so, this went way better than I expected. I thought she would throw tantrums and kick us out of her house

Danny: I guess she knew fighting this wouldn't help.

Me: I guess so

Danny: Thank you Nasiphi

Me: For?

Danny: Walking into my life when I needed you the most.

I smiled at him and we got into the house and he was still holding my hand. Mom was cooking and I went to help her

Mom: So?

Me: It went well and Danny and I are together now

Mom: I'm happy for you my child. You deserve to be happy

We cooked and Danny set the table and we had supper together.

Danny: Kids, I have something to tell you.

Onika: What is it?

Danny: Nasi is now my girlfriend and I'll kiss her alot now even infront of you

Danver: Yuk! I will close my eyes

Danny: Suit yourself

How could Danny just say that to the kids? Onika and mom were laughing at this and I just gave in and laughed too.

Me: Lets get you ready for bed

Danver: I don't want to bath. I don't understand why we bath at night and in the morning, we don't get a chance to be dirty.

He really isn't a fan of bathing. I changed them into their pyjamas and Danny read them a bed time story while I was clearing up in the kitchen.

Danny: They are finally asleep

Me: I'll be done just now, please take out the trash. I know I'll forget in the morning.

He did as I said and he washed his hands after.

Danny: So I was thinking, that you should stop working for me.

Me: Why? I love my job

Danny: You're my girlfriend now and you'll still be here taking care of the kids

Me: But Danny, I need the money and I cannot just sit around the house and do nothing all day.

Danny: You'll get your monthly allowance, your mom will be close by and will have a nurse taking care of her. And you won't be in the house all day, I want you to pursue your dreams. You can be a doctor

Me: I've went through that Danny, no hospital has been accepting me. And I think Muzi has everything to do with that

Danny: Yes but Athi does need a cardiologist at one of his hospitals and he asked me to talk to you.

Me: Really?

Danny: Yes, I don't want you to be stuck here and not do what you've always loved. Plus you'll be getting a salary which you won't really need. You can use any of my cars and you'll be making your dreams come true. We just need to put your CV together

and all the necessary documents and you'll be working by next week Monday.

Me: Thats soon?

Danny: If it was up to Athi, you'd be working by today.

Me: Thank you Danny

Danny: You should thank Athi. Let's go to bed

We switched off the lights downstairs and I went to my room

Danny: Where are you?

Me: My room

Danny: Babe, we're a couple now and

couples share a bed.

Me: But there's nothing wrong with us sleeping separately

Danny just carried me and I couldn't stop laughing

Me: Danny!

He carried me to his room and threw me on his bed. I felt like a kid especially when he started tickling me.

Me: Danny stop! Stop! I'm going to pee

Danny: Say what now?

Me: I need to pee!



If he doesn't move away from me right now, I swear I will just pee on this bed. He let me go and I ran to the bathroom and he stood by the door.

Me: I almost pee'd on myself Danny!

Danny: You're too cute

Me: Whatver

Danny: I love you Nasiphi

Me: I love you too Danny.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

Insert 19

#Danny

Indeed I am the happiest man on earth and it is all because of Nasiphi. When she finally opened up about her feelings in front of me and all our friends, she did something no woman has ever done and that takes courage and it shows how strong she is. She

is one of the strongest woman I know. Everything has been hard on her lately and everything she has been discovering, she stood still and showed she is stronger than I thought she is. Most woman would've broke down after discovering such truths about themselves and going through traumatic things such as her seeing Hector the way he was after we tortured and beat him up. It is alot to handle and the way she is taking things right now amazes me. But I've seen how she's been during this week, she really is nervous about

going to the Eastern Cape to her original home. She sometimes just zones out and gets lost in her own thoughts. I try talking to her but she shuts me out. Its just been a few days of us being together, but she's already shutting me out. But I believe after all of this is over, we will be able to talk about us and the way forward. I want to do things differently, I want to take things slow, I want to learn how to communicate more with her and for her to be able to trust me. God knows how much I want this to work out.

Me: Nasiphi, sit down. You've been

walking all over this house. Calm down, we'll be leaving soon.

We decided to leave this Friday midday, by my calculations will be there this evening and we'll book into a hotel or bnb and go over to her home Saturday morning.

Nasi: I'm sweating Danny

Me: My love, we haven't even left yet. Go get your bags, Bonga is here now.

His car drove in followed by Jabu's. We're driving using my Range Rover Sport, it will be enough for all of us.

Bee: Hello guys

We greeted each other while Jabu put

our bags in the car.

Me: Let's go say goodbye to the kids

Jabu: Let the girls for now, we need to talk and its urgent.

Me: I'll be there shortly

Nasiphi went to the kids with Nangamso, Sbahle and Bee. Sbahle will be left with the kids and Nasi's mother.

Me: What is it?

Bonga: Let's go outside, these walls have eyes and ears.

We laughed at him and stepped outside.

Jabu: There's a problem, Nasi's grandfather was declared dead after that fire, what seemed like two bodies were found, her grandfathers was still recognized but the other was burnt beyond recognition. Which we suspect was their mothers body. And the bastard Muzi was lying when he said they are alive and he built them a new home next to that one. My boys tell me that, that house was left as is after it was burnt down and has been abandoned, there's just a small hut next to it and they don't think someone stays there.

Me: Shit! How do I tell Nasi this?

Bonga: I think we should just let her find out for herself.

Me: Our relationship just started and I'm already keeping secrets.

Jabu: It's for a good course, already you can see how she is. She might even change her mind about going.

Bonga: And we should leave, it's going to rain.

I went to say goodbye to the kids and we got into the car. Jabu offered to drive and we'd take turns.

Nasi: Please open the window a bit, its hot in here.

Jabu: I'll open the air con.



Nasi: Thank you

I didnt like seeing her this way and I wonder how she'll be tomorrow when we actually do go to her home. I hate having to hide this from her but it is for the best. I held her hand and she rested on my shoulder. She fell asleep and its understandable because she didn't even sleep at all last night.

#Nasi

I woke up as I heard alot of shuffling. I was in the car left with Jabu and Bee

Me: Where are we? What time is it?

Bee: Ay you can sleep, I don't where we are but it's quarter to 6 in the evening.

Jabu: We're in Port Edward, we'll drive to Bizana early in the morning. Get your things, we'll stay in this hotel, it's the only decent place we could find

Me: Decent? This place is beautiful. I've heard many stories about the casino.

Bee: We'll come back here some day, we do need a vacation, it's been a while. I'm feeling like New York, what do you think?

Me: This trip is like the furthest I've

travelled, I only know Durban and PMB. So I cannot suggest anything

Bee: You need to travel. Don't worry, I'll take care of it.

We got to our rooms and I immediately went to shower

Danny: Hurry, so we can go have dinner at 7.

Me: I'm almost done

Danny: I don't get why you shower for so long, a shower takes 5minutes.

I chose not to answer him and continued with my shower. Got out and got ready for dinner

Danny: You look beautiful my lady

Me: Thank you

He kissed my neck and it sent shivers down my spine. When he touches me I always just get wet down there.

Danny: Let's go

We went downstairs for dinner and the others were already seated.

Nasi: I'm starving

Jabu: You were sleeping the entire way here, it's understandable

Ngamso: I was lucky because I got to eat your food.

We had dinner over small

conversations and I felt a bit lighter. Yet the nerves are still there about tomorrow. After that we indulged on some nice dessert and I had two full bowls

Danny: I've noticed you're a lover for dessert

Me: Yes especially pudding and custurd. It's my favourite.

Danny: I'll keep that in mind

Bonga: Being Mr Romantic aren't we?

Danny: I aim to please

After having supper we all went for a walk and went to our rooms. I still just haven't got used to sharing the

same bed with Danny. It just feels so weird and I cannot explain why. I took a shower and he came to join me

Danny: Let's get you all relaxed. You seem pretty tense and worried. Just calm down babe, everything will be okay, trust me. I kept quiet and let him wash and caress my body. It felt so good I literally got wet and I could feel his manhood on my butt.

Danny: He wants you real bad, I've told him to behave lately but he isn't listening.

I kept quiet and just didn't know how to respond to what he just said.

Danny: The day he deflowers you, trust me when I say it will be the best day of your life.

Me: You think so?

Danny: I know so my love.

We dried ourselves up and I wore my pyjama shorts and vest

Danny: No underwear? I see you're trying to kill me.

Me: Behave yourself Mr McKenzie

We tucked into bed and my nerves just decided to escalate. I couldn't even sleep properly, I couldn't move because Danny was holding me tightly.

Me: Danny, you're squeezing me.

Danny: Sorry

He let go and I was able to sit up straight. After 2hours I was still awake.

Danny: You need to sleep Nasiphi

Me: Can I get my sleeping tablets? I know you took them

Danny: And you're not getting them.  
I sighed and just cried.

Danny: Pearl, your tears aren't going to get you those pills

Me:(sniffs) You don't understand! I want to sleep but I cannot. I keep on



thinking about what's going to happen tomorrow. I'm nervous okay!

Danny: Don't shout Nasi. Lay down

Me: What?

Danny: Just lay down and don't protest Nasiphi. I'm going to make you feel relaxed

I did as he said and he took his tshirt off. He pulled my legs up and closer to him.

Me: What are you doing?

Danny: Don't say a word Nasiphi.

Me: You love saying that

Danny: And you should listen.

He took off my shorts and rubbed my clit.

Me: Danny, how is supposed to make me relax while I'm just more nervous?

He just did the unthinkable and I was holding his head. Oh! What was this man doing to me?

Me: Aaah! Danny!

It felt so good as he was muffing me and damn was it good! He kept sucking, licking and nibbling on my clit. I felt my body shaking and my toes curled. I held on tightly to the sheets and I was moaning out loud. And he just stopped!!

Me: What the hell! Danny!

Danny: Frustrating isn't it?

He smirked and continued to muff me and I came just right after. I felt my body relax and he went to the bathroom and came with a towel and cleaned me up. I was so shy, I couldn't even look at him.

Danny: You taste so good

Me: Thank you

Danny: You so cute when you shy, now come close.

I put my head on his chest and closed my eyes. Then sleep took over and I was out.

#NEXTMORNING

I was still sleeping peacefully when  
Danny woke me up.

Me: 5 more minutes please.

Danny took off my clothes and  
carried me to the bathroom

Me: You're impossible

Danny: Morning to you too my love.  
Now hurry, breakfast is at 8am

Me: What's the time now

Danny: 7:30am

I cannot get ready in just 30minutes

Me: Aren't you going to get out and  
let me bath?

Danny: No.

I sighed and bathed as he did his hair.

Me: You need to shave your beard too, it's too long now.

Danny: Yes Mam.

I laughed and finished up. I lotioned myself and wore my thong. I walked around looking for I don't know what but I was just enjoying the attention I was getting from Danny. The way Danny loves my body and makes me feel good about myself has made me be more comfortable around him and be comfortable about my weight. I felt him breathe on my neck and plant

soft kisses on it

Me: We have to get ready Danny

Danny: You didn't think of that when you were busy showing off your sexy body to me, making McKenzie wake up.

Me: Sorry

I giggled and he picked me up and wrapped my legs around his waist. I kissed him and he was moaning within the kiss.

Danny: You're going to drive me crazy I tell you.

He put me against the wall and moved my thong to the side. He

worked his magic with his magic fingers and made me cum.

Me: Thank you.

I kissed him once more and I went to the bathroom. Did my business and got dressed. I wore a tight long black dress and blue doek over my shoulders and I wrapped a doek on my head also.

Danny: You look good, you'd really look good as my wife with a ring on your finger.

Me: Mxm whatever Danny, quit the jokes

He became so serious and I was just

nervous

Danny: I'm serious Pearl, this, us, what we have is permanent. I bought you these, they'll be comfortable.

Me: Thank you

It was black all stars and I loved them. I took my bag we went downstairs for breakfast holding hands

Bonga: You're the new always late couple. Siya and Phila were always late followed by Danny. I see he'll be more late now.

Me: I would be early, but he decided to wake me up late with only 30minutes to prepare



Bee: You should be arrested Danny,  
that's not allowed.

We had breakfast and left. When the  
car started moving my nerves came  
back again.

Ngamso: You'll be okay. We're here  
for you.

Bee: It is so hot today.

Me: You guys look good.

Bee: Thank you

They were also wearing dresses with  
doeks over their shoulders

Bonga: I'd be very happy if Bee would  
dress like this everyday

Bee: Not even in your wildest dreams sir.

Jabu: Woman of today

We looked at him and he quickly raised his hands and surrendered. We laughed at him and along the way we had a good conversation which was a good distraction for me.

Danny: We here.

He parked the car on the side and my hands were sweating. We all got out the car and stood

Bonga: It seems as if we by the back yard.

I couldn't see clearly and my head

was spinning

Ngamso: Are you okay Nasi?

Me: I can't.... I can't see

I fell on my knees and lots of episodes played in my head all at once. I was having many flashbacks and it was all about my childhood. I then started feeling really hot and there was a fire

Me: It's burning! It's burning down!

I then saw Hector and Muzi laughing as they set the house on fire.

"Take Pearl and I'll take Zee" Muzi said

"What about Sneh?" Hector replied

"Let her die with that whore" Muzi

" She's the only way we can be able to get the money from Ndoda, don't be stupid" Hector took Sneh and gave him to Muzi. I saw Muzi as he kicked my mom in the stomach. She was crying and holding Zee's leg. He kicked her face and she fell on the floor hitting her head. They came out carrying us, Zee and Sneh screaming for me as we went separate ways. I cried and Hector his my back, where I was burnt.

Danny: Are you okay now?

I sat on the floor and cried for my mother and grandpa who died being killed by those bastards.

Me: I am going to kill Hector Dlamini and Muziwokuthula Nyathi

Danny: Okay baby, let's get that out of your head. You're not a killer.

Bonga: Stand up

Danny helped me up and Ngamso gave me a bottle of water

Me: Let's go, there's nothing more to see.

Jabu: No, we cannot just go back. Lets just walk around. Ask a few questions from a few neighbors

Bee: These houses are scattered.

We walked around and went to the front yard.

Danny: There's a woman under that tree. She's not looking at our direction though

We went closer and she was singing. I started to cry as I heard that the voice was familiar. It was my mothers voice. The mother who gave birth to me. I looked at her and the left hand side of her face was burnt.

Her: Hlala phantsi mntanam, kudala ndikulindile.( Sit down my child, I have been waiting for you for a long

time)

Me: Mama? Mama!

I sat down next to her and she held me as I cried in my mothers hands. Bee and Ngamso were also crying now and it was an emotional moment.

Mama: Suba salile sana lwam, usundifumene( Don't cry anymore my child, you have found me.)

She was still staring into space and she was crying silently

Me: Mama, uyakwaz ukubona kakuhle?(Mama can you see properly?)

Mama: I can only use my right eye.

Don't worry, I can see you precious pearl.

Mama: Paula! Paula! Paula! Bring a bench so they can sit

Me: Mama, who are you talking to.

Mama: It is a young girl who takes care of me. She's almost your age.

A beautiful girl came carrying to benches and Danny helped her. She came out of that small heart

Paula: Molweni

Mama: This is my daughter, Pearl. She has found me

Paula: It is good to finally meet you,



she has told me about you. I will go  
prepare some tea for you

Me: That won't be necessary but  
Thank you. It's a pleasure to meet  
you too, thank you for taking care of  
her.

She nodded and went back to the hut.

Me: Mama, these are my friends,  
Bonga, Babalwa, Jabulani and  
Nangamso. And Danny, he owns my  
heart mama.

Mama: It is good to meet you my kids,  
I'm glad I lived long to meet you all  
and you mkhwenyana.

If only she knew it is really his son in

law, he is Zee's husband and my boyfriend. I wonder how she will take it when I tell her.

Mama: You still have beautiful soft hair?

Me: Yes mama

She took off my doek and started plaiting my hair

Mama: Where is Snenhlanhla?

Me: She is in Durban mama, she just had a child. She couldn't come.

Mama: I would've loved to see her

Ngamso: You will see her soon  
mama

Me: Why haven't you asked me about Ziyanda?

Mama: I know she passed away, I felt it when she passed away. She came from my womb, I felt it when I lost my first born. Ziyanda'Intombi zakwaNyathi. I know alot more than you think I do. Your ability to see what others can't see isn't foreign, it is a gift passed on from me to you. Mkhwenyana, are you taking care of my child's children?

Danny nodded. Shit! She knows that I am dating my sisters husband. Oh God!

Mama: Don't you worry my precious Pearl, he genuinely loves you. It is not an embarrassment to be with your late sisters husband.

Me: Where is Mkhulu?

Mama: My father passed away when your father and his friend burnt down this house. Your father had already moved on and wanted to marry another woman. I don't know why didn't he just never come back or just divorce me. He wanted me dead but my father saved me. After he had beaten me up, your grandpa quickly woke me up as weak as he was. He told me to run and leave him. He said

I should look for my children. I didn't want to leave him behind but I thought of my children and left him to burn into ashes. I ran to the police station, they took me to the hospital and it was too late for me to save my father. He laid his life for me and my kids.

As she told the story I was crying and so was she.

Mama: I have sat here and watched the bus stop and waited for my kids to come. It is the same way I sat here and waited for your father to come back home. Does she know that she is not my blood daughter?

Danny: Yes mama

Oh, she was talking about Sneh.

Mama: I hope she doesn't hate me for not telling her the truth. She was too young for me to tell her such.

Where did that evil bastard take you?

Me: I was separated from Zee and Sneh. I grew up with the Dlamini's but Hector left us when my mother had a stroke. He left with everything we had.

Bee: Zee and Sneh grew up together without knowing where they come from. They stayed at different orphanage homes and soon after stayed on the streets and hustled.

Life was tough on them.

Mama: I am glad my kids are around people who love them and protect them. You have done well my sons. You have done well. God will bless you abundantly. Babalwa, start feeding those twins growing inside of you. They are a blessing

Bonga: What do you mean mama?

Mama: That you don't shoot blanks my son.

We all laughed and Paula came to join us with tea and bread.

Me: Thank you.

Paula: You are as beautiful as she

described you.

Me: Thank you, you are also one beautiful goddess. Your skin is too perfect.

She was dark and very beautiful. She had freakishly light blue eyes and she blinked alot.

The rest of the day was spent under the tree with my mother telling us stories from long ago. I just didn't believe most of them but it was amazing to just spend time with my mother and her presence was heartwarming and I couldn't thank God enough for blessing me this



much. Being in my mothers arms is something I will never ever forget.

Jabu: We should get going back to the hotel. We leave early tomorrow

Mama: Do come visit again soon, I will be waiting.

Me: Can I stay behind with my mother?

Danny: Go pack your bags Paula and a bag for mama, we're leaving with them.

Me: What? Danny are you sure?

Mama: I don't want to be a burden to you my kids. Go on without me

Danny: We're not leaving you behind

Mama.

I just cried and Danny helped me stand up and he held me

Me: I don't know how I'll ever repay you Danny. You are far too kind.

Thank you

I said as I cried in his arms.

Danny: Just trust me when I say I love you and I will take care of you and protect you and your family.

Me: When I get that job I will work hard and repay you Danny. I'll get both my mothers houses and I'll definately repay you

Danny: Listen to me Pearl, I don't

want you to pay me. We'll look for two beautiful houses where they'll stay close to our home. Plus my house is big enough for all of us.

Me: No, I know you love your own space Danny. I don't want you to change your ways for me

Danny: Then we'll buy them a house. This discussion is over and stop crying. You making me sad.

Jabu: Enough cuddling now. Let's go

Bonga was carrying their bags and my mom was crying.

Mama: Thank you son, thank you.

Danny hugged her and got into the

car. It was good to see her standing and I got to see where I get my thick body from. She's fresh and beautiful

Me: Mama, how old are you?

Mama: Heh! This child. I'm young enough.

Me: No seriously, you too fresh for someone who has old daughters

Mama: I'm 22 years older than you, 17years older than Ziyanda.

Me: Oh you're 48.

Mama: I'm still young as I told you.

We got to the hotel after a few hours and had dinner. Mom and Paula went

to their room and I went to my room with Danny

Danny: It's good to see you happy

Me: I am very happy, let's go shower.

He smirked and we showered together. After we were done we dried ourselves up and lotioned. I got dressed and sat on the bed thinking about today.

Me: Can I go sleep with my mother? I hope you won't mind and it's just....

He cut me off and just kissed me.

Danny: You don't need my permission mamas baby. Go sleep with your mom

Me: Thank you

Danny: Nasiphi

Me: Danny

Danny: I love you

Me: I love you too McKenzie. I really do.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

## Insert 20

Being back home with my mother makes me so happy. We arrived last night when everyone was asleep and the kids and my mother (who raised me) was asleep so they never got to meet my biological mother. I woke up and took a shower, when I came back Danny was still asleep

Me: Danny, wake up

Danny: No, come back to bed

Me: No, you have to wake up or you'll be late for work. I'm going to get the

kids ready

He mumbled some things that I didn't bother listening to. I went to the kids room and woke them up

Onika: You back!

Me: Yes babygirl, did you miss me?

Onika: Yes I did

Danver: I missed you too, I cried last night.

Me: Aaah my cute fella, I'll make it up to you both. Now lets go bath

I bathed them and prepared them for school. I made their lunch while they had breakfast. Paula came



downstairs

Paula: Good morning

Me: Morning sweetie, kids, this is Aunt Paula. Paula, this is Onika and Danver.

They greeted each other and Paula helped me with their school bags.

Mom also joined us so did Mama, I just figured I'll separate them that way because I don't know how to call them, they are both my mothers. And I introduced them to the kids who seemed so confused.

Onika: So you have two moms?

Me: Yes

Danver: We now have two grannies

and an aunt. This is fun, the house can be boring with little people in it.

Mama: They are really beautiful kids

Onika: Gogo, what happened to your face?

Mama: I got burnt my baby.

She nodded, she seemed to be thinking alot. I sent them off to brush their teeth before they asked too many questions. Both my mothers were looking at me and I just stood and stared at them. I also just didn't know what to say. I hope they get along

Mom: Aren't you going to formally

introduce us?

Mama: This child! I'm Pearls mother, Ntombi Nyathi. It's good to meet the woman who raised my daughter to be what she is today. I can never thank you enough.

Mom: It's good to meet the woman who have birth to the precious pearl. I'm Yenzolo Dlamini. Who's the dark beautiful young lady?

Paula: My name is Paula Nyathi.

Mom: She's my daughter, I adopted her and she's been helping me alot.

I gained a mother and a sister, God is good and he has blessed me

abundantly. I will forever be grateful.  
The driver took the kids to school and  
I went to give Danny his breakfast  
while I left them talking in the kitchen.

Me: Wake up babe, you need to eat

Danny: You do realize it is the first  
time you call me babe?

Me: Yes

Danny: Come here

Me: The food Danny

Danny: The food can wait Nasi. Just  
get in bed

I got in bed and we cuddled. I've  
noticed he is really touchy and very

clingy. Being out of my sight for just a minute is too much for him. It seemed as if he was thinking deeply. He took his phone

Danny: Don't be mad babe.

Me: What are you talking about?

He showed me pictures of two big beautiful houses and they both costed around 3million.

Me: And then?

Danny: These are the houses I've been looking at and they are both good for your mothers. You just need to show them the picture and see who wants which one.

Me: Danny, these houses are ridiculously expensive. Can we look for cheaper houses?

Danny: Money is not a problem

Me: They will cost you about 6million, Danny I cannot let you spend so much money. I'm sorry but I just cannot

Danny: Are we going to argue about this? Because I don't want to argue

Me: I don't want to argue with you either but they are way too expensive. You've worked hard for your money

Danny: And that is why I'm spending it on people who are important to me

and whom are my family. Now, we won't argue about this and money is not an issue my love.

I just kept quiet and chose not to continue with this conversation because I will not have a say in it. I don't want Danny spending so much money, what if things don't work out between us? Where will I get so much money to pay him back? It is all just too much.

Danny: Are you mad at me?

Me: No

Danny: Nasi, you need to stop thinking that I'll leave you and you'll

have to pay me back. You need to stop thinking that I'm doing all this just because I want to win you over and for you not to think that I'm using you as a rebound. I'm not buying your love and trust. I love you and you need to start believing that. I know you'd love me even if I had no money, me being wealthy is just a bonus. And I will spoil you because I want to and you are mine. Stop thinking negatively. I know you used to being independent and I love that about you, you don't need a man to survive. But now I'm in your life and I can take care of you and all of us. Soon you'll



be working and you'll feel good about yourself because you'll be doing what you love, the salary will be a bonus because you don't need it. If it was up to me, you wouldn't work. You'd have your pretty face in this house and do whatever you want. But because you are you, you have dreams and want to work, I cannot stand in the way of that and I can assist you in making your dreams come true.

I was already crying as he said those words. How can a man just love me so much and do all these things for me? He is really heaven sent and I love him and will take care of him and

his heart and his kids.

Me: Thank you

We kissed and he put me ontop of him while grabbing my ass. He was very horny and he was grinding his dick against my vagina. Little moans escaped my mouth and that drove him crazy. This man has been satisfying me and taking care of me and giving me pleasure in the most unthinkable ways. I've decided that I'll make him feel good and release without us having sex. I'm not sure when that will happen or how but I won't even ask. It will happen for itself. Venes has told me about many

ways of satisfying a man without giving him the cookie. All my life I never thought I would do this but I will drop my pride and satisfy my man. I pulled away from the kiss and he seemed as if he was irritated. I stood up and he's eyes popped.

Danny: And where are you going?

Me: Sssh

I locked the door and he looked at me confused.

Me: Just close your eyes please.

Danny: No, I want to see you.

Me: Close your eyes Danny

Danny: How do I know that once I close my eyes you'll unlock the door and leave?

Me: Just do as I say and Don't say a word Triston

I knew calling him by his second name would get him to see that I am serious. He closed his eyes and I walked back to the bed. I took off his boxer shorts and kneeled next to him. I closed my eyes and licked the tip of his dick. I breathed in and out and started sucking. I felt him hold my head and slowly pushing it up and down. I took him all in and gagged. I increased my pace and he was slowly

loosing it. He kept on groaning and calling out my name. I sucked and licked and sucked harder and harder and the groans got louder and louder. God! I hope my mothers and Paula do not hear this man screaming out my name. I tasted his juices as they sprung right into my mouth. Did he just cum in my mouth! I tried swallowing but I couldn't. I quickly ran into the bathroom and threw up. He was standing next to me and handed me a mouthwash. I rinsed my mouth and he was playing with his hair.

Danny: I'm sorry I came in your mouth.

I lost control of myself.

Me: It's okay.

I kissed him and he smiled. I knew he was about to say something stupid

Danny: You amaze me, I didn't think you had it in you.

Me: Really? Mxm whatever Danny

Danny: I'm just being honest. You too innocent Nasiphi now you doing that amazed me and I saw that beneath that innocent you, theres a freaky you and it will be revealed soon.

I went close to him, I wanted to put my arms around his neck but this guy is tall. So I put them around his waist

and laid my head on his chest.

Me: I love you

Danny: I love you too

I let go of him and made the bed.

Me: Go shower, I'll go warm up your breakfast and show my moms the pictures.

Danny: Okay. And don't worry, they didn't hear us, my room is soundproof.

I winked at him and he laughed.

When I'm with him I just become someone who I'm not even familiar with. I'm very comfortable with him now that I'm able to discover myself

and more about my personality. It's like I'm coming out of the shell I've been in my whole life and it feels good. It feels good to say that I'm really happy and it is even showing physically. I warmed up the food and joined the others in the lounge.

Me: Danny has found houses for you and I need you to choose who takes which one.

MaD(MaDlamini): My child these houses are expensive and we dont want him to spend much on us. Even a small RDP house will be fine or just a flat.



MaN(MaNyathi): And they are very big my child

Danny: Money is not an issue and I would be doing you wrong if I got you into RDP houses. You need a big comfortable home

MaN: How about we choose one house mkhwenyana and all three of us stay together?

MaD: That's a good idea, I'll be bored staying alone.

Danny: Are you sure? Paula, you don't want your own apartment?

Paula: No thank you Mr McKenzie, I will stay with them.

Danny: Okay and please call me  
Danny.

Me: Choose the one you love.

They all agreed on a house and I was  
happy and they were happy.

Danny: We are all going to see Sneh  
in an hour.

MaN: I will finally see my daughter,  
thank you Danny

Me: You will all also get to meet our  
friends.

Danny: Can I steal her for a moment,  
we need to talk.

MaD: Go ahead.

He held my hand and we went upstairs

Me: Did I do or say something wrong?

He locked the door and he pinned me against the wall. He tore my lace thong and pushed me up till I had my legs on his shoulders

Me: I'm going to fall

Danny: I got you.

With that said he sent me to cloud nine and he made me cum twice. He put me down and we kissed.

Me: That was amazing, thank you.

Danny: Don't thank me yet

He winked and opened the door. As I went out he spanked my ass. I set with the others at the lounge while he was busy with a business call. After an hour or so he was done and we were off to Sneh's house. We got there and we were the last to arrive, I'm not surprised.

Me: Hey girls!!

They greeted back and they were on full wifey mode. They greeted my moms and Naye led them to the lounge. They went all out and cooked and wore skirts.

Zandy: You want your mothers to see

our ratchetness.

She screamed softly and she was drinking wine in a coffee mug. They were on another respectful mode I tell you.

Me: Where is my sister?

Phelo: In her room, she's scared.

I went to Sneh's room and she was with Belinda

Belinda: Thank God you're here, she's freaking out.

We hugged and she just cried. She's so emotional

Me: It's going to be okay.

Sneh: You think so?

Me: I know so, I was also nervous as you are.

When we got to the lounge the guys were also following us there.

Brian: Oh God

Me: What?

He didn't respond but he was dumbstruck and he kept his eyes on one person. I followed where his eyes were and he was staring at Paula. He kept his eyes on her and she looked down

Bee: You making her feel shy

We all sat down and MaNyathi cried when she saw Sneh

MaN: Snenhlanhla sana lwam, Qhawekazi lamama.

Sneh rushed to her in tears and they hugged. It was an emotional moment for all of us

MaN: Sulila mntanam ndikhona ngoku( Don't cry my child, I'm here now)

Sneh: Mama, mama....

She couldn't even talk as she sat next to her and laid her head on her. I saw Athi smile and he was holding Baby Ziyanda

MaN: Oh my child, Qhawekazi, I have longed to see you. I am so happy, my heart is at peace. You have grown so much.

Sneh: Qhawekazi, you used to call me Qhawekazi. I'm sorry I cannot remember most things

MaN: It is okay my child, Qhawekazi is the name I gave you. It is your second name, I didn't want to change your first name Snehlanhla as it had a great meaning to me, we were lucky to have you join our family. When my husband found you, you looked lost.

Sneh: Mom, he stole me from my real



parents because they owed him money. After he had raped my biological mother and shot my father in his legs.

MaN: He is a cruel man. I am so sorry to hear that my child.

Sneh: Mom, I want you to meet my husband and my child.

Athi stood up carrying Ziyanda and went to shake my mother hand

Athi: Pleased to meet you Ma, Athenkosi Buthelezi and this is our little Ziyanda Buthelezi.

MaN: Pleased to meet you too Mkhwenyana, she looks so much like

you. Your genes are strong.

She took the baby and I introduced her to the others and I introduced MaDlamini and Paula.

MaD: There are so many of you and I know I will forget your names. But it is a pleasure to meet you all. It's good to see that my daughter is surrounded by a good group of friends.

Naye: And we are also lucky to have her in our lives ma. Feel free to call us any day and we are all your kids here, when you need us we are all here.

MaD: Thank you my Queen

Naye: Oh no ma, please call me Naye.

MaD: MaNyathi, she is the Queen of Langelihle. Closer to where I stayed.

MaN: Wow and who is the King between these boys?

Naye: Unfortunately he couldn't be here today. Him and his brother have a meeting to attend to

Bonga: We will also be going down to Langelihle tomorrow, there is alot to take care off

MaN: I take it you boys are his council

Danny: Yes Ma.

MaD: Nasiphi I did tell you that Danny is not white.

We all laughed and Athi seemed to enjoy this alot.

Athi: I've said that many times before MaDlamini. Awu Brian, why are you so quiet today?

Brian: Uhm no, uhm it's just work stressing me out.

Mpho: Mmmh, work, I see.

MaN: Stop terrorising the boy. You seem to look more like Philasande

Brian: He is my big brother MaNyathi.

Phila: He takes after my very handsome looks.

Jabu: Listen to this guy, fooling himself.

There was a good loud conversation and the noise will be worse when the kids get here. There are so many kids when they all together, there are about 15 of them and are all just very naughty especially Danver, Ngcebo, Kabelo and Mbulelo. Mbulelo is Lubah and Belinda's son and he has his fathers voice even though he is just 3years old. We served lunch and we sat at the dinning table, the helpers put both tables together to

accommodate our large number. I now understand why they have huge houses. We are a large group of friends and it would be hard to accommodate all of us in a small house. We ate and Nceba, Sbahle and I cleared the table. The mothers went to sit outside with babyZee.

Siya: When the kids get here, the nannies will serve them food and they'll go straight to the playroom

Me: Weren't you guys supposed to be at work?

Nceba: We took a day off.

Athi: Speaking of work, you need to

prepare because you have an interview tomorrow.

Me: What!! Athenkosi are you serious?

Athi: Very serious. You are more than capable of getting this job but it is just for formality and for my partner at that hospital to interview you and approve off you.

Me: Wow Thank you very much.

Athi: Danny will drop you off at 11am.

I hugged them both and I was very happy and excited about my interview. I've prepared for interviews many times before and I did well but never got a job. So this is making me very

nervous but I trust that it will go well.

Lubah: We do also have something important to do today, can we proceed?

Belinda: I think its best if we go to the basement.

We went to the basement and I was confused as to what is going on. We got there and they locked the door.

Danny: Babe, you need to sit on that chair. No need to worry it's just a simple thing. We'll take your finger prints and you'll be done.

Me: What is this all about?

Phila: You have been exposed to



another part of our lives. Not much in depth and we hope it will stay that way. We've been in the force for a long time, the girls were part of it but due to some circumstances and them being the mothers of our children

Danny: But their safety counts so does yours and we need to know all your whereabouts and keep you safe at all times. That's why you're here today, you need to put on this bracelet on your legs, preferably near your ankle.

Phelo: We all have these too so don't worry

Me: Could my life be in danger?

L'yanda: We will try by all means that you're always protected. But don't worry, your life is not in danger.

Me: Oh okay

They took my finger prints and a few scans. There after they put the bracelet on my left leg.

Me: It feels weird

Sneh: You'll get used to it.

Zandy: You're one of us now! Now you have to do our initiation tradition or whatever you guys call it.

Danny: I don't think thats a good idea

Me: What is it?

Bee: You have to drink our delicious shot.

Me: Okay, bring it on

Danny: Baby, you don't have to.

They gave me two shots and it was brown.

Me: What is this?

Brian: Drink up

Mpho: Wow so you can speak now?

Danny: Baby, don't do it.

He had a huge smile on his face and I drank it. Yuuk! What is this! It tasted so bad and it was hot, like it had

chillies and I was jumping up and down.

Me: Argh! This taste really bad! What is it?

Bonga: Only Zandy and Thabo know the ingredients we don't know whats in there.

Danny gave me water and I drank up. He hugged me and kissed my forehead.

Danny: I hate to say I told you so, you shouldn't have drank it.

Me: I should've listened

Danny: You should listen to me next time.

Me: There will be a next time?

Zandy: Sweetie, while I'm still around you. There'll always be a next time, you'll taste things you've never tasted before. Right Thabo?

Thabo: Sure thing buddy!

Brian: Let's go back to the others, Paula might be bored.

Jabu: Mmmh, someone is whipped before even talking to her.

Brian: Fuck off Jabulani.

We went outside and chilled for the rest of the afternoon. It was really fun and we went home late after we all had supper. When we got home I

tucked the kids in bed and went to shower. I wore my night dress and sat on the stool facing the mirror. I was going to plait my hair(amagoda).

Danny: Come and let me do it for you

Me: No what do you know about plaiting?

Danny: Come, I'll show you.

I sat down and he plaited my hair. I was suprised to see that he was actually doing it right.

Me: Wow, this is amazing. Who taught you?

Danny: Ntokozo, when she was pregnant she only did amagoda and

when she went somewhere she'd just put a weave on. L'yanda couldn't do it, I was a quick learner and I plaited her almost all the time.

Me: I did notice that she's the only one with an afro, the others have silky hair.

Danny: Yours is too big, I should call you Zahara.

I laughed at him and smacked his hand.

Me: Thank you

He was done and I put a doek over my hair. I got in bed and called Venes

Me: Babe, how are you?

Venes: I'm good and yourself? I haven't seen you in a while. We should catch up soon

Me: Yes we should but I might be starting work soon.

Venes: Work? Aren't you working already?

Me: As a doctor

Venes: What!!! OMG! Wow! We really need to go on a date! Catching up session.

Me: Alot has happened so we will go on that date and catch up for old time sakes love.

Venes: I'm so happy for you Nini, I'm



so proud. Look I have to get back to work, we have a new boss and he is so bossy.

Me: Okay bye will call you tomorrow.

Venes: I love you doll

Me: I love you too.

I ended the call and laughed to myself. Mr McKenzie seemed grumpy and angry.

Me: Whats wrong?

He didn't answer me but just looked at me. He's face was turning red and he was scaring me.

Danny: Babe? Love? Dates and I love

you too's! Right in front of me you not even hiding that stupid boyfriend of yours! You have the nerve Nasiphi!

Me: What? No what are you on about?

Danny: So you're just going to deny it! How low of you Pearl! I've never been disrespected so much in my damn house! Nasiphi!

He stood up and he was walking around the house. I couldn't help but just laugh at him. This is like our first misunderstanding. His eyes popped and he looked even more angry and I stopped laughing.

Me: Babe, sit down.

He looked at me with "don't talk shit to me" look. I stood up and went to him, I tiptoed and put my arms around his neck. He still wasn't holding me. I kissed him and he didn't kiss me back. He is really angry with me.

Me: Babe, I was talking to Venes. We call each other babe and stuff. She's my best friend and I will tell her I love her and go on dates with her. It wasn't my boyfriend. My man is standing right in front of me looking grumpy and very jealous.

Danny: I'm not jealous

Me: Yes you are.

Danny: I'm sorry I overreacted without even giving you a chance to explain yourself.

Me: It's okay babe. Just don't do it again. When there's a problem, we communicate. We sit down and talk about our problems and fix them.

Danny: I love you

Me: I love you too, now come so you can help me prepare for my interview tomorrow.

Danny: What will you wear?

Me: I don't know, I haven't thought about it

Danny: Mmmh, we'll take care of it in the morning.

Me: Okay babe, now come.

Danny: I have another way of making this preparation more fun and interesting

Me: Oh really?

Danny: Yes, you just need to allow me to show you.

Me: It won't give me a job tomorrow. Now stop being naughty and ask me these questions

Danny: This will be a long night, I'm so horny

Me: I'll take care of that when we done this.

Danny: Now you're talking.

He is so naughty and I love him with his naughtiness. I cannot believe he just got jealous so easily and he just jumped to conclusions. I looked at him as he asked me the questions and realized how lucky I am to have him in my life. I'm never letting him go.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

Insert 21

Waking up this morning I was very happy and excited. There are some nerves but not that much. I am ready for my interview and hopefully they will be impressed. I prepared the kids for school and it was much easier because Paula was helping me.

Paula: Is it okay if I ask one of the

drivers to take me to town today? I want to drop off my CV at some schools

Me: Schools?

Paula: Yes I studied teaching, I majored in Accounting and Economics.

Me: The FET phase? Well yes you can sweetie. I hope everything goes well

Paula: I hope you nail that interview. I've always been passionate about teaching, I love kids and I love interacting with them. Just teaching students daily, making a difference in one's life and being part of the



journey of ones success is heartwarming for me.

Me: I've never looked at it that way. You know how we students are, we just believe every teacher is stuck up when they don't do things our way. Especially in high school thats how most of my classmates were. As much as I was a blacksheep and didn't exist, I also didn't like most of my teachers.

We continued talking as I listened to how passionate she was and how committed she was to teaching. She made many clear facts about how society has turned to undermine

teachers yet they pave the way and assist us to be able to achieve and reach our goals. They give us the education we grow to boast about but undermine their career field.

Danny walked in followed by a tall thin girl who was too pretty for my liking and was too touchy. Her hands were all over my man, the helpers followed with a clothing line.

Me: Baby, what is going on?

I went to stand next to him and held him closely moving this girl. He smirked and we kissed.

Danny: This is your stylist for today,

she'll help you pick out what you'll wear.

Me: Does she have to? I mean I can do it myself or Paula could help

Danny: Whatever you want to do babe

Her: But Mr McKenzie it is my job and I came all the way here to offer my services

Me: And you can kindly go all the way back to where you came from

Danny: You heard her. Plus these are your clothes, I figured you'd want some formal clothes too. The rest will get here later.

The stylist left and Paula smiled at

me.

Me: She was too touchy

Danny: Look who is jealous now?

Me: I'm not jealous

Danny: Whatever you say. Babe, I'll drop you off and I'll be off to Langelihle.

Me: When will you come back?

Danny: In a week

I didn't know what to say, I actually wanted to cry because I won't see him for a week.

Danny: Don't be sad Nasiphi, I'll be back before you know it.

Me: I'll be fine. Let me go pack for you.

Paula: I'll put these in your closet Sis Nasi

Me: Paula, call me Nasi. I'm just a few months older than you.

Paula: Yes sis Nasi... I mean Nasi.

We went upstairs and I took out clothes for Danny, tracksuits, jeans and t-shirts.

Danny: I'll need 2suits too. The black shoes on your left and the brown pair next to it.

Me: You have so many formal suits

Danny: Being a business man requires me to look my best at all times so those suits aren't just expensive but they represent me. I'm more of a casual clothing person though, those are just for work and other formalities.

I nodded and continued packing. He packed his toiletries and we were done.

Me: I'll go look for something to wear. I don't have much time left.

Danny: Come here Nasiphi

Me: I need to go and you need to shower.

I walked to the door but surprisingly he got to the door first. He held me and we kissed. I just cried within the kiss, why am I acting like this?

Danny: Baby, don't cry.

Me: Sorry, I will just miss you.

Danny: I'll miss you too but I'll be back in a week

Me: Yes I know and I know you have responsibilities to take care off. I'm just being a cry baby and I haven't been away from you for that long.

Danny: And I understand why you're feeling this way. I'm just amazed you're like this before I've even

shagged you. I wonder how more clingy you'll be, it's getting me excited Trust Danny to just say something like this at serious situations. He is just so random. I laughed at him and we kissed.

Danny: Come shower with me

Me: I already showered

Danny: You can do it again.

He took off my clothes and carried me to the bathroom. We showered together and he made me feel so much pleasure using his tongue and finger. I also went down on my knees and made him growl out of pleasure.



After our shower I was left with only an hour to prepare. I wore my gown and went to my closet. I still haven't moved my clothes from the room I was using previously.

Me: Paula!

Paula: I'm coming!

She came and we sat on the bed

Me: Do you have something to wear while you go job hunting?

Paula: I think what I'm wearing is fine.

Me: No, take these and these. You'll choose from there. And take my card, so you can do some shopping.

Paula: I don't know what I'll buy

Me: Okay, we'll go shopping together this coming Saturday.

Paula: Thank you

I wore a black tight knee length dress and navy heels.

Paula: You look beautiful.

Me: Thank you

I put my weave on and she styled it for me

Me: Thank you very much. Please pass me that navy bag

Paula: There you go

Me: Thanks, I'm ready now.

We went downstairs and Danny was waiting for me.

Danny: Wow you look amazing.

Me: Thank you

MaN: You look really beautiful my daughter. Good luck

Me: Thanks mama, where is mom?

MaN: MaDlamini is at the garden. I'm going to join her soon, we are planting some roses.

Me: But you guys know you shouldn't be over working yourselves. It's not good for your health especially MaDlamini, she needs to rest.

Danny: Let them be Nasiphi.

MaN: Please take her and leave before she stresses herself too much. Good luck once again.

She just smiled and walked away. These women don't know how much I worry about them and want them to stay fit and healthy at all times.

Danny: You worry yourself too much babe. It's not good for your own health, I don't want you to stress yourself about anything okay?

Me: Yes Daddy

We got to the hospital and parked at the parking area.

Danny: I'll leave the car here and you'll drive yourself home.

Me: How will you get home?

Danny: Brian will come pick me up and he'll be driving me to the airport and he'll drive Paula around town.

Me: I know what he is up to, he better take care of my sister.

Danny: He will.

He opened the door for me and kissed my forehead.

Danny: I know you'll do well in there. Make me and everyone else proud.

Me: Thank you and I will.

He walked me to the reception desk and left me there. I wanted to cry when he left but I held my tears back. I sat at the waiting area and waited. Apparently Athi and his partner were still busy.

" Dr Nyathi please get to Emergency room 101 immediately" the intercom said and I just sat there. Wow there's a Dr Nyathi here, it will be confusing so I guess I'll be using Dlamini.

"Dr Pearl Nasiphi Nyathi please get to Emergency room 101 immediately" it said again. Wait, me? Some nurse came running to me and she grabbed my hand

Her: Dr Buthelezi needs you in the Emergency room immediately. Come, you need to change.

Me: Wait now?

Her: Yes

What is going on here? I quickly changed into surgery uniform and wore takkies and washed my hands. Athi came followed by another Dr.

Athi: I know you were supposed to be having an interview but you need to operate on a patient immediately. We might loose her. Are you ready?

Me: Yes, I will need a team of 7.

Athi: They are already in there. Good

luck

Never had I imagined this would happen today. I will be doing my first operation after being trained about 2years ago. I got to my patient and it was a matter of life and death

Me: Be with me oh Lord.

After 3hours of being in the Emergency room and operating on my patient. She was finally stabilised and the operation was a success.

Me: The heart is functioning well. Her body didnt reject it. Move her to the ICU immediately please.

Nurse: Yes Dr



I went out and took off what I was wearing and threw them away. I was left with the tracksuit I was given to wear underneath the plastic uniform. I sat down and drank water. Bee came in wearing her doctors coat. I knew she was a doctor but just didn't know she worked here.

Bee: So how was it?

Me: It was successful. I never thought that moment would ever come in my life. It was just amazing when I heard the heartbeat and her body not rejecting the heart. She's under intensive care right now but I know she'll pull through.

Bee: I'm happy for you, follow me.  
Athi and Dr Nxumalo want to see you.

Me: Dr Nxumalo is his partner?

Bee: Yes

We walked to another beautiful office which had a feminine touch and it might be Bee's office.

Athi: Sit down Dr Nyathi, this is my partner Dr Nxumalo

Me: Pleasure to meet you Dr Nxumalo

DrN: Likewise Dr Nyathi

It feels so good to be called Dr Nyathi. It makes my heart melt into pieces.

Athi: The operation you did was very successful and it shows you are more than capable for this job. The hospital needs you and we would like to offer you this job

Me: What! Yes! Thank you, thank very much.

DrN: There won't be a need for me to say you start working immediately because you worked before you even got the job. Congratulations Dr Nyathi, I looking forward to working with you. Excuse me

Athi: Congratulations Nasi, you just need to sign that contract, read it and

if there's something you need clarity on just contact me. This is your office and Dr Luthuli(Bee) will show you around.

He also left and we screamed. Bee hugged me as I was in tears. I cannot believe that I am finally a doctor and I am using my original surname. All my dreams are coming true.

Me: I cannot believe that this is really happening, it feels like a dream

Bee: Well it is not a dream, let me show you around so you can come back and read your contract.

Me: Okay

We went around the hospital and I met a few other doctors I will be working closely with at times. The receptionist gave me documents of my patients that I will be taking over from the previous doctor that was here.

Bee: I'll go back to work and leave you at it. We knock off at 5

Me: Thanks

Bee: My office is next to yours so I'm not that far away.

I went to my office and looked around it. It had its own bathroom too and it was just big and my style. On

the drawer there was my favourite chocolate and a note from Danny "Goodluck Dr Nyathi, I love you" I smiled to myself and called him

Danny: Dr Nyathi

Me: Mr McKenzie, how did you sneak in this chocolate in my drawer?

Danny: Let's just say I have my ways, are you settling in well?

Me: Yes I am and I love my office and I didn't even do any interview, I went straight into performing an operation. It was successful

Danny: I knew you'd love it.

Congratulations my love, tell Athi not

to overwork you or he'll have me to deal with.

Me: I'll have to explain to the kids that I'll be home in the afternoon from now onwards, I'll miss spending my days with them

Danny: They'll understand and adjust to the new schedule babe. Don't worry, everything will work out.

Me: Traveled safely?

Danny: Yes and we're in the middle of a meeting now.

Me: Let me not disturb you then.

Goodbye

Danny: I love you

Me: I love you too.

I read my contract and the payment was out of this world! I will be earning this much money monthly! Wow God is good. Indeed he has blessed me abundantly. I will be working from 8am to 5pm, sometimes do night shifts and I am on call for any emergencies. I signed the contract and went to give it to the receptionist.

Me: I need this to get to Dr Buthelezi's office please

Her: Yes Dr Nyathi

Me: And you are?

Her: Xola Ndwebu.



Me: Nice to meet you

Xola: Likewise Dr Nyathi

I went back to my office and started reading into the documents. I packed some into my drawers and got to work. There was a knock on the door and it was Xola

Me: Yes?

Xola: There's a delivery for you Dr Nyathi.

I went to the reception and it was a delivery from Nandos. This had Danny written all over it. I signed and took my food. I texted him and thanked him. Bee walked in and she

was also carrying food.

Bee: Late lunches, I hate them. I'm always so hungry but I cannot leave surgery because I'm hungry.

Me: We'll knock off soon so you'll be able to get home and rest

Bee: Bonga wants me to stay at home already but I'm just 3weeks pregnant. He is too fussy plus I love my job, I'll stop working when I'm 8months pregnant

Me: How does it feel like?

Bee: What?

Me: Being pregnant

Bee: Oh, it's, it's amazing hey. My first pregnancy was amazing to me but I really got fat. So I know I'll look like a hippo with these two.

We had our late lunch and got back to work. I worked through and I didn't notice it was 30mins passed knock off time. I changed into my clothes and took my bag and a few documents to work on at home.

DrN: Enjoyed your first day?

Me: Yes Dr Nxumalo I did. It's all just a bit overwhelming too

DrN: Please, call me Phumlani.

Me: Okay Phumlani. I'll see you

tomorrow.

Phumlani: See you tomorrow, we should have lunch together. Just to get to know each other as colleagues.

Me: Sure.

I got into the car and drove home. I got there and Paula was preparing supper.

Onika: Sis Nasi!

Me: Hey my baby! How was your day?

Onika: It was good and yours?

Me: It was good too, where is Danver?

Onika: He went to the stores with uncle Brian.

MaD: How was the interview?

Me: My interview turned into my first day at work. I performed my first surgery today and it was successful. I've never been so happy in my life

Paula: Congratulations.

Me: And how was job hunting?

Paula: I have three interviews this week! Everything is working out perfectly.

Me: I'm glad!

MaN: We'll be off to see the house tomorrow. And sign the papers

Me: Oh wow that was quick

MaD: We want to give you and Danny your own space my kids.

Me: Oh okay but you can stay longer

Paula: No, we've stayed long enough. Plus we won't be that far away.

Me: Let me go shower

Onika: Can I shower with you?

Me: Okay, we'll just use the bath tub. We'll have a bubble bath.

She was so excited as we went to the bathroom and took our warm bubblebath

Me: Do you have any homework?

Onika: Yes

Me: Okay, we'll do it just now.

We dried ourselves up and got dressed into our pyjamas. Danver and Brian were back

Me: Danver! I've missed you

Danver: But you saw me this morning, but hey, I've missed you too.

Me: I need to talk to you, I'll be working now and I'll be coming back in the afternoons

Danver: You'll be a doctor now?

Me: Yes

Onika: Okay, I'm happy for you. Will you be here to tuck us in bed?

Me: Yes I will and I won't be working on weekends. So we'll have family weekends with no work disturbing us.

Danver: That will be awesome

Me: And i'll still be preparing you for school. Now come, lets do homework

Brian: I'll be on my way out

Me: No, you'll stay for supper. Paula cooked and I'm sure you'll enjoy her food.

Brian: I can never say no to good food.

I helped the kids with homework and helped Paula set up the table. We served supper and we all sat at the table.



Brian: I'll say grace.

Heh! Brian be scoring points. He never says grace when we feast together. Paula being here has him doing things differently. We had supper and I washed the dishes after that. Brian left after a few minutes and I tucked the kids in bed. It was around 8pm and I went to bed with the documents so I can read through them. I received a call from Sneh.

Me: Hello

Sneh: Hey little sis, how are you? You must be tired.

Me: Not that much hey and how's my

baby Zee

Sneh: She's growing and crying all the time. So how was your first day? Athi told me you did very well

Me: It was amazing and I really enjoyed it.

Sneh: I'm glad you did. I was just checking up on you. Goodnight love

Me: Goodnight sis and thanks for checking up on me.

Sneh: That's what big sisters are for, Ziyanda taught me well. She was great big sister so I'm passing it all to you and I'll be the best big sister.

Me: Thank you, I love you

Sneh: I love you too.

She ended the call and I tried calling Danny but it went straight to voicemail. I continued working and around 11pm. I got a call from Danny

Me: McKenzie

Danny: Why are you still up?

Me: I'm just working on some documents

Danny: You need to rest Nasiphi.

Me: Yes Sir. Is everything well there?

Danny: Yes and we're managing very well. Are you missing me?

Me: Alot, I hope you're missing me

too there

Danny: I am, how did the kids take it?

Me: Very well actually. Weekends are for family time Danny, and that counts for you too babe.

Danny: Yes Mam. You should rest now, goodnight.

Me: Goodnight, I love you.

After the call, I put the documents away and slept.

**#NEXTMORNING**

I woke up and prepared the kids for school. Paula made breakfast while I took a shower. They were ready and I

packed a bag with my tracksuit and sneakers and everything I'll need for the day.

Me: Kids! Let's go.

They said their goodbyes to their grandma's and we were off. I first dropped off Danver then Onika. I got to work just in time and went to the reception and signed in.

Me: Morning Bee

Bee: Morning, we have a meeting in 30mins.

Me: Oh okay, I'll be there.

I packed my documents and my schedule for the day was already on

my desk. I didn't change since I won't be going into surgery soon. We went to the meeting and I sat next to Bee. Dr Buthelezi and Dr Nxumalo took the stand and addressed us. The meeting was just a staff meeting and motivating the staff.

Athi: We would also like to welcome our new staff member, Dr Nyathi.

I smiled and they welcomed me. The meeting was adjourned and I went to my office. A young girl came in and she looked a few years younger than me.

Her: Morning Dr Nyathi, I'm Ms

Ngcobo. Your PA.

Me: Wow I have a PA? This is cool. I didn't think I'd be needing one but I guess I will. What's your name?

Her: Julia, but I prefer being called JJ

Me: Well JJ, we'll work very well together I hope. I won't be needing anything for now so you can go back to your desk.

She went out and I worked through the day. I had three patients to monitor and everything was going well. We then had lunch and I was sitting at the cafeteria when Dr

Nxumalo came to join me.

DrN: Nasiphi, may I join you?

Me: Yes you may Phumlani.

We sat and talked more getting to know each other. He was really funny and there was just something wierd about him.

DrN: You're beautiful

Me: Thanks

DrN: I mean it, you're really beautiful. And you have a great smile. Don't even get me started with your laugh. It is amazing.

I just starred at him as he put his



hand over my and squeezed it

Me: Uhm Dr Nxumalo... This is inap...

I was going to say inappropriate but I was disturbed by Athi clearing his throat.

Athi: What is going on here? Dr Nxumalo, keep your hands to yourself.

He seemed to be so angry and I stood up. I whispered "Thank you" to him and went to my office. I didn't expect this to happen. I certainly don't need any office drama. I hope this doesn't get to Danny. Hopefully Dr Nxumalo will keep his hands to himself and we will work well

together without any inappropriate things happening.

Hope you enjoy

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

Please like and comment

#LBAR

Insert 22

A week has passed and it has been wonderful. Alot has happened and

work is great. It is getting more and more busier by the day and I am getting along just fine with the workload. I love that I am doing what I've always wanted to do and my dreams are coming true. We work along very well with the other doctors and my PA. I spent the weekend with the kids, my moms and Paula. We played, watched movies, went shopping and camped out at the garden. It was indeed a great weekend but unfortunately Danny wasn't there. He hasn't come back yet and things have been hectic in Langelihle, even Athi went down to

Langelihle. All the guys are in Langelihle and we ladies have been left under intense security. I am not angry at Danny as I understand that he has things to deal with but I didn't want them to affect family time. I guess we can make it up to the kids when he comes back. Dr Nxumalo has stayed away from me and we have a professional relationship. He hasn't tried anything appropriate and I'm glad that Athi did not tell Danny as he would've blowed things way out of proportion. Paula has got a job and today is her first day at work. Brian wanted to take her there himself but

unfortunately he couldn't be here.  
They are still in the friendzone and  
Paula hasn't really noticed that Brian  
has feelings for her. Danver came to  
me crying

Me: Baby, what is wrong?

Danver: My stomach hurts.

I carried him and gave him some  
meds. He isn't pulling one of his "I  
don't want to go to school" stunts. He  
seemed to be really sick. I know  
Onika will not want to go to school if  
Danver is also not going.

Me: Let's get you something to eat so  
you can go back to bed

Danver: I'm not hungry. I'll go sleep  
I took him back to bed.

Me: Mama, please make sure he eats  
and monitor his temperature. If it  
gets worse, call me.

MaN: Okay I will. Have a good day my  
daughters, Good luck Paula

Paula: Thanks Mama.

We went to the car and I dropped her  
off. I got to work and it was just a  
chaos.

JJ: Dr Nyathi, I was about to call you.  
You need to change right now. There  
was a shooting and many people  
have been brought in. Let me carry

these for you

Me: Is my team ready?

JJ: Yes, everyone is on their feet.  
You'll be working with Dr Nxumalo.

I went to change and rushed to the  
Emergency rooms.

DrN: We have a man shot near the  
heart, twice.

Me: I need to remove the bullet. Close  
the doors please.

His wife or girlfriend was crying  
hysterically as the closed the doors. I  
was able to remove the bullets in  
time and luckily there was no major  
damage. We moved on to two other

people and they were moved to ICU.

Nurse: They are bringing in the last one hopefully. It was a girl who seemed to be in her early teenage years. We operated on her and it was crucial. 4bullets were in her heart exactly. I managed to take them all out but her heart was failing. The heartbeat was slow and it got slower and slower.

Me: We're loosing her!

We all tried by all means to save her but it was too late. There was nothing I or anyone else could do to save her.

DrN: We've lost her.



We stitched her and her body was covered and taken out of the surgery room. I took off the plastic uniform and went to sit down. Tears fell from my eyes and I was emotional. She died right in my hands, it was the first patient I've lost. We were trained for this but I didn't know it would be this painful to lose a patient.

DrN: Are you okay?

Me: Yes, I'm fine

DrN: It is okay to lose a patient, as sad as it is we have to move on.

You'll get used to it, I've lost 5 patients in just a day. It's understandable to

feel this way. You'll be okay.

I nodded and cried. He held me, I resisted but he held me closely.

Me: Thanks

I let go and went to my office. I didn't bother changing back into my formal clothes and stayed in my tracksuit. I worked on some documents and Dr Nxumalo came in, argh! What does he want? He stood by the door

Me: What can I help you with?

DrN: We need to talk, I'm inlove with you.

#Danny

Being away from Nasiphi has been heartbreaking and for the first time in so long, I have felt the absence of my kids and I have missed them. When Zee passed away, I shut them off completely and now that Nasi has been here. She has helped me build a new relationship with my kids and I love them dearly and being without them this past week has taken a toll on me. Just hearing their voices and seeing them through video calls is not enough for me. I want to be near them physically. Nasi texted me in the morning telling me Danver isn't feeling well and that broke my heart.

Then and there I decided to pack and book myself a flight back home. Nkosi understood I needed to go and what brought me here has been sorted. I will just miss the final meeting which would just be a brief on how things will continue within the two Kingdoms who wanted to go on war. The rest of the gents will be there too so I know they have everything undercontrol. I landed about 4hours ago and went to my construction company which I opened 3years ago and has been up and running. It works closely with Nkosi's company. After Nkosi

received the international tender to work and redesign buildings, he needed a construction company working inline with him so I took the opportunity. Being a business man requires me to take opportunities and risks. This was a great opportunity so I took it and the money has been rolling in. After just seeing how things have been I drove straight to see my heart. I greeted her PA

Me: Is Dr Nyathi in her office?

Her: Yes she is. Shes with Dr Nxumalo, but it is not a meeting. You may go through

Me: Thank you

I walked there and heard what seemed to be an argument. This idiot Dr Nxumalo was shouting, I hope for his own sake, he isn't shouting at Nasi

" I love you damn it! Can't you get that?" He said

"Dr Nxumalo, we are colleague's and nothing more. Please respect our professional relationship and do not go beyond the boundaries. I am in a happy relationship and I do not feel the same way about you" she replied.

I stood by the door and listened to

this idiot telling Nasi how he feels about her and the things they have in common. He was making my blood boil.

" Please leave my office" said Nasi

" I will not leave till you tell me you love me too, I know you do. I've seen the way you look at me, the way you laugh at my stupid jokes and when you cried on my shoulder this morning, I saw how fragile you are and I need to protect you and be by your side at all times"

Now he was speaking crap! I got in and they didn't see me. He went

closer to Nasi

Me: Don't you dare put your filthy hands on her.

Nasi was shocked when she saw me but right now I was focusing on this idiot. I will deal with her later.

DrN: Who the fuck are you?

Me: Someone you do not want to mess with. Now take a few steps back and move away from her.

He went closer to her. This man is really testing me.

Me: I see you're disrespectful. Take a few steps back, you do not want me to repeat myself.



He didnt move and I locked the door

Nasi: Danny

I didn't look at her and I punched this idiot on his nose. I didn't see any blood so that angered me more and I beat him up. He tried fighting me off but I was too much for him. I was boiling off anger and I will not stop until I am satisfied with the amount of blood I will see on this floor. I could hear Nasi screaming for me to stop and calling for help. I don't know when she opened the door but Bee walked in as I was beating up this idiot

Bee: Danny stop! Oh God, he is loosing too much blood. Call my husband!

Nasi: What will he do because they are all the way in Langelihle!!

Bee: Danny!

Nasi: Danny please, I'm begging you. You will kill him and go to jail, who am I going to raise our children with? Danny, please.

Those words hit home and I stopped because she started crying.

Me: I won't be arrested even if I kill this bastard. Get your bags, we're leaving

I wanted to comfort her but I couldn't look at her. I was upset because I behaved this way in front of her. I let my anger control me and I was still very angry. I got into the car and she followed.

Me: Where is Bee?!

Nasi: In her office

Me: Go get her, we're leaving with her.

She ran back and came back with Babalwa. They sat at the back seats and I drove off to Bongas.

Bee: Byes guys.

Nasi: Goodbye, see you tomorrow.

I drove to my house and parked outside the garage.

Nasi: You're not coming in?

Me: No!

She seemed sad and wanted to cry but I couldn't comfort her when I'm like this. I know I'll hurt her. When I'm angry I release myself by fucking real hard, I'm not about to hurt her like that. We've never even had sex before so I'm not about to have our first time like this and when I'm this angry. I took my phone about to call my old fuckbuddies but I stopped myself.

Me: No, I will not cheat on Nasiphi. I

cannot hurt her like this.

I drove off to one of my apartments and went to the in-house gym so I can let go of my anger.

#Nasi

Today has been nothing but an exhausting and dramatic day. Dr Nxumalo went out of control and started confessing his feelings towards me and it became more of a disaster when I realized that Danny was standing by the door. Maybe he heard everything that idiot said. I couldn't believe what I was seeing as Danny beat up Dr Nxumalo. Maybe he

is in a coma as we speak. My office floor was filled with his blood, Danny almost killed him. I won't be shocked if the police come knocking in this house coming to arrest him. He was so angry and I never ever want to see him like that again. He dropped me off and left. I took a shower and the kids came to my room

Onika: You're back early

Me: I was tired and wanted to come home so I can spend time with you. Are you feeling better Danver?

Danver: Yes I am. Both my grannies have been taking good care of us.

Onika: Let's go watch a movie

We went to the in-house cinema room and watched a movie which was cartoons. We watched the movie and I wasn't paying attention to it. I was thinking of Danny and where he might be. I got a text from Bee

Bee: " Is he okay now?"

Me: "He isn't even at home"

Bee: "He'll calm down soon and come back home"

I hope he will come home soon.

Hours passed and I went to the kitchen and cooked supper while my moms were watching T.V.

MaD: We are moving into our house on Friday

MaN: We don't need to do much, the house is fully furnished already and we'll just take our bags and move into the house. All we have to do is pack our clothes into our closets when we get there.

Me: Okay Mama. I'll pass by your house after work.

MaD: We'll take the kids for the weekend so they can get to see our house. It will give you and Danny some time alone.

Me: Okay mom thanks.



MaN: Are you okay?

Me: Yeah I'm just tired.

I continued with my cooking and Paula got home. She was happy and her first day went really well. She helped me finish up and bathed the kids. It was now supper time and Danny still wasn't home. I tried calling him but it went straight to voicemail. They don't know that he is back in town so saves me the trouble of answering questions about his whereabouts. We had supper and everyone went to sleep. I put his plate in the food warmer and cleaned the kitchen. He came in looking horrible

and I could tell he was drunk. That got me angry and I walked to our room upstairs. He came in and took off his clothes, leaving them on the floor and he went to take a shower. I will not pick those up. I switched the lights off and covered myself with a blanket. After about half an hour he removed the blanket. I stared at him and covered myself again, he removed them again. Nxx! I don't have time for games.

Danny: Why do you look at him? Why do you laugh at his stupid jokes and smile at him?

I ignored him and pretended to be

asleep

Danny: Answer me damn it!

I'm glad this room is soundproof, they won't hear what is about to go down in here.

Me: Because I took him as a friend. I didn't know he was inlove with me.

Danny: You led him on! You let him fall inlove with you

Me: Are you listening to the nonsense that's coming out of your mouth! I don't have time for this

Danny: You let him comfort you, you cried on his damn shoulder

Me: I had a long day, a patient passed away today as I was operating on her and it was my first time experiencing that. I got emotional and cried, he was the one who looked for me and held me as I cried. I pulled away from that.

Danny: Nxx! You little whore! You think you can just flaunt your ass so all these other men can see you and I'll be stupid to believe that you don't want them. Are you cheating on me!

Out of no where, I just lost it and slapped him. He must get this damn alcohol out his system. Where do I get the nerve to slap him after I saw

him nearly kill someone? I moved away from him as I realized what I had just done. The anger in his eyes! Oh God, what have I done? I will not be surprised if he hits me, I will scream but no one will hear me. He came close and I moved back quickly. He looked down and ruffled his hair.

Me: Don't you dare call me a whore! I am not a whore and I will not be disrespected by you! I am not cheating on you and I will never do that. I respect you and I respect myself. It is not my fault that I'm thick and I have an ass. I do not go flaunting in to other men because I

have my man who is acting stupid and calling me names right now. You're stinking of alcohol and you have the nerve to come home late, looking a mess and coming to say stupid things to me. And you're scaring me! What I saw today showed me a side to you that I am scared of and I never want to see again

Danny: I won't hurt you, please don't be sacred of me. I'm sorry, I'm sorry I disrespected you and called you a whore. I'm angry at myself and I'm trying to push the blame on you. I should have controlled my anger

Nasiphi. That bastard deserved the beating but I shouldn't have done in front of you.

Me: You almost killed him

Danny: I wish I had killed him... how dare he say those things to you.

You're mine Nasiphi, no one else but mine.

Me: That sounds a little bit too possessive don't you think?

Danny: I don't care how it sounds but I love you and you're mine Nasiphi and no one else will have you. I overreacted and mostly because I'm scared you'll fall in love with him and

he'll love you better than I can. He won't have any burdens and he'll treat you better. I'm afraid I'll lose you Nasiphi! Just the thought of it scares me and makes my blood boil. Nasiphi, you're mine. You're mine right, you belong to me?

I kept quiet and nodded

Danny: Say it! Say it out loud!

Me: Yes I'm yours! I belong to you

I shouted as I cried. He held me and kissed my forehead. He kept on whispering "you're mine" and I nodded.

Danny: Promise you'll never leave me?



That one day you'll marry me and be the mother of our two kids.

Me: I promise

Danny: We'll have to take your womb out so you cannot fall pregnant and die! Not even death can take you away from me. It won't!

He's eyes were red as he said this and he seemed to be staring into space. He is crazy, it's confirmed. Danny has lost his mind.

Me: I won't do that.

Danny: You will! You will! Promise me you will! Having babies takes away the mother! It took away my life and I

will not let it take you away from me too.

He held me too tight and he was hurting me. I cried as he kissed me and kept on mumbling things to himself. This man needs serious help, he seemed to be out of this world and someone would really think he is insane. He's body was suddenly extremely hot and tears fell from his eyes.

Me: Danny, let's get you in bed.

Danny: You won't leave me?

Me: No. I won't leave you.

He let go of me and I helped him get

in bed. He fell asleep immediately and I looked at this troubled man. He needs help and I'm going to help him. There's more to this than what I thought it was. I kissed his forehead and slept next to him with my head on his chest. This day is certainly one of the worst days of my life.

Hope you enjoy

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

Please like and comment

#LBAR

## Insert 23

To say I've been heartbroken for the past few days would be an understatement. Waking up next to Danny the morning after he has said all those heartbreaking things to me. I realized that he had a lot of things bottled up inside of him and he is traumatized not only is he traumatized but he is broken. We haven't spoke from that day, I moved back to my room and I've been trying to figure things out. He is possessive,

he seems to be obsessed and that scares me. I know I've only seen how things turn out on movies when one partner is obsessed with the other but I know things really do turn out that way. He's been keeping his distance from me, he might be giving me some space or he's beating himself up for the things he said. What I know is that, he doesn't want anymore children. What happened to Ziyanda has traumatized him and he thinks it will happen to me to. I will not and will never ever get my womb removed. Work has been good, Dr Nxumalo was discharged after

staying two days in hospital when Danny beat him up. He hasn't shown up and that makes me happy because I don't know how things will be between us. My mothers and Paula ended up moving on a Thursday because we wanted to have a house warming party today. I prepared for work, I have just two patients to see and then I'll leave early so I can go to the party. It has just been Danny and I in the house since yesterday and things are sour. I took the keys, wrote a sticky note "Gone to work" and left it on the fridge. That's how we communicate

these days and its draining. I got to work and went to monitor my first patient. Everything was going well and we will discharge him soon. I spoke to his family and updated them on my patients condition. After seeing my second patient I was glad I'd be going home. I am physically drained by all that's going on between me and Danny. I got home and went to change. I got a call from Venes, she's coming over for the house warming party today.

Venes: You're picking me up today right?

Me: Yes I'm coming. I know I'm late,

I'll be there just now.

I changed into tight jeans, lace bodysuit, off shoulder with sleeves. And black pencil heels. Tied my weave into a messy bun and put on a little make up. I looked really good and I felt good. I went to the garage and stood there just deciding which car to drive, I am still his girlfriend so I'll just enjoy it while it lasts. I took his maserati and went to pick up my girl. She screamed when she saw my ride

Me: Come! We're late

Venes: Yhu! Girl why are you so hot!

Are we really going to a



housewarming party?

Me: Yes.

We drove to my mom's new house and I saw his car. He's here already.

Me: Go in, I'll come shortly after

Venes: Fine, I guess I'll have to introduce myself.

After about 10mins I collected my emotions and was ready to face him. I went inside and he choked on whatever he was drinking.

Me: Hey guys!

Sbahle: Damn girl! You look stunning

Phila: Someone cannot take his eyes

off of you.

He patted Danny's shoulder and I laughed at him. I hugged my girls and Venes seemed to have already introduced herself and was having a conversation with Zandi. Oh lord, I hope they didn't realize that they have crazy personalities because we'll have another thing coming.

MaN: My baby, you're here. I see you always late. When you were young you were late too, you took your own time to start crawling, you crawled for so long and you walked after crawling for almost a year.

Me: Mama!

MaN: What it's true.

Sneh: Can we get this party started?

Ntoko: Yes mam!

The party started and we gave my mothers gifts and the kids were performing their song. They are really gifted with the ability to sing. I joined them shortly after and most of them were surprised to hear that I sang that well. All this time Danny hasn't took his eyes off me and I liked that but I couldn't act on it. I went to the bathroom and when I came out he was standing by the door.

Me: Mr McKenzie

Danny: Dr Nyathi

I nodded and he looked at me, his eyes were red and you could see he hasn't slept for days.

Me: When last did you sleep?

Danny: The last night I had you in my bed. I know I hurt you Nasi and I did you wrong, I hate myself for everything that happened that day...

I cut him off before he could finish.

Me: Stop! You were expressing how you really felt deep inside and don't apologize for it. We'll talk about this when we get home, the kids will sleep

over here and we'll have time to talk,  
just the two of us

Danny: Thank you, can we atleast  
pretend that everything's okay. I  
wanna hold you

Me: Unfortunately I'm not good at  
pretending but I can allow you to hug  
me.

He hugged me and grabbed my ass. I  
smacked his hand

Me: I said a hug not what you're doing.

Danny: I couldn't help myself. You  
look beautiful by the way.

Me: Thanks, you not too bad yourself

Danny: I'll take that as a compliment

Me: It was a compliment

Danny: Babe, a compliment is you saying I'm sexy and handsome

Me: You're sexy and handsome  
Danny.

Paula: You too need to get a room.

Danny: Sorry, you need to atleast greet Brian. He's going crazy

Paula: Why?

I pinched Danny, Paula is still clueless that Brian likes her.

Me: I mean, we've all talked to him and you haven't. He might think

you're mad at him or something. He can be really sensitive.

I left and Danny followed me. I don't know why I did that! Why did I allow him to touch me? It's not part of my plan. I got angry at myself and angry at him for being so charming and making me love him so much. The day continued and I stayed away from him, when he tried to talk to me I ignored him and stepped away. I could see it is taking a toll on him and he wasn't okay. It hurt me to see him that way but I'm doing what is best for us and it will help us.

Sbahle: Trouble in paradise?

Me: Yes. I don't think Danny is ready for a relationship. I don't think we're going to work out

Ngamso: It won't be easy that I know but don't give up on him. He loves you but he does still have a few things to work on. Trust me, I've been there. Jabu was not over the loss of his wife and kids when we started dating but look at us now. It takes time.

Me: I guess so but I feel as if things are a bit different, I look identical to his wife and I'm her sister. It's just too complicated



Sbahle: I do not wish to be in your shoes right now.

Danny: Can we talk Nasiphi?

I couldn't let him talk to me. I was going to melt and let my guard down. I just stood up and went to say goodbye to the kids

Me: I'll come pick you up tomorrow afternoon okay? I love you

Them: Love you too

I went to where my mothers were seated and I said my goodbyes.

Me: Venes, let's go.

Kamo: You're leaving already?

Me: I don't feel well, I need to go.

Naye: You can leave Venes since we're still enjoying the party. I'll drop her off

I nodded and left. Danny kept on calling my name and I ignored him as tears fell from my eyes. I don't know why I was acting this way but it is probably because what I'm about to do is sinking in and it's breaking my heart but it is for the best.

Me: Breath Pearl, breath.

I drove home and he was driving right behind me. This will be a long night.

#Danny

To say I hate myself would be an understatement. I've been beating myself up for the past few days because of how I treated Nasiphi. Calling her a whore was so low of me and just thinking about it makes me want to just grab a gun and kill myself. Yes I'm a messed up man, I have burdens and many issues I've never dealt with. I do not know how to deal with my issues and even therapists fail with me. I have a way of bottling up my feelings and to keep on telling myself that I'm okay and I'm over things when I'm just only telling that lie to myself and damaging

myself more. Being with Nasiphi has made me want to learn how to communicate and tell her everything that I feel and everything that I have went through but I find it very difficult. The past few days have been horrible as we were not on speaking terms, I decided not to push it because it was obvious she was angry at me. I do not blame here though, I behaved like an idiot and a jerk. I behaved like the idiot I thought I was protecting her from but actually I was worse. I loved my wife, yes I did but I've never loved anyone the way I love Nasiphi. I can finally say that I'm not inlove with Zee

anymore. Yes she'll always be in my heart, she's the mother of my kids and we never fought or divorced. She passed away and my love for her has come to an end. Nasiphi has full ownership of my heart and I want to let her know. Yes I haven't got over about how my wife passed, it scares me and it has been something I haven't been able to forget and it seems as if it has caused a much more deep problem to me. Nasiphi looked stunningly beautiful today, words cannot begin to describe the way she looked and she really caught my attention. I was happy when she

spoke to me even getting to touch her made me feel happy and loved. When she started ignoring me and got angry, I knew I wasn't off the hook and she was still mad at me. I just needed to talk to her and find a way to get through this together. I watched her as she drove my maserati and it looked good on her. It now belongs to her and I know she loves it. I got to our house and she was in her room upstairs.

Me: Nasiphi, please talk to me.

Nasi: Don't touch me Triston!

I stepped back and ruffled my hair. I

know when she calls me Triston she literally means business and shes dead serious.

Me: I'm sorry for the way I behaved that night. I'm sorry for the things I said to you and most of all I'm sorry for hurting you Nasiphi.

Nasi: Danny you are not over what happened to your wife and I understand. I didn't expect you to get over it in just a few months or something but you, you thinking that I will remove my womb just to satisfy your fears is totally wrong and out off this world. It is totally selfish of you to even think of that and think that I

will take that decision. You are  
damaged Danny

Me: I know, I know I'm damaged Pearl.  
Look at me, do you see a man who is  
fine and completely perfect? No! You  
see a damaged man who cannot fix  
himself. A man who is deeply inlove  
with you but cannot fully express it  
because I'm afraid I will lose you just  
like I lost my wife and my mother!

Nasi: Your mother?

Me: Yes, my mother. I know you  
thought my mother is alive but she  
died when I was 8months. That  
woman whom you think is my mother



is actually my stepmother. Razor married her 3 years after my mother passed away.

Nasi: I'm sorry about that.

Me: It's okay, that's not what we came to talk about. Nasiphi I love you, I really do love you and you've managed to own all my heart. You've managed to win me over and make me believe in love. I love you but I'm too damaged to be able to allow myself to show it to you

Nasi: And that's why I think it's best if we stop dating. We're over Danny, I cannot be with someone who doesn't

want to have kids with me. I want to be pregnant and experience that, I want to have my own children too. You have your kids and that's good and might be enough for you. Zee passing away after giving birth to Onika wasn't your fault, it wasn't her fault and it wasn't Onika's fault. It was her time and there was nothing you could do to stop it. The way it happened traumatized you and that is why you've filled your mind with the fact that being pregnant is a bad thing and having kids takes the mother away. You are not ready for a romantic serious relationship Danny.

You need help and we're going to get help for you but only if you want to help yourself too. I love you and I want to see you get help and be happy. For now, this relationship isn't what's best for both of us and I believe if it's meant to be then it will happen again but just not now.

Me: You're leaving me! You're doing exactly what I was afraid of. I'm losing you too Nasiphi.

Nasi: You're not losing me. I'll still be around to be your friend and someone you can talk to.

Me: I don't want you to be my friend. I

want to be with you. Marry you, raise our kids together and have more if you want them.

Nasi: You don't want to have more kids and I cannot force that on you. Maybe once you get help you'll have a different perspective of things but I'm afraid this is over. Goodnight Danny.

#Nasi

After having that heated conversation with Danny. I was hurting so much. Breaking up with him has hurt me more than I think it has hurt him. I cried and cried but couldn't get myself to sleep at all. He told me he

also lost his mother when he was 8 months. I guess he's father told him since he was too young to know and remember that. I went downstairs to get some water and got the fright of my life when I saw Danny sitting on the kitchen counter. I was happy that there was no alcohol around him. I took a bottle of water and just as I walked up one stair he talked. He's voice was husky and different

Danny: My father told me that my mother had complications when she was pregnant with me and my twin. Unfortunately when she gave birth to us, my twin was stillborn and I

survived. Doctors never thought she would survive too but she did. After giving birth to me she got sick and was only strong enough to be alive till I was 8months old and she passed away. If she wasn't pregnant with me and my twin she wouldn't have went through all she went through. She would also still be alive. When Zee was pregnant it scared me alot but I never told her about all this. It scared me more when she started having a few complications but she pulled through. Unfortunately after giving birth to Onika she wasn't strong enough and she died. Just like that, if

I hadn't impregnated her, if Onika was never conceived and if she had never met me she would've still been alive. I blamed myself and Onika for her death but you helped me realize that it wasn't our fault at all and I get that now but it still doesn't change the fact that pregnancy freaks me out and I'm traumatized. I've lost too many people Nasiphi and I cannot loose you too.

Me: Danny, I'm sorry about...

He cut me off before I could continue.

Danny: I lost many people and I lost a part of myself too. When I was 11 I

was sexually molested by some strangers. That killed me inside but I buried it and pretended to be okay. But when I was 13 it happened again and it was my uncle, he raped me and that's when it killed me the most. It brought back what had happened to me before and it took away who I was. I've never told anyone about this. You're the only one who knows and I trust that it will stay this way. Nasiphi, I'm a broken man and you've been fixing me slowly without even realising it. Here I am opening up to you, doing something I've never ever done before because of what I feel



deep inside. It is all because of the love I have for you and my kids.

He stood up and took off his clothes. He was stark naked and I stood and looked at me. He faced the other side and his back was facing me

Danny: I don't know if you're going to see in this darkness but I'm showing you my scars. I got these when I was molested by those strangers. These scars are a part of me and they remind me of what happened to me, they remind me of the day I lost who I was. Here I am Nasiphi, this is me and this is me telling you that I love you no matter how broken I am and

I'm willing to get help. Just for you and our kids. Just don't give up on me just yet. I understand you're looking out for yourself by getting out of this relationship but please, don't give up on us.

I helped him get dressed and I kissed his bare back and his bare shoulders to his torso and to his bare chest. I held him closely as we cried together and right then and there I decided I'm not giving up on this man. I love him and he loves me too.

Me: You're going to the rehabilitation centre in a week.

He nodded and we kissed. I cried in his arms and he kissed my forehead.

Me: You're mine Danny McKenzie and I'm yours

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

Sorry if you think it is short. Wanted to leave you with a little something something.

#LBAR

## Insert 24

When I woke up Danny was still peacefully sleeping. He looks so innocent and like a baby when he is sleeping you just don't want to disturb him at all. I went to my room and changed into my gym clothes, I'll shower after I do my morning run. It's not something I do regularly but it is something I do when I remember to. I left a sticky note on the fridge telling him I'll be back soon. After about an hour I went back home and I found

Danny shouting at the securities with only his boxer shorts on.

Me: What is going on here?

Danny: Where the fuck do you come from?

Me: I just went for a jog, I left a note on the fridge.

Danny: I thought you left me Nasiphi, after what I told you last night. I thought you just left me.

I apologized to the securities and he did too. We went back into the house with him looking very frustrated.

Me: Do you want breakfast? I'll have to shower first

Danny: I'll make it while you shower.

Me: I wouldn't just leave without telling you, cowards do that.

Danny: So you will leave me one day?

Me: If you give me reasons to do so then I will.

Danny: You too honest

Me: You're a 34year old man, you should be tough enough to take the truth no matter how much it hurts.

And you should always tell the truth

Danny: What I can tell you is that I love you.

Me: What if I tell you I don't love you?

Danny: That would be the first lie you tell me since we met.

Me: How do you know that I've never lied to you before?

Danny: I just know. You couldn't even lie and hide that you had a crush on Fezile.

Me: It wasn't a crush! I just liked him

Danny: There's no difference there. It's just almost the same thing

Me: No it's not

Danny: Says someone who's never even been in a romantic relationship

Me: Whatever Danny. We'll just agree

to disagree.

Danny: Go shower, you stink.

I laughed at him and went to shower. I lotined and got dressed, wearing an army green short dress and sandals. Combed my hair and went downstairs for breakfast.

Danny: You look beautiful, I'm almost done.

Me: Thanks. May you please borrow me your laptop or tab?

Danny: Okay, you can use whichever. Which reminds me, we need to get you your own too. You'll need them since you're working now. It will make



things much easier for you.

I nodded and he dished up me.

Me: Thank you. You're a good cook

Danny: Learnt from the best. My dad works wonders in the kitchen. You should meet him soon, we can go to my home next weekend

Me: You'll be in rehab next weekend.

Danny: Oh that...

Me: Yes that. It says here you'll stay for 3weeks, if there's no progress you'll stay for 6weeks.

Danny: No babe that's like a month. I cannot go for a month without seeing

you and the kids.

Me: We can visit during weekends but it's in Cape Town.

Danny: It's the June school holidays in two weeks, so I'll stay those two weeks, you'll come see me during weekends. Then on the third week, I'll discharge myself whether there's progress or not then we'll go on holiday

Me: What's the use of you going there if you feel as if there won't be progress? Danny, you're doing this for you. It will help you.

Danny: I know I cannot communicate,

more so, I cannot tell my darkest secrets to a stranger. I've never told people who are very close to me. Only you know, I can only open up to you. I just agreed on doing it because you want me to.

Me: So should I arrange for you to go there?

Danny: It's not necessary. You can be my therapist.

Me: Danny, this isn't something to joke about.

Danny: Am I laughing?

Me: No

Danny: So?

Me: Ouch

Danny: Andikuphoxi Nasiphi, qha ndik'xelela inyaniso. Andkwaz ukuthetha nomntu endingamaz ngenxaki zam.( I'm not trying to hurt you Nasiphi but I'm telling you the truth. I cannot speak to a stranger about my problems)

Me: Why aren't any of your many friends, therapists?

Danny: Unfortunately there aren't. I have a suggestion

Me: What is it?

Danny: We have sessions from 7pm to 9pm everyday. After putting the

kids to sleep, that way I can get to open up to you and I know I'll be much better after talking about all the things I bottle up inside of me.

Me: I'll just google questions  
Therapists asks, this is serious Danny.

Danny: I'm serious too, and if it doesn't work. Then nothing ever will work.

We finished breakfast and he went to shower while I worked on my newly found job of being Danny's therapist. I got some information on how to approach a client and making them dig deep and how to help him

express his emotions. It will be a challenge that I am looking forward to. My phone beeped and it was a text from Danny. Why is he texting me? We're in the same house. It read as follows " I know this is stupid of me but I'm just afraid to ask you in person, you make me feel certain way that I don't understand. May I please take you on a date?"

I laughed and didn't respond but instead I went to his room. He was standing near the window staring at his phone. "Turn around" I replied and he did as I instructed.

Me: Why can't you ask me in person?

Danny: Uhm I'm just sometimes a bit shy around you. I just didn't know how to ask you.

Me: It's a yes

Danny: I really had nothing planned out, it just came to my mind. Let's go watch a movie

Me: At the cinema room?

Danny: No, at the mall. It will feel like more of a real date.

Me: I'll go change

Danny: I'll ask one of the helpers to move your clothes to this room

Me: But your closet is full

Danny: There is an empty closet you can use

I nodded and went to my room. I guess it is the closet Zee used to use. It sometimes just doesn't sit right with me to be in this house. It was her home and she put things the way they are and how she liked it. I cannot rearrange this house or use some of the things here without having many thoughts. Soon I'll be using her closet, I sleep on the same bed she used with her husband and it all just feels like I'm her replacement or I'm slowly taking over what was hers. I don't understand why I feel this way but I



just feel this way. I wore jeans, kappa t-shirt with a denim jacket and vans. I got downstairs and he kissed my forehead and told me I'm beautiful. He tells me I'm beautiful every chance he gets and that makes me feel so special. He was wearing jeans and a black Redbat t'shirt. He threw me the keys of his maserati and I stared at him

Danny: It's not like you've never driven it before. It suits you

Me: Thanks I guess

He laughed at me and I put my shades on. When I have the money,

I'll really buy this car. I've never really been a person who liked cars and I never paid much attention to them. So I don't have what I call a "dream car" with the amount of money that I'll be getting from my salary. I'll definitely be getting myself a car in a few months. We got to Musgrave and went to SK cinema.

Danny: Which movie do you want to watch?

Me: Lets watch Lion, it seems to be interesting.

Danny: Slush puppy?

Me: Yes, the blue one please.

He got us popcorn, sweets and a slush puppy for me. Went to our seats and watched the movie. It was a very sad story of a young boy called Sheru who one day fell asleep in a train station waiting for his brother. He got into a train looking for him and the train left with him inside. He was far away from home and just got lost. Eventually he was in a home where they keep lost children. They couldn't find his parents or where he was from, he was soon adopted by a couple from England. When he was older, he looked for his home. When he did find his home, he found out

that his brother passed away the same day he went missing. He was hit by a train. It was a really sad movie and I cried throughout the entire movie. Danny being the sweetheart that he is, was my shoulder to cry on. He kept on giving me tissue and kissing my forehead. I caught him laughing at me a few times and it was cute actually. The movie was over and we decided to watch another one. It was also a great movie and I enjoyed it. We went shopping together and it was more fun than I thought it would be. It was weird when he wanted to go into a

lingerie shop with me. I drove us to different malls and boutiques as we shopped for many clothes. He liked all the suits and casual clothes I picked out for him. We shopped for the kids as well and it was really a great day. We forgot about all the problems we have and we were happy. He was really happy and he laughed alot. I saw a different side to him and it was his best side. He was a happy Danny and I instantly fell deeper inlove with him.

Me: We do still need to pick up the kids.

Danny: Don't worry, we'll pick them up

tomorrow afternoon. I already texted Paula.

Me: Okay cool.

He took the keys and drove us home. It was around 5:30pm.

Me: What should I cook?

Danny: Don't cook, I'm taking you out for dinner.

Me: Oh wow uhm what should I wear? I've never been out for dinner before.

Danny: I don't know, you figure it out. I'll pick you up at 7pm. Bye I'm going to a meeting with the gents. Dad wants to see us.

Me: Bye babe. I love you

Danny: I love you too MaNyathi.

When he left I quickly texted the girls  
"Advice please, what should I wear  
for a dinner date... Danny is taking  
me out"

Ntoko: "Don't worry, we'll be there in a  
flash.

Sneh: "I trust they'll work their magic  
on you. Sorry I cannot come sis. Have  
fun"

Me: "Thanks sis. I understand, them  
coming is more than enough."

When they said they'll be here in a  
flash, I didn't think it would be this

soon. They made themselves comfortable as we went through my clothes

Naye: This scenario is so familiar. Just about 6 to 7 years ago. They were doing this for me. I was going on my first proper date with Nkosi.

Zandi: And we really got drunk so I don't want history to repeat itself, that's why I carried one bottle of wine

Sbahle: You have alcohol with you every where you go.

Me: I really appreciate you guys doing this for me.

Nceba: Don't worry about it, we your



sisters. We're just a few minutes away, text ahead when you need us.

Kamo: This dress will do wonders I tell you! Go shower

Belinda: And shave the private area's. You might be getting some tonight

Me: Guys really now?

Siya: You'll never be a virgin forever darling. Go shower, time is not on our side.

I took a bath and shaved. Once I was done, I lotioned and wore my underwear.

Bee: Now that's some hot sexy underwear, come sit. I'll do your hair

and Siya will do your make up.

Phelo: We're keeping it natural.

Bee did a beautiful style on my afro and Siya did my make up. I got dressed, it was a gold dress, knee length, long sleeves, tight with an open back and black pencil heels.

Me: How do I look?

Siya: Drop dead gorgeous! Danny won't even be able to speak.

I laughed at them and had one glass of wine.

Me: I'm nervous

Sbahle: It's normal. Just have another

glass and that's it.

Nceba: He'll be here in a few minutes, we'll be on our way back to our houses

Belinda: Don't forget to tell us the details!

Bee took a few photo's of me and sent them to Sneh. I am truly blessed to have these ladies as my friends, as much as most of them are older than me. It doesn't seem to matter, they are my friends and my sisters. I love and respect them as much as they love and respect me. After a few minutes I got a text from Danny

telling me he is downstairs already. I checked myself one more time and I looked good. As I was walking downstairs I noticed that he was not standing there alone. He stood with a man much taller than him and he was well built. When they both turned I saw the resemblance and I knew it was his dad. They both stood and stared at me, not saying anything which made me feel shy and uncomfortable. Razor(Danny's father) had a huge scar on his cheek and he had green eyes. He smiled at me and kissed my hand

Razor: She is the one. You're beautiful

makoti. Sunday lunch at my house tomorrow, you did well Triston.

With that said he ruffled Danny's hair and patted his shoulder then he left.

Me: That was weird and scary

Danny: He's sorta weird, don't worry about him. He wanted to come see you and I can never say no to him. You're very beautiful my lady.

Me: Thank you

Danny: Shall we?

I nodded and we went to the parking. He was using a car I've never seen before. It was beautiful and I chose to shut my mouth so I don't embarrass

myself.

Danny: Do you like it?

Me: Yes, Its really beautiful. I really love the colour, its just so rare.

Danny: Its a rare dime, just like you.

We got into the car and it just took my breathe away. I really love this car and I could see it was brand-new.

Danny: Its a BMW X5. I named it Pearl

Me: Why would you name it by my name?

Danny: Because I thought of you when I bought it.

Me: You're crazy

The conversation kept on going as we drove to wherever he was taking me. He had his hand on my thigh and damn was it making me horny. We arrived at our destination and it was a place with a beautiful garden and water fountain next to us. He ushered me to our seats and the setting was made just for the two of us outside and we could see such a perfect view of the stars. He opened my seat for me and I sat. He was on perfect gentleman mode.

Danny: Do you like it? Are you feeling cold? We can always go inside if you're cold and not comfortable here.

Me: Danny, stop worrying. I'm not cold and I love it here.

The waiter came with our starters and we ate while having a conversation.

Danny: You do know that I love you?

Me: Yes

Danny: Nasiphi, I just want you to know that I love you and I'll never intentionally hurt you. I will be a bit too overprotective of you and I'll lose my mind if you're angry at me. I just want you to know that from today onwards you'll have this big man bugging your life forever. I



cannot promise you that our relationship will be smooth as I know it will be rocky but what I need is for you to be loyal to me.

Me: I will be loyal, I can never cheat on you. I love you

Danny: Just know if you do, you're digging your own grave. And not just that only, I need to know if you'll stick around when things get tough. That you won't pack and run just because things get rocky. That you'll stand by me and trust me as your man to fix things. I need you to trust me and know your place as my woman. I need you to be committed, for you to

respect me and trust me.

I nodded as I committed myself to this relationship. I don't know what the future has for us but I trust him and want to be with him for the rest of my life.

Me: I need you to trust me too, to be committed to this relationship and to me and the kids. I will respect you and I want you to respect me too.

We both nodded and had the main meal

Danny: I have something to ask you

Me: Go ahead.

Danny: Can the kids call you Mom?

They asked me a while ago and I said I'd ask you but I've been hesitant about, It's okay if you don't want to.

Me: I'd love that. I'd love that very much Danny. I take them as my own children and I'd love for them to call me mom.

Danny: Thank you, thank you very much.

After having dinner he asked if I wanted any desert and I said no. I was really full, as much as I love sweet stuff I had no place for it in my stomach. We took a walk hand in hand and it was amazing. It was the

best night of my life. We went to a setting where there was a blanket laid on the floor with pillows.

Danny: We'll lay here and look at the stars. They said its a perfect view from here.

I took of my shoes and got comfortable as we laid down and I laid on his chest. He covered me with his jacket. I listened to his heartbeat as we looked at the stars

Danny: I'm going to heal, I'm going to be a better man for you, myself and our kids Nasiphi. Just trust me

Me: I trust you and you don't need to

rush it. Healing is not an event, its a process. It's going to take time for you to remove all the emotional scars as you cannot remove the physical scars.

Danny: I sometimes feel as if I'm not manly enough. They took my manhood inside of me when they raped me. They took away that pride and status.

Me: You are a man, you're more of a man than they are. You need to remove that from your head.

Danny: I grew up, I still had their faces in my head. I drew them and haunted

them down with the help of Mpho, he didn't know that I'm looking for these people because they raped me. He thought it was people that just messed up. No one knows that I've been raped besides you.

Me: What did you do when you found them?

Danny: I tortured them till they died. I killed them slowly and painfully.

Me: How many people have you killed before?

Danny: Alot, I wouldn't hesitate to kill again if someone messed with me, you, the kids and my friends. I don't

just kill, I kill when it is necessary.

I nodded and just kept quiet. The amount of blood in his hands is not something I can easily take away.

Danny: I've never killed a child or a woman before. I deal with men, woman who cross us are also dealt with but not killed.

Me: Do I need to learn how to protect myself just incase you're not there and its an emergency

Danny: Yes, I'll teach you when the time is right.

Me: Danny, I want to have kids.

Danny: I know that, I mean you're

basically 26, you want to settle down and have a family and have kids of your own too. I understand that

Me: This, this isn't forever if we're not going to have more kids.

Danny: I know that and it was really selfish of me to say that you'll have to remove your womb. I wasn't in my right senses. I want you to know that we will have kids Nasiphi, I won't lie it really does scare me but I believe we'll be okay. And we'll cross that bridge when we get there. Do you want it to be something that happens soon?



Me: A year or two years from now

Danny: Okay, I can work with that.

I smiled and kissed him. We kissed and the kiss was getting intense as he was now rubbing my thighs going on to my clit

Danny: Damn, you're wet. Such a turn on

He kissed my neck and I must say, it is really one of my weak spots. I moaned and he bit my neck making a hickey.

Danny: Lets go before this gets more intense.

He carried me and I was hanging like

a sack over his shoulders. The drive back home was really shorter than the drive coming here. He was literally flying on the road. I giggled and he looked at me confused. I shrugged as I was carried into the house and up the stairs

Me: One day I'll fall and I won't talk to you.

Danny: I'll be very mad at myself too if you fall.

When we got to our room he kissed me and pinned me to the wall while inserting his finger in my honeypot. I moaned as it felt so good

Danny: Your moans drive me crazy. I love you Nasiphi

I couldn't even respond. He put me on the bed and looked at my underwear. He smirked and took it off. He kissed me all the way down and muffed me. It felt so good as I felt my legs tremble and my fluids build up. I came and he sucked me dry. He took off his boxer shorts and he's penis was staring right at me. Dear Lord! This man is gifted. He rubbed it on clit and that alone sent shivers down my spine. I found myself opening my legs more to adjust to him being between my thighs.

Danny: Why did you wait?

Me: I guess I waited for Mr right. And I'm looking at him right now.

He attacked me with a passionate kiss and I was on cloud nine. I felt him as he entered me slowly and it hurt so much! I felt my virginal walls tearing apart!

Me: It hurts

Danny: Do you want me to stop?

Me: No

He thrust deeper and the pleasure was kicking in. It was painful pleasure. I moaned as he thrust faster and tears fell from my eyes. I

don't know why I was crying. He wiped off my tears and kissed me. He was passionately making love to me and it was amazing. Listening to his moans and seeing the way he was made me feel good. We both came together as he called out my name.

Danny: That was amazing. Thank you  
He kissed me once more and carried me to the bathroom and we showered together. My virgina was sore and throbbing. He dried me up and carried me to the bed and tucked me in.

Danny: Get some rest

Me: I don't want to rest

Danny: What do you want then Nasi?

Me: I want you

What is wrong with me? I just had sex minutes ago and here I am wanting more. This guy got me addicted instantly. He smirked and wasted no time.

Danny: Aah Nasi, the things I'm going to do to you.

He inserted his manhood inside of me and thrustled.

Me: I love you Danny!

Danny: I love you too Pearl.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's  
of friends

#LBAR

Insert 25

Last night was amazing. I slept like a baby and I kept on dreaming of the things Danny did to me. It's funny how I just instantly enjoyed sex. He's

really good at what he does. What came to my mind was that we didn't use protection at all! I woke up quickly but stopped when my legs failed me. I almost fell but Danny was already there holding me.

Danny: What are you doing? You almost fell babe, be careful.

Me: I wanted to go bath so I can go to the chemist and get morning after pills.

Danny: Get in bed and rest more. I'll go get them. What should I get you for breakfast?

Me: Fruit salad will be okay, thanks.



He kissed my forehead and left me tucked in bed. I got a conference call from the girls

Me: Morning beautiful ladies

Phelo: Soooo??? What happened last night?

Me: A lady doesn't get laid and tell!

The screams that followed after my statement! You'd swear I just said something soo exciting.

Sneh: You dirty little sister! You need to tell us the details

Me: All I can say is, it was amazing.

Naye: Am I the only one who is

getting emotional?

Zandy: You get emotional about everything. Mmmh! How big is his dick?

Me: Zandile Zungu!

Zandy: What I'm just curious, is it white or pink? I don't think it's black, does it have pubic hair? Can you like see the veins?

Kamo: What will we do with Zandy kodwa? You are crazy. Lets meet up for lunch so we can talk and you'll tell us all the juicy details.

Me: Sorry I cannot, Mr McKenzie, Danny's father invited us for lunch.

Ngamso: Good luck with that bitch

Me: What bitch?

Nceba: Don't call her a bitch!(giggles)

Danny's step mom is a big pain in the arse!

Naye: Don't worry, Danny will protect you.

Me: Making me more nervous

Sneh: Don't be. You'll be fine, I know you'll put her in her place.

Belinda: I hope the dick didn't make you weak!

We all laughed and we heard Lubah at the background asking what dick

is she talking about over the phone

Ntoko: Yeye! Trouble in paradise.

Belinda: Danny scored babakhe, so we're talking to Nasi.

Me: Belinda!

Belinda: What? You want him to be angry at me here and think I'm cheating. Never

We laughed and decided to end the call before we cause more drama. I went to take a shower and my virgina was a bit sore. I made the bed, changed the sheets and linen. I cleaned and went downstairs.

Danny: I thought I told you to rest

Me: I couldn't sleep anymore.

He passed me the pills and I took them.

Me: We should pass by the hospital so I can get a contraceptive injection. I don't think I'll be able to take pills, I'll keep on forgetting.

Danny: Okay, I'll go shower.

He left and I had my fruitsalad while watching T.V. He came downstairs looking dazzling hot after about an hour. He was very handsome and he kissed my forehead.

Danny: Are you full? I bought some pasta from woolies just incase that

salad isn't enough.

Me: I'll have the pasta too thanks.

Danny: I'll dish up for you, sit down.

Me: Babe, I've been wanting to ask you something.

Danny: Ask

Me: Have you seen your uncle after he did what he did?

Danny: After he raped me, you can say it. And yes I have seen him once when I was 16.

Me: You said you looked for the rapists and killed them, why didn't you look for him and kill him?

Danny: I know where he is. He is my father's brother, they are very close. I cannot get myself to kill him, I have no siblings, his children are like my siblings and killing their father isn't something I want to do.

Me: But he killed you too, he killed you by raping you.

Danny: So you think I should've killed him too?

Me: I don't know, I just think if I'd see him I'd kill him.

Danny: You're never going to kill anyone Nasiphi. I don't want any blood in your hands, understood?

Me: Why didn't you tell your father?

Danny: They have a very close relationship, that would kill my father. I'm protecting him

Me: While you protect him, you're hurting yourself inside. You're hurting because your dad wasn't there to protect you. You're hurting because you didn't do anything to your uncle. You haven't found that closure.

Danny: I do want my revenge but I feel as if things will fall into place themselves. That once I see him again, I'll ask him why he did that to his own nephew. I looked up to my



uncle and I wanted to be like him and my father when I grew up. But the day he raped me, things changed. I hated him and myself.

Me: Why didn't you tell Zee about this?

Danny: I trusted her alot, but I didn't trust her enough to share this with her. She would've pitied me, she would've felt sorry for me and wouldn't be able to cope with it. She wouldn't have known how to handle it and what to even say to me.

Me: She did see you naked a million times, didn't she ask about your scars?

Danny: She did and I'd say when she's

strong enough, I'd tell her what happened to me. She was curious about it but I didn't tell her. So she let it go.

Me: What made you think I'm strong enough?

Danny: I saw it in your eyes and how I instantly got comfortable to share anything and everything with you amazed me and it scared me too. I saw how strong you are when the girls attacked you but you stood your ground. You're stronger than you actually think. You've managed to make this strong guy, very weak for you. I'm able to communicate with

you and talk about my feelings, that's something I hardly ever do. They say a man always has his weak spot, you're my weak spot. If anything could happen to you, I swear I'd lose my mind.

Me: Nothing will happen to me Mr McKenzie. Don't worry yourself. Let me call Paula to get the kids ready and pack their bags.

I called Paula

Me: Dark beauty

Paula: Hello, how are you?

Me: I'm good and yourself baby girl

Paula: I'm okay sis, heh yaz Brian

called me last night which was very weird.

Me: Why?

Paula: He didn't speak much, he just said he wanted to hear my voice so I was the one who spoke alot telling him about my day. He said he isn't in Durban but when he comes back he'd like to see me.

Me: And what did you say?

Paula: I agreed.

Me: Thats great, I wonder why he wants to see you.

Paula: I wonder too, anyways why did you call?

Me: Please get the kids ready, we'll pick them up in an hour or two.

Paula: Okay cool I'll do so.

Me: Thanks, I owe you.

Paula: You can come with Oreos for me

Me: Will do so, what else do you like?

Paula: Sour worms

Me: Mmmh okay

I ended the call and texted Brian, "Buy her Oreos and sour worms. She loves them."

He texted back "Thanks, you're a lifesaver."

Danny: So what do you want to do while we wait

Me: You can start by massaging my feet while I work.

Danny: It's a Sunday, you need to relax and not work

Me: I have to work, there are just a few documents I need to go through.

Danny: If it was up to me, you wouldn't be working at all.

Me: It's not the first time you say that.

Danny: That's because it's true. We have everything we need and more, I can take care of you and you don't need to be working

Me: Danny, you have everything. I'm working so I can have all the things I've dreamt of having.

Danny: Everything that I have is yours

Me: No Danny, it all belongs to you and what you worked hard for. I can't come up here and say I own everything you own. I want to work hard and earn the money so I can be able to have things that I own.

Danny: I'm a man, I am your man and it is my duty to provide for you. I know that you've been independent your entire life and you're not used to having someone taking care of you.

But just let me take care off you and provide for you and our kids.

Me: Fine Danny, but that doesn't mean I'll stop working

Danny: You can still work, as it has always been your dream and I want to support you.

Me: Thank you

He left me and went upstairs as I read through some documents. His phone was on the couch and it rang. The call was from Bianca. I answered

Bianca: "Babe, I miss you. You've been ignoring my calls."

Me: Sorry, Mr McKenzie is busy. But I



can tell him to call you later

Bianca: " And who the fuck are you answering my mans phone?"

Me: I'm his house help, I'll tell your man to call you. Bye.

I felt my heartbreak into pieces and my blood was boiling. I walked around the house with his phone. He came downstairs

Danny: Did you see my phone? I thought I had it in my pocket.

I put it on the kitchen counter and he came to the kitchen.

Danny: Are you okay?

Me: Your girlfriend called

Danny: My girlfriend

Me: Yes! Bianca

Danny: Oh her.

Me: Care to explain

Danny: She's not my girlfriend okay?  
She's just someone I fucked with.

Me: Here?

Danny: No.

Me: How many fuckbuddies do you  
have?

Danny: "Did I have" is what you  
should ask... About 10, I'm not really  
sure. They all didn't mean anything.

Bianca and Phiwe just happened to last longer than the others

Me: Were they that good?

Danny: Okay this conversation is over.

Me: That means they were good

Danny: They were better than the others and knew how to fuck.

Me: Jerk

I left him in the kitchen and went to cry my lungs out in the bathroom.

Danny: Open this door Nasiphi

Me: No

Danny: You wanted to know the truth and I was being honest with you.

Nasiphi, they've never mattered to me and they don't matter. Bianca is not my girlfriend, you are. I'm sorry that she called and told you that nonsense. I love you Pearl.

I opened the door and he smiled at me

Me: What?

Danny: You crying over me, it's cute actually

Me: You don't want me to kill you.

Danny: Wash your face so we can go.

I washed my face and we left. Danny got a call while we were on the way.

Danny: Explain yourself Bianca

Bianca: Danny, I miss you babe

Danny: Don't babe me, how can you call my woman and say you're my girlfriend. Better run before I find you, you know what happens when you mess with me.

He ended the call and held my hand.

Danny: She won't be trouble anymore.

We got to my mothers house and I was very happy to see them. They settled in very well and nothing makes me more happy than knowing that they get along and are always together.

Me: Mom, have you been taking your medication?

MaD: Yes Nasi.

Me: Hah, don't give me that eye. I was just making sure. Mamam, how are you? I hope these rascals haven't been exhausting you.

Onika: Mom, you can't call us rascals.

Me: Okay, I'm sorry babygirl.

It felt so real when she called me mom. I wanted to cry but I held my tears back.

Me: Where is Danver?

Danver: I'm coming mom.

He ran to me and I held him. I have missed my big boy.

Me: Missed me?

Danver: I've missed you so much. I'm happy you're here. Daddy, I've missed you too

Danny: I missed you both my kids, and guess where we going?

Onika: The zoo?

Danny: No, Grandpa's house.

They cheered and they seemed to be so excited. Danny took their bags and we said our goodbyes to my moms and Paula. We went off to Danny's fathers house and it was really

beautiful and big. He was waiting for us at the door with a gorgeous lady who seemed rather irritated when the kids ran to Razor. After greeting them the kids ran into the house and we headed to them.

Danny: McKenzie

Razor: Triston

They shook hands and he kissed my hand

Razor: You look beautiful my daughter

Me: Thank you

Razor: This is Lydia, my wife.



Me: Good day Mrs McKenzie. I'm  
Pearl Nasiphi Nyathi

Lydia: Where do you get these cheap  
girls from Danny?

Danny: Lydia! Don't start.

She shrugged and marched into the  
house. Yhu! Ay she's something else.

Razor: Come inside, your uncle and  
his wife are here. You haven't seen  
them in so long

Danny: Uncle Ryle?

Razor: Yes. He'll be very happy to see  
you, he's been asking about you.

Danny: You can go in Dad, we'll follow

you in a minute.

He nodded and went in. I figured the Uncle Ryle is the one who raped Danny.

Me: Is it him?

Danny nodded and he was turning pale. He was getting really angry and I held him.

Me: I don't think leaving will be a good idea so I won't suggest that. You saw how happy the kids and your father are.

Danny: I won't leave and give him that satisfaction. Where has he been all these years and why is he here now!

Me: Danny, calm down.

He hugged me tightly and I let him even though I was suffocating.

Me: Don't act up in there please. Don't you think its time you told your father?

Danny: No, not now. It will kill him, you saw how excited he is.

He held my hand and we went to the dinning room where everyone was.

Ryle was carrying Danver and brushing his cheek. Danny squeezed my hand as his face turned pale.

Me: Good day. Uhm Danver, come here sweetly. Sorry, I forgot that he needed to use the bathroom on our

way here.

Danny: Down the passage, third door from your left.

Me: Thanks, excuse me.

Onika also followed us and I'm glad I was able to get Danver off that bastard without having any drama. That's the last thing I need.

Danver: I don't need to wee wee

Me: Just wee'wee so you don't need to come back later. You too Onika

He did as I said and they washed their hands and we went back to the others. Ryle and Razor were having a good conversation talking about

Danny when he was still a child. It upset me more that he was acting as if nothing ever happened and he seemed like he expected Danny to also act that way.

Ryle: Are you okay Triston?

Danny: Yeah sure.

Ryle: I see you've done really well for yourself, I'm sorry I missed your wedding and my apologies to you too daughter inlaw, you looked very beautiful in the pictures.

RylesWife: You didn't get to meet me, I'm Pinky. You did look very beautiful, it seems you've gained so much

weight. We were in San Francisco at that time.

Me: Sorry, you're mistaken. Uhm that was not me Mam.

Lydia: That nonsense of a wife passed away and Danny has replaced her with her complete replica. I see the only achievement your wife had was being skinny, she's now replaced by a pig.

The slap she received from Razor! I was shocked myself. I am so happy the kids were somewhere in this house and didn't get to see that. She started crying and went out. Pinky

followed her.

Ryle: I wonder why did you stay with her

Razor: She's staying here till our divorce is finalized. She'll be gone by the end of this coming week.

I take it Danny knew about the divorce since he isn't surprised. The helpers set the table and I called the kids. Everyone sat down and I said grace. I dished up for my kids and Danny. The others helped themselves. It didn't seem as if Lydia was going to dish up for Razor so I dished up for him.

Razor: Thank you Pearl.

We ate our food silently and Ryle spoke up

Ryle: So Danny, how have you been? You didn't miss your favourite uncle?

Danny: I've been fine.

He held my hand under the table and it was shaking. I passed him some water and he gulped it.

Razor: Are you okay Triston?

Danny: I'm fine!

Me: Danny

The tension in this room was pretty high and Razor was beginning to



notice that there was something going on.

Ryle: I have good news, my wife and I are permanently moving in Durban. We'll be much closer to our family and I was hoping we would spend more time Danny and I'd get to know my grandchildren. Your cousins have told me that you kept in touch all these years.

Danny just looked at him. Honestly this Ryle guy is disgusting. He comes here and acts like everything is okay. He was beginning to piss me off too. This Lydia woman was silent now, that slap shut her up.

Pinky: So what do you do Pearl?

Me: I'm a doctor, I specialize in Cardiology.

Pinky: Oh wow, thats amazing.

Lydia: Danny has a thing for Doctors I see, his wife was a doctor too.

Me: Yes, atleast my sister and I did something with our lives than being a trophy wife.

Lydia: Excuse me?!

Me: You're excused.

Razor laughed a bit and that made Lydia even more angry. Someone walked in and she looked like shes in

her late 40's and she was pregnant.

Lydia: Oh hell no! You did not just bring her in my house!

Razor: This is my house and you'll shut up if you know what's good for you. My phindy, you're here.

Phindy: Yes babakhe, I'm sorry for disturbing, I didn't know you had company.

Danny: Dad, what is going on here?

Razor: Son, meet your new mother. She's carrying my child. You're finally going to have a sibling.

Danny looked like he was just about to loose his mind. He just stared at

his father who was smiling from ear to ear looking deeply inlove with MamPhindy. I nudged Danny and he faked a smile. We had dessert and I cleared the table.

Danny: Dad, we have to get going

Razor: So soon?

Danny: Yes. We'll see you some other time. Nice to meet you, MaPhindy.

Ryle: I'll be seeing you soon too

Danny. I'll visit my grandchildren, it seems as if we'll get along well with my grandson.

In just a flash Danny punched Ryle and he fell on the floor. Onika

screamed and I carried her.

Razor: What are you doing Danny!

Danny: Stay away from my kids or else I'll kill you.

With that said we left and I drove back home because Danny was too upset to drive and I don't want no accident happening. We got home and the kids went to take a nap.

Me: Do you want scotch, whiskey or vodka?

Danny: Vodka

Me: Coming right up.

Danny: Dad has been calling me

Me: I think its time you opened up to him too. He needs to know the truth

Danny: I guess so. Argh! What a dramatic day! I cannot believe that bastard had the nerve to act all innocent.

Me: That really did upset me alot. He is an evil man.

Danny: I also cannot believe my father is having a baby. Like when did all this happen and why is that old man still having sex

Me: Your father might be old but he is very handsome, well built and seems young.

Danny: You're eyeing my father now?

Me: His too charming, I cannot keep my eyss off him.

I giggled and he smirked.

Danny: I'm 34years old, I'm too old to be having a sibling.

Me: You'll be a great big brother.  
She'll be due anytime soon.

My phone rang and I answered

Me: Nasiphi hello? Who am I speaking to?

Voice: It's Razor, give that boy the phone.

Me: Uhm... oh okay sir.... it's your

father.

Danny: Dad.

He put it on speaker.

Razor: Will you talk?

Danny: There's nothing to talk about  
Razor

Razor: I want to know why you acted  
that way towards Ryle and you will  
tell me.

Danny: What you should explain is  
MamPhindy, when did she happen?

Razor: She's been around long  
enough for me to plant two seeds in  
her womb. She's having twin girls



Danny: I'm going to faint, like literally.

He gave me the phone and went straight to the pool

Razor: Triston!

Me: Sir, I think its best if you come here and talk to him. He just threw himself in the pool. He isn't taking all this well.

Razor: Stop calling me sir, you making me sound really old.

Me: Sorry Razor. Now come talk to your son.

Razor: Thank you for being in his life. You've managed to make my son call me Dad again.

I said my goodbyes and ended the call. I wonder what he means by that.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

Insert 26

#Danny

Everything seems to be bombarding me so much. Everything was going perfectly and I was really happy. I'm happy and inlove with my Pearl whom I see a future with. My family is coming together and my bond with my children is beyind what I ever imagined it would be. Honestly, Nasi has been keeping me sane all this time. My dad came yesterday trying to talk to me but I didn't talk to him. I had alot to take in and deal with. He called for a meeting today at 7pm and I'm not looking forward to it. Nasi said she'll be there with me and that alone makes me feel happy and

secure. I know she has my back and will support me. I have to relive that memory today and it isn't something I'm looking forward to but I guess its part of my healing journey as Nasi said. She's the only person that makes sense to me and that makes me stronger.

Onika: Daddy, wake up. Wake up

Me: Shouldn't you be preparing for school?

Onika: I am ready, come, mommy is crying.

I stood up so quickly and carried her as I ran downstairs and found Nasi in

tears.

Me: Babe, what's wrong?

Nasi: Nothing, I just hurt my finger. I was closing the car door and I closed it with it inside.

Her hand was bleeding and I rinsed it while she winced.

Me: Stop moving Nasi

I plastered her finger and she was laughing.

Me: Why are you laughing?

Nasi: You look like you're about to kill someone.

Me: You hurt yourself thats why

Nasi: I'm okay now, Danver, Onika lets go

Me: You cannot drive with that cut. I'll drive you

Nasi: Okay Sir.

I kissed her and squeezed her bum.

Danver: Eueww Dad, don't do that to mom

Me: We need to find you a girlfriend soon soon

Nasi: Stop it Danny.

Me: Come help me get dressed

Nasi: Danny, we need to leave or the kids will be late.

I smirked, she doesn't know what's coming for her. I got dressed quickly and we left. I dropped off Onika then Danver and drove back home.

Nasi: Triston! What are you doing?

She has a tendency of calling me Triston when she's upset. All that anger will be gone in a few minutes. I must say, She's damn sexy when she's angry.

Nasi: Why are we back home?

Me: Because we're going to have a quickie so you won't be late for work. And it's better now since the kids won't be late for school, extra 10mins

so its 30mins tops.

Nasi: You're crazy

Me: Crazy about you.

She giggled and that turned me on.

She was wearing a tight knee length black dress which I took off. I entered her and you'll get the details someday.

Me: Mmmh that was good.

Nasi: Yes it was. Now let's go shower, I still need to get to work and you should go to work too.

Me: I'm going on site today then I'll go to my meeting with the gents.

We showered together and made



love again. I'm glad she took her shot because I don't like using a condom. Plus I'm not ready to have a baby, it's even worse that I'll be having little twin sisters which I'll be 34years older! I'm old enough to be their parent. Even my own kids will be older than them. Razor is literally crazy I tell you. We still need to discuss this further, MaPhindy will give birth in a few weeks. That's little time for me to prepare myself, they should've told me the minute they found out. I mean, Dad didn't even tell me he was cheating on Lydia and is getting a divorce.

Nasi: Danny, lets go.

Me: I've been waiting for you. You took your own time.

I drove her to work and while I walked her to her office. That idiot walked towards us.

DrN: Mr McKenzie

Me: Nxumalo.

He walked past and I'm glad he didn't cause any drama because I wont hesitate to beat him up again.

Nasi: Don't get all worked up now.

Me: I'm not worried, he knows his place and if he steps out of the line.

I'll discipline him. I have to go now,  
enjoy your day. I'll call you

She nodded and I kissed her cheek  
and left. Luckily I bumped into  
Nxumalo again

Me: Nxumalo, stay in your lane boy.  
Stay in your lane.

DrN: Yes Mr McKenzie.

Some men are just weaklings. By just  
getting a few punches, he's already  
scared.

I sighed as I remembered what is  
ahead of me for the day. As long as  
my pillar of strength is next to me, I  
should be fine.

#Nasi

So trying to get Razor to come over and talk to Danny was a complete disaster as they argued till I said it was enough. They were going on like teenage boys. After that Razor said they'll be a family meeting which will be later on today. I'm not looking forward to it and I'm definitely not taking the kids there. I'll leave them at mom's and they'll sleep over as I don't know when this meeting will end. I'm not part of the family and I shouldn't be attending but I'm going because Danny needs me there. If I don't go, he won't go too. I decided to

work through lunch after coming from surgery and seeing two patients with critical conditions. The girls barged in without even knocking and Naye was carrying the beautiful Princess Lisakhanya.

Kamo: Hey girl

Me: Hey guys, mmh you brought lunch. You're very thoughtful

Zandy: It's just a way of us trying to get you to talk.

Siya: How was bitch Lydia?

Me: She got a hot slap from Razor

Belinda: Yhu Razor is brutal

Ntoko: Apparently they are getting divorced

Me: You know?

Nceba: For some strange reason, L'yanda and Razor get along very well and it's weird because they are completely different people.

Me: That friendship circle alone is weird, because each and everyone has their own unique character but they blend in so well.

Phelo: It's amazing I tell you. Nasi hurry with the details, I need to be back at the Airport at 1pm, you have 10mins

Me: Guys, we had sex okay. It was amazing, he was very gentle and it was the best night of my life.

Zandi: No freaky handcuffing ish?

Me: What? No! It was my first night and I wouldn't be wanting handcuffs. And I actually wanted more! Can you believe it!?

Sbahle: Somdanny is good huh?!

Hehe this girl!

Bee: I'm so happy for you, you're even glowing.

Me: You're just exaggerating. Sorry, I have to take this.

It was a call from Danny

Me: Baba ka Danver.

Danny: That sounds so sexy.

Me: You're crazy, you good?

Danny: Yeah, I'm just missing you.

Me: I miss you too

Danny: I'm coming to fetch you

Me: No, you'll fetch me at 4pm. I'm okay and I'm with the girls.

Danny: Tell Siya to pick up her phone or Phila will lose his mind. I'll see you at 4 then. I love you

Me: I love you too

I smiled and ended the call.

Naye: You're whipped



Me: Says someone who is very attached to her husband. Siya, your man has been calling and if you don't answer your phone. He'd come marching in here

Siya: Phila needs to chill and let me breathe for once.

Bee: He wouldn't like to hear that. He calls her every time. Its like he doesn't have a life without Siya.

Bonga can be obsessive but Phila is on another level

Belinda: Danny seems to be slowly becoming like him.

We had more girlchat and Phelo left.

After some time they all left and I went back to working. Dr Buthelezi walked in

Athi: We need to talk, it's sort of like a business proposal.

Me: Sit

Athi: I'm planning on buying a private hospital here in Durban. Its not doing well financially and the owner is selling it.

Me: And where do I come in handy?

Athi: I want you to be my partner.

You'll own 50% and I'll own 50% of the hospital.

Me: What! Are you serious?

Athi: Yes I am.

Me: I'd really love that!

Athi: Just know that you'll be fully running the hospital, I have alot on my plate.

Me: I'm looking forward to that challenge.

Athi: You'll do good I know. We'll talk more over a meeting tomorrow and see where this goes okay? Enjoy pay day tomorrow

Me: Thank you, I cannot wait to receive a notification of my first real salary

Athi: You deserve it.

He left and I knew I had to save my salary and put it together with all my savings. I hope it will be enough for me to be able to partner up with Athi. I wanted to pamper myself but I'll do that with my mans money, he did want me to spend it so I will. I was very happy and I decided to tell Danny after the meeting. I packed my bags and did my last rounds checking on my patients. Someone held me from the back and I let him because I smelt his scent

Danny: Missed me?

Me: Yes, and you're not supposed to be in here.

He followed me to the office and took my bags.

Danny: Did I tell you how sexy you look?

Me: No

Danny: You look very sexy my love

Me: Thank you.

Danny: I already packed for the kids and everything is ready, we just need to drop them off.

Me: Where are they?

Danny: The car. So we should get going.

I said my goodbyes to my P.A. and

the receptionist.

Me: Hey cuties

Danver: Hey mom, how was your day?

Me: Good, you look so grown up.

Danny: Its the hairstyle, he wanted to comb it like mine.

Me: He looks so manly like, and you little princess, you good?

Onika: Yes mom, can we go already? I miss my grandma's.

Danny: You just want to have candy.

We dropped them off and I was able to change at mom's house.

Danny: We're going to pick up Bonga

and Mayi. They're coming with us

Me: Do they know?

Danny: It was tough but I told them all today. They all wanted to come with but I refused. They took it differently than I always thought they would. I thought they would judge me or see me as less of a man but they didnt. They stood by me

Me: Those are your brothers Danny. They'll never ever turn their backs on you.

Danny: I know and I appreciate having them in my life.

We picked them up and went to

Razors house.

Me: Ready?

Danny: Yep.

I held his hand as we walked to the main door and Ryle opened. He was met by a huge punch from Bonga.

Mayi: Step aside bastard. We want to walk pass

Me: Okay chill guys please. No drama, not yet.

Ryle went to the bathroom whilst we walked to the lounge. MaPhindy was there watching tv and fortunately Lydia was no where to be seen.



Me: Hey MaPhindy

MaPhindy: Hey Nasi. You look beautiful

Me: Thank you, you look beautiful too.

She giggled and smacked my hand.

MaPhindy: I look like a hippo.

Me: A sexy hippo.

Danny, Bonga and Mayi came to greet MaPhindy and went to the bar area.

MaPhindy: Do you think he'll like me?

Me: Yes ofcause, he'll need a mother figure. As much as he might not show it or say so, but he's happy

you're with his father.

MaPhindy: Ray told me he's a difficult child, he's stubborn and has been through alot.

Me: Ray?

MaPhindy: Raymond, I call him Ray. I don't like this Razor name.

Me: Oh, he's has been through alot and is still recovering but he's a good guy and he'll be a great big brother. Do you have any other kids?

MaPhindy: At 46, these are my first kids. I've waited for this to happen so long and God finally blessed me.

Me: Aaaah congratulations, I'll surely

be preparing your baby shower.

You're due in?

MaPhindy: 3weeks

Me: I have to start preparing

MaPhindy: Thank you.

Pinky also came to join us followed by Ryle and Razor who happens to be Raymond.

Razor: Boys, come and join us.

Danny came to squeeze himself next to me and I laid my head on his shoulder as he ran his fingers on my hair. It was a way for me to keep him seated when he gets angry.

Razor: I have noticed that there's something going on here which I'm not being told about. I want to know the reason behind this tension between my brother and my son.

Bonga: Dad, I think Ryle should do the explaining.

They call him dad? Wow they are all just a huge family, there's a really tight bond here because the other day Danny was talking to Phila's mother and he called her mom. What they all share is special and there's so much love in this family. Never mind that they all come from different places and different surnames and

backgrounds and different parents. Their friendship put together families creating a big united family. It feels good to witness this and be a part of them.

Razor: Explain yourself Ryle

Ryle: There's nothing explain I don't know what they are talking about?

Mayi: Quit the bullshit!

Pinky: What is going on Ryle?

Ryle: Nothing, I also don't understand.

Danny: It all started when I was 11, I was sexually molested by some strangers on my way back from school. It was that time where I used

to take a taxi then walk from the drop off till I get home. They took me, put my in their car and drove to some bush where they raped me, taking turns with me till I bled. They left me there and laughed. I was in intense pain but I managed to pick myself up and get a taxi back home and I took a bath then slept. It was that time when I stopped wanting to go to school and I started home schooling. It ruined me but I never wanted to tell anyone. I kept it to myself. I recovered on my own but that's what I thought. I was just lying to myself so I could just move on. 2years later, I

was 13. You left and went on a business trip with Lydia leaving me at home with my nanny. Ryle came and gave her the Saturday off as he wanted to spend time with his nephew. I looked up to my uncle and I was excited, little did I know that he was about to ruin my life forever. He raped me, he had his way with me and I begged him to stop but he didn't. I begged him as I was reminded of what I wanted to forget, as I felt the same pain over and over again. He said if I told you he would kill the both of us. He showed me his guns and pictures of what he does to people,

he did all that while raping me.

Ryle stood up and so did Razor

Ryle: That is nonsense!

All of a sudden there was a gunshot! Razor shot Ryle's knee. Ryle growled in pain. MaPhindy and I screamed and Pinky just sat there crying and the others watched. Danny seemed to be lost in his own world. Just like the night he told me that crap of taking out my womb.

Danny: You were not there to protect me as my father. You were always away and what mattered to you was me becoming the man you wanted



me to be and for me to grow and take care of your businesses. You couldn't protect me Razor. Ryle, you were supposed to be my uncle, my other father but you were my worst nightmare.

Razor: Why didn't you tell me? My son I'm sorry

Danny: I was protecting you from the monster you love so much.

Razor: You're my son. I love you more than I love him, I would've believed you.

Danny: The only reason why I haven't killed him is because he is your

brother and you adore him.

Razor: Not anymore. If he was my brother he wouldn't have done that shit to my own son!!! His own flesh and blood too! How could you Ryle!

Ryle: I'm sorry, I was on drugs!

Razor: That doesn't give you a right to rape my son!

Pinky: Ryle, did you rape our son too!  
Why don't you get along with Kevin!?  
Tell me the truth

Ryle: I raped him too!

Me: Disgusting old man!

Razor: Mayi, take him to the butcher. I

need to teach him a lesson.

Things didnt go accordingly as many gunshots were fired and I threw covered myself with a pillow holding MaPhindy. Danny had already stood up and there was silenc. Ryle was laying dead on the floor with so many gunshots. We turned and Pinky dropped the gun and cried. She just killed her husband.

Razor: Why! Why did you do that? I wanted to torture him! Skin him alive and make him eat his filthy dick! You gave him the easy way out!

Pinky: I... I.. killed.. him

And she fainted! I've been experiencing too much drama. I ran to her and Razor ran to MaPhindy who was vomiting so much.

Bonga: Should we rush her to the hospital?

Me: Yes, her blood pressure is too high.

Danny: Go to the hospital, Bonga will drive you. I'll stay behind, Mayi, lets get rid of this body.

I looked at him wanting to know if he is okay and he nodded, came to me and kissed my forehead. That to me was little assurance that he's going

to be okay. Bonga drove off quickly to the hospital and she was admitted.

Athi: It's good that you here, room 231. Its an emergency

Me: Documents?

Athi: Here

I read through while rushing to the changing room. The patient was having rapid heart attacks since last year. I changed and went to check on him. We were able to stabilize him and run tests.

Me: He'll be fine, send him over to Dr Pillay. He'll know what to do.

Dr Pillay is a Jnr. Cardiologist who is

finishing his training. This to him will be a big case and he needs those. I cannot deal with a minor case and emotionally I'm not okay so I wouldn't want to put a patient at risk. I walked back to Athi and Bonga.

Me: Is she okay?

Athi: Yep, we'll just keep her in for the night. I'm sure she's traumatized by what she did.

Bonga: I'll take her home so she can rest then join the guys at the Butcher. It's going to be a long night, Razor will lose his mind.

Athi: Make sure he has his remedy,

we don't want him killing himself

We left and I wanted to go to Danny but Bonga wouldn't allow me.

Me: Would Razor kill himself?

Bonga: He would, right now he feels as if he failed to be a father and protector to Danny so he's in a crap condition. But he won't kill himself, he's got kids on the way.

Me: Make sure Danny is okay.

I got out the car and went in the house. He drove off once he was sure that I'm okay and safely inside the house. I sighed and went to take a shower, it's has been a long long

day. I went to the kitchen and made something quick and easy for supper, he'll need to eat when he gets home. I dished up for myself and ate while watching T.V. well it was the tv watching me because my mind was far far away. I couldn't think properly and all I wanted to do was eat so I can get my mind off things. I had Tin Roof ice cream and marshmallows. I don't know when I fell asleep but I woke up because I heard voices in the kitchen. It was Mayi and Danny.

Danny: Oh sorry babe, we didn't mean to wake you up.

Mayi: Hope you're good, bye. See you



soon.

Danny: Bye, have a safe trip tomorrow.

He left and I figured he might be going to Langelihle. I was told he sometimes books a flight to wherever Phelo is flying to as she is the pilot of that certain plane, just to see her and know that she is safe.

Me: Should I dish up for you?

Danny: No thank you, MaPhindy fed us.

Me: She thought you won't like her

Danny: I do like her but I'm just struggling with showing that. But I did

call her mom so that was the first step. How are you feeling?

Me: I should be asking you that.

Danny: I'm actually much better than I've been in a long time. I wanted him dead but I didn't want to be the one that kills him. I wanted someone to fight for me and protect me. To me it was a twisted way for someone to rescue my soul from that idiot. When he died I felt relaxed, I felt like a huge weight has been lifted off my shoulder. Now I know I can heal and be myself again.

Me: Are you not angry at your father

for not being there to protect you?

Danny: I'm not angry at him, he didn't know and there was nothing he would do to change what happened. He is mad with himself but I assured him everything is okay. I will go see Kevin tomorrow and I've decided that we'll go to therapy sessions together. I can relate to him and it will be easier to do it with him

Me: I'm happy to hear that

Danny: I want to thank you Nasiphi. Since I met you, you've been my pillar of strength. You changed me for the better and you've supported me and

guided me. I don't know how I could ever repay you but I hope my love for you will be enough. Thank you for not leaving me the moment you found out about what I had buried inside. Thank you for sticking with me and showing me love and loving my kids. You are indeed the most beautiful and kindest person I've ever met. I want to love you unconditionally from now onwards and to be the best father to my kids and to our future kids. I want you to take my surname and be Mrs McKenzie and that will happen in time because I know if I proposed now you'd reject me and I'd

be heartbroken. I just want you to know that I have plans for us. Big plans for us and I want you to be with me every step of the way. Will you do that for me?

Me: Yes

Danny: I love you

Me: I love you too. And I have something to tell you

Danny: What is it?

Me: Athi is planning on buying a private hospital and he wants to make me his partner.

Danny: What? Wow that's amazing! Congratulations my love. Everything

seems to be working out perfectly

Me: I hope all goes well, I'll be fully running the hospital as he has other hospitals to run and monitor.

Danny: That's alot of work but I know you'll do good. I'm proud of you, I won't ask you how much you need because you'll be upset but just know that I'm here if you need me in any way.

Me: Thank you Danny, thank you.

I hugged him and we kissed.

Me: You need to shower, you stink

Danny: Oh is pay back time huh?

Me: I guess so

I winked at him and he laughed as he went to take a shower. I thank God for bringing this man into my life. I am indeed very lucky to have him. We're lucky to have one another

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

## Insert 27

Its been a wonderful past 5months, they have been life changing and they have shown me a different happy side in life that I have never experienced before. I have been beyond the word Happy, the feeling I have inside is more than happiness and no words can describe it the level of happiness that I am experiencing in my life. My family has been a major part of my happiness. Danny and I committed to weekends being family time and the bond has grown to be much stronger. What I love the most



is how Onika, Danver and Danny are inseparable and Danny is always home for supper and tucking them in. Whenever he goes to Langelihle or somewhere else on a business trip, he makes sure he video calls and reads them a bed time story. Both my mothers have been amazing and I've gotten more close to the both of them. Paula has moved into her own apartment and she was indirectly convinced by Brian and she thought it through and got her own apartment not knowing that Brians actual plan was to get her away from my mothers so he can visit her often and

be a good "friend" while we all just know he wants her to be his girlfriend. It took Paula so many months to finally realize that Brian likes her and she was smitten but hasn't shown that to Brian. Danny's therapy sessions have been good and has made a great improvement on him and he's relationship with his father, his kids and me. He has managed to be able to communicate more with me and his dad. Him and Kevin have healed from what Ryle put them through. Ryle was cremated and his ashes were buried, it was a small funeral or should I say function cause

it really didn't seem like a funeral. Razor was highly affected by what happened, losing his brother whom he was close to after finding out the filth he did to his son and nephew. Him not being able to protect them made him feel less of a father but he also attended a session with them and strengthened their relationship. A few weeks ago, Danny let go of Ziyanda. He woke me up one night, it was actually midnight where he had packed all Zee's belongings in the room he kept them. He kept important documents and we burnt everything else. It was the first time I

saw him cry that much but he explained to me and said it was a way of him releasing all his pain that he suffered from when she died.

After that night he has been completely different and happy. A few things have been changed around the house and it makes me feel less guilty about being in his late wifes space. He has had a special bond with his little sisters, at first he was really scared and hesitant about even going to see them. MaPhindy gave birth a few days after Ryle's funeral, They named the twins Jane and Jenna McKenzie. They are very

cute and look alot like Razor. He had become a so soft and Danny blames it on being a father to infants at a very old age. In just a few days I'll be saying I'm officially an owner of a hospital. Everything went well and the hospital needed a few renovations and that was still in progress. I can really say that everything is going well and I'm happy. Besides being happy, I'm deeply inlove. Never have I ever thought I'd feel this way about someone. He makes me happy, takes care off me and loves me unconditionally although he is over protective and insecure, I've learnt to

adjust to it and love him with his flaws. I understand where his insecurities and protectiveness come from, he's been through so much so he has become that way. We sometimes argue just so he can tone it down, he actually wanted to get me bodyguards, I'm not some sort of President or someone that important, I don't need bodyguards. I don't know how Naye copes with them always being there. It's different for her, She's a Queen and her and Nkosi own a large international architecture company so it's understandable why she would need bodyguards. I'm just

an ordinary person. One day we were all going to the mall and many people were looking at us and taking pictures, I wasn't comfortable with being followed by the paparazzi but they explained to me that they are sort of used to this especially when they are with Naye or Siya whom are more on the spotlight. I feel as if it is too much of an extravagant life and it's not for me. They called Ntokozo the most pretty but most dull person in the group. It was a bad remark, I feel as if it would've been better if they said "simplest" person because she really is the most simplest who's

always in jeans, sneakers and baggy t-shirts just like her husband. There's never been something written about me and that makes me very happy. Today is my birthday, well I share this day with my handsome son, Denver. He is turning 6 and I'm turning 26, I'm 20years older than him. I've been in bed just thinking to myself and I didn't even realize the time. I woke up and took a shower and went to my closet while wearing a gown. The kids came running in followed by Danny.

Danver: Mom! Mom!! Happy Birthday to you!



Me: Happy Birthday to you too my son

We hugged and I kissed him on the forehead

Onika: Happy Birthday to all of us mom!! I want it to be my birthday too  
She started crying and I laughed and carried her

Me: Its your birthday too sweetie

Onika: Really!!??

Me: Yes! Now how old are you?

Onika: 38!

Danny: Wow! You're even older than me. Happy Birthday my love.

Me: Thanks Danny

Danny: Kids, why don't you go downstairs and check on the cupcakes

They nodded and went downstairs. He came closer and I smiled as I saw his naughty smirk.

Danny: I was thinking, maybe I could give you a morning prezzie

Me: And what would that morning "prezzie" be?

Danny: Just close your eyes

I did as I was told and he carried me.

Me: Are we going somewhere?

Danny: Ssssh don't say a word

Nasiphi

He took off my gown and I wasn't wearing any underwear. He spanked me and I giggled. He rubbed my clit and I moaned as the breathtaking sensation took over my body. He pinned me to the wall while inserting his fingers in my honeypot.

Danny: Mmmh you're wet already

He kissed my boobs aggressively and it was painful but also filled with so much pleasure. He entered his manhood in my honeypot and thrust. He wasn't making love to

me but he was fucking me. He was rough yet it was so good.

Me: Danny!

I screamed out his name as I reached my destination and he came right after. I put my head on his shoulder and he walked us to the bathroom.

We showered together and had another steamy round. He dried us up and we got dressed

Danny: I'll meet you downstairs for breakfast

Me: I'll be there just now.

After fixing my hair, I made the bed and went downstairs for breakfast

but no one was there.

Me: Awu kanti where is this breakfast?

Dora(helper): Mr McKenzie said I should tell you to go to the backyard Mam

Me: Oh okay thanks Aunt Dora

I went to the backyard and there was a lovely set up and the kids were dressed up beautifully. My man looked so handsome I just wanted to have a piece of him right there.

Me: Oh wow, this looks amazing.

Onika: Sit down Mam. I'll be your waiter today, what would you like to have first?

Me: Oh wow uhm I'll have fruit salad first.

Onika: And you Mr Danver?

Danver: Pancakes!

Onika: Coming right up

She walked to Danny and whispered what we just said. Danny dished up for us and they served us

Danver: Thank you my lady.

We laughed and ate together. We had a feast and I was very very full.

Me: My stomach is going to burst now.

Danver: I'm full too but I'll have just

two more pancakes.

Onika: You eat alot Danver. You'll have a big belly

Danver: I won't, Daddy will take me to the gym.

Danny: That's right, you're six years old now and that means you'll have more responsibilities. Starting by learning to make your own bed and packing your shoes and hockey equipments

Danver: Unfair, Onika should also get chores

Onika: No I'm still 5years old

Me: Didn't you say you're 38?

Onika: It was a joke, I'm still daddy's little princess

Danny: And daddy's little princess will pack her toys and put them in the toy box

Onika: I can do that

Danver: How much will we earn?

Me: You don't earn money for chores

Danver: Hah then what should I do to earn money

Danny: What will you do with the money?

Danver: I want to buy a new PlayStation set.



Danny: We'll go buy it tomorrow

Me: Danny, you spoil them too much.

We went back to the house and Danny stayed at the backyard to monitor the events planner as they set up for Danvers birthday party. I had told Danny that I do not want a birthday party. I felt as if it would be too much of a waste of money since he's spend it on the both of us. The setting was coming together and thw chef arrived with the food and I put it on the kitchen counter. I went upstairs and changed into black tight high waist jeans a white off shoulder crop top. Don't worry, I showed no

flesh, God gave me a good body for such reasons. I wore white nike sneakers and big hook earrings and then went downstairs. People were already outside and I went to the girls in the kitchen who were with Phila who was very much stuck on Siya.

Siya: Here comes the birthday princess!!

They sang for me and I never really know how to react or what to even say when people sing Happy Birthday to me, do I sing along? It's always just so weird at times.

Me: Thanks guys.

Phila: Siya I'm sorry, yey but you look very beautiful Nasiphi. Danny's head will literally fall when he sees you

Danny: Phila why are you talking about me?....

He stopped walking and stared at me with his mouth still open. He stared at me for a while and came close to me holding my waist

Me: Danny babe, you can close your mouth

Danny: You're very beautiful and sexy

He kissed me as I was about to say thank you. He kissed me so passionately I felt myself getting wet.

He held my ass and squeezed it

Sbahle: Get a room!! You're making us horny and we're single

Danny: Self service is available for you Sbahle. Plus, what do you know about being horny?

Sbahle: Daddy Danny, you sound like Mpho now. I've grown up now, Nasi and I are the same age.

Danny: I don't care, you'll always be a child in my eyes.

Sbahle: Really? I do need to go shopping soon I have no clothes

Danny: Sbahle, what happened to the money I sent you last week?

Sbahle: I paid my rent

Danny: Okay, take the card you always use. You should take Nasi with you

Sbahle: Thank you!

Danny spends drastically, Sbahle and I have enough clothes but I won't comment since it is not my money but his, he can do whatever he wants with it. I kissed his cheek and walked away

Danny: Where are you going to?

Me: The bathroom

Phelo: We'll be outside when you come back

I nodded and went to the bathroom on the second floor. I did my business and washed my hands. Danny knocked and I opened for him

Danny: Are you okay?

Me: Danny, what could possibly be wrong with me?

Danny: You're irritated now, that makes me more worried. Talk to me

Me: I'm okay, I'm just overreacting.

Danny: On?

Me: Danny, I feel as if you spend recklessly. You just spend money anyhow even on unnecessary things, like me and Sbahle going shopping.

We have enough clothes, Sbahle buys new clothes almost everyday. You buying Danver the new PlayStation set just like that. You bought him enough gifts already, which some I saw and are not gifts you give to a six year old. Back to what I'm saying, the kids should know the value of money and that money is earned. They should not get everything they want, I understand you want to spoil your kids but there's a limit. We must teach them about saving money and working for money. All the little things count, grooming them and teaching them at a young age makes

it easier so when they grow up, they understand more and grow to be much more responsible kids. But then I'm just voicing out my opinion, it is your money Danny and you can do anything you want with it.

Danny: You look so sexy when you're frustrated. Baby, I understand everything you're saying and I get where you're coming from. You're right and we will set little things for them to do so they can earn money and we'll teach them how to save it. As for Sbahle, after your shopping spree, she won't get away with spending my money. But babe, nawe



you do not spend the money I make  
like I want you to

Me: Danny, you think I don't notice  
the money you put on my bank  
account every month?

Danny: Uhm you never talked about it  
so I thought you didn't

Me: I do and thank you I appreciate it.  
And I do spend it. I hope you do have  
trust funds, investments and savings  
accounts

Danny: Yes I do and I have many  
investments, I even own shares of a  
few investment companies

Me: Exactly how rich are you?

Danny: You just need to know that whenever you want to spoil yourself and the kids, the money is there. You won't run out of money my love. Now can we get past this money issue?

Me: Fine

Danny: I love you Nasiphi

Me: I love you too

We kissed and left the bathroom. We went outside and I saw there were two setups and the party wasn't only for Denver but for me too

Me: Danny?

Danny: Surprise

He said that with a sexy tone, kissed my neck and walked away. This guy! I calmed down and told myself its something he wanted to do for me and I appreciate it. I went to the girls and Venes was also there.

Me: Babygirl!

Venes: You look so beautiful, I see Mr McKenzie got you good

Me: You can say so! We need to talk

Venes: About?

We stepped aside and I really wanted to address this

Me: I want you to stop working at the club. Your striping days should come

to an end

Venes: I don't like my job but it puts food on the table. Plus, I'm not smart and I didn't go to university nor college

Me: I told you that one day I'd get the both of us out of that club. I'm now a part owner of a hospital Venes, I own 50%! You can come work there as a receptionist or something. Venes I don't want to succeed with you being left behind, we're in this together.

She was now crying and I hugged her. I wiped off her tears and she laughed

Venes: By Monday I will give resign.

Thank you Nasiphi! Thank you very much

Me: You don't need to thank me.

We hugged once more and joined everyone else. Some of my colleagues were also there and what shocked me was that Dr Nxumalo was also here too. The party was great and everyone was enjoying themselves and the kids too. Danny took the mic and spoke

Danny: May I have everyone attention please. And Nasiphi can you please join me here

We all went close to the kids set up

and I went to stand next to him.

Danny: I would like to first thank you all for coming today and celebrating this special day with us. Today two special people in my heart were born and it gives me great pleasure to have them in my life. God has blessed me with a kind, smart and good hearted son who is strong and looks a bit too much like me. He is funny yet he has a weird personality. There was a time where I shut out my kids when their mother passed away. I didn't give myself the chance to get to know them and have a good relationship with them. As young as

he is, he took the role of being Onika's protector he became a father to her when I had failed. Most people won't believe that this little guy woke up and made breakfast for Onika when I was too damn drunk to take care of my own kids. Most people thought I had it all together but honestly I neglected my kids and didn't treat them well because I was suffering from my own pain. My son, when you are older I know you will not make the same mistakes I made. I know you will take care of your kids and be a better father than I was. I have big hopes and dreams about

you, that one day you will take over all of my businesses and do better and more than I did. I hope you love all the presents we got you. I love you son

They hugged and I was in tears already.

Danny: Nasiphi, I don't even know where to start.

He kissed my forehead and we laughed

Danny: I fell inlove with you before I even saw your face. Something about your eyes drew me to you and when we officially met without you having a



mask on, I fell deeper inlove. You came into my life when things were a mess with me and my kids. I was in a bad space, my life was upside down and you managed to stick by me and you changed my life for the better. You pick up the broken pieces and put them together. You made me realize that nothing is more important than my kids. You mended my relationship with the kids and you helped me overcome many things. Most people think I'm with you just because you look like my late wife and I'm just using you to replace her, thats what you thought too. That's

not true Nasiphi and I hope you can see that now. I wake up everyday with a motive to prove and show the love I have for you and the kids. You become a mother to my kids and took care of them when I just left you alone with them. You stood by me and loved me even when I called you a whore and treated you badly. I beat myself up everyday for that and I aim to make you happy each and everyday. Nasiphi I love you and I've never ever felt this way before. Yes I loved my wife and I never imagined that I'd love again because love had broke me into pieces but you my

precious Pearl restored me. You made me believe that love truly does break and restores. I love you and I'd choose you over anything, if Zee would wake up and come back to me, I'd chose you over her if I cannot have the both of you. What you made me feel is foreign and I will never ever let you go. You are heavenly sent, you are the one for me and I believe you are my soulmate. You love me for who I am and not what I have. You are indeed a special dime and I hope you enjoy your day and love the gift I bought you. Bonga, bring it close.

Bonga walked away and I looked at

him confused as to what was going on.

Danny: I know you always worry about me spending recklessly but this wasn't me spending recklessly. It was a gift that comes from deep within my heart. I saw how much you loved it so I bought you your own

I couldn't believe my eyes as Bonga parked my new car. It was a BMW X5! It was beautiful and I couldn't even speak. I had no words. I screamed jumping up and down like a baby and Onika joined me. Shes such a character. Danny gave me the keys and I just cried and he hugged me.

Me: Thank you. Thank you Danny

Danny: You're welcome

We kissed and I didn't even want to let him go.

Danny: Wanna take it for a spin?

Me: Yes, come kids. Where are my mothers?! I want you to be my first passengers

They came in and I drove around the yard and it felt so good and so real. I parked and we jumped off

Zandi: Congratulations dear

Me: Thank you

Thabo: Let the party begin!!!!!!!

The kids were taken inside the house by the nannies so they can have food and cake then play at the playroom. I went to Danny and I sat next to him laying my head on his chest while he had his beer.

Danny: Enjoying your day?

Me: Yes! I fell like a princess

Danny: You're my princess. I'm glad you're enjoying

Me: And its all because of you

Athi: You better get a dress ready, we launching the hospital and our partnership on Friday. We have alot to do this week and the launch party

will be on Friday

Me: Do we have enough time to plan the launch?

Bonga: Don't worry, the events company will take care of that.

Me: Oh wow okay. I'm excited

Athi: You must be ready, you'll be on the spotlight soon. There'll be the media there

Nkosi: You will wish to just bury yourself in the ground.

Me: I thought you'd be used to it by now

Nkosi: Its too much at times

Naye: He gets very irritated and wants to hit them

Nkosi: Its a good thing I have you with me most times.

The party continued till nighttime, most people had already left and it was just us as friends. The kids left with my mothers and Sneh and Athi

Bonga: We should also get going

Bee: Bye guys

They left followed by the others and we also headed back to the house.

Me: I'm so tired!

Danny: Let me run you a warm bubble



bath

Me: Thank you babe

I took off my clothes and so did he.

We got into the bath tub together and

I laid on his chest and we had a

random conversation.

Me: Danny

Danny: Mmmh

Me: Thank you for everything you've

done for me. I really do appreciate

everything you've done for me so

much and I need you to know that I'll

make you proud

Danny: Make my proud my precious

Pearl. I love you and I also want you

to be proud of me. We're in this together and what we have is permanent. I know it won't be easy but throughout everything we stick together Nasiphi

I nodded and we kissed. We got out the water and dried ourselves up. He carried me to the bed and laid me down.

Danny: Just one more birthday gift

I giggled as he kissed me all the way down to my honeypot. This will be a long night of passionate love making.

Danny: You won't be able to walk by the time I'm finished with you

Oh well, passionate love making can be for another night.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

If you have a problem, inbox me.

#LBAR

## Insert 28

So far the week has been the most hectic and busiest week. I didn't know that getting everything ready for the opening and launch of the hospital would be this hectic. I'm glad the constructors were able to finish in time and we also worked with Phila's company for the designs. I wouldn't have been able to get everything ready if it wasn't for Belinda and her event planning team. The support from all my friends and my family especially Danny who has made sure I'm well rested and fed. He literally fed me one of these days

while I was busy with some documents. Working hasn't kept me away from my kids. They've also been great help as Danver always gives me a massage but nothing is for free. Ever since we started teaching them about earning and saving money. You cannot send them unless you're going to pay. They don't offer free services. The launch will be tonight and Danny made strict instructions that I do not do anything but relax today. I was chilling with Sbahle, Mngqobi and Siphosenkosi who are both just too weird for me. Out of all the kids they are just the

weirdest. They have a really weird personality and they love books and poetry. Mnqobi is older than Siphosenkosi is tall like his father.

Mnqobi: I'll be outside, I'm waiting for Ntandokazi

Me: She's coming over?

Mnqobi: She's dropping off something. I'm not sure what it is, she's with her mom.

Sbahle: Yhu ay though there are so many kids here! Emihle is a glamorous 15year old!

Me: I lost count trying to count how many kids are there

Sbahle: 19sis, I spent all day. Angithi phela Siya chose to have quads(Masande, Mngqobi, Ngcebo and Khanyakwezwe) plus Jnr. She has 5kids, plus Naye has Emihle, Kwenzo, Lisakhanya, and the twins Sipho and Buhle then Mbonisi. Thats another 6 so that makes 11. Zandy has Kabelo, Ntokozo has Siqalo, Belinda has Thembelihle and Kamo has Luthando that makes 15, than you have Danver and Onika, 17. Than its Bee's twins, Ntandokazi and Thandokazi. Plus Sneh's newborn

Ziyanda That makes 20! Yey! Ay nizele! Phelo is also expecting!

Me: Really! Wow! Why didn't I know about this?

Sbahle: Eish! Me and my big mouth. She wanted to tell everyone tonight after really confirming. You know, shes been trying for the past 6years no luck but ke finally she's expecting.

Me: I'm so happy for her. Don't worry, I won't jinx it. And wena vele?

Sbahle: Not yet, I still need a man.

Me: And the Ovhayo?

Sbahle: Ovhayo and I didn't work out but we still really close friends



Me: Judging by what you've told me you're still deeply inlove with each other but you guys just over thought the situation and gave up too quickly

Sbahle: He is busy with someone else

Me: They are not serious

Sbahle: But still

Sipho: Mmmh

Me: What a comment

Sbahle: Boy, you're still just 8years old. I'd understand if its Mngqobi atleast at 10 he can have a girlfriend

Me: Never! Too young

Sipho: Emihle has a boyfriend, if Dad

would find out. He'd kill her

Me: Yhu! Nkosinathi would kill everyone. What does Emihle know about boyfriends

Sipho shrugged and went outside to Mngqobi.

Sbahle: These kids.

Zandy: Hello!!! Zandy and Bee in the house!!

Sbahle: Heyo! Maka Kabza! And Makamawele

Bee: I'm not the only one with twins

Me: But still, Naye isn't here so you're here Makamawele 2.

Zandy: Kabelo is also standing outside with the boys, where are the kids spending the night?

Bee: Apparently, the kids will be in Cape Town for the weekend

Me: Cape Town?

Bee: I was also surprised.

Zandy: Baby Ziyanda too?

Bee: She's too young to be travelling, they'll leave her with Athi's mom and pick her up. I think they'll leave early.

Belinda, Kamo and Nangamso arrived with some people we didn't know

Kamo: Follow me please

They followed her and so did we. She opened another room downstairs and it seemed like a dressing/make up studio.

Me: I've never seen this room before

Ngamso: We use these for such emergencies. We'll prepare here tonight. For now we'll be doing our hair and nails.

Me: I didn't think we'd need all that

Sbahle: Trust me we do, we need to look really beautiful. Who knows maybe your face will be all over the media by tomorrow morning

Me: I'm not ready

Naye: You're never ready sweetie

Zandy: And when did you show up?

Naye: Just in time to blend in the conversation. I don't know what Phelo is still doing in that kitchen.

Me: She's probably hungry

Sbahle laughed as we both knew the case. The others also arrived followed by Danny and Brian

Brian: Ladies

He's eyes roamed around until they found Paula. He smiled and went to sit next to her.

Danny: Nasiphi

Me: Danny

He looked at me and that was him summoning me. I don't get why he just doesn't ask to talk to me. Danny though! I never understand. We went to our room and I closed the door and sat on the couch. He seemed to be frustrated

Me: Are you okay Triston?

Danny: Yeah, it's just work. How's everything coming up for tonight?

Me: Very well and I've rested like you told me. I just need to do my hair and nails. My dress and your suit are ready, I'll ask someone to pick it up

Danny: No worries, it will be delivered here.

Me: Are you sure you're okay?

Danny: I'm just worried. Your life will be in the open, it gets hectic during the first days

Me: I'll be fine I hope. Maybe I'll get used to it

Danny: You're a strong woman, my strong woman

Me: I was thinking that maybe we shouldn't appear together

The way he looked at me. I regretted even saying that.

Danny: Explain yourself

Me: Well babe... uhm..

Danny: You cannot speak now Pearl

Me: I can... just stop looking at me like that and I'll speak.

Danny: Speak

Me: I was thinking that maybe we shouldn't appear together tonight. Like arrive separately and for everyone to think we we're not together

Danny: For what reason?

Me: Danny, you do know how much I look like Ziyanda



Danny: I know that and I don't care what people will say. I'm not going to hide you just because you look like Zee. You should look like her, you're her sister. I'm not ashamed of you. I love you

Me: I know you love me

Danny: And the whole world should see that. Now come here

Me: No

Danny: Nasiphi

He looks so serious. I laughed at him and went to sit ontop of my man.

Danny: I love your thighs

Me: I love them too. I'll be showing them off tonight

Danny: What? No you need another dress

Me: Hawu why?

Danny: Awufuni ndikuphoxe Amahle. Ndzokuphoxa ujale strong ungasayinxiba kwalolokwe.( I'll say something you won't like, you won't even want to wear that dress)

Me: You so sexy when you speak xhosa.

Danny: I'm serious

Me: I was just joking. I'm not at the stage where I fell comfortable with

showing my body.

Danny: Only I should see.

I kissed him and I felt his manhood tighten and getting an erection. I stood and he held me and put me back on the bed.

Danny: Where do you think you're going?

Me: I have to go do my hair and nails.

Danny: That can wait.

I laughed as he started to tickle me. We made love and went to shower. I decided to just put a gown on and went back to the girls

Siya: I wonder what happened to the clothes.

Me: I took a shower

Phelo: Just a shower?

Me: Yes

I winked and we all laughed. I sat down and styles my natural hair and did my nails.

Paula: We'll have food where we're going right? Or Phelokazi will not survive tonight

Phelo: Am I eating too much

Naye: Yes MaMkhize

Me: How did it happen that both of

you got cousins get married to brothers?

Naye: When Nkosinathi came to pay my lobola, Mayi also saw a beautiful rose wearing a red shirt on the window. Well we were looking at Nkosi but Mayi happened to notice Phelo from a far distance.

Me: Aaah that's so cute and how did it happen that a bunch of friends getting married to another bunch of friends?

Zandy: We never know how to answer that. It happened, I guess it was God's plan for us

Me: It's really something rare and unique. This type of friendship is rare, these days friendships don't last or they're fake. I was lucky to even have Venes

Kamo: Sorry if you don't mind me asking, when we all met, there were times when you mentioned you were a stripper. What happened?

Me: Venes and I needed money. We needed to survive and my mother needed treatment. I couldn't get a job, Venes was not educated. It was either we sell drugs, strip or be prostitutes. So we got a job at a strip club.

Bee: How did you learn how to strip?

Me: I did gymnastics at school

Zandy: Soo you're flexible?

Me: Yes

Zandy: Mmmh Danny got a real deal. FlexiSexy mamah! You should teach me a few moves. I have a pole in my house that I've never used.

Me: Don't worry, I'll sort you out.

Ntoko: Book me in too! I need to bring it down!!!!

Me: Oh Lord, what have they done to the sweet angel? Don't get corrupted  
She laughed and we continued

talking over food and wine. Each and every lady here has a different personality, different story and different role. I took my time and looked at each and everyone of them. They are unique and beautiful. It shows that we all have our story yet we've rose above all the difficulties we've faced in our lives.

Kamo: We better start getting dressed up or we'll be late.

Sneh: You guys will have to help me into my dress, I haven't lost any baby fat

Me: What fat are you talking about?



Sneh: Little sis, did you see how big I look?

Me: You're ridiculous, you're very sexy

She kissed my cheek and I went upstairs. Danny left a note on the bed next to my dress it read as follows " I know you might be mad at me but I changed your dress. I hope you love this one. Love D.T.M"

Me: This guy!

I quickly opened the dress and to my surprise it was beautiful. Better than the one I chose. Why does he have better fashion sense? I laughed to myself and got dressed. It was very

tight but I was able to move in it. It was really comfortable. I wore my shoes and Venes came running in.

Me: Are you being chased by dogs?

Venes: No but I didn't want to be late. Everything is on point at the hospital, don't worry. Your man was there making demands, everything wouldn't be ready in time if he wasn't there.

Me: You seem distracted

Venes: No I'm not. I'm just tired maybe I'll leave early tonight.

Me: Venes Talk, I won't repeat myself.

Venes: Okay, I'm sorry. I owe someone, a loan shark and he wants

his money today. Or he'll hurt my family.

Me: Why didn't you tell me this earlier?

Venes: I don't want to bother you with my problems Nasiphi. You've done enough for me.

Me: How much is it?

Venes: 50

Me: Venes you couldn't pay back a R50?

Venes: R50 000 Nasi

Me: Ooh pass me my phone. Give me his details

Venes: No Nasiphi you cannot pay

him. I owe you alot already

Me: You don't owe me anything. Now don't cry, you'll ruin your make up.

Venes: Thank you Nasiphi. Good will continue blessing you abundantly

Me: Amen. Now distress and smile.

Venes: I'll leave you to finish up.

I looked at myself in the mirror one more time. It was almost seven already so we'll be in time. I took my clutch bag and put my phone and lipstick. These never much you can put in these small clutches. Siya called me. Geez we're in the same house

Siya: Are you dying there? Come downstairs we're all waiting for you.

Me: I'm coming.

I walked downstairs, even the guys were here already. They all looked amazing! Danny couldn't take his eyes off me and I couldn't take my eyes off him.

Danny: You look beautiful

Me: Really? I don't even like this dress. Why did you change the dress I chose.

I acted like I was angry. He's eyes popped and he was hesitating. It felt so good to see him frustrated

Danny: I'm so sorry, we can change

the dress. We won't be late. Im so sorry Nasiphi please don't be angry.

He was already going to make a call and I laughed at him. He looked at me confused and Mpho laughed. He was the first to see that I was just joking.

Me: I'm just joking Triston. Gosh! You panic alot.

Danny: Are you sure?

Me: Yes I'm sure. I love this dress and I love that you chose it for me. Thank you Mr McKenzie.

He just kissed me and squeezed my butt.

Athi: Hey! Don't make us watch live porn please. Don't kill my virgin eyes

Mpho: It's not like you've never watched it.

He realized later that he shouldn't have said that.

Nkosi: Okay lets go.

Zandy: No! No wait!

Brian: Uhm gents I think someone is calling us outside

They all rushed out like headless chickens

Nceba: I wonder. Let's go guys

We went out and there were so many

cars outside, all black and security was tightened. Danny opened the door for me

Me: Thank you

He came in and so did the driver. All the cars started driving off.

Danny: You look really sexy. Good thing I carried my guns

Me: What! What for?

Danny: For the thirsty men who will look at you tonight. They'll get 3bullets each

Me: You're crazy

Danny: Yes I'm crazy about you



This guy! My dress was just below the knees. It was nothing extravagant but it was sexy yet classy. It was a black lace off shoulder dress which hugged my boobs and hips. The sleeves were lace and the body part had what seemed to be a lingerie dress with the black lace covering it up properly. We got to the hospital and I was nervous due to the noise that was already outside.

Danny: Is it clear for us to come out?

Voice: Yes Sir

Danny: Are you ready?

Me: I think so

Danny: You'll be okay. We'll take a few pictures. Do a 3interviews and go in. You don't have to answer all the questions.

Me: Okay

Voice: Sir, we have a problem

Danny: What is it Jomo?

Jomo: Bianca

Danny: Get rid off her

Jomo: She's speaking to one of the journalists

Danny: Shit! Get rid of her

Me: What is she doing here? And why would she talk to the journalists

Danny: I don't know. She's really the true definition of crazy.

Jomo: Its clear

He came out first and there were many screams. You'd swear that this were some oscar awards. He opened the door for me and the snaps and flashes coming my way and every journalist calling my name. We walked and stood for a few pictures. He was holding my back keeping me close to him.

Belinda: You'll be speaking to those journalists only.

Me: Okay thanks

We took pictures with all of us together and Athi called me to where we'd be having the interviews

Journ1: Dr Buthelezi, this is not new for you and we'd like to give off the questions to your new partner Dr Nyathi. How does it feel to see all this happening

Me: It is indeed a blessing and a dream come true. I'm overwhelmed and I felt as if this was just a dream. It feels real now

Journ2: Dr Buthelezi, is Mr McKenzie behind this, you making his new girlfriend partner? We all know it

might be his money

Athi: That is not true, Mr McKenzie has nothing to do with this. It was my idea to approach Dr Nyathi because of her excellent work and I knew that she is more than capable of running this hospital.

Journ3: Dr Nyathi, How is your relationship with Mr McKenzie?

Me: Tonight is about the hospital not my private life.

Journ3: How do you feel about the fact that you look so much like his previous wife? Do you think he's using you just to replace Mrs

McKenzie

Me: No he isn't using me.

Journ2: I wonder what made him choose a fat girl, we all know Mrs McKenzie had a gorgeous body. He moved on to Bianca who has a stunning body, anyways How do you feel about him having to be expecting a baby with Bianca James?

Athi: Okay thats enough. Thank you He dragged me and I allowed him. My stomach just started to hurt and my mood just dropped. What did she mean that Danny is expecting a child with Bianca? Athi went to the gents

and they walked out.

Kamo: And then? What's going on?

Me: Danny is having a baby with  
Bianca

Naye: That's bull

Zandy: Don't let this ruin your night.  
Smile babygirl

The night continued and I pretended  
to be okay. We danced and then Athi  
took the stage. We sat down and  
Danny held my hand

Danny: You're okay?

Me: I don't know

Danny: We'll talk when we get home.

I nodded and I could see that he was very angry.

Athi spoke about the hospital about the vision and mission we wish to achieve. He welcomed all the staff members that will be working with us.

Athi: As you know, I have many hospitals and I cannot run each and every one of them. Please welcome, my partner, the CEO of Caring For You Hospital, Dr Pearl Nasiphi Nyathi.

Danny: I don't like how he calls you his partner

Me: Just deal with it

I laughed at him as he walked me to



the stage. I wonder how they pulled this off. I've never seen such a beautiful setting at a hospital.

Me: Thank you partner.

My eyes roamed to Danny and I laughed. He's just being insecure

Me: I don't have much to say but to thank Dr Buthelezi for this wonderful opportunity. To thank him for seeing me fit and worthy of such an honour. It has been my dream since I was a young child. Life happened and I gave up on my dreams but I met Mr McKenzie who encouraged me not to give up and make my dreams come

true. Many think I'm here because of him and his wealth. But no. I look forward to working with each and every one of the staff members and hardworking skilled Doctors. Thank you

Danny was there to walk me back to our seats. He's a perfect gentleman. The night continued and it was indeed a great night.

Sneh: Excuse us guys. We're leaving now we'll see you tomorrow

Me: What's happening tomorrow?

Zandy: Braai, food, alcohol. It will be fun, at my place.

Phelo: Before you go I have something to say

Mayi: What is it babe?

Phelo: You're going to be a father  
Mayibongwe

Mayi: What! Wow! Phelokazi

He didn't know what to even say. He kissed her and she was crying.

Mayi: You've made me the happiest man alive. Thank you

Nkosi: Congratulations Khabazela

Nceba: Baby 21! Yey I'm planning the baby shower this time

Thapelo: Baby 21?

Sbahle: Yes, you do know there are 20 children here

Bonga: I never noticed. Wow, it's Phila and Nkosi with their multiple shooters

Nkosi: You also have twins

Phila: It's not my fault that God gave me super sperms.

Athi: You idiot.

We laughed and all decided to just leave. The drive home was silent and Danny seemed to be very distracted. I guess he's frustrated by the fact that he'll be a father again. I sighed and I felt him squeeze my hand.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's  
of friends

#LBAR

Insert 29

When we got home last night all I wanted to do was just sleep. I was avoiding the conversation because I was afraid of getting deeply hurt. He

held me all night long like he was afraid that I'd leave him. I need to go pee but he's holding me too tightly

Me: Move... Danny!

Danny: Sleep

Me: No, I need to go to the bathroom.

He let go and I went to the bathroom and did my business. When I got out he was standing by the door.

Me: And then?

Danny: I was waiting for you

We sat on the bed and he looked at me

Danny: She's not pregnant. She was

just pulling a stunt to get my attention

Me: How sure are you?

Danny: My boys took care of it, she was forced to take a pregnancy test and it was negative. She's even still on the pill.

Me: Okay

Danny: You do believe me right?

Me: Yes and the media?

Danny: Don't worry. I took care of it. You're on the frontpage

Me: Really? What did they say about me?

Danny: You don't have to worry yourself about that.

I took my phone and looked on the tabloids. They mixed my picture with Zee's and had nasty comments about my weight. They said I'm prettier but she was sexier. "If you want to be with Danny McKenzie, you must look like his late wife" apparently that's how I scored myself this rich man.

Me: Some people just don't know what to do with their lives.

Danny: You not upset?

Me: No. When are the kids coming home?



Danny: Tomorrow afternoon

Me: I miss them already. Let me go make breakfast

Danny: Are you hungry?

Me: No

Danny: I'm not hungry too, can we just stay in bed and cuddle?

Me: Oh okay Mr Cuddles

Danny: I could never be so careless. Not so long ago I was blabbing shit about you removing your womb because I don't want babies. Yes I'm okay now but that doesn't mean I would go make babies elsewhere. Financially I'm more than ready for

another baby. But mentally and emotionally, I'm not.

Me: Physically you are Mr Muscle

Danny: Really now? But yes physically I am.

Me: I understand Danny but do you think you'll ever be ready to have more kids?

Danny: Yes I will.

Me: I don't want you to feel pressure or anything. If you feel as if you never want to have kids again you should tell me before its too late. I don't wanna sit and wait on something that's never going to happen. I love

Danver and Onika as my own, they are my children but I also want to experience pregnancy. I want to give birth and bring life into this world.

Danny: So you mean you'd leave me if I'd one day say I never want kids.

Me: Yes.

Danny: Wow okay. So not having kids is your dealbreaker?

Me: Yes, and cheating.

Danny: So if I'd cheat on you you'd leave me?

Me: You cheating would mean you're breaking our family, my heart, this relationship and the trust I have for

you.

Danny: What if I just kiss someone, maybe I'm drunk or its a mistake? You'd regard that as cheating?

Me: Yes, even if you go discuss our problems with someone else. That would be you cheating on us. We communicate and fix our problems. Its you and I not us and them, there shouldn't be no third party.

Danny: But I confide in my friends and look for advice

Me: There are some things you can discuss and ask for advice. Like mutual problems we all have in

relationships but there's a limit. You wouldn't want me going to tell my friends that you don't perform well in bed... how would that make you feel?

Danny: What! Amahle, I don't perform well in bed?

He was on his feet already. The way I laughed at him! Danny McKenzie is really the most insecure guy I know.

Me: Babe, it was an example.

Danny: Couldn't you use another example? Gosh you're going to drive me crazy

Me: Danny, come back to bed.

He got in bed and I laid on his chest.

Me: Danny, you're my first and the only man I've ever slept with. I couldn't even compare you because I know no man besides you.

Danny: And i'll be the first and last.

Me: And what is your dealbreaker?

Danny: I've never really thought about it. I guess if you'd cheat on me, I'd kill you and that guy.

Me: I don't want to be with a man who keeps secrets.

Danny: I don't like keeping secrets. Even my friends know, when they are keeping secrets from their wives, I push them to tell them. I believe if

you're honest things are much easier than when you lie. As much as the truth hurts, what can comfort someone is that you told the truth especially before they hear it from someone else. Now that's just a low blow, so with that said, I don't want a woman who keeps secrets too. I want honesty, loyalty, unconditional love, kindness and a hot booty, just like yours

Me: You just have to add something stupid in something so sincere and romantic

Danny: My baby, what I just said is true. Your booty drives me crazy, I'm

horny as I'm talking about it. You're gifted

Me: And you're just crazy.

Danny: As I always say, I'm crazy about you.

We passionately made love and it was amazing. He kept on going on and on. I slept on his chest. I felt him enter my honeypot again and we made love again.

Me: I'm tired Danny

Danny: Get yourself some sleep.

He kissed my forehead and I slept.

#Danny



I watched as the love of my life slowly fell asleep after our multiple sessions of making love. I kissed her forehead once more and went to take a shower. After I was ready, I wrote a note telling Nasi where I'll be just incase she wakes up and I'm not home. It feels good to call this house a home, ever since she came into my life she's changed things for the better. I went to check if the boys did a good job, we have boys who work for us and sometimes they don't a job really well.

Me: Where is Jomo?

Kj: Langelihle boss.

Me: Everything went well?

Kj: Yes, she isn't pregnant and we did beat her up just so she knows not to mess with you again.

Me: Good. I need to you keep a tail on her. Tell Omphi not to smoke in here ever again, it stinks.

Kj: Sho mdanaza

Me: I'll fuck you up boy

Kj: Sorry boss

Me: This weed nonsense you all smoke is making you loose your mind.

Kj: Ay Boss, I stopped smoking long

long ago. You can ask Boss  
Mayibongwe, we both very clean.

Me: It did leave a few loose screws in  
that head of yours.

Kj: Kodwa Bra Boss, eintlek, Ta Razor  
wanted to see you.

Me: Why?

Kj: I don't know, he's a softie now, you  
know he gave us money just njeh,  
well we not complaining about that.  
But we even had a party in here, he  
didn't shout.

Me: He would kill you if he heard you  
say he's a softie. Its being a father  
again at such an old age. I don't know

what he was thinking, I love my sisters but he's too old to be having 5months old babies.

Kj: Sex is unstoppable Bra Boss, plus Ta Razor will never use plastic. Futh Ta Razor is still very sexy and handsome

Me: Why the hell would you say Razor is sexy and handsome? Kaitso Jwara! Are you gay?

Kj: Ayy Boss! I'm not gay but I have eyes. Don't be jealous that Ta Razor is sexier than you. Don't worry, you have a nicer butt than him.

I threw a small brick at him and he

ran away. This idiot! He's such a loud mouth and always talks nonsense. But he does his job well and I was thinking of making him one of the agents now. He's done alot to prove that he's worthy of the position. But I'll have to talk to Razor. I drove to my fathers house and as I expected he was at the garden with his twins and wife.

Me: MaPhindy, how are you?

MaPhindy: I'm good and yourself?

Me: I'm okay.

I carried the twins and dad wasn't happy about them not being in his

arms

Me: You're really a softie now. It's not like I won't give them back.

Razor: You don't want to die boy, who are you calling a softie?

Me: I didn't come from me.

I gave him back the twins and he gave them to MaPhindy.

Razor: Come, we need to talk son.

I followed him to his study. At this time I was scared cause this man could beat the crap out of me just because I said he is a softie. My father doesn't play games. Just as I thought, he gave me two punches.

Me: Shit! What the hell? I'm even bleeding Dad

Razor: My punches got you to call me dad huh?

Me: I always call you dad, well in my head

Razor: You disrespectful boy. You got a punch for calling me a softie and one for not coming to visit your sisters often.

Me: I did come see them today

Razor: After how long?

Me: We're not going to do this.

Razor: Sit down Triston!

I remained standing and he was angry. I'm stubborn just like him.

Razor: I know you've went through alot my son but they are your sisters and you need to have a good relationship with them. And it will also help you with your issues with babies

Me: I don't have issues with babies

Razor: You do, you cannot even look at them properly, you carry them like they are sacks. All you do to show love is buy them things they don't even need. You need to shower them with love not gifts.



Me: I'll try to see them twice in a week

Razor: Three times a week. They are coming over to your house next saturday, all day long. I'm taking my wife out.

Me: Get a nanny or something.

Razor: You'll be the nanny.

Me: I'm out

Razor: I'm not done with you

Me: But I am

Another punch fled to my stomach. I pushed him over and stood. He knows I'd never fight back. Just

pushing him is all I ever do. As much as we don't have a perfect relationship but I'd never beat up my father. I know he'd kill me that day. I sat down and he sat next to me while I was nursing my fucked up face.

Razor: You have go for your last training

Me: What do you mean?

Razor: I'm stepping down as head of the force. You will take after me. I'm getting old, I have little babies and a wife to be with. I cannot be heading up missions and running the force. Its too much for me and it is your

time now.

Me: Wow, I knew this would happen but not so soon.

Razor: You have to prepare. You'll be leaving next week Monday.

I nodded and I was not looking forward to the part of explaining to Nasi that I'll be gone for three months. Just when things were coming together, this comes up.

Razor: Your wife is calling

I looked at my phone and it was Nasi.

Me: Nasiphi

Nasi: Where are you? Everyone is at

Zandi's already

Me: Everyone? Zandi's? What for?

Nasi: The braai, I'm leaving if you're not here in 10mins.

Me: Shit! I forgot. I'm coming

I ended the call and said my goodbyes. I drove back home quickly and she was waiting for me at the door, I went her and hugged her.

Nasi: What happened to your face?

Me: Dad happened. He punched me

She laughed at me and I pretended to be hurt

Nasi: Oh, sorry.

I laughed at her and kissed my beautiful woman.

Me: Is there still time for a little quickie

Nasi: No! Now let's go.

She got into the car and I followed.

#Nasi

I woke up and Danny wasn't home. He left a note saying his going to HQ but he took too long and we ended up being late. We parked at the garage at Zandi's house and he locked all car doors

Me: What are you doing?

Danny: Just 20minutes babe please

Me: 5mins

Danny: Hah Nasiphi

Me: 10mins and that's it

I went over to his seat and he moved it down a bit. He was squeezing my butt while I sat properly and inserted his manhood inside of me.

Danny: Mmmmh

Me: Already?

Danny: You're tight

I moaned as I rode my man like theres no tomorrow. Who knew sex in the car would be this good?

Me: Danny!

I called out his name as I reached an orgasm. He came right after and I sighed. We fixed ourselves and walked to the house holding hands.

Athi: Damn Nasi! You throw mean punches!

Me: What? Oh no I didn't hit him.

Bonga: Who did?

Danny: Razor

They laughed at him and they fooled around walking to the chilling area outside.

Nceba: Hey Mrs... You're glowing

Me: No I'm not

Zandy: No that smile is a quickie smile!

Me: Is there anything else you guys ever talk about besides sex?

Phelo: I don't think there is.

Ntoko: As I once said, its all about Fashion, sex and men.

We continued talking about all we ever talk about while cooking pap and making salads. When the meat was ready we served and feasted through a lovely conversation. The afternoon was great as we conversated and it was filled with great laughter. I wish it



was like this everyday but we have to work and keep our families fed.

Brian: Paula, may I take you out on a date tomorrow night?

What! Look who decided to grow some balls and finally ask her out on a date. Paula choked on her saliva and we all laughed. Brian was so nervous

Paula: Sorry, Please repeat yourself?

Brian: Uhm... I... I was..

Phila: He's stuttering! My brother cannot speak now. I've waited soo long for this day.

Mpho: Shut up Phila

We all laughed and Paula was still looking at Brian

Brian: I want to take you out on a date

Paula: What happened to please?

Jabu: Tough cookie

Nkosi: You need to shut up Jabulani

Brian: Paula, May I please take you out on a date tomorrow night?

Paula: I'll think about it

Thabo: Yoh

Paula: I'm joking Brian! I'd love to

He looked so relieved and he nodded.

He didn't even know what to say

Paula: And what happened to thank

you?

Athi: Ask him Paula

Brian: Thank you Paula

Sneh: Seems as if someone will teach him discipline. I'm soooo excited! Little sister going on a date ya'll!!!! We have to go shopping tomorrow before the date

Zandy: Is it a formal date or just casual?

Brian: Uhm I'm not sure

Nkosi: Its a casual date

I laughed at how clueless Brian was. I'm sure he has nothing planned out

at all

Thapelo: I'm enjoying this so much.  
You used to laugh at me when I  
stressed about taking Nceba on any  
date now look who is on the hot seat!  
This is so much fun

Phila: I'm enjoying this with you  
Thaps!

Me: You guys are silly.

We all had a wonderful time and we  
left around 7pm going back home.  
Brian was dropping Paula off and that  
made him happy.

Danny: I'll go run you a bath

Me: Thanks, you'll join me?

Danny: Yes

I looked at some of my e-mails and there was a strange one it said " I know you're alive" I ignored it. Some people just love fooling around. I went upstairs and my man was waiting for me and I joined him in the bath tub

Danny: We have to talk

Me: It sounds serious

Danny: It is, my father is stepping down and leaving the force.

Me: Oh okay.

Danny: You do know what that means right?

Me: That he is leaving the force  
Danny, to be with his family

Danny: It means its my time to take  
his seat. I'll have to step in as head of  
the force.

Me: Oh wow

Danny: Talk to me

Me: I don't know what to say. You'll  
be away from home most of the time

Danny: Yes

Me: It means we won't see you much.

Danny: I'm afraid so, I'll work things  
out and make sure I have time for my  
family. There are some missions that

will need me full time.

Me: So thats when we won't see you at all

Danny: I'm afraid so. And next week Monday I'm leaving for my training.

Me: What training?

Danny: Theres a training I have to attend before being Head of the Force.

Me: For how long?

Danny: Three months.

I felt my heart break into pieces. He'll be gone for so long. It hurts so much but I cannot stand in his way.

Danny: Say something Amahle

Me: You'll have to spend the whole week with the kids. Just to try and cover up for the three months.

I dried myself up and left him there. I got into bed and tried to sleep.

Danny: Nasiphi, Please talk to me. I don't like this at all.

Me: I want to sleep.

He got in bed and held me. All I could do was just cry. He held me and I closed my eyes. I'm hurt and I'm not looking forward to the next few months. I'm not looking forward to him being head of the force.



Danny: I love you MaNyathi

Me: I love you too

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's  
of friends

#LBAR

Insert 30

The past week has been a great week.

We've had fun together as a family even though I got home exhausted from work. I made sure we spent time together with the kids. Even Danny's little sisters were here on Saturday and I had alot of babysitting to do with Danny's little help. The kids have left for school already and I've been packing Danny's clothes. I'll go to work a bit late. Him leaving breaks my heart so much but sadly there's nothing I can do about it other than supporting him. I know I'm going to miss him so much. Three months is a very very long time and I've been used to him being around at all times,

this is new to me but I hope I'll survive. I'm walking around the room doing I don't know what but I could feel his aura. He's somewhere in the room. I felt him come closer and held my waist. Just his touch made me shiver and feel butterflies in my stomach.

Danny: Pearl

I kept quiet and just listened to his heartbeat.

Danny: Look at me, Pearl.

I turned and looked at him with my toes curling.

Danny: I know this is hard for you. It's

hard for the both of us Nasiphi. I know you're a strong woman, you're the strongest woman I know. I just need you to be strong for me and the kids. The 3months will be over soon. I'll be back for you, Danver and Onika

Me: But for how long, we both know you might immediately have to go right after coming back.

Danny: I don't know but just trust me Amahle. I need you to trust me.

I nodded and we kissed. I know what this kiss will lead to. He was squeezing my butt in a flash. He loves my butt, my waist, my thighs.

He loves every part of my body and I love every part of his, especially his hair. He laid me on the bed and took off my clothes. He kissed my neck and down to my breasts. Sending good sensations all over my body. He kissed me all the way down to my honeypot and performed his magic with his tongue slithering on my clit. Soft moans escaping from my mouth and they slowly got louder and louder as he penetrated me with his fingers. He took of his clothes and looked at me

Danny: I might come back as a different man, where I'm going they

train you to be very cruel and ruthless. To have a heavy heart. But I know all that will never change the way I feel about you and our kids. It won't change the man I am around you guys. You're everything I have. I love you

Me: I love you too

What he said scared me more, what if he comes back and has changed towards us as well? What if he stops loving us? We've just become this tight unit and now this will happen? It truly has no timing at all. He made love to me like never before. He made love to me till tears escaped

my eyes, not because its painful but because of the pleasure. It was soo good and he hit all the right corners. I came twice but that didn't stop him from giving me the forever lasting sensation. I kept on scratching his back trying to hold onto him, my legs were totally giving up on me and were feeling very weak. With every thrust I felt his pure love. Its the love he has for me and me only. I'm his and he's mine. We were made for each other, our souls are a unit,our souls are one. Our souls connected so much and it made me love him even more. All the love I have for him was expressed in

this love making session. He turned us over and I was ontop riding my man. He's loud groans made me smile as I knew I was making him feel good. After a few hours we were both exhausted and we showered together. He was on the phone whilst I changed the sheets.

Danny: You're not going to work anymore. You'll go tomorrow.

Me: Why?

Danny: You need to rest.

He kissed my forehead and got dressed. I went downstairs and saw Jomo and KJ, it was a confirmation



that he's about to leave. I didn't even have the energy to speak to them, I just waved. They took Danny's bags and he followed them. I just looked down and tried holding back my tears. He hugged me and kissed my forehead

Danny: Bye Babe

Me: Bye

When they closed the door I just haled so loud. I cried like a baby and sat on the floor crying my lungs out. There he was looking so worried and he carried me.

Danny: Nasiphi please don't do this.

Me: I'm sorry

Danny: Don't apologize. I just don't want to see you like this. Stop crying.

Kj was standing by the door looking at me like I'm some crazy woman.

Danny: Come, you're coming with me to the airport. We'll have lunch and you'll come back.

The smile on my face! You wouldn't tell that I was crying a minute ago. I ran to the bathroom and fixed myself. I heard them laugh at me but I didn't care. Took my bag and we went to the car. Jomo was driving and I've been slowly getting used to his scary

face.

Kj: Boss Lady, ay you made my day! I'm never ever getting a woman. My fuckbuddies are enough and if they ever pull a stunt like that, they'd be six feet under.

I laughed and laid my head on Danny's shoulder while he was busy on his laptop. He was briefing the acting CEO's of his businesses. I kept on kissing his neck and he squeezed my butt using his free hand

Jomo: Ay never, I cannot be subjected to live pornography.

Me: Oh wow, you can talk now?

They laughed at me and we got to the airport. My man was holding me close around my waist and I don't even know where the journalists came from but they were around us taking pictures. Atleast I look decent. We went shopping around the stores here and sat down for an early lunch.

Danny: You cry like a baby

Me: Whatever Danny

The way he looked at me made me feel a bit uncomfortable

Me: What is it?

Danny: I love you

Me: I love you too but you're looking

at me very weirdly.

Danny: I'm just looking at this amazing woman before me. I'm very lucky to have you. I love you Nasiphi

Me: I love you too Triston. You're scaring me

Danny: You don't need to be scared. Everything will be okay, I promise.

He squeezed my hand and we finished up eating and it was time for him to go.

Danny: KJ will be around more often and he'll make sure theres security. Don't fight him, he'll drive you to wherever you want to go.

Me: Why can't I drive my own car?

Danny: Babe, you need to be safe.

Me: I'll be safe by driving myself.

When I'm lazy he can drive me.

Danny: Fine Nasiphi, but he'll keep a close eye on you. I'll transfer money into your account, it should last you for the next three months. If you happen to need more, you'll talk to KJ.

Me: Yes sir

Danny: Goodbye, I love you

Me: I love you too Danny

We kissed for a while and I watched him walk away with Jomo and his

security team. I'm left with this crazy person. I wipe off my tears and he looks at me like he's scared

Me: What?

Kj: Just don't roll on the floor and cry. Don't embarrass me please, I have a good image to keep up.

Me: Mxm good image my foot.

Kj: What? I'm very handsome thank you very much.

Gosh! Will he have to be around all the time. He's annoying me already

Kj: Ice cream?

Me: Now you're talking.

He was busy texting on his phone and we got into the car.

Kj: We'll first fetch pregnant boss lady and get ice cream together

Me: Pregnant boss lady?

Kj: Sis Babalwa

We went to fetch Bee and went to milky lane.

Bee: How are you Dr Nyathi?

Me: I'm sad and you

Bee: I'm heavy. Having another set of twins is not cool. Ntandokazi and Thandokazi were enough drama, we couldn't even sleep. Now we're



expecting twins again, I'm going to lose it. I have a doctor's appointment in an hour, you'll come with me right?

Me: Yes.

We walked around looking at the beach and I slipped and fell onto some ice cream that was on the floor

Me: Ouch

Kj helped me up and I thanked him.

Bee: Sorry

We both laughed and walked to the car

Me: We'll have to go to home and I'll

change. It's a good thing I fell and not you.

Bee: Imagine, I'd freak out. Getting pregnant with the girls was a complication itself so I don't want any complications with this pregnancy. I'll be giving birth in just 2months.

Me: You're finding out the gender today?

Bee: Yes

We'll celebrate with some cake and junk when we come back. And we'll fetch the kids

Bee: Your phone is ringing, its Danny

Me: Put it on loud speaker please

I was still dressing up.

Danny: Why am I on loud speaker?

Bee: Hello to you too Danny, she's still changing so I answered the call for her.

Danny: What's wrong with what she was wearing? Are you guys going out?

Me: We're going to her doctors appointment. I fell so I needed to change

Danny: What do you mean you fell?!!

Me: Uhm.. I slipped on ice cream and fell

Danny: And where was KJ! Where were your bodyguards!

Me: Calm down, I just fell its no big deal. And what do you mean my bodyguards, Danny I don't have bodyguards

Danny: Nasiphi go give KJ the phone

Me: No wait, lets talk about the bodyguards part first

Danny: Nasiphi!

Bee rushed my phone to KJ and I followed

Kj: Ta Danny

Danny: Explain yourself! How does

she fall when you are all around?

Kj: It happened quickly Ta Danny, we didn't see it coming.

Me: It was a mistake Danny. I didn't break any bones

Danny: But you fell! I'm not gone for even over an hour but she falls! What happened to you all doing your job! Where are those idiots?

Kj: Outside Sir. We're very sorry

Oh what happened to Ta Danny? He's Sir now? And why is he so angry?

Danny: Listen and listen carefully, I don't want your apology. You are all fired! I won't have a useless security

team. How can I trust you with my family if you cannot even protect her from falling! Get out of my house! You are fired!

Yey! He was livid! I don't wish to be Jomo and the guys with him.

I took the phone and went to sit on the couch and took it off loud speaker. He was still shouting.

Me: McKenzie

Danny: Nasiphi! Give that phone back to KJ!

Me: Please calm down. Just calm down, you're overreacting right now. I just fell and it's no big deal.

Danny: It is a big deal, you fell Nasiphi. You could've hurt yourself and landed in hospital. Or end up being paralysed I laughed at him so much. He is just overreacting.

Me: You're overreacting and overprotective and all of that didn't happen. I didn't even get a scratch. I'm fine Triston, I'm really fine.

Danny: I love you and want nothing to happen to you.

Me: And nothing will happen. And you're not firing them at all. You cannot fire them just because I fell, we all didn't see it coming. These

men have families depending on them, they are making a living for themselves and are breadwinners. If you fire them, do you know how many lives you're affecting? What if they won't have food to eat for the rest of the week or month or year? You cannot just act without thinking. You're angry, I understand but you can't fire them.

Danny: Why do you make so much sense? Fine they're not fired. But if such mistakes happen again I'll fire them and you won't be able to change my mind.

Me: Okay, now will you explain why I



have bodyguards? That I've never even seen before?

Danny: I cannot hear you properly. I'm loosing the signal... Nasiphi... Nasiphi

Me: Quit the act Danny

He laughed and ended the call. Mxm this guy

Me: You can still keep your jobs.

Kj: Thanks boss lady. I know when Ta Danny is angry, we're in deep shit. Thank you for using your charms to soften him up.

Bee: Yoh ay these men are overprotective

Kj: You make them like this. That's why I don't want to have a woman I'm serious with. I don't want to lose my mind. Women make you soft and crazy.

Bee: Men make us crazy too. They upset us

Kj: Yey but you're all so scary. Especially Sis Ntokozo, I fear her so much.

Bee: Why? She's so peaceful and not scary at all.

Kj: She's too peaceful that's the problem. You never even know what's on her mind. The peaceful ones are

the craziest. I never want to mess with her. Her and Nangomso are a no go area.

We got into the car and drove off to the hospital with this crazy conversation going on. He's right about Ngamso, you never know what she'll say or do next. She's always thinking deep.

Kj: You're all different and suitable for your husbands. You know how to tame them down. Ay kodwa I give the trophy to Sis Naye. Bhut'Nkosinathi is a beast!

Bee: You can say that again.

Me: He is a bit scary

Bee: You'll see him one day when he is angry. You'll want to hide under the bed

Me: You guys are crazy.

Bee: One guy you'll hardly see angry is Jabulani. He's calm and the peacemaker

Me: He is weird just like Thabo, they are too weird.

Kj: Thabo, I also don't know him much. I've been around for a while but I still cannot get him. But they're all good bosses to us. We work under great men and they always

encourage us to do well and be great and rich like them. Yaboke Nasiphi wena you won the lottery, your man is dann rich. This white nigga got money!! You know we once spent a millon rand on booze for the entire week! We were on a drinking spree.

Bee: The week where we had no husbands, they were married to alcohol. Danny was crazy that week I tell you

Kj: We were drinking expensive alcohol not castle light and klipdrift. I'm telling you about alcohol that I had never seen before

Kj talks, alot. That's what I've noticed about him. He is a chatterbox and I know I won't be bored at all. We got to the hospital and he didn't want to come in with us. He said he's allergic to hospitals. Some guy went in with us and surprisingly we found Bonga already there. Bee was like a love struck teenager. She did the scan and it was two boys. Bonga was over the moon and unfortunately he had to go but atleast he showed up. We went to the stores bought our junk and picked up the kids from school plus Ntandokazi and Thandokazi. They changed, ate and rushed to play

outside while we munched on our junk food. An sms came through and I couldn't believe my eyes.

Me: Is he crazy!

Bee: What?

Me: He just sent me a million. It's for the next three months

Bee: Why are you saying he is crazy?

Me: It's too much.

Bee: Not to him, just spend the money or save some of it. Babygirl, he chews your pussy whenever he wants to, spend his money!

This girl is crazy! But Danny wouldn't

send me so much money if it would take a toll on his finances. So my kids and I will chow daddies money!!

Hope you enjoy

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

Please like and comment

#LBAR

Insert 31

Its been a month and two weeks



without Danny McKenzie. The last time I heard from him was when he overreacted about me falling. I always hear his voice in my head and I laugh to myself. Sometimes it's like he's here with me and I talk to him. I know it sounds crazy but it's what I do. Honestly my kids have been the best, yes I miss Danny but I'm never lonely. They sleep with me most nights and we're always spending time together. Sometimes they leave and sleep over at one of my friends houses but Venes and Sbahle keep me company and we drink ourselves to sleep. We spent the whole of December

holidays and new years without him. My mothers also came over with Paula at times and they'd keep us company. Kj has been around at all times and making me laugh till my stomach hurts. I think he should've been a comedian. We argue about the driving issue at all times but he ends up winning. He is very stubborn and you'd argue with him all day long. Another strange e-mail was sent to me and Kamo looked into it but it wasn't traceable. I chose to just ignore it too. Work has been great and everything is going well, the hospital has been a huge success.

Running it though has been exhausting but it is something I love to do and I'm passionate about it. I woke up and took a very long shower. I'll be going over to Siya's house with the kids. I went to their room and Danny was dressing up

Me: Morning angels, you bathed already?

Danver: Yes mom, Onika is still asleep though.

Me: Oh okay.

I woke her up and bathed her

Me: What do you want to wear?

Onika: The dress that looks like yours

We both had the same olive green summer dresses.

Onika: It's going to be Daddy's 35th birthday in just 2weeks, will he be there?

I had even forgot about it, the 3rd of February is just in 2weeks.

Me: I don't think so. He'll be back soon and we'll celebrate it when he's back.

Danver: I miss him

Me: I miss him too, he misses us too.

Onika started crying and I did my best trying to comfort her and convince her that Danny will be back soon. I

went downstairs to make breakfast and there was another bodyguard standing by the door.

Me: Hi, can I help you?

Him: I'll be with you today mam, Mr Jwara needed to attend a family emergency.

Me: Oh okay, did he tell you what it was?

Him: No Mam

Me: Mmmh I hope everything is well. There's no need for you to stand in for him. I'll be fine plus I'll just be going to La Lucia and stay there all day at Mr Ngcobo's you may take the day

off.

Him: Thank you mam

Oh that was easy! I thought he would be stubborn like Kj. I made breakfast for the kids and there was a delivery.

DeliveryGuy: Good morning mam, I'm looking for Dr Nyathi

Me: That would be me.

DeliveryGuy: This is for you, please sign.

I signed and he left. It was a box and I opened it. It had a box of chocolate and a gold necklace. The card just said "I love you" it didn't say who they are from. I quickly texted Jabu

Me: "Do you think Danny would be able to send me a box of chocolate and gold necklace wherever he is?"

Jabu: "No, we can go get them if you want."

Me: "No don't worry, I just wanted something special from him"

Jabu: "You're crazy but don't worry, he'll be back soon"

So its confirmed, it cannot be Danny who sent these. So who did? I threw them in the bin and continued making breakfast. I got a call from Jabu

Me: Jabs

Jabu: So I put my thinking cap on and

realized something, someone sent you a box of chocolate and gold necklace?

Me: Uhm yes

Jabu: Throw them away

Me: I did

Jabu: Actually, destroy them

Me: How?

Jabu: Burn them or something. Danny won't like this at all

Me: Trust me, I know.

He ended the call and I asked one of the security guys to throw away the trash. The kids came downstairs and



we ate.

Danver: Where is KJ?

Me: Day off

He nodded and we finished up. I took the car keys and left. I drove off to La Lucia. You know when you just have a bad feeling that something bad is going to happen? But you just don't know what it is. That's how I felt. I ignored the feeling and drove carefully. We finally got to Siya's house and Phila greeted and left.

Siya: Hey kids!!

They exchanged greetings and they went off to the quads and Jnr.

Me: Hey girl

Siya: You look like you need some wine.

Me: Orange juice would be fine thank you very much

Siya: Boring

I laughed at her and we had snacks and juice well she was having wine.

Me: How's your sister?

Siya: Very dramatic, Bee cannot be patient just for the next few days. She'll give birth soon but she already wants them out.

Me: I feel sorry for Bonga. Bee can be

very over dramatic you'd swear you're the older one.

Siya: You can say that again.

We talked for a while and went to watch movies. I got a text from Sneha asking me to come visit her we need to talk. I texted her and said I'll be there in an hour. Siya and I were still finishing up the movie. Phila came back and we didn't pay attention to the movie anymore but listened to him talk all the time. He was telling me about how Siya behaved like a baby last night crying just because Phila joked and said she looked prettier when she was young.

Me: So you'll cry all the time when you're old and ugly?

Siya: No but he said it in a bad way, like he was indirectly telling me I'm ageing and ugly

Me: You're crazy. Let me love and leave you. You'll drop the kids off tomorrow right?

Siya: Yep! Bye babe and send my greetings to Sneha

Me: Bye sweetie, will do.

I went to say my goodbyes to the kids and drove to the mall to get some pizza and food I'd have tonight because I know I won't cook. I left my

bag in the car and only took my card. I bought everything I needed. When I was walking to the parking lot I saw some men walking around my car. I got closer and noticed how scary and dodgy most of them looked. One shouted " There she is!" He spoke weirdly. Some took out their guns and I put everything I was carrying on the floor and ran. Thank God I'm wearing flat shoes! I ran to the underground parking lot and was able to exit the mall. People were looking at me as I ran, most probably shocked as to how such a thick girl can run this fast. Never underestimate thick women!

Oh I think I said that too early because I'm tired and this long dress is irritating me. I took off my shoes and ran to the next car I saw opened. I don't care what happens but I'm getting in. The young girl got so shocked and she screamed. They were still coming.

Me: Ssssh don't scream, I won't harm you.

Her: Please, I'll give you anything you want.

Me: I need you to drive! Drive as fast as you can

Her: I cannot drive fast, I'm new at

this.

Me: Mxm! Move over!

We quickly exchanged seats and I drove.

Me: Check if those men in black are still following us

Her: They getting into some cars. We're being followed. Oh God! I'm going to die!

Me: No one will die, tighten your seatbelt.

I drove for a whole long two hours trying to loose them and they eventually gave up. We were out of Durban by the time they stopped. We

were headed somewhere around Marburg. I don't even know this place and I parked next to what seemed like a soccer field

Me: You're okay?

Her: Yes I'm just scared.

Me: Whats your name?

Her: Boitumelo

Me: I'm Nasiphi. Your phone please

She gave me and I felt dumb because I only knew Danny's number off by heart.

I tried calling his phone and it didn't go through. I tried remembering



Venes's number

Me: I hope this is it.

I called and it went to voicemail. I called again and ran out of airtime.

Me: Fuck!

Boity: We can look for a shop and buy airtime.

I started the car and it didn't move. Couldn't this day get any worse! Flat tire and no petrol!

Boity: We're stranded. Let's walk and look for a shop, I have cash.

Me: Do you think its safe?

Boity: I don't know but we have to try.

I need to go home

Me: Who do you stay with?

Boity: Alone.

Me: Okay

We went around and till we found a spaza. We bought airtime and biscuits, Topper cream. When last did I have these

Me: Buy some spookies too

We bought them and went back to the car. I called Venes again and she answered

Venes: You've been calling for a while, I don't answer numbers I don't know.

If this is a prank call I'll have you arrested!

Me: Shut up, its me

Venes: Me who? Nasiphi is that you?

Me: Yes its Nasiphi

Venes: Why are you calling me with this number I don't know? Did you change phones?

Me: Where are you?

Venes: Packing up, at work. I'm about to go home.

Me: Is Athi there?

Venes: Yeah he just came in.

Me: Give him the phone

Venes: Wait a bit. Dr Buthelezi! Dr Buthelezi!

She called out and told him I'm on the phone.

Athi: Where are you? Sneh has been worried sick. She couldn't get ahold of you and they went to your house.

Me: I was chased by some men in black with a funny accent. I ran away, I'm in Marburg

Athi: Wtf! You ran all the way to Marburg?

Me: Mxm Athenkosi, no I didn't. I ran into some girls car and basically I kidnapped her and the car. I drove

trying to loose them till I got here. We don't know this place or anyone

Athi: Drive back and come to HQ

Me: Flat tire and no petrol.

Athi: Mmmh shit, Thaps and Brian will come fetch you. Make sure all your doors are locked.

Me: Okay.

Boity: And we wait.

Me: Yup and how old are you?

Boity: 25

Me: That's a lie! You're so tiny

She looked at me and we laughed

Me: You're really short and tiny, no

one would tell that we're almost the same age, I'm 26.

We got to know each other while we waited. We even exchanged numbers. She got a call and passed the phone over to me. It was Thapelo

Me: Thaps

Thaps: Press the green button on your ankle bracelet. We need to track your location

Me: Ohk

I did so and he said they are coming. We waited a while and they arrived with a tow truck.

Me: A tow truck, really?

Brian: Wasn't my lame idea.

I introduced them to Boity and we got into the car and went back to Durban

Boity: What will happen to my car?

Thaps: You'll get it tomorrow morning

Me: And my car?

Brian: Paula and Zandy went to get it.

Me: You never told me how the date went?

Brian: I thought Paula told you how she rejected me

Me: She did but I wanted to hear your side of the story. She didn't really reject you

Brian: She said she's not ready for a relationship and we should be friends and we friends now

Thaps: In other words, she friendzoned you!

He laughed at him and I joined in. He was very irritated.

Brian: I should've left you stranded.

Boity: I'm sorry to meddle in things that don't involve me but I just feel as if you should be happy she wants to be friends with you other than rejecting you and shutting you out completely. It shows that she is interested but there's something



holding her back. You should've asked why isn't she ready for a relationship maybe there's a valid reason behind it.

Thaps: That makes so much sense coming from a kid.

Me: She's actually 25

Them: What! Hell no!

She nodded and they laughed and Thaps apologized for calling her a kid. Boity told them where she stayed and we dropped her off when we got to Durban. We went to HQ and the gents were busy. They hugged me and made sure I was okay

Phila: Want some food?

Me: Yes please.

Mpho: You didn't get hurt or anything?

Me: No I'm fine.

Jabu: The girl you were with?

Me: She's fine we dropped her off where she stays.

Bonga: Name?

Me: Boitumelo.

Mpho: I cannot get ahold of Jomo or Danny

Me: Why are you calling him?

Mpho: He needs to know.

Me: We'll tell him when he's back  
Mpho, if he knows now he'll leave his training and come back here wanting to kill everyone. I don't want to disturb his training and put this thing of him being head of the force on hold. I'm fine and I know he is passionate about it and wants to lead the force, he just never mentions it because he thinks I'll be scared and think he's crazy

Thabo: Have you been listening to our conversations?

Me: No why?

Lubah: Because that's exactly what

he said to us before he left.

Me: Oh wow

We laughed it off and they worked as L'yanda took me home. When I got home Sbahle was already there

Me: Babygirl

Sbahle: You're okay?

Me: Yes I'm fine. I just need to bath and sleep

Sbahle: Lets go upstairs, I also want to bath and sleep. Its been a long day.

It has surely been a very long day. I wonder who is after me and what do they want? I ignored those thoughts

and we bathed and tucked in bed. I checked my emails and there was no strange e-mail, maybe it's not the person who has been sending me the stupid e-mails. I sighed, prayed and slept.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

## Insert 32

The past few weeks have been hectic mostly because we've been at HQ alot. The gents are working on a mission and they had no choice but to let the girls back into the force temporarily as we worked on trying to find out who is after me. Kamo was able to locate where the e-mails came from but that lead us to a dead end. I've been annoyed by all this and what hurts more is that Danny is not back yet. He was supposed to be back a week ago but he isn't. Even the kids are hurt and Danver is angry.

That child has anger for days I tell you. He didn't speak to me for 3days, Onika tried but failed, she spoke to me after just 10mins of ignoring me. We celebrated Danny's birthday without him merely because Onika just wanted some cake and it was a valid reason as to why she wanted cake. Babalwa gave birth to two beautiful boys, Siphesande and Sipehelele Luthuli. We haven't seen them for a few days because we're in HQ most of the time and they are babysitting their newborns.

Zandy: I'm thirsty

Me: Me too

We got ourselves something to drink and sat down.

Kamo: I have run out of ideas. I don't even know what I'm doing anymore.

Zandy: These are things that need Zee, I feel so dumb

Naye: Ayboh you're basically like the smartest of us all, how do you think we feel?

Nceba: Extra dumb, if that even exists

Me: I don't think it does sweetie.

Sbahle: I need a man

Zandy: No you don't

Sbahle: WeZandile Lebone, your man



services you and mina I'm dry down there. A dildo is out, it doesn't do anything to me anymore

Siya: You seriously do need a man

Phelo laughed as she was stuffing herself with food

Me: When is Mayi Jnr coming to earth?

Phelo: I still have a few months to go. Atleast I'll be able to tell the gender next month

Naye: I think its a boy

Kamo: Me too, your nose is big and you're ugly.

Phelo: You're such a bad friend.

I was thinking deeply, what I had in mind would have my life in danger but I'm tired of being clueless.

Me: Belinda, teach me how to shoot.

Belinda: What? Now?

Me: Yes

Ngamso: Why now?

Me: Because I should know how to protect myself, just incase something happens and you're all not around.

Belinda: Follow me

I followed her and we got to the shooting range room.

Belinda: Put these on and stand there, open your legs a bit.

I did as she instructed and the gun was heavier than it looks. I aimed and shot

Belinda: You're a natural, want to try it again

I nodded, we spent hours shooting and using different guns. By that time I was sure I'd be able to protect myself in what I'm about to do. It was around 3pm and we were done.

Me: Woah that was fun, I need to go home. I want to bath and sleep, want me to drop you off Phelo?

Phelo: Don't worry yourself sweetie,  
Naye will drop me off.

Me: Bye guys

The kids were with their grandma's even MaPhindy was at my mothers house. They all have a tight bond and I wouldn't be happier. I drove off slowly and just as I wanted, I was being followed. I don't know where I'm getting this bravery from but I will continue with my plan. I drove to a quiet area and parked the car. They parked behind me. Belinda didn't notice that I left with two guns. I had them tucked in my waistbelt. Some guys wearing all black also came out

of the car carrying big guns. I walked to them without taking out any gun

Guy: Step back

Me: Why should I? You wanted me now I'm coming, and you're saying I should step back. Don't waste my time dude.

Guy: She's feisty

Me: Who sent you?

Guy2: Our boss.

Me: His a coward. Take me to him

They held me roughly and I laughed

Me: There's no need for that. I'm not a coward and I won't run away.

I got into the car and that was me throwing myself in the lions den. They took my phones and threw them out. Dear God, be with me.

#Danny

Three months and a week passed and I hadn't went back home. I still had to meet up with all my agents and everyone on board who will be working under me. I got to South Africa last night and went to have a meeting with agents on the higher department. I haven't seen the gents as I assigned them on a mission which needs their attention. It's something they'll do in just a day.

Razor came to see me and check if everything was going well. I honestly didn't like how I've become in a space of just 3months but that's what I was trained for and I will not be a weakling. I don't even know how am I going to even touch Nasiphi. I cannot be affectionate nor even be able to express my feelings. I still do love her alot and I've missed her. I love my kids and I've missed them but I'm afraid I won't be able to even show that. It will all just be back to square one and I know Nasiphi will be hurt. I hope things change when I see her and feel her touch. What I do know is

I won't make love to her tonight as I know I will just break her bones. I don't want her to be hurt in that way. I roamed around the hotel room frustrated. KJ came to fetch me, I have made him an agent and he will be my right hand man. Jomo will be going back to Langelihle, Nkosi needs him. When he left he told Nasi that he has a family emergency, I didn't want him to tell her that he's coming to me. She would've also wanted to come. KJ has also noticed how different I've become and he mentioned how he is now very scared of me. I don't only feel different but I



also look different.

Me: Let's go

Kj: Woah even your voice is deeper and husky, what did they do to you?

I just shook my head and walked out.

Me: Where is she?

Kj: HQ, the kids are with their grandma's

Me: Take me to my kids first

Kj: You don't want to shave first?

Maybe they won't even recognize you.

I looked at him and he continued driving. I don't think I look bad, my kids will recognize me. We got to the

house and MaNyathi was outside with baby Zee and Onika.

Me: MaNyathi

MaN: McKenzie

Onika hid behind her and it made me feel bad. It hurt but I shut that emotion down.

Me: Onika, Its daddy

She cried and came to me. I hugged her and carried her inside the house. The little man came running to me, atleast he recognizes me.

Me: Denver

Denver: Hey daddy! You back

Me: Yes I'm back son.

I put them down and drank some water. They were following me around and MaDlamini was shocked when she saw me.

MaD: You look like a bushman. Your mother is here

Me: My mother?

MaD: MaPhindy

Me: Oh

She hugged and dragged me to go see MaPhindy.

Me: MaPhindy

MaPhindy: Oh you back Danny, how

are you?

Me: I'm good and yourself?

MaPhindy: I'm good, your sisters are asleep

Me: I'll see them soon. I'll be leaving now, we'll fetch the kids later.

Hopefully the twins will be up.

I said my goodbyes to the kids and drove off to HQ. It was around 6pm when we got there. I got in and the girls didnt notice.

Me: Ladies

They got a fright and I noticed my Nasiphi wasn't there.

Them: Hi Danny

Me: You look scared

Zandy: You look scary

Me: I've been told, Where is my woman?

Kamo: She went home about 4hours ago. She was tired and wanted to sleep.

Me: Ok

I left KJ there and drove home. When I got there, there was just some securities and the maids.

Me: Where is Nasiphi

Her: She hasn't been home since they

left in the morning.

Me: Are you sure!

Her: Yes Sir.

Where is this woman!? I called her and her phone went straight to voicemail. I went back to HQ and the guys had arrived

Mayi: Danny!

Me: Someone better start explaining!!

Where is my woman!? Where is Nasiphi

Lubah: Calm down dude, Belinda where is she?

Belinda: She left about 4hours ago

guys, she went home.

Me: She's not home and her phone is off.

Kamo: I'll track her car

Me: Someone call Venes and see if she's not with her

Paula: I'll do so

I sat down and tried to calm myself

Me: How was the mission?

Thapelo: Everything is sorted, there's no leak.

Me: Good, the mole?

Mpho: Dead

Me: Excellent.

Kamo: I found her car, it's not too far from here.

Paula: And she's not even with Venes.

Me: Where is it?

Kamo: Mlazi, kaK

Me: What the fuck would she be doing there! Kj lets go

Kj: I'll drive

We got into the car and drove off.

The others followed and we got to her car but she wasn't there and the car wasn't locked

Athi: It's not even close to any houses.

Sneh: Guys, I think she was



kidnapped. Her phones have been thrown here. They took her, they took my sister.

She started crying and honestly there was no time for her tears. She was next to me and I looked at her. I couldn't comfort her. Athi came to her and went to the car. Ngamso looked at me and I shook my head. I'm in no mood for her lectures, I need to find Nasiphi. I called a meeting with all the bodyguards I've hired in my house and I was there in a flash with Belinda and KJ

Me: Do you all value your lives?

Them: Yes Sir

Me: Tell me, how does Nasiphi go missing when I pay you loads of money to protect her and my family?

Guard: We are not aware that she is missing, she didn't want any one to go with her, she gave her personal bodyguard the week off.

Me: Who pays you?

Guards: You sir

Me: I gave you strict orders and one of those orders is not to listen to her because I knew she didn't want bodyguards! When I left, not even hours after I left, she fell! You were

not there to protect her from falling. I gave you all another chance because she convinced me. Now she's missing! She's bloody missing and you're standing here with your kak faces saying you were not aware! Call her bloody personal bodyguard! Now One of them went to their rooms at the back and called him. I slapped him hard and he fell

Me: You're on vacation I see!

Him: Sir, Mam gave me the week off

Me: Do you take orders from Mam?

I took my gun and shot his leg

Belinda: Calm down Danny!

Me: Shut up Belinda

I shot each and everyone one of them on one leg. They were hailing

Me: Shut up! You're all useless!!!

Better pray that I find her alive and unharmed because if not. You're all dead, better start calling your families and informing them of the upcoming funeral. I walked away and stopped.

Me: And remember, I don't make threats. I make promises and don't break them. Get in the car KJ

Belinda's phone rang and she put on speak

Sbahle: How many guns did you use

Belinda?

Me: What guns!

Belinda: 15 why?

Sbahle: Two are missing on the ones you used. She left with two guns.

Me: What the hell were you doing with guns Belinda!!!

Belinda: She wanted to know how to shoot so she can protect herself

Me: I'm going to loose my mind. Get out of this car

Belinda: Danny

Me: Belinda! Get out!

Kj: Let's go. We'll drive behind you.

Nasiphi! Nasiphi! This woman will drive me crazy. Why the hell would she take guns and disappear? Does she want to leave me? Was the three months too much for her? Nasiphi isn't a coward, she wouldn't just leave without facing me and telling me my shit. I got to HQ and I wanted answers

Me: Is there something I need to know?

Jabu: There has been people who were following her and sending her e-mails. She managed to run from them once and ended up in Marburg. We fetched her and they haven't been

following her much from that day.

Me: And when did this happen?

Mpho: About a month and three weeks ago

Me: And I wasn't informed!!!

Phila: We wanted to inform you but she didn't want to. She wanted you to continue with your training and not disturb you because she knew how important it was to you. She said she sees how passionate you are about this and she didn't want to stand in your way.

Me: Nasiphi! She's more important than me leading the force!

Phelo: Sometimes you have to compromise yourself just to make your partner happy and let them do what they love. That's what she did, she let you be and do what you love

Me: And in all that she is missing now! I want everyone to drop their missions and go looking for her. Call all our branches and all agents! No one will sleep! Everyone is looking for her! Flip rocks and stones I don't care! I want her found! Kj, Phila, Mpho and Jabu, you're coming with me. Mayi, take your wife home. The others, split. We're raiding all over this place! If anyone comes in your way, you kill!



Am I clear! Am I clear!

Voice: There's no need for that

I knew that voice. I knew it was the love of my life and she was standing by the door looking at me.

Me: Where the fuck have you been?

Nasi: Hello to you too Danny. Where the fuck have you been?

She walked to me and kissed my cheek. Damn she was so sexy! But she had alot of explaining to do. And so did I

Hope you enjoy

Suggest page to friends and friend's

of friends

Please like and comment

#LBAR

Insert 33

My man was back, that made me so happy and excited but he had explaining to do. Well so did I. He looked like a mess, my hot mess. We really needed to get rid of the beard and cut his hair. He looked different,

and he was very angry. I walked to the couch and sat down. Everyone was looking at me waiting for an explanation. I took out the guns and put them on the couch. Danny stared at me and I shook my head

Me: I didn't use them

Mpho: Thank God

Paula: Where have you been Nasiphi?

Me: Somewhere

Danny: What the fuck Nasiphi! We've been damn worried and you just say you've been somewhere!

Me: Since when do you swear and shout when you speak to me?

Danny: Explain yourself!

Me: You need to calm down and explain yourself! Don't raise your voice at me I'm not your child

Danny: Sorry

Me: Save your meaningless sorries for someone who cares. Nxx

Honestly I didn't mean to be dramatic but he was upsetting me. He cannot just show up and think he'll swear at me and talk to me like I'm nothing. I went to the bathroom and he followed me.

Danny: Nasiphi I'm sorry okay, I've just been worried sick about you

Me: Well I'm fine Danny but I just don't like how you spoke to me

Danny: I'm sorry.

He kissed my forehead, I tried to hold him but he stepped back. I was hurt, alot. I went back to the others and I started explaining

Me: Well I was tired of sitting here and being clueless because it was obvious that we wouldn't find anything. We were at a dead end. I asked Belinda to teach me how to shoot because I had already had a plan in mind but I needed to know how to protect myself if I needed to

but I didn't need to. When I left here I was being followed just as I had hoped. We stopped at somewhere in Mlazi and I went to the guys who were following me.

Danny: Are you crazy?

Mpho: Just let her continue Danny

Me: Thanks Mpho. So they threw my phones and drove me to their boss who happens to be my brother. Well we're the same age, I'm born in November 11 and he's born November 23. Can you imagine? Other than that, my father has been looking for me.

Jabu: Hector?

Me: Muziwokuthula Nyathi

Danny: Please don't tell me you went to see him

Me: I didn't but I am going to see him tomorrow. My brother, Mbulelo, he said my father is sick and wants to see his daughters including Sneh. When he first saw me on Tv and he was actually seeing Zee. He tried to contact her but unfortunately she passed. So when he saw me he thought Zee was alive but Dad told him about how identical we looked and it was me, so he started

following me and sending the creepy e-mails. Apparently I have 11 siblings and my father has two wives.

Athi: Wow

Me: I know right, its all just overwhelming. It's been a long day, I need to go home and rest.

Naye: Go rest and we'll see you tomorrow.

Danny walked away and I guessed that meant I should follow. We got into the car and the drive home was silent. Too silent for my liking and it was never how I imagined it would be when he comes home. He opened



the door for me and most of the bodyguards were terrified and bandaged on one of their legs. This had Danny written all over it.

Me: You shot them?

Danny: I thought you were kidnapped

Me: Guards, I'm sorry for what Mr McKenzie has done. He totally blew things way out of proportion and my apologies won't take away the pain. I'm okay now and you can go home for the rest of the week.

They stood there and didn't move

Me: Guys, you can go.

They still stood. Are they mad at me

or ignoring me?

Danny: You can go

They left and I looked at Danny. He is making people suffer. They are terrified of him, I don't wish to be in their shoes right now. I went to our room and took off my clothes.

Walked back downstairs and I heard him clear his throat. I took some frozen pies and put them in the oven. When I got upstairs he was taking a shower. I walked into the shower and held him while kissing the back of his neck. He just got out of the shower and left me standing there. Rejected, that's how I felt. I didn't know what to

do. I just took my shower and got dressed in my pyjamas and went downstairs. I was at his study talking to Razor. I took my pie, poured some orange juice and sat on the high kitchen stool. I just cried and continued eating my food because I was really hungry. He came downstairs and I wiped my tears off

Danny: Nasiphi

I ignored him. I didn't want to even talk to him. He rejected me twice today and he shouted at me and swore! I continued eating and finished my food. I washed my plate and warmed up his pie

Danny: Don't worry about me, I'm full.  
I left it there and went upstairs. He  
followed me and carried me back  
downstairs

Me: Let me go!

Danny: How can I let my life go?

Me: Just put me down please

He sat down on the couch and made  
me sit on top of him. I tried moving  
but he was too strong.

Danny: Don't move, just sit and we'll  
talk.

Me: There's nothing we have to talk  
about

Danny: I'm sorry about what happened earlier

Me: You rejecting me, twice!

Danny: We can easily talk about this without shouting

I looked down and he kissed my cheek. Atleast that was something. I've missed this man.

Danny: I'm really sorry Nasiphi. I just don't know what got over me, I'm a different man. I don't know how to be affectionate, I don't even know how to touch you right without hurting you. Right now I'm damn horny but I don't want to hurt you

Me: What makes you think you'll hurt me?

Danny: I know I will

I nodded, I was hurt and disappointed but I let him be.

Me: May I go sleep?

Danny: Let's go

Me: You're really not having any food?

He shook his head and I went upstairs with him following me. I got in bed and he sat on the couch with his laptop. I was hurting and I cried realising I've lost my man. The Danny that loved me unconditionally. He came in bed and looked at me. He

didn't even know if he should touch me or not.

Me: What did they do to you?

Danny: Nasiphi

I held him and kissed him. I laid on his chest and it was cold. It wasn't my safe place anymore. He was a stranger to me. I sighed and slept in his cold arms.

#NEXTMORNING

Waking up and trying to cuddle but you're now cuddling with pillows! He wasn't in bed but instead he put pillows. I woke up and took a long shower. I got dressed in a tight black

dress showing off all my assets and mini cleave nyana. Combed my afro and tied it into a neat bun. Put on some burgundy matte lipstick and burgundy stilettos. Packed my bags and went downstairs. He was sitting on the kitchen stool starring at his laptop.

Me: Morning

Danny: Hy

I made breakfast and went through my e-mails.

Danny: When are you going to see Muzi?

Me: At 1pm



Danny: I'll pick you up

I nodded and dished up breakfast for the both of us.

Danny: Sorry, I won't be having breakfast.

Me: You didn't eat last night and now you don't want breakfast?

Danny: Just used to eating once a day now

Me: Well you're not at your training anymore, you're home now. Eat

He looked at me and started eating.

Hawu! I won't waste food, he must eat all the food I make for him.

Danny: You look beautiful

Me: Thanks, I'll pick up the kids and drop them off at school. The driver will pick them up, their nanny will be home when they come back.

Danny: New nanny?

Me: Yes.

He nodded and I went to brush my teeth. When I turned he was behind me! The fright I got! He cannot be creeping up on me like that.

Me: Don't scare me like that! I didn't even hear you come in.

He was busy scratching his hair and his eyes were red. He really needs a

haircut and shave the ugly beard.

Me: What's wrong with you?

Danny: Just kiss me please

Me: Oooh okaay

I was confused as to what was going on because Danny never asks me to kiss him, he just kisses me. I kissed him and he sighed and went away.

What the hell was that? I was angry! I was more than angry. I went downstairs and I was already crying.

Danny: Nasiphi I'm sorry!!!

Me: I have to go, I'm late.

I left him there and drove to my

mothers house and picked up the kids.

Me: I've missed you! You're coming home today, no more sleepovers

Danver: Atleast Dad is back so it will be fun.

Me: I hope so

I dropped them off at school and my phone had 16 missed calls from KJ and Bonga. I called Bonga

Bonga: Get to your house right now

Me: I'm going to work

Bonga: Get here now Nasiphi!

Me: Geez okay, Don't shout at me.

What is it with these men? They just shout at you like you're a kid. I got home and there were many cars in the yard

Me: Jabulani, what is going on?

Jabu: We've tried, he's a danger to all of us.

Kj: Your man is loosing it. Go help him or he'll bring this whole house down.

Me: What no! What if he hurts me?

Bonga: Just go in there

Me: Never! You're the big buffy ones, you go in.

Thaps: He doesn't want to listen to any of us. Just go stop him before he hurts himself more. Athi will come check up on him

Me: You owe me

I walked to the house and most of the things were destroyed.

Me: Shit! Danny! Danny! Where are you?

Danny: Get out of here Nasiphi. I don't want to hurt you

Me: But you're hurting yourself. Look at you.

He had blood all over his hands and a cut on his forehead. He looked so

much like Razor now. I went closer to him

Danny: I'm sorry, I'm sorry for hurting you. I love you Nasiphi, Don't leave me. Don't give up on me.

Me: I won't leave you. I love you

Danny: Really, do you love me?

He was crying and that just hurt me so much

Danny: Do you love this messed up man? Do you love this monster!

Me: Yes, yes I do.

I held his hands full of blood, and kissed him. He kissed me back and

held me tightly.

Me: You're not hurting your hands?

Danny: I don't feel any pain.

Me: Oh now come, lets get you cleaned up

Danny: I don't think you want to go up there

Me: Why didn't you just call me and don't destroy everything?

Danny: I wasn't thinking straight

Me: You never even think

Danny: I'll agree with that.

I laughed at him and washed his hands in the kitchen sink. He's feet



were full of glass cuts and he said he didn't feel any pain. I cleaned him up and got him dressed. He was getting tired and weak.

Me: You're too heavy for me to carry.  
Wait here

I called Bonga and Thaps to come carry him and they put him into my car

Me: Get this house fixed please.

Bonga: On it. It will be fixed by tomorrow

Me: We'll be at his apartment for today

Kj: I'll drive behind you.

I drove to his apartment and called my PA to put another Dr for my schedule today. I canceled my meeting with my father. Taking care of Danny now is much more important than anything else right now. I got to the apartment and KJ carried him and put him in bed.

Me: Thanks

Kj: Sho boss lady.

I poured some hot water in a basin and detol. I cleaned him up and his blood pressure was high

Me: I'm going to turn you over, I need to wipe your back

Danny: Don't

Me: Why?

Danny: You won't like what you'll see  
I turned him over because I wanted to  
see what I won't like. He had fresh  
wounds and they were scary.

Me: What happened here?

Danny: You don't need to know

Me: I want to know, we don't keep  
secrets remember?

Danny: Yes we don't. But what  
happened in my training is something  
you shouldn't know about. There is  
something you need to know

Me: What is it?

Danny: I kissed another woman. Those woman were brought in to entertain us and I got led on, we kissed. We were about to fuck but I couldn't. I couldn't do that to you. I'm sorry that I even kissed her. Ever since I came back all I've been doing is hurting you and I haven't been back for even 48hours but I've hurt you. I'm sorry Amahle

Me: It's okay

Danny: I know you haven't forgiven me

Me: I'm glad you know. Now get

some rest. I'll make you something to eat

Danny: Vegetable soup please

Me: Okay

Danny: Thank you, I love you Nasiphi.

I nodded and went to cry as I cooked for him. I wiped off my tears and finished up. Dished up for him and went to the room. I changed my dressed and put on his tracksuit. I helped him sit up and I fed him

Me: You need a haircut and shave

Danny

Danny: I'll do it tomorrow. You can still go see Muzi, you'll just have to go

with someone.

Me: I can go another time. Taking care of you is more important right now.

Danny: Thank you Nasiphi, I really don't deserve you.

Me: I'm glad you know that

Danny: Ouch

Me: What? We don't keep secrets from each other remember.

I laughed at him and kissed his cheek.

Me: I love you, now sleep.

Danny: Sleep next to me please

Me: Okay

I tucked in next to him and he kept on kissing my forehead. He's eyes were wide opened

Me: Sleep Danny

He didn't reply, he was fast asleep but he's eyes were opened. I shook him and woke him up

Me: Are you okay Triston?

Danny: Why did you wake me up?

Me: Your eyes were opened

Danny: Didn't realize. Now sleep

Since when does he sleep with his eyes opened. Gosh this is scary!

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's  
of friends

#LBAR

Insert 34

Things were different, things were very different now but I had hoped it will change as time goes by because he just came back. Maybe when he just adjusts he'll be fine. What scared



me is how he'll be with the kids but yesterday when they came back from school, they were happy together. I was glad to see that he is still a great dad to his kids. One thing I didn't want is for him to neglect the kids again, they had just fixed their relationship and I wouldn't want it to go back to the way it was. We all sat down for breakfast together and he was fine. He didn't feel any pain from yesterday but the bruises were still very visible.

Me: Finish up guys or we'll be late for school

Danny: You're not dressed for work

Me: I'm not going

Danny: Why?

Me: Who will take care of you if I'm at work?

Danny: I'll take care of myself

Me: Yeah sure you will, plus I'll be going to meet Muzi later on so going to work isn't in the picture today.

Danny: I'll come with

Me: Okay, come my babies

Danver: Mom you should stop calling me a baby, I'm a man now.

Me: Oh okay Mr Man, let's go.

They brushed their teeth as I packed

their bags. We got into the car and I dropped them off at school. I passed at the hospital just to check how everything was going and fetch a few documents. After leaving the hospital I went to mugg and bean, got some muffins and coffee. Naye always wants muffins from mugg and bean, they are really good though its worth every penny.

Me: Danny!

Danny: I'm taking a shower!

This apartment is very big and spacious. There's that relaxed aura and it's peaceful. I sat on the couch

and watched tv while munching on my muffins.

Danny: Bought some for me?

Me: Yup, in the fridge

Danny: Thanks

He sat next to me and he wasn't dressed at all. I swallowed and this muffin didn't go the right way. I was coughing and it was stuck on my throat.

Danny: I don't get why you're choking, it's not like you've never seen me naked before.

I drank water and took a deep breathe.

Me: Took me by surprise

I had my hands on the kitchen counter and he came from the back and kissed my neck. He held me close and I could feel his penis poking me. He put his hand under my dress and brushed my thighs all the way to my honeypot

Danny: Fuck! No underwear. You're killing me

He bent me over a bit and spanked my ass. It stung at first but it was painful pleasure. He took my leg and put it over the counter and started kissing my butt all the way down to

my clit. He inserted his tongue and I let out a soft moan. He thrustured with his tongue and finger at the same time making my body weak and feel hot flushes build up making me shiver. I laid my upper body on the counter and screamed out his name as I climaxed. He picked me up and led us to the room where he made me lay on the bed and put his whole penis in my mouth. I gagged as he thrustured hard and faster. His loud groans became louder and luckily we're alone. He came in my mouth and I swallowed his juices. He laid on me and kissed my breasts and

squeezed them hard. I was so wet and ready for him as he inserted his manhood inside of me. I've missed having his full length inside my honeypot. He thrusted hard and deep it felt soo good at first but it got rougher and rougher. He was holding me too tightly, digging his teeth on my neck and breasts

Me: Danny you're hurting me

I don't think he heard me, he was not the Danny that made love to me. He was fucking me like I'm just one of his bitches. He fucked me harder and deeper I felt my vagina throbbing, I couldn't take the pain. This was not

love. I cried but he ignored my cries. He turned me over and entered me from the back. He was holding my hands as if I'm his prisoner. He went deeper and deeper, with every thrust he broke a part of my soul. He spanked me so hard it felt like a beating. He kept them coming and he didn't stop. He finally decided to cum and roared out the loudest groan. He left me on the bed and went to the bathroom. I cried, I cried so much and I was too weak to even tuck myself in the blankets. He covered me with a blanket and left. I feel violated, I feel weak and helpless. What he has done



has broken me into pieces. I guess this is the punishment you get for falling inlove with your sisters husband.

#Danny

Shit! Shit! What have I done!? I shouldn't have even made a move on her. I shouldn't have touched her because I knew I would hurt her. But I wanted to make love to her, I missed her. I missed having my full length inside of her and hearing her moan out my name but all I heard was her cries. I lost it, I lost myself while inside of her and I hurt her in the most painful and unbearable way.

When I saw her laying on the bed trying to get in the blankets but she couldn't, she was too weak. That broke my heart into pieces as it was my own doings. I covered her and left. I couldn't face her, I violated her. I killed her soul and it is all because of my selfishness and anger. It is this beast inside of me that I have no control over. Nasiphi will never forgive me for this and I have lost her forever. I damaged her, I broke her and made her feel worthless and cheap. I drove around till I called Nkosinathi

Nkosi: Danny McKenzie!

Me: I messed up, I messed up Nkosi.

Nkosi: What did you do?

Me: I hurt her, she's going to leave me.  
I've lost her for good

Nkosi: Stop speaking in riddles and  
come here.

Me: Where are you?

Nkosi: Come to my office, MMH.

Me: Sho

I ended the call and drove to his  
office. I'm glad he's in town, even if  
he wasn't I would've drove all the way  
to Langelihle. I got to his company  
and went up to his office. He gave me

a glass of scotch.

Nkosi: Sit down and explain yourself

Me: I... I hurt her..

Nkosi: You beat her up

Me: No, I fucked her like I'm fucking one of my damn fuckbuddies.

Nkosi: Shit! That's what you're in, deep shit boy.

Me: Tell me something I don't know.

Nkosi: You've got to fix this

Me: How? She's going to leave my stupid ass

Nkosi: And you're going to let her?

Me: I have no choice, I messed her up.

I wouldn't stop her if she wanted to leave or report me for rape.

Nkosi: I don't think Nasiphi would do that, she cares for you and would never want to hurt you or the kids by sending you to jail. She'd never hurt you, but you hurt her.

Me: So you're going to keep throwing it in my face?

Nkosi: Yes because you need to hear it, it needs to sink in deep. There's no way you're going to make up for this. That shit takes time. If she forgives you, it will be up to you to make her happy and let her trust you with her

body and soul again. And you should never hurt her in that kind of way again. You've got to go make things right.

Me: I cannot face her right now

Nkosi: There's one thing I learnt in life, its to never run away from your problems. I know how you feel inside, I know how this demon has replaced you and you've become something you're not and you think you have no control over it. I know how it feels, I've been there. You can control it Danny, you can. It is there when you're at work, spitting fire and leading us in force but when you get

home you become a father and a partner to someone, not a beast. You leave it all behind, you must learn how to separate the two. I know you'll be going away soon again.

Me: How do you know?

Nkosi: Because I'm going with you, you cannot head up this mission alone.

Me: Thanks, I appreciate it.

Nkosi: Now back to the situation at hand, you're going to be going away soon and you'll have to come fix yourself and set your priorities straight. And be a better man for your

family, I've seen myself break my family into pieces because of my stupid actions, you know it and you've witnessed it. You were there when my wife lost it and couldn't deal with it. When she came to her breaking point, you do not want to go through that with Nasiphi. Her breaking point would be her killing you, she's tough. You've seen how strong she is. Now you're breaking that, you're making her feel weak and she will be weak. You're breaking her Danny, fix it.

I sighed and he's words kept on flowing in my mind. I got a call from Kj



Me: Speak

Kj: She's going to see her father. Are you still coming with?

Me: No, how is she?

Kj: She's Nasiphi, she's her normal self.

Me: Oh, go with her and keep an eye on her. Make sure she's safe KJ.

Kj: Sho boss.

Nkosi: How is she?

Me: He says she's just her normal self.

Nkosi: You've got a strong woman, she's putting the shit you did to her

aside and continuing with her day. Don't get this in a wrong way and think I'm attracted to her. But a strong woman like her is very attractive and rare. Yes we like that woman who depend on us and submit an all that shit, it makes you feel like a man and the provider. A strong independent woman is a true dime, she challenges you to do better and I don't even know how to explain it Danny. That's what attracted me the most about Naye, she didn't need me, I needed her. And that's how it is with you and Nasiphi. As much as you helped her get her true identity

and leave that strip club, she didn't need you to. She was doing well for herself before you came and she can still do well after she's left you. She collected you and helped you when none of us could. You need her more than she needs you. Don't give up on her cause she hasn't given up on you.

Me: I hear you man, but I've broken her man.

Nkosi: That's the thing about love, love breaks and restores.

Me: I hate it when you make so much sense and come at me with good advice. That's Phila's job

We laughed it off

Me: Thanks man, I appreciate it. It's going to be a difficult task but its worth it.

#Nasi

I decided to stop being weak and crying over what has happened. The damage has been done and cannot be fix theres no use for crying over spilt milk. It is up to me to pick myself up and not let him have the upper hand. He has broken my soul but it's up to me to pick up the pieces and up to him if he glue them up and fix his mistakes. I took one step at a

time till I reached the shower and sat down letting the water wash away the feeling of being cheap and unworthy. I dried myself up after cleaning myself and got dressed in a long sleeve t'shirt and jeans. I covered up all my bruises and let my weave lay loose. I texted Sneh and she was ready to leave. I had yoghurt and called KJ. He drove off and we picked up Sneh.

Sneh: Hey girl!

Me: Hey sweetie

She hugged me and it pained abit but I didn't show it.

Sneh: You don't look too good

Me: Uhm its just a cold flue

Sneh: A cold flue that leaves you  
bruised all over your neck!

Me: Don't shout

Sneh: He did this shit to you?

Me: Yeah, we'll talk about this later

Sneh. We got to the house my brother  
sent an address off

Sneh: I wonder why he wants to see  
us.

Me: Lets go in and find out.

We knocked and an elderly woman  
opened and welcomed us. It must be

one of his wives. He's house is big and you could see that he is a wealthy man. There were many faces that looked like me and I guessed those were my siblings

Mbulelo: Nasiphi, I'm glad you came. These are our brothers and sisters. Nkonzo being our elder brother. He introduced all of them to us and there were too many names I'll end up forgetting them.

Me: Pleased to meet you everyone, this is Snehlanhla Buthelezi, my sister.

Woman: I guess you're Bhengu's

daughter

Sneh: That's what I've been told.

Nkonzo: Follow me, our father wants to see the both of you.

We followed him as he ushered us to a room upstairs. We got in and he was laying on the bed with many machines connected to him. He looked like me but he was so pale.

Nkonzo: Nyathi, they've arrived

Muzi: Pearl, Snenhlanhla come close so I can see you

We were still standing at the door behind Nkonzo. I pushed her and she pushed me too, none of us wanted to



get closer to him.

Nkonzo: Move

He laughed at us and pushed us and we sat next to Muzi

Muzi: I was told your elder sister has passed on

Sneh: Yes she did.

Muzi: That brings sadness to my heart. I am very happy to have finally seen you my daughters. Where is that bastard Hector?

Me: We don't know

Muzi: He betrayed me, I had been sending him money all these years to

take good care of you but he spent it to himself. I wanted to see you so I could apologize to you my daughters. What I did was foolish, I was driven by the excitement of money and having woman. I forgot about my real family, I did the unthinkable and killed your mother and grandpa. I shot your father Sneh and raped your mother. I did many things I'm not proud of and I'm being punished for my sins

Me: Our mother is not dead, she managed to get away from the fire you set you evil bastard.

Muzi: Tell her I said I am sorry my kids, I am very sorry to all of you. I'm

sorry

He held our hands and coughed hard. He stopped breathing and that was it. Sneh looked at me and cried.

Nkonzo: Nyathi! Nyathi!! Father!

He cried and held his father. I moved over as everyone was crying and getting in the room. He's dead, he's gone. Just like that? I needed answers, he needed to see my mom and apologize to her. He must be going straight to hell, he was an evil man. I don't get why they are crying so much for him. Maybe they knew a different man because once upon a

time, he was a great man that my mother fell inlove with. But bitterness and evil ways got him through his love for money and luxury. A funeral service company was called and we were sitting at the kitchen as they took his body to the mortuary. His wives were crying and it was a sad scene but not sad enough to make me cry. My mother taught me to never cry for unworthy people. You may call me bitter but he doesn't deserve my tears

Me: We have to go

Wife1: You're leaving, your father just passed away

Me: We have to go, Sneh has a baby to take care of and I have kids to take care off. He was never a father to us, we know two different Muzi's so you will never force us to mourn for a man who made our lives miserable.

Wife2: You will not talk about our husband that way!

Sneh: As she said, we know two different Muzi's. We might come by tomorrow. Goodbye

We left and Nkonzo and Mbulelo followed us

Mbulelo: Please do come by tomorrow and for the funeral. Nasi

will send me your number sis Sneh, so we can keep contact. We are siblings after all and shouldn't let our fathers mistakes ruin our relationship.

We said our goodbyes to them and drove home. I saw his car and he wasn't in the house alone. There were many cars parked outside and I guessed the house is fixed. We got in and greeted. Sneh walked right over to Danny and slapped him twice!

Sneh: That's for thinking you can damn hurt my sister you idiot.

Zandy: What the fuck did he do!

Me: Guys chill please, we've had a

long day. I just need some food and resting.

Lubah: What did he want?

Me: To apologize.

Mpho: And

Sneh: He's dead.

Thaps: Awu just like that?

Me: Yes Thaps, just like that.

I went upstairs and he followed me

Danny: Nasiphi

Me: Not now please

Danny: Nasi please we need to talk.

Me: Get the fuck out of my face!

He sighed and closed the door. I called my kids in and we got into bed together. It's been a long long day

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

Insert 35

I woke up with Onika's legs on my



face. Yhu this child! I moved her face and got out the bed. My body was paining and I had a massive headache. I closed my eyes for a minute and I felt him hold me.

Danny: Sit down

He helped me sit and I watched him as he went to the bathroom and ran a bath for me. He took off my clothes and saw what he did to me and shed a tear. I wasn't going to comfort him, he hurt me. I'm not going to feel sorry for him just because he is crying. He hardly ever cries and it hurts to see him cry but I won't feel sorry for him. He carried me and put me in the bath

tub.

Me: What did you put in here? It stings

Danny: It's going to take the pain away. I'll wake the kids up

I nodded and he closed the door. I sat in the bath tub and thought about it. I cried as it all played in my head again, it's a memory that I'll never forget. One of the very bad memories.

Onika: Are you crying mommy?

Me: Onika, when did you get in here? No mommy is not crying, I have something in my eye

Onika: Daddy! Daddy!! Mommy is

crying

Me: Onika, Sssh don't call...

I was too late, Daddy dearest was already here.

Onika: Mommy is crying daddy, if mommy cry than I cry too

Danny: I'm sorry, Daddy hurt mommy that's why she's crying. Come, let's go get you ready for school. Go to Denver, I'm coming.

She ran out and Danny sat on the edge of the tub.

Danny: I know you don't want to hear my sorries because you think they don't mean anything but they do. I'm

sorry Nasiphi. I lost it and couldn't control myself, I couldn't control what's inside of me. I'm sorry that I hurt you the way I did. No one wants to feel that pain, I for one has went through being raped, it's just the same as what I did to you. I will understand if you want to lay charges and have me arrested its fine. I deserve everything thats coming my way but all I'll ask is that you take care of our kids.

Me: I'd never get you arrested Danny, I won't do that.

Danny: Thank you. I don't deserve you Nasiphi, and I know you won't believe

it when I tell you this but I love you Amahle. I really do love you and I'm going to prove it to you, I'm going to be a better man for you and I'll love you the way you deserve to be loved. All I'm asking is for you to give me a chance, I know it will take time for you to forgive me and I won't rush you. But please give me a chance to fix this, please

I cried and nodded. He kissed my forehead and left. I finished up with my bath and lotioned my body. I went to my closet and looked for something to wear, I took a black suit pants and an olive blouse which was

long sleeve. The bruises were not that visible anymore and I covered the spots left with make up. I went downstairs and the kids were already having breakfast and were ready for school

Me: You're going to work?

Danny: Yes

I went back upstairs and took out a suit for him and made his tie. Went back downstairs and he dished up for me

Danny: KJ will drop off the kids. I'll take you to work

Me: Okay

Danver: I have soccer practice today so I'll have to be picked up at 4pm

Me: Should I make you another lunchbox?

Danver: No mom, dad already gave me enough money to buy something if I'm hungry.

Me: Okay

Onika: I also have practice, can I get more money?

Me: What practice Onika?

Onika: Mmmh dolly practice

Me: You're not really good at lying Lethukuthula.

She laughed and we went to brush our teeth.

Me: Bye sweeties, come kiss mommy

Onika came running and I hugged and kissed her.

Me: And then Danver?

Danver: Just on the cheek, I'm grown now you can't be kissing my lips.

Me: You're never too grown for me plus you're just 6.

I kissed his cheek and walked them to the car. They left with KJ and I stood by the door and smiled to myself. That's what kids do, they make you happy even at your lowest



moments.

Danny: Ready to go?

I nodded and he took my bags. I don't feel like talking to him. I don't know what I'll even say to him. He drove off and it was just silent all the way.

Danny: Babe, are you giving me the silent treatment?

I just looked out the window as he parked. I took my bags but he held my hand.

Danny: Babe how am I going to fix this if you're not even talking to me. Please say something

Me: Me being in this car is a sign of

me allowing you to fix your mess.  
Don't push it, now leave me alone.  
Bring me lunch at 12

Danny: Yes Mam.

I took my bags and he walked me to my office.

Danny: Bye babe, I love you. You can give me the silent treatment, I'll take whatever I get. I love you, remember that.

I nodded and he kissed my forehead and left. My PA walked in and gave me my coffee.

Julia: You have three operations to perform today

Me: Three? That's alot, I needed the afternoon off

Julia: Sorry but they specifically need you

Me: Send one in the emergency room in 10mins. Documents please.

Thank God they were heart transplantations. I changed and went into surgery. We were there for many hours and I came out at 3pm. I went to my office and got into the bathroom and showered. Yes, my office has a connected bathroom. I changed into my clothes and Danny was waiting for me

Me: Were you here since 12?

Danny: No, I was told you're in the theatre so I went back to work and your PA called to tell me you're done. Here's your late lunch.

Me: I'll eat on the way, we need to get going. Nkonzo has been calling me

Danny: Nkonzo?

Me: Big brother. You'll see my siblings, we all look alike. The wives though have an attitude.

He took my bags as I told him about everything that happened yesterday. When we got to Muzi's place, Sneh and MaNyathi were there already.

Me: Mom, what are you doing here?

MaN: My husband passed on so I have to pay my respects.

Me: Yhu you're even still calling him your husband, you have a big heart mom.

MaN: And so do you, Mkwenyana, it's good to see that you've cut off that ugly facial hair

Danny: Yes ma, Sneh can we talk aside please?

Sneh: Okay Danny

They went aside and we waited for them as they argued. They hugged it out and we went inside. Mbulelo

welcomed us and one of these girls was eyeing my man! Eyes off girly!

Wife1: What is this woman doing here!

MaN: Cebisile

Me: You know her?

MaN: Yes, she used to be my best friend. I see you went off and married my husband.

Me: Is she the first wife?

Cebisile: Yes I am!

Mom shook her head and we sat down.

Nkonzo: The lawyer will be here in a

few minutes to read the will

Sneh: Isn't that supposed to be done after the funeral?

Nkonzo: Dad wanted it to be done before the funeral, I don't know why.

The lawyer arrived and he greeted.

Lawyer: Is Mrs Ntombi Nyathi present?

MaN: Yes

Lawyer: I will proceed. This is the Will Mr Muziwokuthula Nyathi wrote and it cannot be protested against in court. Whoever does not agree with what is written here will have to keep what they received or the court will seize it if they rebel against this Will.

He left each and everyone of you a letter which you will receive after this meeting. It reads as follows: To my first son, Nkonzo Muziwokuthula Nyathi, I leave you to you my business that you are currently CEO at, and my house in Cape Town. I also give you R500 000. Mbulelo Nyathi, I give you the construction company in Durban and R500 000. I gave you the least amount of money because you make millions from the businesses I left you. To the twins, Ketho and Lutho, I leave you 1million each which you will both get when you graduate from University. To



Gugu and Zipho, I give you 2million each and you will get this money within two months because you have graduated and made me proud. To the 5young ones in high school, you will each get 1million rand when you graduate. I leave my house in JHB to Cebisile Nyathi and three of my cars. The house in Durban and another 3 of my cars(which are named on the will) will belong to Zethu Nyathi. By now you have all met my first love, my beautiful wife Ntombi Nyathi who is my first wife, she knows that I will be burried in Bizana next to my parents. I have two houses there which she

doesn't know about but they are hers now. I leave my land to her and she will be head of the preparations of my funeral. I leave her with the sum of 3million.

Cebisile: Angeke nikubone lokho!!  
Ngeke!( You will not see that! Never!)

Mbulelo: Mah, stop causing unnecessary drama.

Cebisile: Uyabayeka Zethu!  
Lomthakathi ndini will not get that( You let them be Zethu! This witch!)

Me: You will not call my mother a witch! Shut up before I slap you

Nkonzo: There will be no need for that, please sit down Nasiphi.

Lawyer: I will continue, I have been informed that my first child, Ziyanda has passed on, I leave 3million that will be shared amongst her kids. My two houses Durban, the ones in Hillcrest will belong to Snehlanhla and Pearl, they will decide who takes which. To my daughter Sneh, I give you an amount of 5million and lastly my precious Pearl, I give you my multi-million rand mining company, Nyathi Mining to you, I leave an amount of 10million rands and all my remaining cars which I believe are 5cars. I trust

that Nkonzo will lead this family and work hand in hand with his siblings. No one will contest this will. Thank you

"Lord Jesus how rich was he?" I whispered to myself.

Cebisile: Vuka Nyathi uzolungisa lasimba owenzile!(Wake up Nyathi and come fix this shit you created) I am the first wife and what I say goes! My husband will be buried here in Durban

MaN: You will shut that big mouth of yours Cebisile, you were there when I got married first to this man, you

witnessed it with your own two eyes, legally and traditionally I am his first wife. We will lay my husband in peace. Zethu, I believe you are the one with common sense and will not fight me, we will work together and plan this funeral. If that will be it, we will all pack and go down to Bizana tomorrow.

Lawyer: That will not be it, I would like to speak to Mr McKenzie aside.

Zipho: What does he have to do with my father?

She was the one who was eyeing my man.

Me: Whatever it is, it concerns him and not you.

Zipho: You will not talk to me that way

Me: Young girl, don't start with me. You won't be able to finish what you started.

I guessed shes Cebisile's daughter, they have the same stinking attitude. Zethu seemed to be nice today and wasn't Cebisile's pet. We sat for a while with my siblings and got to know each other. Honestly, Mbulelo and I were too alike, even our personalities were the same. I guess

its because we're the same age born on the same month.

Nkonzo: How was our sister, Ziyanda? I wish I could have met her.

Me: Yeah that's what I always wish so too

Mbulelo: Didn't you guys grow up together?

Sneh: It's a long story, I grew up with her. She was an amazing sister, very protective of me and very loving and an adrenaline junkie. She loved bikes.

Gugu: I'm sorry if this will be rude but we all look alike here besides Sis Sneh, are you our blood sister?

Nkonzo: Gugulethu

Sneh: No it's okay, I was adopted.

I looked at her, why doesnt she just tell them the truth? I hit her with my elbow when they weren't paying attention to us

Me: Why didn't you tell them the truth?

Sneh: They all now him as a saint, we'll keep it that way.

Me: And we know the devil himself.

Sneh: Will we accept what he gave us?  
It's alot

Me: I don't think we have a choice.  
Plus he pretty much owes us for the



shit we went through because of him.

He really did well for himself though

Sneh: Yeah he did.

The lawyer and Danny came back from outside and we said our goodbyes. When we got outside KJ was there, when did he get here?

Danny: Mah, KJ will take you to my house and please take the kids. We'll pick them up tomorrow morning.

Sneh, you'll ride with us, we're off to HQ.

Sneh: What for?

Danny: Urgent meeting, the others are headed there already.

Me: We better buy food on our way there, I'm hungry from that rabbit food we ate here.

We left and stopped at Nandos and got some food. We got to HQ and I took off my heels.

Danny: I'll get you your slippers

Me: Where are they?

Danny: The car

He got them and put them on me

Me: Thanks babe.

Athi: What is it that you called us here for? I was about to watch Blackish

Danny: Blackish can wait. As you

know Muzi has passed on and his will was read today. Sneh, MaNyathi and Nasi have to go to Bizana for the preparations of the funeral, I will accompany them and I need some other people to

Sbahle: Paula and I will go with you.

Athi: I'll have to go too, and Brain

Sbahle: Yhu! I'm going with couples!

Me: Kj will be there, he's single you know.

Phila: And then Nasi decides to match make.

Danny: Nasi now owns Nyathi Mining

Zandy: What!!! I'm never paying when we go out

Mpho: Thee Nyathi Mining that we all know off was owned by Muzi?

Me: Yup and I know nothing about a mining company

Danny: Don't worry, that will be sorted out. The bigger picture in all of this is that we're back in the drug business.

Me&Phelo: What! Drug business?

Zandy: Oh Omafikizolo, yes we have ran a drug business before and it was fun

Me: Fun! Selling drugs to kids is fun?

Nkosi: We didn't do that

Danny: And we won't do that. We supply, and we don't even supply in S.A we supply other countries.

Lyanda: Explain how we got ourselves back there?

Danny: His companies were a front, he was a drug lord. Seems as if he dug deep and knew one of us would be head of the force. I don't know how it happened but he left the business to me. I talked to Nkonzo, he's elder son and he said he never wanted to involved, he was going to give it off to Nasi but he didn't want

his child to do that. I was his daughters husband and now his other daughters boyfriend so he saw it fit that he leaves it all to me in interest of his daughter and grandchildren. Thats all I was told.

Jabu: Wow

Me: You can say that again

Danny: I cannot be running everything, the force is too much itself. The business is divided and is in 3 provinces. We need to scatter, Jabu, you're head of the business here in Durban. Mayibongwe, you're head in Joburg. There's another one in Cape

Town, I don't know who to assign

Brian: I'll take it.

Danny: You do know you'll have to stay in Cape Town

Brian: Yep, it will be brand new start for me. I'm not settled and don't have a wife and kids like you guys so relocating will be easier for me than any of you.

Danny: Guess thats sorted.

Wow Brian is really serious about just packing up and leaving.

Danny: Everything will start properly by next week. So you have some time to be looking for a house

Brian: Don't worry, I do have a house there.

Danny: Great! That's it for today.

Ntoko: Come to my house tomorrow  
Brian, we need to talk.

I looked at Paula and she was staring at Brian

Paula: Bye guys

Brian: Paula, wait!

She ran out and we all sighed

Thabo: Yet another complicated love story huh?

Lubah: Yep! Let's go

We all got into our cars and drove to



our homes. We got home and went straight upstairs

Me: Do you think Brian wants to leave because of Paula rejecting him?

Danny: Maybe, it's not really fun to be around someone who you deeply love but has rejected you, daily.

Me: I guess they'll work things out. Paula wasn't too happy about this.

Danny: She shouldn't have rejected him in the first place if she was interested.

Me: She has her own reasons and she wasn't ready

Danny: Which she should tell Brian,

he won't be waiting up on her forever. What if he's waiting for someone who will never be ready for a relationship?

Me: But we don't know that. Him leaving is just like he's giving up on her

Danny: We'll just agree to disagree plus it's none of our business babe. They are old enough to sort it out. Now sleep

I sighed and layed on his chest. It's true when they say life is unpredictable. Just not so long ago I was a stripper but now I am part owner of a hospital and I own a multi-

million mining company. God works  
in mysterious ways

Hope you enjoy

Suggest page to friends and friend's  
of friends

Please like and comment

#LBAR

Insert 36

I woke up very early in the morning so  
I can pack for the kids. They will be

staying at Sneh's while we gone and will come down to Bizana with her on Friday afternoon. I packed everything they needed and woke them up to prepare them for school.

Me: Morning sweetie, Onika, wakey wakey.

This girl loves sleeping, she's such a deep sleeper she wouldn't even hear you scream if she was sleeping and she hates waking up. I carried her and undressed her and bathed her even though she was half asleep. Tucked her back in bed when I was done with her and bathed Danver.

Onika: When are schools closing?

Me: It will be March soon sweetie  
you're going to close schools for just  
a week

Danver: Will we go on holiday?

Me: We can, I'll speak to daddy.  
Where do you want to go?

Onika: Cape Town!

Danver: We've been there many times  
before, I was thinking we can go to  
Dubai

Me: Wow Dubai, Mmmh well I've  
never been to both places so I'll be  
happy with whatever Dad decides on  
okay?

Them: Yes mom

We went downstairs and Danny had already made breakfast

Danny: Morning, sit down.

Onika: Daddy, mom and I want to go on a holiday to Cape Town but Danver wants to go to Dubai

Onika! I didn't say I want to go to Cape Town but I'll stick with my girl.

Danny: Well I'm with Danver, I want to go to Dubai. When were you thinking of going?

Me: This coming holiday

He scratched his head and I knew

he'd be leaving soon.

Danny: I'll make a plan

Me: Don't promise something you won't do

Danny: I said, I'll make a plan

Danver: We can go June holidays its fine

Me&Danny: No!

Me: Sorry

Danny: I'm sorry too, we'll all go to Dubai this holiday and we'll go to Cape Town June holidays okay?

Onika: Okay dad.

Danny: Let's go brush our teeth, come

mommy.

Me: Danny! What are you doing?

I laughed as he carried me on his back. He carried Onika and Danver

Onika: Daddy, we're all going to fall!

Danny: I'd never let you fall princess.

He walked to the bathroom and put us down. We brushed our teeth with him holding my waist and I was brushing his teeth

Danver: Daddy is mom's baby

Onika: He's blushing

Danny: What do you know about blushing?



Onika: Danver and Kabelo told me about it, they say Junior is always blushing when he's with Thembelihle.

Danver: Okay you talk too much  
Onika, let's go.

They ran out and we laughed and finished up.

Danny: I love you

Me: I'm glad you do.

Danny: I was supposed to be leaving next week but I won't leave, my family needs me more plus I need to get your drug business on its feet, plus you'll be studying.

Me: I don't have a drug business and

I'll be studying for what?

Danny: Baby, this business is yours.  
All the money it makes will be yours.

Me: No, it will be divided equally  
amongst all of us.

Danny: Fine, you'll be learning about  
the mining industry

Me: I was thinking of having the  
current CEO run the company, I have  
a hospital to run

Danny: Yes you can do that but also  
you need to know about everything  
that goes on so they don't do things  
under your nose just because you're  
clueless about the business

Me: Okay. Let's go say our goodbyes to the kids.

We went to the kids and decided we'd drop them off at school

Danny: Mommy and Daddy will be away for a while, we need to go to Bizana. But on Friday, you guys will also come to Bizana with Aunty Sneh

Onika: Where is that?

Me: Somewhere in the Eastern Cape.

Onika: Do they have pizza there?

Me: Yes sweetie

Onika: Okay you can go

We dropped them off at school and

Danny made sure their things are sent to Sneh's house. We went home and packed our things while he showered. After an hour we were all on the road, I was riding with Danny, Sbahle and mom, Paula with Brian and KJ and Sneh and Athi. We were going to arrive around 1pm at the village we were going to and then we'll head back to the BnB we booked which is closer to the village. The trip was fun because of my mom and Sbahle, their conversation was just too explicit

Mom: As much as Muzi become a bastard along the way, but that man

was a good man. He gave it to me  
real good, I haven't had some for  
years but sweetie the glow is still  
there. If my face wasn't burnt, you'd  
see how beautiful I was

Danny: You're still very beautiful  
MaNyathi

Mom: Thank you son, yes I am but I  
was much more beautiful than this.  
But hey, I still have my sexy body to  
show off. I should get myself a  
boyfriend

Sbahle: Mah! No no no

Me: Heck no

Mom: I'm still just in my late 40s

people get married even at 60!

Danny: You're still very young and fresh MaNyathi. I can even hook you up

Me: Danny! You're encouraging this  
We were closer and mom directed us. Apparently the directions were on the letters he left us because the rest of the family also knew where they are going. I did not even read the letter but I will do so tonight. We got there and we were the last to arrive. It was a very big yard with many houses and rondavels. The main big house was very big too. His entire family will fit

here. There were neighbours and extended family members who had already arrived and many people from the village

Brian: It seems as if he was well known

Mom: I guess so, but here, people come even though they didn't know the person. The free food and alcohol is much more important. Let me go greet his brothers and uncles, Its been a while. Will you be okay Paula? I don't think they're here

Paula nodded. She seemed a bit uncomfortable and I looked at Brian

Brian: I also don't know, she didn't even speak much on our way here

Me: And you're really leaving?

Brian: Yep and I'm not changing my mind.

Athi: Okay I don't think just standing here is a good idea, people are already looking at us

Sbahle: I did say we should hire old cars like Toyota those Ventures, now people are looking at these expensive cars

Kj: Nonsense, this family also has expensive cars

Sbahle: Do you see any Mercedes G-



Class there? Audi A7?

Kj: No

Sbahle: Thought as much.

Sneh: Let's just go guys. Cebisile is already giving us a bad eye, we don't want them to call us snobs.

Kj: Well we are with a snob here

Sbahle: And who would that be Kaitso?

Kj: You hawu

Sbahle: Mxm

Danny: Just stop please, you guys are like Tom and Jerry.

We walked into the yard and

exchanged greetings with some people. Another old woman came forth and looked at Paula

Her: Ndinani!

Mom came rushing to us and the villagers also came

Mom: Masbutha! Don't start

Man2: The witch is back!!! Ndinani is here!

They were picking up stones as Paula started running away. Who is Ndinani? Could it be Paula? Danny, KJ and Athi were fighting off the people as Brian and I ran after Paula. When we got to her she was having a panic attack

Brian: Paula, breath in and out. Come on, breath in and out. Do it again

Me: Here's some water

The others came followed by Mbulelo and Gugu.

Me: Mom will you please explain what is going on?

Paula: I am Ndinani Tsheeru, my father was a Nigerian traditional healer and when he came to Bizana he met my mother and they fell inlove but the villagers were against their relationship. They said by Father was wicked witch. I have my father's traditional mark on my back which

his forefathers also had. So to them, I would've taken over my father's gift. My father got involved in something which he was meant to heal a great man of the village not knowing that, that same man used to be a witch before sickness made him weak and lay on his deathbed. When they saw my father there, they all thought it was a confirmation to their assumptions that my father is a witch. They stoned him alive till he died. My mother and I ran away as a friend of hers came to tell us to run because they were coming for me. We ran to the village where Masbutha is from,

we stayed there until I was 19 that's when they discovered we were the family of Great Tsheeru. My mother died saving my very own life. I ran away until I found MaNyathi. They all believe I am a witch

Brian: And the name Paula?

MaN: I named her Paula

Brian: They will die first if they think they'll stone you to death!

He took his gun and so did Athi

Sneh: Woah guys no

Mbulelo: I'm sure there's something we can do without any violence

Paula: I can just leave

Me: You're not going anywhere.

Where is Nkonzo?

Mbulelo: Town

I nodded and we all walked back to the yard. The villagers were angry and they were armed with sjamboks, stones and lit fire sticks. When did they even get those?

Danny: Everyone! Silence please

Boy: Angeke sivhe ngomlungu esingamaziyo tshin! Unguban na wena uzosixelela lonto( We will not be told what to do by a white person we don't even know. Who are you to

tell us that?)

Danny: Ndizokudibanisa nezinyanya zakho kwedini.( I will make you meet your ancestors boy)

Most were shocked to see Danny speak Xhosa. Some people here spoke deep Xhosa and Mpondo I couldn't understand some of the things they said.

Me: I hear you want to kill Ndinani because you think she is a witch! That will not happen in my late father's yard!

Masbutha: Who are you?

Me: I am the daughter of

Muziwokuthula Nyathi, and this entire house and yard you're standing in now belongs to my mother! You will not disrespect us and her daughter, Ndinani like this. Why would we come with a witch to my fathers place? Why would we bring harm to his people? She is not a witch and if you cannot respect that, Leave! We can bury our father alone in peace, we don't need you here to cause unnecessary drama.

Mbulelo opened the big gate and stood there

Mbulelo: You heard what she said, you may leave.



Some of them left and some stayed and threw away the things they were carrying

Brian: And if I hear that any of you, I mean any of you treated her badly or make her even cry by your nasty comments. I will not hesitate to kill you.

Cebisile: You acting like you call the shots in this yard, you forgetting that I am Muzi's wife and we will not be told what to do by any of you and I will not stay with a witch

Mom: Cebisile! Shut that big mouth of yours. You forgetting that you're in

my house, not yours. I can kick you out anytime. Everyone should go back to whatever they were doing before all of this started, the coffin will be here soon. We need to be seated inside the house.

Everyone went back to whatever they were doing and we went inside

Gugu: We were just sitting in that room with Bulelwa(other sibling), I don't know which room the others are.

Sneh: We'll join you there, the less people the better

Sbahle: You can say that

Danny: We'll be outside with the other

men. Call us if you need us

They left with Mbulelo and we sat in the room.

Buu: Hey sisters

Gugu: I hope you haven't finished the stuff

Buu: The way these aunties talk, they making me loose my mind. Here

Sneh: Alcohol, just what I need.

Sbahle: Amen to that

Me: Bulelwa, aren't you too young to be drinking alcohol? How old are you

Buu: 18, this family drives you into alcohol. The drama never ends,

especially with Cebisile and Zipho!  
Yhu bayandidika strong( they really annoy me)

Gugu: Ayboh that's your mother wena

Buu: Just because she gave birth to me doesn't make her my mother.

Paula: And you gugu, Aunt Zethu is your mom?

Gugu: Yep, Nkonzo, Bulelwa, Zipho, Pamela, And Ntsikelelo are Cebisile's kids. Mbulelo, Ketho, Lutho, Cebo, Mbuthi, and I are Zethu's and that makes up the 11 of us

Me: With Cebo being the youngest?

Buu: Yep

Paula: Very big family

Buu: With loads of drama, I cannot wait to just go to the Western Cape next year and leave this place

Gugu: You need to first pass grade 12.

We stayed and talked for a while and then we were called to go sit with the entire family. There was a church service which was more like a memorial service. After it ended we went to dish up for everyone. One of the uncles was given food by Paula and he told her to eat it first before he does. When she questioned him he threw it on her face. He earned

himself a beating from Brian who had him on the wall with a gun in his mouth

Nkonzo: Put the gun down please  
Brian!

Brian: I made it clear to everyone and you choose to disrespect me!

Paula: Brian, please put the gun down.

Brian: I will kill this man and he won't be the only one we bury on Saturday

Paula: Mashiyamahle, Ngcobo, please don't do it.

Am I allowed to find this cute? I know we're in a shitty situation but it got very cute when Paula was begging

Brian. He put the gun down and  
kissed Paula's forehead

Brian: Let's get out of here

Paula: I'll go get my bag

Kj: We'll follow you soon, I'll ride with  
Athi.

They left and we continued serving  
food and cleaning up. I was glad  
there were many girls here so we  
didn't have any problems with  
dividing the duties amongst us so we  
didn't work that much.

Pamela: You are very beautiful sis  
Sneh, I want to look like you when I  
grow up

Sneh: Oh wow thank you Pammy, you will look twice as beautiful as I am

Zipho: With fake weaves

Sbahle: Excuse me? Stay in your lane please

She rolled her eyes and Sbahle did so too.

Buu: Told you about the endless drama in this family. I'm out! Peace ya'll!!!!

She did the peace sign and walked to the room we were in.

Sneh: I love her so much already.

We laughed and called mom



Me: When are we leaving? I want to go now

MaN: You can leave and come back tomorrow morning

Sbahle: Mah, you're not coming with us?

MaN: I'm not leaving my house with these vultures. I need to keep an eye on everything.

Me: I don't like leaving you here

MaN: Don't worry, I'll be fine.

We said our goodbyes to those who paid attention and walked out.

Me: Keep an eye on my mother

Mbulelo

Mbulelo: Will do, drive safely. I'll see you tomorrow.

I went to the car with Sbahle while Danny spoke to Mbulelo, Nkonzo and some guy. KJ was also in a deep conversation with Athi and one of my uncle's

Sbahle: I hope it won't be one of those long conversations where we have to wait. I'm tired already.

After 30 minutes or so they were done and we drove to the BnB.

Danny: Your family is very divided

Me: What do you mean?

Danny: Many family arguments, they cannot just agree on one thing. They don't get along

Me: Buu did mention there's a lot of family drama

Danny: Speaking of drama, your other sister that has a stinking attitude was flashing her small ass at me.

Me: What?

Danny: It was very funny because one of the drunk guys from the village ended up spanking her, she was so angry. She was serving us food so she decided to bend down and flash her stupid ass on my face.

I didn't know how I felt about that but she should really stay in her lane. It actually upset me and this guy was seeing it as funny

Danny: You cute when you get jealous and angry over me. Don't worry, I'm yours and yours alone. I love you

Me: I love you too

Sbahle: I'm still here too, being third wheel sucks but hey, I love you guys too.

Hope you enjoy

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

Please like and comment

#LBAR

Insert 37

The past few days have been exhausting. Preparing for the funeral was its own complication and the family drama just added onto the exhaustion. Honestly if Buu wasn't here with her secret stashes of alcohol I'd be laying six feet under.

Zipho and Cebisile have a PHD in drama I tell you. Zipho has been wearing tight sexy clothes and she's really cute but not soo cute because she's trying charm my man. Its so sad to see her angry when Danny decides to get cosy with me infront of her, boy who am I kidding, I enjoy each and every minute of it. The others arrived yesterday and the kids are also here. Nkonzo and Mbulelo were very happy to see their niece and nephew. Honestly I have the best brothers ever, I've become close to them and I love the bond we share. Buu and Gugu we also get along but

then its not the same as it is with my brothers.

Danny: Baby, if you don't get out of that bed, we'll be late.

Me: Mmmh I could just sleep on this bed all day

Danny: Well you cannot, now go shower.

Danny and I have been okay I guess, he's been there for me and trying to make things right. I havent forgotten what he did to me and I don't think I'll ever forget. We still have never had sex since then and it's going to stay that way for a while. We have never

even took a shower together. We just hug and kiss like high school kids. I took a long bath just so I can take my own time. I didn't want to even go to his funeral but I have to. Worst part, I'm in the programme.

Danny: Get out of the water, we're late.

Onika: Daddy, I cannot find my shoe

Danny: I'm coming. Better get out before I drag you out

Me: Fine!

Knowing Danny, he would really really drag me out. I dried myself up and lotioned.



Danny: I ironed your clothes and your shoes are right there. Packed a pair of slippers just incase you get tired in those high heels.

Me: Aaah that's soo cute. Thanks babe

Danny: Don't get used to it.

I laughed and got dressed. Helped Danny and Danver with their ties and we were done.

Me: Where are the others?

Danny: They've left already

He drove off and he was pretty much annoyed by me delaying. He sure damn doesn't like being late at all.

Danver: Daddy is angry

He whispered to me and I nodded  
then we laughed

Onika: They talking about you daddy

Danver: You're such a snitch Onika

Onika: You don't want me to start  
telling the parents your secrets huh?  
So don't call me a snitch

Danny: Blackmail, you're growing to  
be more sassy each and every day.

We got to my home and everything  
seemed to be ready. The kids went to  
Kabelo and Masande, they also came  
and the other kids are in Durban.

MaDlamini was also here

Me: Hey mom

MaD: Hello my baby, you look beautiful.

Zipho: She doesn't look like someone who just lost a father

And where did she come from?

Me: Morning to you too Zizipho. He wasn't a father to me, so it doesn't affect me in anyway. So sorry for your loss dear sister. Excuse me, I'll be back mom

MaD: Hurry, the service is about to start.

I went to my girls who looked very beautiful and sexy.

Me: Mamasitas!

Belinda: Zandy is about to kick ass!

Me: Why? What happened?

Zandy: That skinny ass bitch over there decides to say "Uyazenzela usizisela abelungu" uhlanganaphi yena!?! Mxm ("She's doing whatever she wants, she's bringing whites here" where does it concern her")

Me: Don't mind her, Zipho is just something I don't understand

Gugu came to us and greeted.

Gugu: Oh my god! I cannot believe this, is this really you Queen

Nokukhanya and Princess Nokuthula?

Me: Nokukhanya? Nokuthula?

Naye: Yes it is, Nokukhanya is a name I was given by the Royal Family when I got married to Nkosinathi and Nokuthula is Phelo, she also got the name when she got married to Mayibongwe

Me: Oh I didn't know

Gugu: It's a pleasure to meet you.

Me: How do you know about them?

Gugu: I've seen them on Magazines.

Zandy: Do you know me?

Gugu: No I'm sorry, I don't think I do

Zandy: Damn! Naye and Phelo, y'all

not famous enough.

We laughed at her, Zandile is just so crazy. We went to the tent and sat down.

Mbulelo: Nasiphi, your seat is at the front row

Me: But I'm fine here

MaN: You have to sit with your siblings

Me: Where is Sneh?

Mbulelo: She's already seated there.

I sighed and went to sit next to Sneh and Buu. MaZethu was crying silently and it was very sad because she was

really hurt and mourning her husband peacefully and it was sincere unlike MaCebisile who was throwing herself all over and crying very dramatically just for attention.

Buu: Where on Earth does that woman come from? Why is she causing such a scene

Nkonzo: I don't know and I'm not going to entertain it.

Me: She's your mother

Ntsikelelo: She's Zizipho's mother

It was the first time he spoke and I smiled at him. He seems shy and he's very handsome, I'm sure girls love

him very much. He's doing grade 11. Seems as if all Cebisile's kids don't like her besides Zipho. The service begun and we stopped talking. The young kids were very emotional and Cebo sat on me and I tried comforting him. My jealous baby, Onika came from his daddy and wanted to sit on me too. I shifted Cebo a bit and they both sat on me. My mother stood up and sang, she was going to talk as his first wife.

MaN: Good morning to everyone who is here and thank you for being with us as we say goodbye to our beloved Muziwokuthula Nyathi. Most of you



know me but didn't know that I am Muzi's wife. Some don't know me at all. Muzi and I met at a very young age, he was my first love. He was the most loving, caring and sweetest man I ever knew. He loved me, he genuinely loved me and I loved him too. We were young and in love, as a result we had our first child when I was still just a teenager. Life happened, he did some mistakes, mistakes that tore us apart but all of that never changed the love I have for him. There was a time where I hated him because his mistakes separated me and my children but I forgave him.

Not for him but myself because I was able to heal. I forgive you  
Muziwokuthula. Rest in peace  
Muziwokuthula Nyathi, rest in peace  
my husband.

My mom, I have no words for her.  
After everything that he has done,  
she still loves him. She's got a huge  
heart indeed. After Nkonzo, Zizipho  
and Pamela spoke it was my turn.  
Sneh held my hand and I went  
carrying Onika because she didn't  
want me to leave her on the seat.

Me: I don't have much to say, I didn't  
know him, I only knew his name and  
that he was my father and that

happened just a year ago. The woman who just sat down here is my mother, I also found her just a year ago. As my mother said, his mistakes separated us. And forgiving him is something huge, I woke up not even wanting to come to this funeral because of the anger and the disgust I had towards him. But as I'm standing here in feeling different, I'm feeling sad that he's foolish decisions took away the chance of us knowing him. It took away the chance of us knowing our mother, by our I mean my late sister Ziyanda and my sister over there, Sneh. I don't know the

type of man he was, my siblings and I know a different Muzi, the way they talk about him shows how much he loved his family and his kids. My heart has healed and forgiven but I will not forget. Thank you for everything that you have given me, I wish it could make up for all the time we lost but it cannot. Thank you for acknowledging my mother and us as your kids. Rest in peace Dad.

Tears just fell from my eyes, I tried holding them back but I couldn't. I didn't want to cry for him but he is still my father. I wouldn't be in this world if it wasn't for the seed he

planted in my mothers womb. Onika  
wiped off my tears as I sat down

Me: Thank you baby

Onika: Dad is calling you

I looked at him and he signalled that I  
should go outside to him. He went  
out first and I followed.

Me: What is it?

Danny: I wanted to check up on you,  
are you okay?

Me: I feel better not so angry  
anymore.

He hugged us and kissed me

Onika: Dad! I'm right here

Danny: Sorry sweetie. You can go back now

Me: But I want to stay here with you

Danny: Babe, its your dads funeral. Pay your last respects

Me: Yes sir

I went back to my seat and sat down.

Nkonzo: Just in time, your mother is about to speak.

He was talking about Cebisile and I wondered what she was going to say.

She sang and Lord was it horrible.

Buu was laughing out loud and did it even hide me. Sneh smacked her thigh and she shut up.

Gugu: Geez somebody stop her  
After some time she finally stopped!  
Thank God.

Cebisile: Nyathi, oh my loving  
husband. You have left me in this  
world filled with bitter and evil people.

Buu: Says the devil herself

Me: You really hate her

Buu: You have no idea, its deeper  
than hate.

Me: I wonder what she did to you

Buu: It's a story for another day.

Cebisile: The day I met you I knew  
you were the one for me, you were

just with the wrong woman at that time. But because we were meant to be, you found your way to me, your soulmate. I know you love me and only me, you only married Zethu because you impregnated her. Other than that, as your first wife, not the one who claims to be your first wife but your real first wife, I will make sure everything you owned is well taken care off and your businesses are still a success. We worked very hard for them and I will not let other people enjoy what we worked hard for. I will miss you, Rest in peace.

Eeh! This woman, that was



completely unnecessary and  
MaZethu just cried. She shouldn't let  
this woman make her cry like this.  
She's not worth her tears. The service  
was over and we went to where he  
was buried. We threw in the soil and  
he was covered and laid to rest next  
to his parent's graves. I gave Onika to  
Danny and went to help out as we  
served everyone food

Ntoko: This is the part I hate about  
any function, its tiring.

Bee: You're just lazy

Nceba: You can say that again

Once we were done we also dished

up for ourselves and ate. Danny came to me and kissed my cheek

Danny: You so sexy

He whispered to me and I laughed.

He is just something else

Kamo: You're so inlove, its too cute.

Gugu: Very cute

When we were done we stood outside, Nkosi had Onika and I was carrying Danver. Paula came limping and trying to run. Her leg was bleeding

Siya: Oh my God! Paula! What happened?

Me: Brian! Brian!

He came running and when he saw Paula crying and her leg, he's face went pale.

Brian: Paula, what happened?

Paula: They wanted to cut it off, its painful.

Brian: Who did this!

Paula: They ran away but I know of them, he stayed in my village. He's name is Boti.

Thaps: I'll rush her to the hospital

Paula: No need to, I know how to treat it.

Athi: And I'll help

Me: What is that red thing?

Paula: Muti, its supposed to make my leg rot, they put it since I was fighting them and couldnt cut my leg off

Zandy: Some people are just too cruel

Brian: Take care of her, where does this Boti stay!

Ntsikelelo: I know where he stays, I can take you there

Cebisile: Ntsikelelo!! You are not going anywhere

Ntsikelelo: I don't take instructions

from you, can I go Bhut'Nkonzo?

Nkonzo: Yes

Lubah: I'll come with.

Paula: Be safe

Brian kissed her cheek and they left.

She treated her wound with Athi's help and bandaged it.

Me: Does it hurt?

Paula: No I'm fine.

We sat together outside and most people from the village had left. It was just some men and uncles who sat with the gents and they were listening to Maskandi and drinking

alcohol. Ijuba and Mqombothi to be specific, I was shocked when Danny drank it too. My white man is a black man.

Buu: I'm thirsty

Me: Your drinking habit worries me

Gugu: I've tried to stop her many times

Zandy: Where is the liquor store here?

Buu: In my bedroom, follow me.

Naye: Hehe this child!

We followed her to the room which she has entitled has her liquor store. Everyone just found a place sit and

she took out her secret stash under the bed

Zandy: You and I will get along just fine.

We drank the afternoon away and had a very lovely conversation going on. It was fun and I was happy to see everyone happy and getting along well. Zipho, I don't know where she is and I do not care. My other sister weren't bad at all and I know if we spend more time together we will be much closer. I'll come see them tomorrow before we go back to Durban. Mom called me and I went to her

Me: Mommy dearest

MaN: Well I was talking to MaDlamini and MaZethu about my decision

Me: What decision?

MaN: I've decided to stay here for a while just until everything is settled.

Me: Ma, what? No you'll be so far from us

MaN: If you want to see me you'll come here, this is your home. I need to stay here and make sure everything is in order. My husband has trusted me with this place and I will not disappoint him

Me: Fine then, if that's what you want



MaN: Thank you baby, you'll come see me before you leave right?

Me: Yes I will come by tomorrow. I love you

MaN: I love you too

Brian came back and we went outside to him

Paula: What happened? You have blood on your shirt

Brian: Don't worry, I took care of him

Paula: What do you mean?

He gave her that look, I just knew that Brian killed that guy.

Ntsikelelo: Bhut'Brian beat him up! He

was like Mike Tyson! Boti was crying like a baby! YeLutho mfanam! Hehe you missed out big time!

Me: This seems to be exciting you

Ntsikelelo: It is! I was watching wrestling live sis!

Mbulelo: He loves fighting, he does boxing at school. That's why its so exciting to him

We sat and listened as he talked about what went down. He told us how he was sad when Brian locked him in the car and left. I guess thats when he killed this Boti guy. It was getting dark and we all got into our

cars and drove to the BnB

Phelo: Guys lets have dinner again,  
I'm starving

Nkosi: You and I both

Me: I'll just have dessert

Danver: I'm full but I can never say no  
to food.

They set up the table for us, we  
booked the whole BnB we were the  
only guests there. It wasn't that big  
but it was big enough for all of us. We  
sat and ate.

Phelo: I'm having a girl guys!

Nceba: Oh wow! Congratulations!

Zandy: So cute! Mayibongwe will spoil the child

Mayi: You got that right

Paula: I also have something to say

Mpho: Oh what is it? Are you okay?

Paula: Yes Mpho I'm fine. I'm leaving

Brian: You're leaving!?! Where are you going?

Jabu: Why are you upset because you're also leaving?

Siya: Good question

Nceba: Just let her finish please, you guys know how to ruin a perfect moment

Paula: I'm leaving, I'm leaving with you Brian. I want to go to Cape Town with you

Brian: What? Paula, are you sure?

Paula: I've never been so sure about something.

Brian just kissed her and she was shocked but kissed him back. Call me dramatic but I was already crying.

Kj: This is too romantic, I need vodka

Sbahle: It shows that you know nothing about romance

Kj: Sbahle, I wasn't talking to you. You're very forward.

Mpho: This is actually the time where you guys shut up and the choir says?

Us: Ncooooooooooooooh!!

We all said together and the laughter we shared was really good!

Danny: You're such a baby, you're already crying

Me: It was very romantic babe

We had dessert and I was very clingy laying on Dannys shoulder. Everyone went to their rooms but Sneh, Paula and I remained. Well we just wanted to talk to Paula.

Sneh: Little sis, are you sure about this?

Paula: Yes I am, mom spoke lots of sense into me and made me realize alot

Me: So mom knows?

Paula: Yep they both know.

Sneh: And your job?

Paula: I'll look for a job there.

Me: I'm so happy for you

Sneh: Did mom tell you guys that she won't be leaving with us tomorrow

Me: Yes, you guys are all just leaving when we had just found you

Paula: We're only a phone call away. Plus you can come see me at

anytime

We hugged and walked to our rooms. Who would've known that things would turn this way? I have a big big family that I love and they love me too. I'm happy, and I don't know what pain and suffering is anymore. I'm blessed to have such a lovely group of friends who are my family, and my family that I've just found. Its all just overwhelming and I couldn't be more happier.

Hope you enjoy

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends



Please like and comment

Sorry if it's short.

#LBAR

Insert 38

Everything seemed to be falling into place and was coming good together. Its been 2weeks since we came back from Bizana, my mom settled in just fine and it doesn't seem as if she'll be coming back anytime soon. Danny

kept on telling me to let her be and if she wants to stay there for good I should support her. It's really hard because she's far away from me, she's my mother and I want her close to me but I have to support what she wants and visit her occasionally. We all went down to Langelihle for the weekend as it was Phelo's baby shower. Paula and Brian also came, they settled in well in Cape Town and Paula isn't looking for a job, she says she's still enjoying being taken care off. She'll look for a job next year. This girl! But it's no problem because Brian is more than capable of taking

care off her. Plus she's been through alot, she needs a break. I woke up and Danny wasn't in bed, the palace is big and we all have rooms here. I took a shower and went downstairs after I had cleaned the room and made the bed and I found the girls at the lounge.

Me: Good morning ladies

Them: Morning

Me: Where is Danny?

Nceba: We're in Langelihle sweetie, we're very single when we're here.

Kamo: They went to some meeting. They mentioned something about a

farm. Naye went with them since she heads up the projects of farming here

Me: It must be great

Phelo: It is but its also tiring. I'm glad I'm not a Queen, its too much work and you have to smile at all times, geez I cannot fake a smile.

Siya: Thats because you're mean

Phelo: I'm not mean! Nangamso is very mean, she won't even laugh with you if she doesnt feel you, she cannot even pretend.

They were now arguing about who is the meanest between them. Belinda and I just sat and watched their

stupid argument. One of the helpers came

Her: Breakfast is served, may you please come to the dinning room?

Me: Thank you, we'll follow you.

We went to the dinning room and sat

Me: I love this place, who did the interior designs?

Siya: Nkosi and Phila

Me: It's really beautiful.

We dished up for and the kids came to join us. We all ate and the kids were at their own table making so much noise. We finished up and the

girls went to their rooms to shower and change. I was left with Phelo and Nceba

Me: Let's go for a walk at the garden please

Nceba: You guys can go, I need to check a few e-mails and make some calls

Phelo and I went outside, the guards followed us but we told them we're going to the garden. Plus there are guards all over this place we're fine. We walked in comfortable silence and came across Mbonisi, Naye's last born. He is, he is too much of Nkosi.

He's serious and not very playful

Mbonisi: Morning

Phelo: You should be with the other kids Mbonisi, what were you doing here?

Mbonisi: Masande and I took a walk, but I'm going back now. He's still there drawing

Phelo: Takes after his father, Phila loves drawing.

Me: I can tell, that's how he followed his passion and became an architect.

Mbonisi ran to the house and we continued walking. It's a very peaceful and beautiful place. I really

enjoy being here, the grass is green, the sun is shining bright and the flowers are breathtaking.

Phelo: Naye doesn't come to this side of the garden.

Me: Why?

Phelo: She's allergic to flowers, she sticks to that side, there's artificial flowers. Nkosi took down the flowers there and put Artificial one's when Naye came here.

Me: Thats so cute

We walked around and she started crying

Me: What is it?



Phelo: I'm in pain.

Me: Shit I think your water just broke.  
What do I do?

Phelo: I have to get to that room

The room she pointed to was so far  
from where we were at and there  
were no guards.

Me: Okay I've never done this before  
and I don't know what to do but  
mmmh just breath and I'll go call for  
help

Phelo: You cannot leave me here!

Me: Did you atleast carry your phone?

Phelo: No! Aaaaah!!

Oh God! I screamed for help and the guards came running followed by Nceba

Nceba: She's giving birth?

Me: I think so

Nceba: I'll go get the helpers to get the room ready and call Gogo.

Me: Gogo?

Nceba: She delivers the royal babies.

The guard's carried her and we went to the delivery room. It was fully equipped and she laid on the bed.

The Queen Mother and Gogo came in.

Me: I'll call Mayi

Phelo: Tell him I hate him! We will never ever have sex again!

MaQ: Woah girl, don't take such drastic decisions. My son cannot starve.

This woman! I laughed and called Mayi

Me: If you don't want to be starved for the rest of your life, you'll come home

Mayi: What do you mean? Are we running out of food?

Me:(laughs) No man, your wife is giving birth and she says she hates you and you'll never have sex again

Mayi: Oh hell no, that's not happening  
I'm horny right now, just thinking  
about her makes me horny.

Me: Geez Mayibongwe! I don't want  
to hear about your horny dick right  
now. Just come home

Mayi: The look your man is giving me.  
We're coming, well thats if Danny  
doesn't kill me.

I ended the call and he seemed so  
chilled for someone who is having a  
baby right now.

Phelo: Take the baby out!!

Gogo: The baby won't come out if you  
don't push Nokuthula! Push!

Phelo: I can't

Me: She cannot breath properly

I went to her and connected her to a machine that helped her breath. I guess Athi might have organized everything thats in here. I monitored her breathing and she tried pushing

MaQ: I'm going to need you to push harder

Mayi came in and stood by the door

Mayi: She's really giving birth!

Phelo: Mayibongwe

She was crying and he held her. While I was wiping off her sweat

Mayi: I need you to be strong and push, push harder

They did a breathing exercise together and she pushed. She pushed three times and the baby came out crying really loud. It was such a cute thing to watch. I was already crying when they gave the baby to Mayibongwe

Mayi: Hello Princess, Hello Princess Alwande. Daddy's little girl

Phelo: Mayi, I also want to carry her

Mayi: Oh sorry, I forgot about you. She's too cute

Phelo was cleaned and stitched up.

Me: We'll give you guys some space

MaQ: Will we?

Me: Yes Mah, come lets go.

MaQ: I never thought I'd see  
Mayibongwe married, let alone  
having a baby. This brings joy to my  
heart.

Me: You should be proud.

MaQ: How are you and my son?

Me: We're good mah, things have  
been tough but we're good now

MaQ: He loves you, just look at how  
he keeps on looking at you.

Me: Awu Mah

MaQ: I know true love when I see it.  
Now go to him

I went to Danny and he held me  
closely and kissed me.

Danny: I've missed you

Me: I missed you too

Danny: Come with me, there's a place  
I need to show you.

Me: Should I take my bag?

Danny: No, no need to babe.

We got into the car and drove off. I  
didn't even know where we were  
going. He parked the car on the side  
of the road. People were greeting him



and were happy to see him

Me: You're well known around here

Danny: I'm the Kings council member, ofcause they know me. Come, get on my back

Me: Why?

Danny: I don't want you to hurt yourself while we walk down here

I got on his back and he kept on playing with my butt

Me: Danny!

He laughed and walked. This place was really beautiful. We got to some stone and he put me down and we

sat.

Danny: Nkosi took me here when I was so depressed and wanted to just end my life. He left me here and I just sat and cried. I could say that this is where I come just to find peace and think, it's my safe place.

Me: It's really beautiful here.

Danny: Nasiphi, I'm really sorry about what I did to you. I'll never be able to forgive myself nor forget the pain I put you through. I'm sorry and I know those words cannot take away the pain but I really mean it.

Me: You don't need to apologize

anymore. I've forgiven you. You just need to assure me that it will never ever happen again Danny.

Danny: It won't happen again. I don't want to ever loose you

Me: And you won't. Just don't hurt me and you won't loose me

Danny: I love you

Me: I love you too

Danny: Since we now know your family and I know you're brothers and uncles, I want to go do things the right way

Me: What do you mean?

Danny: I took your innocence, I broke your virginity so I need to do right by them and pay for the damages.

Me: Oh wow uhm isn't that supposed to happen if you impregnated me?

Danny: It shows that you don't know much about culture and tradition. I have to pay babe.

Me: Okay and when do you want to do this?

Danny: As soon as possible, I talked to Nkonzo and he said he'll talk to his uncles and give me the date on when we should come. I needed to talk to you about it first

Me: Oh okay my black white man

Danny: I was also going to ask for your hand in marriage. I was going to also pay lobola for you, that was the initial plan. But after talking to my boys, I realized that you'd say I'm rushing things

Me: You were going to do that?

Danny, I think it's too early

Danny: It's not too early, I want to make you my wife

Me: Triston

Danny: Amahle

Me: Babe, don't you think you're rushing things?

Danny: I know what I want, and that's you being my wife. I know you think you're not ready and might still have some doubts about us and I understand but I'm just letting you know that I have good intentions and that you're stuck with me for the rest of your life. I know you're probably scared, it's your first serious relationship and you're afraid of rushing into marriage because you still think that things won't work out

Me: Danny... I.

He cut me off and it was visible that he was hurt.

Danny: I know you don't fully trust me Nasiphi and I don't blame you. I don't know what is it that I have to do to prove that my love for you is genuine and I'm not with you because you remind me of Zee. That I'm rushing you into getting married because my friends are all married, its not that and I wish one day you'd fully trust me when I say I love you and want to be with you for the rest of your life. I know you've been through alot, I'm not Hector nor Muzi I'm not going to promise you the world and leave you just like they did to your mother's. You've never been around what I call

true love that much, but I'm hoping you see it and feel it when you're around our friends because what they share with their spouses is what I call true love. I'm not trying to make you feel bad about not being ready but I'm trying to get you to see that you're just afraid and that fear is holding you back. I'm trying to get you to open your eyes and see that the things you're trying to ignore and think that they didn't affect you as a person actually did affect you. Stop lying to yourself and let go of the fear. Just know that I love you and this is forever.



I was already in tears and he wiped them off. Where has he been all my life? This man loves me and loves me so much to see me worthy of being his wife. I'm overwhelmed and I don't know what to even say to him. His words hit right deep down and everything he said is true. We sat in comfortable silence and he kept on playing with my hair. It's like he knew I had no response to his words and didn't force a conversation with me. We were silent for a while and he kissed me.

Danny: Would you have sex with me in the bush?

Me: Okay now you're crazy! Let's go.

Danny: Why are you running away?

It's just a question

Me: You're crazy, the fact that you're asking me that is because you're thinking about it

Danny: Well I wouldn't mind doing it, it's called being adventurous

Me: I'd never do that nonsense

Danny: Yes Mrs McKenzie

I looked at him and he laughed at me

Danny: Don't give me that look, you should just get used to it. You'll be Mrs McKenzie soon. You're mine

Nasi, I meant it when I said that.

Me: What if I want to be Mrs Nyathi-McKenzie?

Danny: Not happening.

Me: Mxm

Danny: I know you love me and I love you too

Me: I'm hungry now, let's go.

Danny: Come, I know this really great place here with good food. I hope you like beef tripe.

Me: I do

Danny: Then you will not want to leave that place. Get on my back

Me: Again?

Danny: I did say I don't want you to hurt yourself.

Me: People will think I used Muthi on you and making you my slave

Danny: I wouldn't mind that at all

Me: You're crazy.

Danny: Yeah, I'm crazy about you and your ugly feet.

Me: Danny!

He put me in the car and closed the door going to his seat and drove off. He was smiling and talking alot. He seems to be happy, he's really happy

and he looks so much like Danver. I love him so much and never want to lose him. He has a really great smile, he held my thigh as he drove and I didn't feel scared at all.

Me: I love you Triston

Danny: I love you Pearl

We got to the mini set up, it was a home based restaurant and the owner was very happy to see him

Her: Mr McKenzie, What a great pleasure to see you again.

Danny: Mam Dolly, you know how I love your food. You're the best in Langelihle

MamDolly: Oh I'm flattered, who is this lovely beautiful woman you came with?

Danny: Mam Dolly, this is my girlfriend, Nasiphi Nyathi.

Me: Pleasure to meet you Mam Dolly

MamDolly: Pleasure to meet you too, I hope he has told you about the good food we have here

Me: He has and has been mentioning that you make the best beef tripe

MamDolly: Got that right, will you have the usual?

Danny: Yes please and warm water with lemon for her

Me: You come here alot?

Danny: Every time when I'm in Langelihle, this is where we dine with Jabu and Thabo. Thabo sometimes gets some recipes from Mam Dolly

The food came and it was steam bread and beef tripe. It indeed tasted really good, the best tripe I've had.

Danny: You like it?

Me: Yes I do, it's really good.

Danny: I'm glad you like it.

We had our food and washed our hands when we were done. He paid and said his goodbyes and we left.

People from around here know him

and love him. He was greeted by many and they respect him. It was really good to know and see this side of him. He's very humble and down to earth. He helped this old lady who was carrying heavy things and we walked her to her house. He's really just a good man who is just troubled. He held me on my waist and we stood and just talked. I enjoyed spending time with him, all in all I enjoyed this day

Danny: Let's go, I miss the kids.  
You're driving

Me: Hah Danny



He gave me the keys and I drove back to the palace. The kids were playing outside with their fathers and he joined them. I went to our room and showered so I could shave. I'll have to look for my sexy lingerie and I'll have a little show for him. My man is getting some tonight. I laughed at myself and went to shower. Being happy and loved really feels good.

Hope you enjoy

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

Please like and comment

#LBAR

## Insert 39

The past month has been splendid and I'm falling deeper and deeper inlove with Danny. Though I haven't been feeling well lately, I have been well taken care off by him. Princess Alwande has been growing and she looks alot like Phelo and has Mayi's nose. I have been studying online and have got to know more about my father's business. The money he left

for me was put in my bank account and it is still there, I have invested half of it. The money that belongs to the kids has also been invested and they will get it once they turn 18.

Babalwa thought I'm pregnant but that's not the case. I have also been having too much pains on my left breast and I will go to the doctor and check if my assumptions are true.

Danny: Are you sure you want to go to work today? You look pale

Me: Danny you're supposed to say I'm beautiful

Danny: You are beautiful but you're

also pale

Me: Mxm whatever. Yeah I'm going to work and I'll also go to Nyathi Mining just to check on what's going on. I don't know much yet but I know enough to be able to check what goes on. When the announcement was made that I fully own Nyathi Mining, I was all over the papers and they were shocked to find out Mr Nyathi was my father. I stood up and walked slowly to the bathroom and took a bath. My heart was sore as to the thoughts I had but I decided to shift it back and go on with my day. I wore a long yellow dress and sandals.

Danny: Come, I'll comb your hair.

Me: Thank you

He combed my hair and tied it into a neat bun. He walked me downstairs and dished up breakfast for me. I ate as he took the kids to school.

Kj: Thambo laDanny

Me: Kaitso Kaitso

Kj: Ay man, They call me KJ because I don't like the Kaitso name

Me: Why?

Kj: Because I don't even know what it means.

Me: Ask your parents

Kj: They not around

Me: Where are they?

Kj: We should go or you'll be late for work.

I guessed that was him telling me that this conversation is over. I took my bags and we left. He dropped me off at work and Dr Nxumalo was here

Me: Hey Phumlani

DrN: Hy Nasi, you good?

Me: Good and yourself?

DrN: I'm good, it's been a while.

Me: Yeah hey

DrN: See you around, I'm this side for

the week.

Me: Okay cool, see ya.

I went to my office and said my goodbyes to KJ and he left. I worked all day long and texted Nceba

Me: "Going to a doctors appointment, please come with me if you're free"

Nceba: "What time?"

Me: " At 2pm"

Nceba: " I'll fetch you."

Me: " Thanks"

I then texted KJ telling him not to pick me up. He had alot of questions and he'd confirm with Danny. KJ is so

protective just like Danny. I continued working and my PA told me I have a visitor

Me: Who is it?

Her: Don't know, I'm sending him in because he's hot and he looks like you.

Voice: Thank you for the compliment, Ms?

Her: Ms Funwayo

She smiled at me as Mbulelo came and we hugged.

Mbulelo: You don't look too good, what's wrong?



Me: Flue

Mbulelo: Sorry, have you eaten?

Me: No, I'm starving.

Mbulelo: Good thing I bought you lunch, Danny told me you love Nandos, Lemon and Herb, salad with Feta cheese.

Me: Got that right, thank you.

Mbulelo and Nkonzo has a very close relationship with Danny. My uncle's were very impressed when Danny came to pay for breaking my virginity. One uncle even said he is looking forward to when he comes to pay for lobola. They didn't want to tell me

how much he paid and I hope they don't rip him off. We had lunch while chatting and he told me about his 3 girlfriends that are giving him trouble. As to why he has three girlfriends, I don't know.

Me: You want to be in a polygamous marriage?

Mbulelo: Never! I'd loose my mind

Me: But you have three girlfriends now?

Mbulelo: They are girlfriends not wives, I don't love either of them and they don't know each other.

Me: Player

Mbulelo: Whatever you call it, bye sister, I need to go back to work.

Me: Give me a ride and drop me off at NM.

Mbulelo: One of them works there, I'll go with you. I haven't seen her in a week so popping by will make her happy

Me: I really don't understand you.

We went to NM and everything was in order. I met her girlfriend and she was pretty and didn't deserve to be played by Mbulelo. He dropped me off at work and made sure I was in my office safely.

Mbulelo: Love you twin

Me: Love you too twin

I worked for the last hour and waited for Nceba. She came and we drove off to the previous hospital I worked at first. I preferred going to Dr Cele who works there. My previous colleagues were happy to see me and Athi gave me the eye

Athi: What are you doing here? Hy Nceba

Me: Appointment with Dr Cele

Athi: What for?

Nceba: Girl stuff

Athi: Mmmh

He didn't trust us and we left him standing there. I hope he won't go snooping around.

DrC: Dr Nyathi and Ms?

Nceba: Mrs Zulu

DrC: Mrs Zulu, pleasure to meet you. You may sit down. What seems to be the problem?

Me: I need a check up

DrC: A check up on?

Me: I haven't been feeling well lately and I keep on having pains on my left boob. It hurts and is growing to be

much bigger than the other. It's like I have a lump

DrC: That's a serious case as it could be breast cancer

Me: I was suspecting that too.

DrC: Please lay down for me right there.

She ran a few tests and I was very anxious.

DrC: I'll send these to the lab and we'll have to wait for the results

Me: Is there any possibility of me getting them today

DrC: Just because it's you Dr Nyathi, I

can arrange something and you'll get them this evening. I'll call you

Me: Thank you very much, I owe you.

We left the hospital and we drove to Milky lane.

Nceba: Why didn't you tell me?

Me: I didn't want to worry anyone but for now lets keep this between us

Nceba: What if you really have breast cancer?

Me: I don't know hey

Nceba: You'll have to tell him

Me: I will, when I get the results. I'll also text you.

Nceba: This will be very hard on you guys

Me: Yeah I guess so. Let's stop talking about this please

Nceba: Sure, you know, Thaps wants us to have kids now. I'm so scared

Me: Why?

Nceba: Giving birth scars the shit out of me. Plus I'm still young, maybe next year

Me: You're 27, you're not young.

Nceba: Whatever, I guess its time I give him kids. He's been wanting a child since we first dated and we weren't even having sex by then.



Me: When did you start dating?

Nceba: When I was 17, doing grade 11.

Me: Wow so you've been together for so long.

Nceba: An entire decade.

Me: How did you know that it would last? Didn't you have doubts?

Nceba: He loved me too much and showed it, I didn't have any doubts. You never know if its going to last or not but you just have to believe that it will and let fate take its cause. Its up to the both of you to make it work and it lasts.

Me: I guess so

We had our ice cream and we went to pick up the kids and she dropped us off at home

Me: What do you want to have?

Onika: Hotdogs

Danver: Me too

Me: Coming right up, so how was your day?

Danver: It was good, I have a soccer match coming up. I'm just not sure when is it

Me: We'll come watch and you're Onika?

Onika: Boring, I don't like learning things I already know.

Me: You too smart but you'll be in grade 2 soon

Danver: And I'll be in grade 3!

Me: You're growing so fast I'm going to cry.

Danver: We'll always be around you mom, I'll stay with you forever

Kj: Bad move Danver, you won't be able to bring your girlfriends over

Danver: Oh yeah, mom I won't stay with you forever. I'll just visit you on weekends

Me: Kj stop teaching my son about girls, he's too young.

Danny came in and the kids ran to him. Onika stained his shirt with tomato sauce.

Danny: Hey little McKenzie's! Kj

Kj: Sho boss

Danny: Precious Pearl

He kissed my neck and held my waist hugging me from the back. I could feel his erection and he grinded it on my ass.

Me: Had a good day?

Danny: Had a really busy day

Kj: We need to talk Boss

Danny: Follow me, I'll be right back.

They went to his study and I wouldn't be able to eavesdrop even if I wanted to. It's soundproofed.

I spent the afternoon with the kids as I prepared supper. I got a call from Sbahle

Me: Sweetie

Sbahle: Living alone sucks! I'm coming over for supper

Me: Come now so you can help me cook

Sbahle: I'm actually at your gate, I just

called to inform you before I barged  
in

Me: You're crazy and have airtime to  
waste

Sbahle: That's what you do when  
you're bored.

She didn't even end the call as she  
drove in and parked. She came in and  
made too much noise and it was very  
exciting for Onika as she screamed  
with her.

Sbahle: Where is Daddy Danny?

Me: Study with KJ

Sbahle: Does he always have to be  
around?

Me: Yep, what's your issue with him  
vele?

Sbahle: He's too arrogant, thinks  
highly of himself. And he has lame  
jokes

Me: He's jokes are very funny

Sbahle: That would boost his ego,  
he's just too full of himself. Nxx he  
annoys me

My eyes popped as I saw that KJ  
heard all of that. They were standing  
behind Sbahle

Kj: Says the spoilt brat, you're also  
very annoying. I'm glad the feeling is  
mutual

Sbahle: Mxm whatever

Danny: Can you please pour us some whiskey?

Me: okay

Sbahle: I'll do it, continue chopping those onions.

Me: Thanks

He poured them whiskey and gave them. We finished up with the cooking. And she prepared the table.

Sbahle : Come to the dinner table please

Us: Coming

We said grace and dished up. We ate



in peace without these two arguing.

My phone rang and it was Dr Cele

Me: Excuse me, I have to take this.

I went outside so they wouldnt be able to hear me.

Me: Doc

DrC: Good evening, I have your results.

Me: What do they say?

DrC: As we assumed, yes you do have breast cancer.

Me: What stage?

DrC: Stage 3, I'm glad you came before it got to stage 4. You'll be able

to still operate, we need to do it as soon as possible before the lump grows bigger and it infects the other breast. You need to come tomorrow so we can start chemotherapy asap and there are many groups and therapists I could refer you to see and join who have people with your condition and some breast cancer survivors. You can also beat this Dr Nyathi

Me: What are the chances of me surviving?

DrC: I'd say theres a 40% chance of you surviving. It will get better once you start chemo, please do not delay

this.

Me: Thank you, I'll see you tomorrow.

How am I going to tell Danny this? I texted Nceba telling her my results and she said she'll come with me tomorrow. I went back inside and everyone was laughing and happy.

Sbahle: You were taking too long and we moved onto dessert without you

Danny: You good?

Me: Yeah I'll also just skip to dessert, I'm not that hungry.

I dished up dessert and I didn't even finish it.

Me: I'm going to bed guys, goodnight.  
I'll see you tomorrow

Onika: Yes! We won't bath

Danny: Yes you will, now come bath

Danver: Mommmmy please can we not bath, talk to dad?

Me: It's okay Danny, let them be.

Danny: I'll be there soon

I went upstairs and just got in bed. I didn't even have the strength to change or bath. Danny came in and sat next to me.

Danny: What's going on?

Me: Nothing

Danny: Nasiphi, you stepped out so you can answer your phone. You never ever do that, you come back and you don't even eat, you barely even had that desert. You allowed the kids not to bath and didn't even tuck them in and you're sleeping in a dress, you never do those things and that's evidence that you're not okay. And I can see right through you, now sit up and talk to me.

Me: I have breast cancer

Danny: That's why you've been so sick lately?

Me: Yes, Nceba and I went to Dr Cele

today and when she called she was telling me my results. It's on stage 3.

Danny: Is it a critical stage?

Me: Sort of

Danny: You need to start Chemotherapy by tomorrow

Me: Danny, there's a 40% chance of me surviving, I don't think Chemo will work, I just feel as if I should just let it run its course other than going through all this knowing that I'll die

Danny: That's nonsense! Utter nonsense! So you'll just give up without even trying? That's not going to happen

Me: Danny

Danny: This is not up for discussion. I will not lose you, I can't lose you.

He started crying and he held me and kept on brushing my hair.

Me: I'll also have to operate soon to get rid of the cancer lump.

Danny: You're going to survive this, I promise.

Me: Danny, you cannot be too sure

Danny: Stop speaking like this Pearl. He kissed me and took off my dress. He dressed me into my pyjamas and tucked me in.

Me: You're not coming to bed?

Danny: I am, I just need to make a few calls. I need to get the best doctors and best treatment.

Me: Danny, Dr Cele is fine, I have an appointment with her tomorrow

Danny: We will not argue about this my love. Sleep, you need to rest. I'll go with you and after that you'll be treated in this house by the doctors I'll get. Sleep Nasiphi.

He kissed my forehead and went out. I guess there's no point in arguing with him. I sighed and decided to sleep. I felt defeated and hurt. Just



when everything was coming together and falling into place this happens. I hope I live long enough to see Danvers soccer match and spend time with my kids. They all don't deserve this, they cannot lose another mother and that would kill Danny. Dear God, I hope I'm able to survive this.

Hope you enjoy

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

Please like and comment

#LBAR

## Insert 40

I could feel that I was awake but I didn't want to open my eyes. I didn't want to wake up and face my sad and heartbreaking reality. I didn't want to see the faces that felt pity for me and pity for Danny. That he might lose another loved one just when he thought he found happiness. He even wanted to marry me, he saw a future in us and this happens. Dear God what is it that we have done wrong to

deserve this punishment? You said you will never give us challenges that are beyond what we can take. I don't feel like I'm strong enough for this, this is too much and I'm feeling defeated. Show me the way to conquer this and if this is the way that leads to my resting place, let me rest knowing that I have left someone who will be with Danny and the kids. To love and take care of them. If not for me Lord, than do it for Danny and the kids. I know he doesn't even know the way the leads to a church, maybe the last time he opened a bible was in sunday school, if he even went there

but what I'm trying to say is that, he is your son, he has made his mistakes and Lord forgive him for he didn't know what he was doing. Show mercy upon his life and help us survive this. I don't want to leave this world yet, I have kids to raise and a man to love and take care off. I have a family dear God, these kids are too young to loose a mother again, Onika never knew any mother until I came, I don't want that to be taken away from her. Hear my prayer oh lord. Amen. I sighed after having my silent prayer. I opened my eyes and he was staring at me.

Me: What?

Danny: Good morning my lady

Me: There's nothing good about this morning.

Danny: Babe, you're sweating. Lay down I'm coming

He went to the bathroom and came back with a bowl with warm water and a towel.

He wiped my face and adjusted my pillows.

Me: I want to take a bath and go to work

Danny: You've lost your mind. You're

not going anywhere

Me: Will I atleast go downstairs and have breakfast with the kids?

Danny: I don't want them to see you like this

Me: They have to, I want to see them  
Danny. I need to spend my last days with them

Danny: Nasiphi, stop talking like that. You won't like the things I'll say to you if you keep on upsetting me.

Me: I don't want to upset you but I'm just stating facts. This thing gets worse by the day! Look at me! I am loosing weight, I'm pale. Next thing,

I'll be loosing my hair. And lastly I lose my life!

Danny: Well this thing! Will be taken care off! I love you damnit! And I will not allow you to just give up like this! I am here, we are here to support you! You will eat healthy, we'll cut our hair together! And you will not die, babe I don't want to shout and argue with you but you're too stubborn and negative. Stay on the positive side with me and we'll have less arguments, understood?

Me: I just want to see my kids

Danny: You will see them. Come on

don't cry now

Me:(sniffs) You, you... are shouting at me.. you don't want me to see the kids..

I cried and stuffed my face in the pillow.

Danny: Babe, stop crying okay. I'm sorry for shouting at you and for saying you won't see the kids. You will, we woke up early and they still asleep. I'll wake them up soon, get them ready for school and you'll come down for breakfast and we'll drop them off together okay?

Me: Okay. Make love to me Danny



Danny: Is it okay for me to do that?

Me: Yes Danny

He smiled and it was music to his ears. He kissed my forehead and down to my lips. We kissed passionately as he inserted his manhood inside of me. There was no foreplay today, we diving right into business. Mr McKenzie doesn't waste time. He kissed my neck and thrust deeper

Danny: I wanted to make love to you last night but I was afraid.

I just moaned, it was too good I couldn't even respond. I kissed his

neck and held him tightly with my toes curling. Its coming. I felt myself build up and I was getting weaker and weaker. He groaned out loud as we both came at the same time. I breathed out loud and closed my eyes

Me: That was amazing

Danny: You can say that again.

He carried me to the bathroom and we took a shower together. I sat down when I was getting too weak to stand and he held me as he washed my body.

Me: I love you Danny

Danny: I love you too Nasi wam.

He took my shower cap off and washed my hair. He dried me up and carried me and put me on the bed.

Me: Pass me the lotion, I'll be able to do it myself

Danny: Okay

I lotioned and he took out a warm tracksuit for me

Me: Babe, it's very hot outside

Danny: You have to be warm Nasi. You won't wear the jacket then, but you'll wear a long sleeve t'shirt.

Me: Fine by me.

I got dressed and he went to wake the kids up. I know this will upset him but we'll argue when I'm done. I walked downstairs and went to the kitchen and made breakfast for everyone while singing Lulu Dikana\_ L.O.V.E

Me: "You give me good, L.O.V.E love! Oh you give good good good good L.O.V.E love. It makes me wanna sing!"

They came down for breakfast and I continued singing trying to ignore the bad look Danny is giving me.

Kids: Morning mom

Me: Morning my babies, slept well?

Kids: Yup!

Onika: What's for breakfast?

Me: Toast, baked beans, scrambled eggs, bacon and vienna.

Danver: No pancakes?

Me: No, you'll have those tomorrow morning. It's a Tuesday remember

Onika: I'm waiting for Thursday, I miss having Otees. Daddy, sit down

Danny: I'll come just now. There's a call I need to make

He went back upstairs and I laughed a little as I dished up for everyone

and sat down. He came and sat next to me. He pinched my ass. It was painful

Me: Danny! What was that for?

Danny: You're really going to ask?

Me: I just did

He stared at me with such a scary look and I just ate my food. Okay, he's angry at me.

Me: Finish up so you can go brush your teeth

Onika: I'm full already

Me: Just finish up the toast so you can be full until school lunch break

After they finished they went to brush their teeth and I put the dishes in the dish washer. They came down and we went to the and I sat at back with the kids. When he came in he gave me a death stare. Awu what now? I sat with the kids so he can have his own space and be angry at me. Now this makes him more angry? Danny has never been angry at me before, so I don't even know what to do. I really felt like laughing but that would upset him even more. So I participated in the conversation the kids were having. We got to the school and we walked them to their

classes. We went back to the car and he stared at me as I went to the back seats

Danny: You seat at the back now?

Me: No

Danny: And then?

I just went to the front passengers seat.

Danny: Your seatbelt

Me: Thanks

Danny: Didn't I tell you to stay in bed and you'll come down for breakfast after I've made breakfast myself and prepared the kids for school?



Me: You did

Danny: So how is it that I found you downstairs, making breakfast?

Me: Danny, I wanted to get out of the room.

Danny: Weren't you going to get out of the room after I've told you to come downstairs and have breakfast?

Me: I was

Danny: And then?

I just looked out the window because I didn't know how to respond to that.

Danny: You're not supposed to be doing anything that will strain you.

You need to rest but because you have stubborn, you do the opposite of resting

Me: Danny I'm sorry okay. I'm sorry

Danny: Get out of the car

Me: What! No you're chasing me out of the car?

Danny: We're home

Me: Oh

I didn't even notice that we're home already. He opened the door for me and carried me to the house.

Danny: An apology is not what I want. I want to take care of you and I need

you to work with me and not against me. Understood?

Me: Yes Triston

Danny: Babe, I love your stubborn self and I sometimes like it when we argue but not when your health is at stake okay?

Me: Yes Triston

Danny: Lets go, you have a doctors appointment.

Me: Can we pick up Nceba? She's coming with us

Danny: Okay

We picked up Nceba and went to the

hospital. We met with Athi again today

Athi: Okay, start explaining. You've been in and out of Dr Cele's office, should I be worried?

Danny: No

Athi: What's going on?

Me: You'll find out later. Lunch at the house, at 1pm exactly, don't be late

Athi: Yes mam

Danny: I didn't know about that

Me: I also didn't. I just want to tell them and get it over and done with.

Athi was going to snoop around

anyways until he finds out.

Nceba: That's true. We'll just order something

Danny: I don't want fastfoods, they not good for you Nasi, I'll call the chef to prepare something while we here. Something healthy

Me: Thanks

The doctors appointment went as expected and Danny getting to know more about my health issue. He was keen on getting involved in the breast cancer groups and I wasn't.

DrC: I was thinking that you should start taking these and by Friday, you'll

be starting on Chemotherapy

Danny: I have called Dr Francis from Namibia to come work on Nasi. Not that I don't trust you or anything but he was recommended as the best.

DrC: Yes he is the best we have in Africa and I trust that he will take good care of Nasi. Its all in the best interest of her health. I'll just e-mail him her documents and he can take it from there

Danny: Thank you for understanding. She'll keep in contact with you to update you on how she's doing

Me: You can also come check up on

me if you want to.

DrC: I will do so. And again, rest and don't overwork yourself.

Me: Thank you Dr Cele.

The day went by and we were at home waiting for the others to arrive.

Jabu and Mpho were already here.

The others arrived after a few minutes and we went to the dinner table. Both my mothers, Nkonzo and Mbulelo, Paula and Brian were here too. This has Danny written all over it.

Naye: I am starving! She started dishing up and I wasn't happy with the amount of vegetables that were

on the table. This eating healthy thing is really not on. Ntokozo being the rabbit she is, dished up and ate

Naye: Ahha guys I didn't know we're on a diet

Danny: Naye has to eat healthy

Me: But babe meat is healthy, some pizza and chocolate cake

Naye: I'm a lover for greasy food and junk.

Ntoko: This is lovely guys, taste it.

L'yanda: Babe, we're meat eaters.

MaD: Stop complaining and eat

Mom dished up for all of us and we



ate. They ate more than I did. Danny started feeding me and there was no way I'd say no.

Athi: So there's something you wanted to tell us?

Me: Why do I feel like you already know?

Athi: I don't

Me: I have something to say, what am about to say is something I never thought it would happen to me. I don't want you to cry for me and pity me or Danny. I have breast cancer

They all gasped and were shocked.

What I didn't want happened instantly,

my mothers were in tears and so were the girls. Even Nangamso and Zandy were crying. I couldn't stay here any longer

Me: Excuse me

I went upstairs with Danny following me.

Danny: Don't run away, face them.

Me: I can't, they are all crying and feeling sorry for me. I cannot take that

Danny: You're important to them and they love you. Come back

He held me as we walked back to the table.

Nkosi: Danny, I hope you have made all the necessary arrangements

Danny: Yes I have. Athi, you'll need to have someone incharge for a while

Me: I was thinking of Dr Gumede. You'll give him my salary and whoever will replace him will get his

Athi: That's unnecessary you can still get paid

Me: The hospital is doing very well but there's no need for us to waste money. I have enough money Athi, do as I say please.

Athi: Yes Mam

Mbulelo: You'll be fine twin, we with

you all the way

Zandy: He's right, you have all the support you need.

Me: Thank you

We all ate the rabbit food we hated and luckily we had something nice and sweet as dessert.

Danny: It's time for you to rest, you haven't rested today.

Me: But I want to say here with them

Danny: You'll lay down on the couch then, we'll sit with you at the lounge.

He carried me to the lounge and I laid down. He covered me up and the

others joined us.

MaN: Thank you Danny, thank you for taking care of her.

Sneh: She's really lucky to have you

Me: You can say that again

He kissed my cheek and indeed I was so lucky to have Danny.

Hope you enjoy

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

Please like and comment

#LBAR

Insert 41

#Danny

The past few weeks have been heart breaking. Nasiphi also insisted on telling the kids about her condition. Even though they didn't really understand fully, I was glad when they agreed to go on holiday without us. We ended up sending them to Cape Town with Paula and Brian. We needed them there because each and every was hectic. Her chemotherapy

started working only after a week that she started treatment. At that time, the doctors didn't want to operate on her immediately. She's going to have her operation later today. Dr Francis has been indeed great and he has been treating her well. Her hair also started falling off last week and we will cut our hair today. She doesn't fully believe that I will cut it too. Her mother never went back to Bizana and they both come to check on her everyday. She's never alone in her room and it also does give me time to go work and see how everything is going in the Force. Making KJ my

right hand man was the best decision I've ever made. He is truly making me proud and he will get great rewards. I cannot be handling the Force right now and he is doing a good job. The kids left yesterday after they came back from school. It was hard seeing them leave at a time like this but it had to happen, I need to have my full attention on Nasiphi.

Me: Babe! Are you up already?

I shouted from the bathroom as I heard some movements.

Nasi: Yes

She said in a new low voice. Its pretty



sexy but I don't like it because it shows how weaker and weaker she's getting. I finished up bathing and got dressed. I kissed her

Me: Morning beautiful

She told me to stop saying Good morning because theres nothing good about her mornings. I helped her into her wheelchair and she went to the bathroom. She insisted on being on a wheelchair because I didn't want her walking around and she didn't want me carrying her around. So the wheelchair was our common ground. I made the bed and went downstairs with her following

me. I had some changes made in the house so she could accommodate her wheelchair.

Me: What do you want to for breakfast?

Nasi: I'm not hungry, we can go cut my hair and we'll have breakfast at a restaurant

Me: Are you sure? The last time we went out you ended up crying

Nasi: I'm sure babe

The last time we went out she ended up crying because people felt sorry for her. Her condition made the tabloids after her first chemotherapy.

One of the nurses leaked out the information and was properly dealt with. Don't worry, I didn't kill her.

Me: Get your bag, its on the couch and we'll go.

Nasi: I cannot believe my afro is about to be cut off

Me: Your family has lots of hair so I'm sure yours will also grow back.

Nasi: Maybe

I put her in the car and the wheelchair at the boot.

Nasi: I miss driving

Me: You'll drive soon don't worry.

Queensmead, Pavilion, Gateway or Galleria or Westwood mall?

Nasi: I wanted to also do some shopping, haven't done that in a while plus my clothes are big on me. I look like a granny

Me: You look beautiful Pearl

Nasi: Ofcourse you'll say I'm beautiful Danny

Me: Even if you wore rags

Nasi: Lets go to Gateway please

Me: Okay

Nasi: Ahha no I want to go to Pavilion, Gateway can be really full.

Me: So does Pavilion

Nasi: Its better

Me: Your choice.

Nasi: I was thinking I should put you on an online dating site so you can go out on dates

Me: Not this nonsense again please

She's been going on about finding me a girlfriend who she'll know and see how she is with the kids just incase she dies. Nothing upsets me more than that.

Nasi: You do know I'm having my surgery today, anything can happen

Me: Can we not talk about this Nasiphi!

Nasi: I'm sorry.

Me: It's fine, and I'm sorry for shouting. You just easily give up, Nasi we've been through hell for the past few weeks and you've done better than the doctors expected. Today's operation will be a success, you're not going to die.

I drove to Pavilion and we were lucky it wasn't that full. I helped her into her wheelchair and we walked to the salon. Her wheelchair is self-operated and there's no need for me to push

her around. We were holding hands as we went into the salon. As always there were people taking pictures of us and journalists. We went to the barber's side and my boy Gemini came.

Gemini: Mr McKenzie! What can I do for you?

Me: Gemini, its been a while hey. We're here to cut our hair.

Gemini: Ms Nyathi, we saw what happened on newspapers. Hope you recover. I'll make you look very beautiful

Nasi: Thank you very much Gemini. I

don't think I'll be bold and beautiful

Gemini: Trust me you will, who will go first?

Nasi: No I'm cutting my hair alone

Me: I'm cutting it too babe

Nasi:(laughs) Danny, I don't want you to, what if you look horrible?

Me: I won't, I said I'd support you so that's what I'm doing.

She laughed at me and asked if we did it at the same time without seeing each other. They put up small black material to cover us from seeing each other. I haven't cut my hair bold in so long. They cut it all off and



trimmed my beard.

Nasi: Babe I'm done!!

Me: Me too

Gemini: Okay, I'll count to three and take down the material. One guy was taking a video for us

Gemini: 1... 2... 2&1/2.... 3!!!

They took down the material and she looked amazing. I'm not the type that cries but I did and she was also crying. I hugged her and carried her out of her wheelchair kissing her with her legs wrapped around my waist. People were screaming and I put her down.

Me: You look beautiful my precious Pearl

Nasi: Thank you, you look very handsome too. I love you

Me: I love you too.

Guy: Sorry but this was too romantic I had to, it's streaming live on social media. You're such a good couple. We look up to you Mr McKenzie, you're teaching us men on how to appreciate and support our woman. Ms Nyathi, you're going to recover. You have our support and prayers

Nasi: Thank you very much guys. It means alot to me.

I put her back into her wheelchair and paid up.

Me: Whats next?

Nasi: Shopping

We spent the rest of the day at the mall shopping and eating. I allowed her to eat junk and she went overboard. We drove home and I packed her bag. The operation will take place at the hospital so we had to be there in an hour. She was laying on the bed and I took off her clothes

Nasi: Babe, I don't need to change I'm comfortable in these

Me: Sssh

I kissed her all the way down to her honeypot as she calls it. Her moans made me more horny and I made love to her passionately. She was so beautiful her moans were a sweet melody to my ears.

Me: I love you

Nasi: I love you and I'll always love you.

We took a shower and got dressed.

Me: Lets go

Nasi: Let's skype with the kids first.

We skyped and they were so happy to see us

Onika: Mom, I also want to cut my hair. You look so beautiful

Nasi: Thank you sweetie but don't cut it. You still need to make your beautiful cornrows

Danver: Daddy looks like a baby

Me: I'll take that as a compliment  
Mpendulo

Danver: Okay Triston

Me: I'll kick your ass

Danver: I'm in Cape Town and you're in Durban dad. And you called me by my second name first

We continued talking as we went to

the car and I drove off to the hospital while they talked.

Me: We at the hospital now, we need to go.

Nasi: Goodbye my babies

Them: Bye Mom, bye dad.

She cried and I kissed her forehead

Me: You'll see them soon.

We entered and the doctors were already waiting for her. I took her to her room and helped her change.

Nurse: Mr McKenzie, please excuse us. The doctors are coming in now.

Me: I'll see you soon

Nasi: Take care of yourself and the kids. I'll always love you.

I went to the waiting room and sat with the others

Naye: 5years later we're back here again

Kamo: I'll order some food

We stayed there waiting for hours and I wasn't patient anymore.

Me: When are they finishing!

Bee: I think they should be done by now. Maybe there's been some complications. I'll go find out

Me: Pease do.

She also went out for half an hour and came back with Dr Francis.

Dr Francis: I've never had such a case before. We managed to remove the cancerous tumor and her body didn't reject the treatment as it was already shrinking. We've stabilised her but just still unconscious. You shouldn't worry, she's a fighter and she'll survive

Me: When will she wake up?

Dr Francis: We cannot really tell as her body is still resting. But she will wake up Mr McKenzie

Me: Thank you Dr Francis



Bee: There's more Danny

Me: What?

Dr Francis: Before we could operate on her or inject her with any chemicals, we needed to do a few check ups and we did with her permission ofcourse. Mr McKenzie, you're going to be a father again.

Nasiphi is a month pregnant

What? Is he serious? I had no words. I didn't even know what to say

Me: Does she know?

Dr Francis: Yes, she's fully aware of it. She wasn't under any drug when we found out. Congratulations Mr

McKenzie

He shook my hand and left. I sat down trying to catch my breathe. I'm going to be a father again? It all seems to be just a dream. I don't even know how to feel or what to even say.

Phila: Congratulations McKenzie

Jabu: Congratulations Daddy Danny

Me: Thanks gents, thank you.

That still scared me but I'm happy. God has blessed me. I cannot wait for her to wake up. I miss my woman. I miss the love of my life.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's  
of friends

#LBAR

Insert 42

I felt numb, I was in a dark place and I wasn't able to move. My throat was very dry and everything seemed to be uneasy about my body. Oh God, am I dead already? Somebody pinch me! I

took time and tried opening my eyes, when I eventually did, I regretted and immediately closed them. The lights were too bright for me. "Breathe in, breathe out... open your eyes again Nasiphi, you can do this. Your family missed you" I told myself. I opened them again and it was as if things were floating in the air, okay I've literally lost my mind. Danny! There's Danny, he was asleep next to me. He's hair has grown back. Wow that was quick. My throat is too dry, I need water.

Me: Danny, Danny

It was hard to even speak, he didn't

hear me. I pushed him with my weak hand and he woke up

Danny: What? Nasi! Nasiphi baby you're up!

Me: Water

Danny: Huh?

Me: Water!

He came with water and he helped me drink. Thats much better!

Danny: I'm so glad you're up! I thought I had lost you but I couldn't just give up yet. Even if you were out for the rest of the year I wouldn't have given up

Me: How long was I out for?

Danny: A week and 4days.

Me: What? That's so long. The kids were supposed to be back 4days ago, were are they? Are they okay?

Danny: They are fine and will come see you soon. I'll go call the doctor plus stop stressing, its not good for the baby.

Me: They told you? Danny I'm sorry, I was on injection I don't know how it happened. I know you don't want a baby right now and I'm so sorry, but I won't abort my baby, if you want to leave us you can leave. I cannot but

please do know it wasn't on purpose  
I'm sorry

Danny: Sssh woah. Baby, I don't want you to abort our child, yes it came as a surprise and I did say I'm not ready but we'll work through this together. Now stop stressing yourself please, are you hungry?

Me: Yes

He went out and came back with Dr Cele and Dr Francis. He called Sneha telling them to come with the kids and food.

DrF: Dr Nyathi, how are you feeling?

Me: Just exhausted

DrC: It's good to have you back, you scared us. After everything was a success, you scared us by not waking up.

Me: What do you mean by that everything was a success?

DrF: We removed the cancer

Me: So I don't have cancer?

DrC: You're a breast cancer survivor. Everything is clear but you do need to come in for regular check ups plus you'll also check up on the little McKenzie too.

Me: Thank you very much Dr Francis and Dr Cele



They left and Danny sat next to me.

Danny: You have no idea how much I've missed you

Me: I've missed you too my love.

Danny: You're never going to scare me like that ever. I'd be nothing without you, we need you

Me: And I need you too

The kids came in running and threw themselves at me

Danny: Danver, Onika, you need to be careful around mommy and don't hurt her, understood?

Them: Sorry, yes dad.

Me: Hey my babies

Onika: I'm mad at you

Me: What did I do?

Onika: You were sleeping for so long.  
Lets play dollyhouse so I can forgive  
you

Me: Okay, I'll do anything for you to  
forgive me.

Danver just cried and I hugged him

Me: Don't cry my man, I'm here now.

Danver: I love you mom

Me: I love you too my son

Both my mom's were already crying  
too and it was all just too emotional

MaD: Amahle, don't you ever do that to us again.

MaN: You look beautiful my precious Pearl, you even have little hair now

Me: Thank God

Danny: But you were beautiful with no hair

Me: No I wasn't.

My friends all came and each took turns with greeting and hugging me. It was so good to be back. I love my family and I could see how they've missed me. I sat up and Danny fed me. He's being dramatic as always because I am more than capable of

feeding myself.

Mpho: Danny cried almost everyday, it was heartbreaking and funny at the same time

Phila: What was funny about it?

Mpho: Danny hardly ever cries, when he actually did, it was funny. His nose turned red and guys! It was funny, nobody noticed?

He was laughing and enjoying this on his own. He was just being so weird.

Thaps: You'd swear that you're high, did you hit a few joints before coming here?

Belinda: Don't play like that, Mpho

doesn't know what weed looks like

Thabo: Oh hell no! That's so not true

We all argued about weed and memories flooded back and many stories were told about what they did when they were high. We were all laughing and it became so silent when the former King and Queen(Nkosi's parents) and Razor, Danny's dad came in.

The Queen Mother went to sit with my moms after greeting me and it was so awkward when Nkosi's dad hugged me, he scares me so much so does Razor. They totally freak me

out

Razor: Are you feeling well?

Me: Yes. Yes Mr McKenzie I'm feeling well.

Razor: Again, please call me Razor.

Kj: Ta Razor, a word outside please

They went out for a while as we all sat and had a decent conversation with the girls but the guys were busy fooling around. You wouldn't even tell that I was at a hospital. It was a private room, it was as if I was at home.

Ngamso: I was thinking we should start up a campaign, a breast cancer

awareness campaign.

L'yanda: Elaborate

Ngamso: Nasi could be the public speaker as the breast cancer survivor amongst us and we could also invite some of the breast cancer survivors and we could educate people about the condition, help those who are suffering from any kind of cancer and those who cannot afford Chemotherapy. Basically, it is to help people who have cancer.

Me: That's a good idea only if you're going to head up the campaign

Siya: And I could help, there's nothing

I'm working on right now.

Nceba: And after that campaign picks up, we can also start one for woman who are abused and teenagers.

You know when it is all unplanned and unexpected, and you do something at once. That's what happened, we all turned and looked at her

Nceba: What? Did I say something wrong? It was just a suggestion...

Me: No you didn't say anything wrong

MaD: Are you being abused?

Thaps: No, guys like really?



Nceba:(laughs) Guys no, Thaps would never do that. Mah, I was just suggesting. I work alot with abused woman so I just thought it would also be a good idea.

Siya: Woah, I almost lost my cool

Phila: Even if you did, you wouldn't harm Thaps

Siya: Don't be too sure

Athi: You don't want me to remind you Phila, shes Mrs Cricket Bat.

Everyone laughed and I was lost. Kj called Danny and Nkosi's dad outside and there was another man whom I didn't know

Me: Who is that?

Bonga: My dad

Me: Oh okay, is there any food left?  
I'm really hungry

Lubah: But you just ate?

Ntoko: Give her the food, the two of  
them haven't eaten for almost two  
weeks.

I sat properly putting the kids aside  
as they were already fast asleep. And  
I ate. They came back in and Dannys  
face was pale. He sat next to me and  
I looked at him

Me: Are you okay Triston?

Danny: Yeah sure.

Me: I'm still hungry

Belinda: You're lucky there's still lots of food.

Me: These wings are sooo delicious!

Nkosi'sDad:(clears throat)McKenzie

Danny nodded and I continued focusing on my food

Danny: MaNyathi, MaDlamini

Them: Yes son

Danny: I need you to call the uncles and set a date for me to come pay lobola.

I chocked on my saliva! What? Dear

God he was already on his knees holding a beautiful ring. I just cried

Danny: Pearl Nasiphi Amahle Nyathi, will you marry me?

My hands were so dirty filled with BBQ sauce. Naye passed me a towel and I wiped my hands.

Me: Help me up please

Jabu helped me up and I stood in front of Danny who was still on his knees

Me: Yes, yes I'll marry you Danny.

Danny: Really? You said yes?

I nodded and he carried me and we

kissed. He wiped off my tears and I laughed

Me: When did you think of this?

Danny: I did tell you I'll marry you soon, seeing you lay there made me realize how we don't have time to waste. That I never want to loose and I want to make you mine officially.

Me: Thank you for loving me and trusting me enough to see me worthy of being your wife.

Belinda: I guess we also have a wedding to plan!!!!

Me: Yes! And no going overboard please. I want something simple.

What's the budget honey?

Danny: Mmmh I'm honey now, theres no budget babe.

Me: Okay thank you

They congratulated us and the others left. I was left with KJ, Danny, Nceba and Sbahle, the kids left with my moms.

Me: Can I go home?

Danny: I'll go talk to the doctors.

He went out and we were left with Tom and Jerry having an argument

Nceba: You guys should just fuck, this sexual frustration between you

two is just annoying.

After Nceba had said that, they shut up and looked very guilty

Me: Why do you look so guilty?

Nceba: Explain please

Them: It happened once!

Sbahle: And I regret it!

Kj: Well so do I! Spoilt brat

Sbahle: Phara!

Kj stormed out and we laughed.

Sbahle wasn't laughing she was upset

Me: And whats upsetting you?

Sbahle: He said he regrets it? Like

really! I'm Sbahle Zungu, Mancwane  
mina! No one regrets having sex with  
me

Nceba: But you said you regret it too?

Sbahle: Who was I fooling? I just  
wanted to hurt him. I don't regret  
anything at all, the man knows what  
he's doing.

Me: Wow! I'm confused

Sbahle: Me too, guys it was a mistake.  
It just happened and we're over that

Me: Clearly you both aren't over it

Sbahle: You know, we fought right  
after it happened? Like what the hell!

Mxm it's not going to happen ever



again

Nceba: Mmmmh

Sbahle: What the hell is that supposed to mean?

Nceba: Nothing.

Danny and Kj came back and I was allowed to go home. They packed for me as I showered and when I was done getting ready. We went home

Me: Aaah, it feels so good to be home.

Danny: Welcome back home honey.

Sbahle: Bye guys, we'll leave you to catch up and make more babies on

these walls

Danny: Hey! What do you know about making babies on the walls? I'm your father remember!

Sbahle: Chill Daddy Danny.

She hugged him and they all left.

Me: Whats the story with you guys being so protective of her and like fathers to her? We're almost the same age and surely you know she's having sex and shes old enough to be married. Mpho literally looses it when Sbahle talks nasty

We sat on the couch and cuddled

Danny: Naye found Sbahle, it was like

6 or 7 years ago. She bumped into Naye and spilt coffee on her, the same coffee Sbahle had been sent by her boss to get and had no money to replace it nor go back to work so Naye gave it to her and paid attention to the resemblance between Sbahle and Zandy, Sbahle was just 17 at that time and she stayed on the streets. Naye took her to one of her flats and introduced her to us when they found out she was Zandy's sister. So from then, we just all felt as if she was our little teenage child, we needed to protect her and erase her bad childhood. We've all been a father to

her ever since and it's not cool knowing that she's all grown now and she's having sex, with KJ! I'm still going to beat that idiot up

Me: How do you know?

Danny: The hospital isn't really soundproof, so we heard you speaking.

Shit! KJ heard Sbahle admit that he was good. Wow!

We cuddled more as he had his hands around my stomach

Me: It's still small and not showing, are you scared?

Danny: Yes I am but we'll be fine, I

know you're here for me when I need to talk and I will support you through this pregnancy. I won't abandon you, I will be away at times but I will not miss any appointments.

He got a text from Nkonzo

Danny: We're going to your home next week Saturday, so you'll have to go home on Wednesday.

Me: So soon?

Danny: I want this done as soon as possible before I leave for a mission

Me: When are you leaving?

Danny: Nextweek Sunday

Me: Wow, for how long?

Danny: 2months but I'll be home every weekend and on your appointments.

Me: That's better.

Danny: I did say I'd work things out.

Me: The ring is beautiful

Danny: Just like you MaNyathi

Me: Thank you McKenzie

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

Insert 43

The weeks went by fast, on that Saturday we celebrated my recovery and L'yandas 34th birthday. All I can say is that it was a blast! Pity that I couldn't drink any alcohol. We got to Bizana on Wednesday afternoon and

thank God MaCebisile and Zipho were not here. It was very peaceful, only Gugu and Pamela were here with mom. Pamela decided to stay with mom and study here, She's never been a fan of the city life and she's going to do her last two high school years here. Buu on the other hand had to be in Durban and focus on her Matric and Gugu took her card and makes sure she's sober. That child could even go right an exam drunk. Sbahle came with me Wednesday's and Siya came yesterday(Friday morning) to support me. Nangamso has been doing well so far with



starting up the cancer campaign and it's something she's become so passionate about and she has time for it. I on the other hand has been busy running the hospital and the mining company, I've been attending board meetings and signing deals. I don't know how I would've done all this without my fiance, he's been so much help and he also has been very busy getting things in order for his next mission, I've seen some of his agents in the house as he had meetings in his office and has also been operating the drug business here. It's all just been a busy week

and it's still going to be busy. I decided to start planning the wedding the following week, I've already found a wedding planner and I scheduled the meeting for this coming Monday. With Belinda's help, I know everything will be organized. I just need to talk to Danny and decide on the wedding date. I know it will be soon because he wants things done quickly, my man has no patience at all.

Gugu: Makoti! Wake up!

Me: Its still just 8am

Gugu: And they've been screaming their lungs out since 7am.

Me: For a whole hour! That's torture.

I went to take a shower and got dressed in a long navy skirt and white long sleeve t'shirt and a navy doek.

Gugu: I'll go get you some breakfast

Me: Okay

I looked out the window and there was Razor, Nkosi's dad, Bonga's dad and another white man I didn't know.

Gugu came with my breakfast followed by Sbahle and Siya.

Gugu: Who is the handsome guy there?

Siya: Kevin, Danny's cousin.

They finally let them in and they were saying Nyathi clan names and praises "BoNyathi kabudede unokhonzi ingongyama, unogixibengo unoxhela inkomo ingafi. Oooh Nyathikazi, danda sikiza" they praised and my uncle's seemed to be impressed. It was easy for us to see from the window but not until they went inside

Sbahle: Boring, we can't see anymore.

Me: Where's Danny?

Sbahle: In the car with KJ, he said I should give you this.

It was wrappes and I was so excited.

I opened it. It was Chocolate, Fruit and Nut flavour and Mint Topper cream biscuits. These were so hard to find when I literally wanted them! He bought them! I smiled like a love struck teenager and munched on my goodies.

Siya: There's a note, it says, "I stocked up on the biscuits, they will not be hard to find again"

Me: Aaah he's so sweet. I hope my cravings don't change anytime soon.

Gugu: You will be huge, you're already putting on some weight and you're just only a month pregnant

Pam: She's sexy though, Danny will be excited.

MaZethu came in and shouted at me for not being ready. I quickly got dressed and we were covered and went to the the lounge where the negotiations took place.

Uncle: So which one of our roses did you see?

Kevin: The one with the black doek  
And yes, that was me! I cannot believe that this is really happening. By the end of these negotiations I'll be Danny's wife traditionally.

Uncle: Nasiphi, do you know these

people?

Me: Yes uncle

Uncle: You may go back my children

We stood up and went to our room.

After some time we heard a little argument.

Sbahle: I'll go find out what's going on

Me: Please do

She left and I was worried. I took my phone trying to call danny but it didn't go through. He basically rejected my call! Sbahle came back and we were all on our feet.

Sbahle: The greedy uncles are

demanding that he pays lobola for Ziyanda as he was married to her without paying lobola

Siya: We thought she had no family at that time

Gugu: That's so stupid, they just want money. They've seen that he has lots of it.

Me: Oh God.

Sbahle: You won't be able to marry him unless he does that

My phone rang and it was Danny

Me: McKenzie

Danny: Sorry I didn't take your call, I



was still talking to Kevin

Me: You don't have to do it

Danny: I cannot marry you if I don't do it Nasiphi.

Me: What I mean is that, you can take the lobola money that was meant for me and pay Zee's. We can do this again a few months later and you'll come lobola me then.

Danny:(sighs) Babe, I'm not leaving here until you're my wife traditionally. KJ and I are going to get the money and I'll pay for the both of you thats it

Me: But babe, I don't want this to strain your finances, plus if we wait

the next few months you'll be able to come up with the money

Danny: Do you want to be my wife?

Me: Yes

Danny: How much do I have in my bank accounts?

Me: Billions

Danny: Now why would I wait months to make you my wife, when I have the money? I know what you're suggesting is from the goodness of your heart. And putting others before yourself, but baby, you're my first priority and this is me, putting you first. Now stop stressing, it's not

good for my baby.

Me: Fine Triston go ahead

Danny: Thank you

He ended the call and I threw myself on the bed.

Gugu: And then?

Me: He's going to do it

Sbahle: I hear he already paid for making you pregnant

Me: Danny! I didn't want that to be mentioned there and I had already told my brothers not mention it and make him pay for it.

Siya: This is Danny, he will do right by

you.

Me: This is frustrating, it's making me hungry

Pam: I'll go get you something to snack on.

After a while she came back

Me: What took you so long?

Pam: Sorry, but your drunk aunty kept me there. She's coming here now

Me: What's her name?

Pam: Mbewu

Her name is weird but she was beautiful. I guess Nyathi people are all just very beautiful. She had brown

eyes which sparkled. I see what Danny saw in my eyes now.

AuntM: Hehehe!! What did you get this mlungu of yours! Hook me up! Who lobolas with a million! Hehe ay my child, you are well taken care off! To think that is not the only money he paid! It means there's more deep down! I see why you ran after your late sisters man, he is loaded. You didn't want the money to go to another family, you are smart my child. The Muti you used really works! When she turned wanting to get out, she was met by a hot slap from MaZethu. I was just already crying.

MaZ: Yey wena doti!( You rubbish)  
Where do you get the audacity to  
speak such to my child? I will beat  
you up Mbewu! Don't test me

Aunt Mbewu ran out and MaZethu  
came to check if I was okay.

Gugu: You spitting flames mama

MaZ: These people are upsetting me.  
Your uncles! Mxm such an  
embarrassment and they are so  
greedy. They will not get a cent of  
that money because they will drink it  
away! That money will be used to pay  
for your wedding

Siya: I don't see Danny agreeing to

that

Me: Me too but I'll try talking to him.  
He has to agree

MaZ: Come help me dish up for everyone and tell your husband to come in.

I texted Danny and we went to the kitchen. My mothers went all out and cooked really good food. I had to serve Danny and give him water to wash his hands. He smiled and I looked down. Gave him his food and left. We sat at the kitchen and ate while listening to Aunt Mbewu tell us the village gossip. She's to beautiful

to be this drunkard she is, I wonder what happened to her. There must be a story behind all of this. The men stepped out and chilled outside while having beers and Danny called me

Me: "McKenzie"

Danny: "Come here"

Me: "Okay"

I went out to him and he was on the other side of the yard with KJ and Kevin and they were also having beer.

Danny: My beautiful wife, are you mad at me?

Me: No



Danny: That's good, that's my cousin, Kevin. Kevin, this is the Queen of my heart, Nasiphi.

Kevin: Pleasure to finally meet you, he's told me alot like alot about you.

Me: Pleasure to meet you too, I hope it's all good things.

Kj: Boss lady, I want to report what your man did to me

Me: What did you do Danny!?

Kj: He kicked my ass, he even punched me, can you believe it? No wonder these ladies haven't threw themselves at me, he ruined my handsome face.

Me: Danny that is so wrong

Danny: What's wrong is him having casual sex with my daughter

Kj: I was just showing her a good time

Kevin: What she's been missing out on!

They laughed and shook hands. Oh God men, I wonder if this is how they discuss us and what we do in bed

Kj: She was screaming out my name...  
Kaitso! Kaitso! Kaitso!

Sbahle: Won't you tell them how you just came after 3strokes?

Danny&Kevin: What!!!!

Sbahle: Weak huh?

Me: And when did you get here?

Sbahle: Mom is calling you

Danny and Kevin couldn't stop laughing at KJ even though he told them it's not true.

Me: It's not true right?

Sbahle: It's not, I just wanted to hurt him. He did have me screaming his name.

I laughed at her and went to mom in the kitchen. She led me into her room

MaN: Are you happy my child?

Me: Yes mom, I've never been this happy in my life

MaN: That's good baby, all I want is for you to be happy. I've seen how Danny has alot of money, don't let that change you. Don't lose love for him and gain love for his money. I don't want mkhwenyana coming here and complaining that the fancy lifestyle has gotten into your head. His a true man that needs a good wife. Don't lose your independence and stand your ground my child. Achieve all your goals and he will be there to assist you and you will be there to assist him too.

Me: Yes mom

MaN: He told me, he's leaving on Monday. Go home with him today, so he can be with you and the kids all day tomorrow. He's a good man, take care of him.

Me: Yes I will mom. Let me go get my bag

MaN: I already told Mbulelo to put them in Danny's car.

We went to say goodbye to the others anx and Siya will be travelling with Kevin and Sbahle. Kj will be driving alone now because of that little drama

Nkonzo: I'll see you at your office on Monday, I'll bring lunch

Me: Okay bro. Bye! Love you

Mbulelo: Love you more twin

Nkonzo: Love you too kiddo

Honestly! I have the best brothers in the world. Danny drove off and I was immediately feeling sleepy

Danny: Don't you dare sleep

Me: Your child wants to sleep

Danny: Fine! I'm going to be bored all the way to Durban, great.

Me: Don't sulk, you won't be bored at all tonight.

Danny: Oh wow, I'll stop sulking babe.

Me: And how about, I show you a part of what will be happening tonight

I pulled down his zip and unbuckled his belt. Took out McKenzie and he was staring right at me

Danny: Shit! Babe I'm driving

I sucked the tip and took him all inside my mouth. The groans! From Danny made me so damn horny. I sucked harder and harder. After some time he came all over my mouth and I swallowed.

Danny: Fuck! That was amazing.

Me: You even pulled over.

Danny: I didn't want to cause an accident. I have precious pearls in the car.

Me: Yes you do

I sat properly and slept. He woke me up and carried me to the house.

Danny: Do you want something to eat?

Me: Yes please, something chocolatey

Danny: We don't have cake here and you're not having those toppers anymore. You'll get sick.

Me: But Danny

Danny: I'll make you fruitsalad, with



yoghurt.

Me: Okay thank you

He made us fruitsalad and we ate.

We spent the rest of the afternoon together cuddling and watching a

movie

Danny: Mrs McKenzie

Me: Mr McKenzie

Danny: I love you, I know you don't fully agree with what I did today but it is all because I love you and want to spend the rest of my life with you.

Nothing will stand in our way.

Me: Its okay, I understand. I just didn't want you to spend recklessly

Danny: When I'm spending on you and the kids, I'm not spending recklessly.

Me: Okay I'm sorry. What time will you leave on Monday?

Danny: I won't be home when you wake up.

Me: Danny

Danny: Babe, we won't argue about this

Me: Can you atleast wake me up when you leave?

Danny: I will do so.

Me: Thank you

Danny: There's another way you can thank me, how about giving me a little show?

Me: Mmmh I love the sound of that.

He carried me and we went to our room. I'll save the details for another day

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

## Insert 44

We spent the Sunday together as a family and it was wonderful. It was very sad when Danny left today, he left around 1am . It was really sad but I had to let him go. I woke up and found beautiful roses on my bed. I smiled to myself and went to go bath. I took a long bubble bath and got ready for work. I woke the kids up and prepared them for school

Onika: Will you pick us up?

Me: No baby, the driver will pick you

up. I have to work so I can leave work early and come home

Danver: Okay mom.

Me: Do you want burgers for supper?

Them: Yes!!!

Me: Okay we'll have burgers.

I got to their school and walked them to their classes. It's so boring not to have KJ around. Now I'm being followed by my security detail like I'm a celebrity. I drove to work and started working. Julia, my PA brought me strong coffee which I'm not supposed to be having. I was so tempted but I stopped myself. I

started working and had a meeting with the CFO of the hospital. Our numbers were looking good and I was happy with the work Dr Gumede did while I was away. I'm not fully recovered yet as I still have a lot of stitches on my left breast. Well what used to be a breast now it's just stitches. My baby will only feed on one breast. Maybe I won't even breast feed. I got lost in my thoughts while brushing my stomach

Julia: Expecting?

Me: Yes

Julia: Congratulations Dr Nyathi.

Me: Thank you, so how many surgeries do we have today?

Julia: You're not allowed to go into the theater anymore Dr Nyathi, weren't you aware?

Me: No, why? How am I not allowed?

Julia: You won't be working on any surgeries. All the patients you have are just for check ups. We were given strict instructions by Mr McKenzie and Dr Buthelezi.

Me: Mxm don't take any calls from Mr McKenzie, Mr Jwara and Dr Buthelezi.

Julia: Yes Dr

I was annoyed but I couldn't take it all

out on Julia. She was just doing her job. I decided to just work on the documents of Nyathi Minning. The day continued and I only had two patients for check ups. They've made my life so boring. I got a call from Danny and I ignored it. He called about 5times and I ignored it. I got a call from KJ, what makes them think I'll talk to them after they have taken such a drastic decision without consulting me first. Nzuzo came in followed by Mbulelo carrying lunch.

Me: Mmmh! Smells good

Mbulelo: Its sea food, hope you like it



Me: I do and thank you. So how are you dear brothers

Nzuzo: We're good and yourself?

Me: Getting better and better

Mbulelo: Why aren't you answering Danny's calls? He's loosing his mind

Me: I'm mad at him and if you're sent by him, you'll leave

Nzuzo: But what he did is good, you can't be working too much

Mbulelo: You shouldn't be working at all

Me: You'll leave Mbulelo

Mbulelo: Okay sorry

Me: How's the businesses?

Nzuzo: Going really well as dad would've wished.

Me: He must be proud

Mbulelo: Sure he is, we found you and he's happy. He used to talk about you, Zee and Sneh at times, well he never talked to our mom's about you. But when we together he used to talk about you

Me: You guys seem as if you were very close to Muzi

Nkonzo: You call him by his name?

Me: I just don't get the hang of calling him dad. Maybe one day I will

Mbulelo: We understand, we might not know the entire story but then I know you have valid reasons and would never just disrespect him.

Me: True.

Nkonzo: So who do you know as your father?

Me: No one, the man whom I thought was a father to me turned out not to be one so I don't have a father. It's Hector Dlamini

Mbulelo: Dad's friend?

Me: Yes you know him?

Nzuzo: Yes we do, he used to come visit my dad all the time. Just last

year he started using a wheelchair, he was badly tortured by thugs and they left him at the gate of his house.

That hit home because I knew that those "thugs" were us.

Me: So all this time Hector has been in contact with Muzi?

Mbulelo: Yes

Me: Oh I didn't know they knew each other

Why did Hector lie? He said he's never seen Muzi for many years. Something wasn't adding up. We finished our lunch and they were about to leave

Mbulelo: Bye sis, make sure you contact Danny.

Nkonzo: I'll tell him you're still alive and love him very much. And that we fed his baby

Me:(laughs) Bye guys.

They left and I thought about why would he lie about this. I texted Kamo telling her to come over later. I continued working and went into surgery.

Julia: Dr Nyathi you shouldn't be doing that

Me: Julia, you work for me not Mr McKenzie nor Dr Buthelezi. Get my

team ready.

Julia: Dr Buthelezi!! Please help, she's going to perform a surgery

Athi: I'll take care of this Julia.

Nasiphi, wenzani kahle  
kahle?(Nasiphi, what exactly are you doing?)

Me: My job

Athi: My office please

I sighed and followed him. He was on a video call with Danny who was angry, I could just tell by his facial expression but I'm angry too

Danny: Nasiphi, why are you doing this?

Me: Why are you doing this Danny?  
This is my job! You have no right to  
give such instructions without even  
consulting me.

Danny: I'm doing this for your health,  
you need to be fully rested Nasiphi  
and you're pregnant now, you can't be  
running around going to emergency  
rooms and you'll slip and fall.

Me: I will be careful

Danny: No, you cannot be sure of that.  
Nasiphi, I want to work here without  
you driving me insane! Just listen for  
once and stop being stubborn!!

Me: Don't shout at me! And I also

want to work! Stop trying to control me!

Athi: I'll leave you two to discuss this

Danny: Nasi, am I controlling you by wanting what's best for you?

I kept quiet and didn't have an answer. All I did was just cry

Danny: If you think I'm controlling, I'm sorry. But that is my child you're carrying, you're my wife who just got out of the coma and who is still recovering from the operation and I want what's best for you. I need to focus Nasiphi, I cannot do that when I know you're not safe and when I



know you're defying my rules. I cannot mess up any mission, I'm the boss and if I'm not concentrated it affects all my agents and the mission. Please, let me do this without having to worry about you

Me: Okay, I'm sorry

Danny: When I call, you answer. I cannot take it when you ignore me. Understood?

Me: Yes

Danny: Now stop crying and go home

Me: Danny

Danny: Don't argue, go home.

Me: Fine.

Danny: I love you

Me: Glad you do

Danny: Nasiphi

Me: I love you too Danny

Danny: Good, bye.

He ended the video call and I dragged my feet to the office and one of the bodyguards took my bags

Him: Right behind you Mam

I walked to the parking lot and got into my car. He drove off but he wasn't driving to my house

Me: Excuse me, where are you taking

me?

Him: Mr McKenzie said I should take you to the Spa, Ms Kamogelang and Ms Zandile will be there too

Me: Okay Thanks

Him: Just doing my job Mam

We got to the Spa and they were there.

Zandy: Hey girl!!

Me: Hey guys, how are you?

Kamo: Exhausted, full body massage is what I really really need right now. And yourself?

Me: I'm okay.

Zandy: You've been crying?

Me: Danny was upsetting me

Kamo: And the hormones are kicking in

Me: You can say so.

We changed and got our massage while sipping on alcohol free cocktails.

Kamo: So was there something specific you wanted to talk about?

Me: Yes, I was with my brothers earlier on and they said something which didn't add up with what we know. They said Muzi and Hector have been in contact all along.

Apparently after that torture, he ended up being on a wheelchair.

Zandy: Serves him right.... But why did he lie?

Me: That's what confused me and before Muzi died he called Hector a bastard? Its all not adding up, making me realize that Muzi only found out that Mom is alive when we told him and he died right in front of us, how did he put her on the will?

Zandy: Maybe he said she will get those things if she's alive

Me: Or he knew all along that she's alive.

Kamo: Thats also possible. Theres more to this than what we getting. You can start spending alot of time with your brothers and getting more information about Muzi, it could help

Me: But I didn't really seem as someone who is eager to know about him

Zandy: You can say you changed your mind and want to know a side you didn't know about your father so you can be able to forgive and forget. Just say something reasonable and we might get a few leads.

Me: Or I can just go to his house and

just snoop around

Kamo: But you have to be careful

Me: I will, I'll go pick up the kids now and go with them so they can distract MaZethu. MaCebisile isn't staying there anymore so she won't be any trouble

Zandy: And Gugu?

Me: At work, so are the brothers.

Kamo: Okay go try.

We finished up and I picked up the kids.

Me: We're going to grannies for a bit. There's something I need

Onika: Okay mom

Danver: Will we still get the burgers?

Me: Yes you will.

We got home and MaZethu was home alone and excited to see the kids.

Me: Hello Ma, I'm not going to stay long. Just passing by because I need a few documents

MaZethu: What documents? From your fathers office?

Me: Yes Ma, they needed at the company. I'll have to look for them

MaZethu: Your father was very



organised you'll find them quickly

Me: His keys?

MaZethu: Top drawer on that shelf

Me: Thanks

That was easier than I thought, I took the keys and went to the office. It was well organized. I looked and found documents which had records between him and Hector. The file was big and what got my attention were the pictures of Ziyanda, Sneh, Mom and I. He's been keeping tabs on us all our lives. There was something else that really grabbed my attention. Why is everyone hiding things from

me? This is deeper than I thought it is.  
I took the file and left.

Me: Got it Ma, thanks. Lets go kids!

We said our goodbyes and I drove to steers and got burgers. We went home and I spent the afternoon with the kids. We did their homework while I was reading things on this file. Nothing is making sense to me. I'm in the dark but I'll continue reading till I find out why entire life has been a lie. I'm surrounded by people who keep secrets, even the friends I thought I could trust. Even the man I sleep next to everynight.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's  
of friends

#LBAR

Insert 45

I was upset, I was very upset but I was confused too. I needed answers and I needed them quickly. I spent the whole night going through the documents and it made me more

vigilant and more confused. I prepared the kids for school and made them breakfast.

Me: Do you have sports today?

Onika: No, I have dance classes

Danver: I have sports, hockey.

Me: So the driver will have to fetch you in different times, I cannot come fetch you. I have alot to do.

Onika: Okay, can we have spaghetti and meatballs?

Me: Yes we'll have that for supper. We'll sleep together tonight to make up for not fetching you

Danver: Yey! I'm excited.

I dropped them off at school and went back home. I got a video call from Danny

Me: Babe

Danny: You haven't bathed?

Me: How do you know?

Danny: I just know, so what are you doing today?

Me: Nothing, I'm not going to work though

Danny: Why?

Me: Just feeling tired.

Danny: You should rest. Go take a

bath, I want to see

Me: Okay

We spoke as I prepared the bath and got in.

Danny: You look so sexy.

Me: Thank you Mr McKenzie

Danny: I miss touching your beautiful sexy body

Me: You better ace that mission and come back home. We'll be waiting for you

Danny: I'll come home soon. Your stitches are healing

Me: Yes they are, Danny I was

actually thinking of having a breast implant.

Danny: Why?

Me: Because I don't have a left boob

Danny: But you have the right breast.

Me: How will I breast feed?

Danny: We'll see what the doctor says, when is your next appointment?

Me: Next week Saturday at 12

Danny: I'll come home Friday and leave Monday

Me: Okay babe.

We spoke as I finished up bathing and lotioned

Danny: Wear your white dress, it looks good on you

Me: Triston I have many white dresses

Danny: The short one with off shoulders

Me: Oh okay

I wore it and he was happy. We spoke more and ended the call when he had to go attend a meeting with his agents. I texted the girls in the group telling them to all come to HQ with their husbands. They all wondered why but I didn't want to mention it on the phone. It really upset me so much



that they didn't tell me this. Or maybe I'm reading too much into it and they didn't know about it. I left the house and drove to Nandos, bought myself some food and went to Panarotties and got myself some pizza and a few snacks. I was driven off to HQ and the driver dropped me off.

Thabo: I see you want to wear size XXL by May

Me: Mxm whatever, May is in 2months. I'll just be 4months pregnant

Thabo: You'll be fat just like Kamo when she was pregnant with

Thembelihle.

Me: She would kill you if she heard you call her fat.

Thabo: That's why I said it when she's not around. Let's go in.

We went inside and everyone was there already. I felt myself get disgusted.

Me: So let's get straight to the point here. I am angry and dissapointed, who are you and what do you do besides the force

Mpho: We run your drug business

Me: Besides that.

Mpho: We have businesses that we run, get straight to the point Nasiphi

Me: Where is the chip?

They gasped and they were surprised that I knew about it. Immediately Ngamso and Belinda took out their guns and the other girls followed but I was quick to take out mine too, well it's Danny's.

Thapelo: Stop being dramatic, put the guns down.

Nkosi: Let them kill each other if they want to! Shoot!

Bonga: It's unnecessary, just stop.

Phila: Let them do it

Mpho: It shows how much you don't listen! What the fuck are you doing with guns!

Zandy: For such days

Nkosi: Are you not pregnant Nasiphi?

Me: I am

They were so angry but I was angry too and I needed answers

Bonga: Put the guns down

They all did but I didn't. They looked at me like they are going to kill me

Jabu: You're one stubborn lady.

Me: I will, but for now I don't trust any one here. I thought I could trust you

all but there's a high possibility that my life is in danger because you all didn't tell me the truth!

Nkosi: We'll face yours after, sit your damn asses down

Naye was the first to sit down and we didn't

Naye: I suggest we sit down girls, please.

She looked scared, I guess she knows what goes down when he's like this. Bee did say I'd one day see him very angry. We sat down and he took our guns and we stayed still

Phila: I don't wish to be you all right

now

Nkosi: We all work hard here, each and every man you see here works very hard to make sure you all have a nice life. To make sure that you're protected each and every one of you. Danny is out there risking his life on that mission to protect all of us. There are men and women there who have left their families behind to make sure that we are all safe, that this country is safe! But what is all that hard work for if you all just carry guns around like they toys. What if something happens, what if you accidentally pull the trigger and you

get shot, what if something happens and that gun ends up being pointed at you! Don't be stupid please.

Nasiphi, you find out half of the truth and you decide not to trust us at all, you know anyone of us would lay our lives to save you because you're our family, that we'd do that for anyone here. You girls, you're so quick to want to shoot just because someone knows what you thought was a secret! What if she didn't know anything but just trying to lure you into telling the truth, you're quick to act without thinking! Where is the trust! We all not going anywhere

without trusting each other

Mayi: And keeping secrets

Brian: I don't think its the right time to keep on adding on.

Nkosi: And you didn't think, what if innocent Paula was here, she would've been frightened and exposed to a world she doesn't know yet.

Brian: Which she will know very soon.

Me: I'm sorry, I'm just upset and confused.

Nkosi: And you ladies? You have nothing to say



They all apologized and it was my time to explain what I was on about.

Me: I need to know where is the chip

Zandy: How do you know about the chip?

Me: I was with my brothers yesterday and they told me that Muzi and Hector have been in contact for the past year's. What confused me was that, Hector told us that he hadn't heard from Muzi for years. I called Kamo and we figured that there was something they were hiding. So I went to Muzi's house and did some snooping around. I found alot of

documents which I spent all night reading and trying to put one and two together. Muzi and Hector are somehow involved in this chip thing and you have it. Its either he was after it or he wanted to protect it somehow. How the hell do you all have such information? And where is it?

Siya: It is in all of us

Me: What do you mean?

Phelo: The chip was programmed and installed in all of them. Well Belinda, Ngamso, Kamo and I don't have it since we weren't with them at

that time.

Me: Don't lie.

Bonga: What do you mean?

Me: This type of information is rare and only found in Russia and Italy, the system to programme this and install it in someone's brain or anywhere in the body has not been invented yet.

The only way is to plant the actual chip in someone's body or hide it somewhere. It cannot be programmed and installed!

Jabu: That cannot be true

Me: Well it is and you will tell all of us the truth!

Zandy: That's the truth, there's nothing more to it.

Me: I guess if you're not going to talk, I'll go digging and trust me I will find whatever you're hiding

Mpho: And I will help you, I thought our wives don't hide any secrets from us now this

Belinda: Oh shut up Mpho, don't be petty. Sit your ass down. Naye will tell the entire truth

Naye: Why me?

Ntoko: Fine, I'll say it. The chip is either in Zee's body or it is wherever she put it. Honestly, we don't really

know where exactly the chip is. We've always had one story and Zee was responsible for the chip.

Lubah: Zandy, where is the chip?

Zandy: Why are you asking me? She's told you the truth. I don't know where the chip is, Zee liked doing things her own way

Sneh: Seems as if Zee left alot of damage behind. How does Muzi know about the chip?

Lubah: Maybe he knows the Russians and was working with them.

Me: Who is Mr Santoz?

Siya: Our father

Me: Where is he?

Nceba: Brazil

Me: He needs to come back or leave Brazil and go to a safer place, there are people after him

Bee: Are you sure?

Me: I wouldn't lie or say something that I'm not sure off. Phila, take these, you all need to read this so we can be on the same page. I don't want a mess, we'll deal with this

Athi: And we cannot deal with it, if we keep secrets, we not going anywhere

Kamo: I shot Thabo's side chick.

She's dead and he's next. I want a

divorce

Yooh! Never did I ever ever expect this. We were all very shocked by this and Thabo just left.

Thaps: Wow

Me: You can say that again

Kamo: I'm tired of his shit, clearly he wants other woman and not me, I'm setting him free. Well co-parent and work things out regarding

Thembelihle. Nasi, I think you should talk more to your brothers and find out if he had any friends in Russia

Bee: Don't make it obvious, just say outside the country.

Me: I'll get some info from Mbulelo, I don't think I'll be able to ask Nkonzo that, he's not approachable in that manner.

Phila: Buu, she's the best option, she talks alot and she might know something

Me: I don't think she would know that much.

Mayi: It's worth a try.

Me: I will try. Maybe I should pick her up and ask her to sleep over.

Jabu: You're not wasting any time

Me: There is no time to waste.



Kamo: You'll drop me off Nasi

Me: I actually have no car here, I was hoping for a lift from one of you

Phila: We'll drop you off.

Me: I'll then pick up my car, the kids and Buu.

We left and they dropped me off. I didn't even go inside the house. I drove off, I know I'll be in trouble for driving myself but I'll deal with that later. I picked up the kids

Onika: You're driving? Daddy won't like that

Danver: And we're going to tell him

Me: No you're not

Them: Yes we are

Me: What do you want?

Onika: Chocolate cake

Me: No

Danver: We're telling

Me: Fine, you'll get it.

Them: Thank you

We picked up Buu and she actually packed such a large bag.

Me: You packed so much

Buu: You said your boyfieee is coming back end of next month, that's when I'll leave. I cannot stay

with MaCebisile.

Me: School?

Buu: You have many cars.

Me: Fine then. You will study alot if you're living with me.

Buu: That's better, I'll actually improve on my marks.

We bought some fast foods and chocolate cake. There was alot of junk there and we didn't care. Danny would be so mad but hey, what he doesnt know, won't kill him. After they did their homework and Buu had her study time, we had supper and chilled watching TV

Onika: Mom, your bed is big enough for all of us, even Buu will sleep with us

Me: No problem.

The kids went to go bath while I chilled with Buu

Me: Do you miss dad?

Buu: Yeah but not that much.

Me: Why?

Buu: Weren't really close. I was the disappointment in all his kids and he made it clear. So I didn't have that much of a good relationship with him.

Me: And you're not close with your

mom too?

Buu: Yup.

Me: Mmmh, did he have some friends  
our of the country perhaps?

Buu: Yes alot, do you know?

Me: Know what?

Buu: Nevermind. He had alot of  
Russian friends.

Me: Mmmh

I didn't want to push it, she would  
know that I'm snooping for  
information. One step at a time, she's  
eventually going to talk. And I want  
her sober.

We went to bed and read a story for the kids. They slept as I texted the girls updating them. Danny called, he was exhausted and we didn't talk much. I just appreciated that he called. I miss him and I miss falling asleep in his arms. He'll be home soon and I have to be patient.

Tomorrow is still another day and I have an appointment with the wedding planner too. I'll invite Mbulelo, the closer I am to them, the more information I receive. I hate using them but I have to. They might have to thank me later.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggests page to friends and friend's  
of friends

#LBAR

Insert 46

Having Buu around so far seemed to  
be the best thing ever. She's been  
staying with us for a week and she  
loves the house because she has her

own massive room. I have monitored her and made sure that she studies. Day by day I get new information. I have turned one of the rooms into my own study room, well it's sort of like my place of keeping my information. My own detective office, I'm trying to put everything together and Ngamso has been helping me alot. The other girls have been a help too. Kamo was really serious about divorcing Thabo and she is even looking for a house. Its something she has made her mind about and I don't think anyone can. Its hitting Thabo hard, maybe he's now realising how the shit he



has done has broke his family and he drowns his sorrows in work and alcohol. I prepared the kids for school as Buu was making breakfast for everyone. When we were done we had breakfast together and left. They were dropped off at school and I was dropped off at Nyathi Minning. I discovered Muzi had a safe in this building and was directed to it and given the keys

Me: Thank you very much

I went inside and locked myself in there. There's was no cellphone service here. I didn't know where to start, I had to be out of here by 12

because Danny is coming back and we'll meet up for lunch. We're off to the doctors appointment tomorrow. There were many documents and CDs and DVDs, cellphone records and money. He was really organized and it was easy to find exactly what you're looking for. I went through alot of documents and he kept a tail on us and knew what really went down in our lives. What was this man after? What did he want? What connects him with the chip!? I have so many questions that I cannot answer. I lost track of time reading over these documents. I got a call from Danny

Me: Babe

Danny: Where are you? You're 16mins late

Me: I'm on my way

Danny: I know you're not in the car now

Me: Yes I'm leaving the office, I'm at NM

Danny: I'll fetch the you. Wait there

Me: Okay

I quickly put the documents I was busy with in my bag and locked.

Me: I'm leaving with the key

I told the receptionist and Danny was

already there

Danny: My lady

Me: My man

He took my bag and we went to the car. He looked at me like he wanted me to explain something

Me: What?

Danny: Nothing. Let's go have lunch

Me: I'm hungry, I want sea food

Danny: John Doris or Ocean Basket?

Me: Ocean Basket please

We went to Ocean Basket and I was happy because our food didn't take long to come.

Danny: Is there anything you wish to tell me?

Me: What do you mean?

Danny: Nasiphi

Me: Why should I tell you something you already know?

Danny: What I want to know is why do you have my gun?

Me: I need it

Danny: What for?

Me: Protection

Danny: So I don't protect you?

Me: When you're not around

Danny: What about the bodyguards I

hired to protect you? Nasiphi, are you out of your mind?

Me: No

Danny: Stop behaving that way. I know you're eager on finding out more about this and I support you. But no carrying guns. Give it back

Me: Danny

Danny: Nasiphi, you don't want to upset me.

Me: Fine I'll give it to you

Danny: Now baby

I took out the gun and gave him. The stares! And he didn't even seem to

care.

Danny: Where is the information you have?

Me: The house

Danny: I'll have to go through it with you, if we're going to get through this, you need to work with me.

Me: Okay babe. I found more information.

Danny: I just feel as if Zee kept too much from me. I feel angry and betrayed, why did she keep so much from?

Me: I don't have the answers to that

Danny: I hope you're not keeping any secrets from me

Me: I'm not Ziyanda

Danny: You are sisters

Me: What is that supposed to mean?

Danny: Sorry, nothing.

Me: You cannot compare me to Zee. We might look alike but we're not the same. We might be sisters, but we're different people. I'm not your wife

I stood up and went back to the car. I was pissed off. What did he mean by the shit he said? He literally compared me to his wife? I saw him approaching and I pretended to be



asleep

Danny: I'm sorry

Me: Drive

Was I not asleep? Whatever, he pissed me off. We got home and I went upstairs and threw myself on the bed.

Danny: Nasiphi

Me: Triston, you need to go pick up the kids.

Danny: KJ will pick them up. We need to talk

Me: I don't want to talk, I want to sleep

Danny: I want to sleep with you

Me: I don't want sex

Danny: I wasn't talking about sex, I don't want it either

Me: What! You don't want to have sex with me? Have you been getting sex from someone else!

Danny: What no! What the fuck? How could you think of that? Do you seriously think I'm cheating on you?

Me: I wouldn't know! You don't want to have sex with me

Danny: You said you don't want to have sex with me too, you're the one who said it first now why is it a

problem when I say it too

Me: Well you said it like you meant it

Danny: You did too

He was annoying me and I was hurt. I just cried and faced the other side of the room.

Danny: Oh come on, you're crying?

Babe, no don't cry

Me: You making me cry! Your baby is making me have crazy hormones.

Danny: I don't think its the babies fault that you're overreacting

Me: So I'm overreacting?

Danny: No you're not babe, I love you

Me: I love you too

#Danny

Coming back home for me was exciting because I was happy that I will see my family. Leaving Paris, where the mission is , wasn't good as I don't like leaving things unfinished but I had to. I got home to new information which made me angry as I found out that Ziyanda had many secrets that she hid from me. It upset me so much because I was clueless, how does that reflect the relationship we had? That I was just an idiot all along and I was in the dark about what my wife was up to. I hate

secrets, there's nothing I hate more than secrets. When Nasiphi didn't tell me about the information she found and that she's been going through, I got mad. Why did I have to find out about it from Nkosi? He thought I knew but here I was, a clueless idiot that doesn't know what his fiance has been doing. It reminded me alot of Zee keeping secrets from me. I didn't mean to compare her to Zee but it just came out. Her hormones are on another level now. I didn't appreciate how she just concluded that I'm cheating on her, but I chose not to be so upset about it and don't argue with

her. While I was walking upstairs, I noticed the room that was empty and always locked was now opened. I knew it wasn't Buu's room. I got in and I didn't like what I saw. I went back downstairs to the room Nasi was sleeping in

Me: Nasiphi, wake up!

Nasi: What?

Me: Wake up and follow me

Nasi: You're really annoying

We went upstairs and she was walking really slowly. I carried her and she was laughing. I missed that so much, I found myself smiling instead

of being angry. This is the crazy things she does to me. We entered the room and she was perfectly normal.

Nasi: I don't get why you're upset

Me: Why wasn't I informed about this?

Nasi: Because you weren't home

Me: Nasi have you turned yourself into some detective?

Nasi: No but maybe I'd look sexy in their uniform. What do you think?

Me: Trying to avoid this conversation won't happen

Nasi: Okay fine. You can go through

everything that's in here. I didn't want to keep any secret from you and I was going to inform you when you're home. Next time, I will tell you prior

Me: Thank you, that will be appreciated

Nasi: Now will you make love to me?

Me: So you want me now?

Nasi: Yes

Me: Take what you want.

Nasi: Danny, I'm pregnant and horny, you're going to make me beg?

Me:(laughs) No but I'm just telling you to take what you want.



She started crying and I really wanted to laugh at her but she was angry. I kissed her and the smile she had. This woman is really crazy and she drives me crazy. I made love to her and she was happy. She wanted more and I gave it to her, I'm really going to enjoy her new sex drive.

Nasi: Call everyone else, we need to have a meeting.

Me: What is it about?

Nasi: You'll find out with everyone else. It's about Zee, I'm going to bath for now.

I called everyone and they arrived

quickly since I said it was an emergency. Mayi, Phelo, Paula and Brian were also in town.

Athi: Why were we called her? I was still getting some love but nooo, you have to disturb us

Nasi: Sorry for being a cockblock.  
Follow me please

We all went to her new working office, I have to put in office equipments here so it can be her study.

Nasi: Find a place to sit somewhere here, I won't be long.

Thaps: I just love how you always get straight to the point.

Naye: True

Nasi: So I have keys to Muzi's safe room, and I found out alot. What caught my eye is something that hurt me so much. I don't understand why he has a hand in this but what I do know is that we have to find whoever else was involved in this.

Me: What is it?

Nasi: I'm sorry Danny, but Zee didn't just die because of giving birth and not being able to breathe

Naye: What do you mean! I was there when she died

Me: No, no, no.

Nasi: Who else was with you there?

Naye: Two other doctors and nurses.

Nasi: Then one of them is responsible for injecting her with the chemical that killed her. She was weak yes, but this killed her. She gave Naye the small bottle. I didn't know how I felt. I needed a full explanation and I needed to find whosoever was in that room that night. The anger inside of me was rapidly increasing and I needed to get out of here before I do something I regret.

Nasi: I'm sorry Danny

She was crying and so were the other

ladies. I couldn't take it. Somebody killed my wife, someone killed her and took her away from us! The man who had this information is now dead! I needed to get out of her. I stood up and kissed Nasi's forehead and left. I heard her keep on calling my name but I couldn't stay.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

## Insert 47

I looked at him as he came back home late. Well it was in the morning already, I fell asleep on the couch waiting for him. I was surprised to see that he wasn't drunk. It made me feel proud that he didn't go running to alcohol but where was he? He looked at me and faked a smile.

Danny: Were you sleeping on the couch?

Me: Yes

Danny: Come, let's go to bed. You

need to rest.

Me: Where were you?

Danny: The cemetery

As much as Zee is not alive anymore but fact is, he ran back to his wife who owns his heart and left me and went to her. Calm down Nasiphi, stop overthinking things.

Danny: I can see you're not okay

Me: Yes I'm not okay. You chose her over me! You left me and ran to her! You chose her even if she's dead

Danny: Stop talking bullshit Nasiphi, I'm not going to take it.

Me: Mxm

Danny: I just wanted to think and be close to my wife!

Me: And what am I!?

Danny: Nasiphi, I just found out that someone killed her! I thought she died because of pregnancy complications but someone took her life! I blamed my daughter for years! Someone took her away from me and I'm going to find that person and kill him or her. I'm not in the best of moods so please, don't annoy me.

Me: I'm sorry

I sighed and went to the room crying.



He was following me.

Danny: Nasi, please don't cry. I hate it when you cry

Me: Then stop doing things that make me cry. Goodnight Danny

Danny: It's already in the morning

Me: Whatever.

I slept for hours and woke up in Danny's arms. The kids were also in bed with us, I didn't even hear them come in.

Me: Hello my babies

Onika: Hello mom, I'm hungry

Me: We are hungry too

Danny: Danver and I will go make breakfast

Danver: I'll just make juice. And you'll make everything else.

Danny: Fine

They left and Onika and I bonded with my baby. I'm really starting to show and I look really cute. But I'm not looking forward to being fat and tired. With swollen feet and weird cravings

Onika: I hope it's a girl, I want someone to play with.

Me: I also want it to be a girl, your father and Danver might want a boy.

Onika: We'll just have to bet on it.

Me: That's a good idea.

We went down for breakfast and Buu was also there.

Buu: Sis, can we talk after breakfast?

Me: Yeah sure.

We washed the dishes after eating and Danny took the kids to the park. Buu and I got some snacks and went to chill outside.

Me: What is it?

Buu: I know you've been trying to get me to talk

Me: Talk? I don't know what you're talking about

Buu: I'm not a fool sis, I know more than anyone thinks I do. I know you've been trying to get me to talk more about our father.

Me: Well yes, I need to know more about him

Buu: I need you to assure me that what we talk about won't get to Cebisile and Zipho. There's someone else involved but I just don't know who. When I first saw you I was surprised that you're still alive but then I realized you're not Ziyanda.

Hector and Muzi got along really well but they didn't agree on many things. Hector wanted Zee dead because she

wouldn't speak nor give out the information which I don't know what it is about but I'm sure you do know. Dad didn't want Zee dead, he wanted to drug her and hypnotize her. I don't do IT for nothing, they didn't know I had installed recorders in his office. I have conversations of their arguments recorded, maybe you'll find out more.

Me: Where are the records?

Buu: Nasiphi, can I trust you?

Me: Yes you can

Buu: If I give you these, I need to know that I'm safe

Danny: You'll be protected 24/7

We turned and he was behind us.

Me: When did you get here?

Danny: Not so long ago

Buu: How much did you hear?

Danny: Everything I needed to know.

Me: The kids?

Danny: Park with MaPhindy, the twins and Dad. Tell me something Bulelwa, why do you hate Cebisile?

Buu: It's not something I want to talk about

Me: You don't have to talk about it right now.

Buu: Lets go, we need to get those recordings

Danny: Where are they?

Buu: Somewhere safe. You cannot drive me there, I need someone they won't know and notice

Me: Who is they?

Buu: Hector, he has his tendencies of following me. He thinks I don't know, he's up to something and I don't like being in the dark, I'll have to find out.

Danny: KJ will drive you

Buu: Bad idea, KJ is well known and is always with you.

Me: Who do you want to go with?

Buu: Someone else, I don't know  
maybe one of your guys

Danny: I'll get Stitch.

Danny came back with stitch and Buu  
changed into a black tracksuit.

Buu: Gun

Me: No

Buu: Nasiphi, we're doing this my way.  
No arguing, I know how to use a gun.

Me: I don't trust you

Danny: Follow me

We went to the basement and Danny  
gave her a gun.



Danny: Lets see what you can do

Buu: Nasiphi is just being overprotective for nothing.

She started shooting and she was way better than me.

Me: Okay stop!!

Buu: Thought as much. Can I go now?

Me: Yes, be safe.

Buu: I will.

Danny: How long will you take?

Buu: 3hours, where will meet?

Danny: Stitch will drive you to HQ.

Buu: I'm out. Don't call me, infact, I'm leaving my phones.

She left her phones and headed to wherever she was going. I was very worried about her but at the back of my head I was worried if I can trust her. I've been too trusting and that didn't help me in any way. I got a call from Venes, she's been so distant to me but she's like that at times.

Me: Sweetie

Venes: Where are you?

Me: At home

Venes: Lets go out

Me: I cannot today, how about we have lunch on Monday?

Venes: Oh okay Nasi. You won't

believe who I saw today!!

Me: Who?

Venes: Mphumelelo, can you believe it!? He's still handsome as always.

Me: Oh wow, I haven't seen him in a while. I guess he hasn't lost his handsome cute face. Make a move

Venes: I can't make a move on your ex!

Me: It's not like our relationship was serious. He was handsome and all but he was boring and we were too different. So I won't refer to him as my ex.

Venes: You're so boring. I'm happy

Danny tapped your ass.

Me: You're so naughty.... You remind me....

She started screaming out loud calling for help.

Me: Venes! Venes! Venes!!!

The call ended and I was so scared and crying.

Danny: What is it?

Me: Venes is in danger. I think she's kidnapped

Danny: Come, we're going to HQ.

Mpho and KJ will be on her tail and looking for her. Don't worry

Me: Well I am worried, she's my friend.

Danny: You're pregnant, you cannot be stressing. It's not good for our baby.

We went to HQ and waited for the other's. They arrived but Mpho and KJ weren't there. We stayed there waiting, well they were working and I was eating and watching them. Buu arrived after a few hours and she had a box in her hands.

Me: Thank God you're safe.

Buu: Told you I'd be safe. These are cellphone records, Camera footages

of the hospital the day she died and more. I don't know what else is in here

Phila: How did you get these?

Buu: The father is dead, so I can excess some things he thought he hid. Dad was not as smart as he thought.

Lubah: I'll play the footages, Naye I need you close so you can identify these people.

Naye: I remember Dr Mazibuko and Dr Sangweni were there. I just need to identify the nurses and the one who injects her.

We sat down and watched together as it replayed. It was a very emotional moment as I got to see my sister. It felt as if she was alive even though her screams were deafening and it was a hectic moment. I appreciated the little I saw of her. Seeing Onika come to life was beautiful. I was crying and Danny had his head on my thighs. It was too much for him, he couldn't watch it. There it was, when she died and told Naye to take care of her kids. It was too sad to watch, they all relived the moment.

Sneh: I cannot do this

She stepped out and most followed.

It was hard for them more than it was hard for us. I was left with Buu, Naye, Lubah and Thaps.

Me: There's movement there! Zoom in please

He zoomed in and the other Doctor who Naye said is Dr Sangweni injected Zee.

Naye: He killed her!! He killed her!

She was crying out loud and I wished Nkosi was here to calm her down.

Thaps managed and she stopped crying. The others came back in and we sat down together. It was a really sad moment. I've never seen them so



emotional. It hit us all hard.

L'yanda: I'll locate Sangweni, he will pay for this

Danny: I will kill him with my bare hands

Me: Not yet, he needs to speak out first. Then we kill him

Danny: There's no "We" you're not getting involved

Zandy: But Danny

Danny: I won't repeat myself Zandile.

L'yanda: He skept the country, he's in Russia.

Kamo: That means he's working with

the Russians

Buu: He might be with the Carlo's

Zandy: Jacque Carlo?

Buu: I'm not sure of the name.

Phila: We need to find Hector

I got a call from Mpho

Me: Speak

Mpho: I got her, she was beaten up  
so I'm taking her to the hospital.

Me: I'll be there just now. Who took  
her?

Mpho: She said she'll speak once  
you're here. I just feel as if we should  
be ready for anything. Anything can

happen from now. There are too many secrets and it causes more confusion.

Me: You're speaking as if you know more than you're telling me.

Mpho: I'm just saying we should open our eyes and be careful. We're walking on thin ice

Me: I'm on my way.

Thabo: Hector is at a meeting in Pretoria. The guys are on him.

Bee: I know we don't do this but, right now we need to. We have to threaten him with his family

Siya: We'll take the daughter, we

won't hurt her.

Zandy: And in that way, he'll speak.

Buu: He might not, we need to threaten him with something that involves his businesses and money. He's a selfish man who only cares about money and his businesses

Me: You're right.

Danny: Then I guess he wants to do this the hard way.

Me: What do you mean?

Danny: Don't wait up babe, I'm not coming home tonight. See you tomorrow, I love you

Me: Danny

Danny: Just trust me Nasiphi

Me: Okay, I love you.

I kissed him and he left. He didn't even want his friends to come with. Jabu offered to take me to the hospital. This is all just confusing and dangerous. I hope we all make it out alive and not harmed. I hope we'll be able to reveal the truth.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

Insert 48

We went to the hospital and Venes was badly beaten up. She couldn't even speak because her mouth was really swollen. It was sad to see my friend that way. It hurt me alot and I couldn't just let it go. People who did this need pay and they will pay a

heavy price. Danny hasn't contacted us since he left and I don't even know where he is.

Me: Venes, please try speaking. Who did this to you?

She just cried and couldn't speak.

Mpho handed her a pen and paper.

Me: Why didn't I think of this earlier?

Mpho: You never think

Me: Whatever

She wrote down something we didn't understand. It said "Be careful, he's after you. He wanted me to talk and tell him everything, even about the chip. What is the chip Nasi? You're in

danger"

Me: Who is this? Who took you? Don't worry about the chip.

Mpho: What do you mean she's in danger?

She took the paper and wrote down again.

Venes:" I didn't talk, that's why they beat me up. You're surrounded by people whom you cannot trust. He will kill you all, each and every one of you."

Mpho: Who is he!

Venes: "I know I'll be killed if I tell you who it is. You're my friend Nasiphi



and you've done many great things for me, I'd give up my life for you at any day. You're in danger and it's your brother, Nkonzo Nyathi."

Me: What! Venes are you sure? This can't be.

Mpho: I'm going to discharge you here. You'll be treated from home, its not safe. I'll be back

Me: I'll go get the car ready.

Venes: Okay

I went to the parking lot and I got a call from Mbulelo. It upset me that he has the nerve to call me knowing what he's brother is up too

Me: Speak

Mbulelo: Run, you're not safe.

Me: Futsek Mbulelo, you've been a part of this all this while and you telling me to run!

Mbulelo: We have no time! I didn't know about everything. Just believe me.

Me: When I set my hands on you I'll kill you! Aaaaah!!!!

Someone injected me and I felt drowsy

Me: Danny

I said softly. I got weaker and weaker.

It was then lights out for me.

#Danny

I went out to clear my head and put my plan into action. I sent my agents who are in Durban to look for Hector Dlamini, they should flip every stone and insect. Some have flown overseas and my agents all over are looking for him. I had borders closed and was having my people raid airports. He will not be able to flee and he'll be in our hands soon. My people are flying to Russia. I'd go there personally but I don't want to leave my family. I got a call from Mpho

Me: Speak

Mpho: She's gone, she's been kidnapped.

Me: You don't want me to lose my mind. Who took her!! It cannot be Hector

Mpho: Suprisingly, its someone we didn't expect. Its Nkonzo

Me: Her brother?

Mpho: Yes. He's the one behind all of this.

Me: Go to HQ, we'll all meet there. Make sure Buu is there too.

I ended the call. This bastard has the

nerve to kidnap my fiance. He clearly does not know who he is messing with. And he is surely not ready for the consequences he will face for his actions. I drove quickly to HQ and Mbulelo was there too. My anger just rose and I punched him. Pinned him on the floor and punched him numerous times.

Phila: Stop it Danny!

Me: What are you doing here! Coming to spy on us so you can kidnap your own sister!?

Mbulelo:(coughs) I understand your anger Danny, I only found out about

this, this morning. I called Nasi telling her to run while she still can. I didn't know Nkonzo is doing all this, he's working with the Russians and Hector. He is the one who took Venes and beat her up. I was able to get her to escape that's when they were able to find her. I'm here to work with you to get Nasi, she's my sister and I'll never do that to her. What I do know is that we're running out of time, he'll kill her.

I lost it! I literally lost my cool and let my anger control me. I was on him in just a second. They managed to pull me back and I went to drink some

water

Me: Where is he taking her?

Mbulelo: Russia

Me: KJ, call the pilot. We're leaving

Kamo: She managed to turn her bracelet on. They are on the plane already

Bonga: Get the wives in the Balito safe house. Jomo will take them there. Nkosi and Brian will meet us at the airport. Zandy and Kamo, you're coming with us.

Siya: I'll make sure the kids are safe.

Sbahle: I'm going to fetch MaDlamini

Naye: This is big, we need to be alert at all times. Switch your bracelets on now, so if you get caught up in some shitty mess. We're able to track you

Nceba: All done, I'll prepare the guns. We need to have our own just so we're safe.

I went through my own set of guns and my pistol was missing

Me: Nceba, where is my pistol?

Nceba: I don't know

Me: Nasiphi, she's so sneaky. She took it, she's so smart.

Nceba: Why do you say so?



Me: It has a tracker

Kamo: I'll look into it. The more we have to locate her, the better

KJ: The plane is ready

Jabu: Lets go

Thabo: I'll meet you at the airport. I have something to take off, I had back to back meetings. I need to put people in

L'yanda: Can't you just make calls?

Thabo: I would if I could. I need to do this personally.

We got into our cars and drove to the airport. Driving with Kamo kept me

sane because she was locating Nasi. She might be so scared right now but I know she won't show it. My girl is brave and right now I need her to be strong because I'm coming to get her. I'm worried about her and the baby. I got a call from Siya telling us that they have all the kids and are off to the safe us

Zandy: Something is not right

Me: What is it?

Zandy: The tracker on the gun has been switched off

Me: Shit!

We got to the airport and everyone

was there already. We got into the plane and it took off immediately

Jabu: Zandy, come sit next to me. We need to talk

Thaps: Aren't we going to be included in the conversation?

Jabu: No, just focus on whatever you're doing.

Me: This is taking forever. Well get there tomorrow afternoon

Kamo: They'll arrive just an hour before us.

Zandy: I just need to remember the way to their Head Quarters, it's been too long.

Mbulelo: I know the way. Dad once took me with him to a business meeting. The Carlos right?

Zandy: Yes

Mbulelo: Jacques Father is still alive you know?

Zandy: Fuck!

Me: What is it?

Zandy: He is the one we directly stole from.

Me: Don't worry, you'll be fine.

After a many hours of travelling. I woke up and it was 5am in the morning

Me: How long have I been out?

KJ: Since last night around 7pm. You were tired

Me: Any new updates?

Kj: They haven't arrived in Russia. But I've managed to find the hotel they are booked into.

Me: The agents in Russia are ready?

Kamo: Already on their way to close down all airports in Russia

Bonga: Guess who just landed in Russia

Me: Who?

Bonga: Razor and Nkosi's father.

Nkosi: Shit!

Me: You can say that again, he's calling

Zandy: Why is your phone not in Flight mode?

Mpho: Babe, this plane has cell phone service

I answered the call and he was not happy.

Razor: How does my daughter in law get kidnapped?

Danny: Razor, her brother did it. We were all not aware

Razor: They better be alive Danny, if

they don't make it out alive. I'm killing you, number one rule, protect your family. If you fail to do that, you fail to lead the force.

Me: Yes father, I understand.

Razor: Don't disappoint me. Save them

Me: I will.

I ended the call and realized theres now so much pressure. I will find my wife and now leaks will be made from now onwards. I failed to protect her but that will never happen again.

Thaps: They cancelled the booking. I cannot locate the hotel they are

moving to

Lubah: How is it that when we one step ahead, we take two steps back again.

Kamo: The bracelet has also been shut down. We have no access whatsoever over them

KJ: They know our every move and every lead we have, first it was the gun, the hotel room now the bracelet. It doesn't make sense

I got a text message from a number I didn't know.

Me: Listen to this: " You're dumber than I thought. We know your every



move, you have nothing on us. You'll find her dead, say goodbye to your precious kid that to you've never met."

Jabu: This confirms my suspicions Zandy.

Nkosi: What suspicions?

Zandy: We have a snitch amongst us. We all took out our guns and pointed at Mbulelo

Mbulelo: You cannot be serious. I'm not the snitch here. I wouldn't do that to my sister, she's my blood, almost my twin. We just a few days apart. I'd never do that.

Kamo: Right now, we cannot trust anyone.

Thaps: It can't be one of us.

Thabo: Well it is and that person has to be Mbulelo. We've been together for too long, we wouldn't do that to each other. He's been here for not long and we already have leaks.

Me: I need to think

Nkosi: I'm so disappointed in all of us.

I texted Siya telling her we have a snitch. This has just been the most difficult thing we've been through.

Just when we never expected it,

Thabo took Kamo and put her gun on

her head.

Me: It's been you all along.

Thabo: Aren't you glad to find out? I wouldn't do anything stupid if I was you. I will not hesitate to kill her and I have bombs installed in the safe house in Balito with all your families inside. You do something stupid, I kill them all. We're about to land now and you'll do as I say.

Me: That won't happen. You of all people should know that you don't threaten any of us. We're not afraid of any of you and whoever you're working with

Nkosi: Don't fight him Danny. Thabo, we'll do as you say. Just know that you will pay for this.

Nkosi winked at me and I laughed. We sat down and Thabo thought he has the upper hand. He clearly does not know us. Kamo was crying and I looked at her. Right now, I need her to put her emotions aside and focus. We've been friends for so long, been through so much together and he does this to us. I have a lot of questions and he will answer them. We landed and we were ushered into different cars. I was in the car with Phila and Zandy

Zandy: Her own husband has a gun on her head threatening to kill her. The father of her kids. What kind of a man is Thabo?

Me: Zandy, you'll get emotional about it later. We're going on code 411. Ready?

Them: Yes Sir.

We got to the Russian Head Quarters, mind you, we were outnumbered and not armed. But we're going to war. I laughed and Nkosi looked at me like I'm crazy

Nkosi: Are you crazy? We're on a tight corner here

Me: These people are amateurs, you went to war with K.D unarmed and survived what will stop us?

Nkosi: You do notice that we outnumbered? Our trusted friend turned out to be not one of us? Do you seriously think we'll make it out alive?

Bonga: We're with Danny here, why should we not make it out alive?

Phila: There's your babe

She was seated on the floor tied up. It angered me so much but I needed to calm down and focus. They came and wanted to tie us up.

Me: Don't be cowards, there's no need to tie us up.

Zandy: We're really doing the 411?

KJ: Yes!

Mbulelo: Brief me please

Jabu: We fighting

Mbulelo: You do see that these people are armed?

Danny: Never be afraid of a gun. We don't need cowards or you'll die.

Mbulelo: I'm in

L'yanda: I'll over him up if he can't take it. We're splitting, Zandy you know how we do this right? Don't be a

lady today

Zandy: You know me.

I blew a kiss at Nasi. She was crying and she was afraid. She'll probably slap me for blowing a kiss at such a moment.

They came with their guns with Nkonzo leading them followed by Thabo

Me: Where is Kamogelang?

Nkonzo: Will be with your wife shortly, we could do this the easy way. Give us the chip

Bonga: That won't happen



Nkonzo: So you decided to join the other team Mbulelo?

Mbulelo: You turned against your own sister. I will not betray her like that.

Phila: Are you ready gents?

Me: I am, even if I die today, I'll die knowing that I have saved my woman's life. They removed the cloth in her mouth

Nasi: Babe! Don't do it. Save the kids!

Kamo was now with her and she had alot of hatred in her eyes

Me: I love you Nasi.

Thaps: We love you both, hang in

there.

They came at us armed and we started fighting.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

Insert 49

I've never felt so scared in my entire life. I've never felt so betrayed in my

entire life. My blood, my very own big brother has turned his back against me. I was scared for my life and my child's life. I was worried about my kids and my fiance. I was worried about all my friends. I should be at home planning my wedding but I'm in Russia tied up in some stinky room. I felt my blood boil as I saw Nkonzo laughing with Thabo in front of me. Didn't he know that Nkonzo is working with the Russians? My heart broke as he slapped me and removed the duck tape on my mouth.

Me: Thabo, how could you?

Thabo: Shut up for the sake of your

kids and family

Me: What did you do to them! You  
bastard

He slapped me again and they took me out of the room and we went to some open space. Danny and the guys and Zandy were there. They were not armed nor did I think they have a plan. Danny blew a kiss to me and it angered me that he is fooling around at such a moment. One of the guys dragged Kamo and put her next to me. They removed our ducktapes after Nkonzo talked to Danny about saving us or the kids.

Me: Babe! Don't do it. Save the kids!

Danny McKenzie decided to do otherwise and throw a punch at Nkonzo. They all started fighting and some were shooting.

Kamo: I want that bastard dead!

We were ducktaped again and they fought. Some of them had already managed to get guns and were shooting at the opponents.

Kamo: Oh God! I cannot watch this.

It was really horrible to watch. I kept on crying and closing my eyes praying. Zandy couldn't take it anymore

Me: We have to do something.

Kamo: Try cutting the rope. We'll snatch the guns behind us and shoot.

Me: Come closer Kamo

She came close and we were able to cut the rope with a razor without anyone seeing us.

Kamo: Ready?

Me: Yes

Kamo: Shoot.

We started shooting and finding places to hide. Danny saw me and it angered him that I was killing people. As much as it was scary but I had to.

I needed to save my family. I was emotional but I focused on what I had to do

Kamo: Shit! Run

Me: Oh my baby, please hang on.

I ran as fast as I could and we kept on shooting the men who were chasing us.

Me: Kamo, I can't do this anymore

Kamo: Please try

I slowed down and they caught me

Me: Run and save yourself Kamo!

Kamo: No I'm coming for you, I won't leave you

We tried fighting them off and we were taken back to where we were. They connected something and I realized it was an electrical teaser.

Me: Please don't! I'm pregnant.

Guy: We don't care about that.

They took us back to the open space where the others were fighting. We cried as we saw Lubah, Thaps and L'yanda laying on the floor. It was full of blood and I lost all hope. Danny was badly beaten up but he didn't stop fighting. Mpho kept on fighting but he was limping.

Kamo: We're going to die



Me: Don't give up yet

Thabo came to us and he was laughing. This man is ruthless. He called Danny and his men were holding them.

Thabo: You will now watch as you lose your baby.

Me: Please! Not my baby Thabo!

Kamo: Thabo, don't do that please I beg you.

Danny: Don't do this, I will kill you Thabo.

Thabo: What? It's not like you wanted this baby. You did say you're not happy about Nasi being pregnant.

Me: That's not true

Thabo: Is it, Danny?

Danny looked down and I knew what Thabo was saying is true. I cried and I was hurt

Danny: I'm sorry Nasiphi

They switched on the electrical teaser and started with Kamo. Her screams deafened my ears and it was evidence that what I was about to go through was painful. I felt it, it electrocuted my body. I was in so much pain, my body felt numb after it stopped. I couldn't even cry anymore. I could hear him scream, I opened my

eyes and remained strong. It was not that visible but I could see him fighting. They were all more angered and hitting Nkonzo's men.

Nkonzo: Where are the other men!!!?  
Where are they?

They were getting outnumbered and that was an advantage to us. Jabu and Brian were also down and it was more work for the others. Mbulelo took out a knife and fought while stabbing a few. I threw up due to the nausea and the amount of dead bodies that were in front of me. My vomit earned me another electrocution. I couldn't take it

anymore. They did it numerous times till I felt something hot and wet falling slowly down my legs. I could hear Danny screaming and there were lots and lots of gunshots fired. I was him as he fell down. He was shot twice on his shoulder and chest. That didn't stop him, I had a blurred vision but I could see him. My heart was broken because I had already accepted what had happened. I closed my eyes as I went through more torture. We were taken to some other room and I could hear Kamo screaming. I couldn't cry anymore. I had no tears left in me and I had already given up. Just as I

was about to close my eyes. Thabo got shot on both his knees.

Kamo: Yes!

Danny came in and kissed me

Danny: Hold on babe, the ambulance is coming. I love you

Me: I love you too Danny

Kamo: Look out!!

Thabo was trying to shoot Danny but he shot me on my stomach. It was then light's out for me

#Danny

It was hard, we fought unarmed and outnumbered. Some of our men were

down and Zandy was out. It was difficult, I could say this was the toughest fight we've had in our lives. I was angry when Nasi used a gun and killed people. I didn't want any blood in her hands. She's never killed a person and the first time she did, she killed many. I know how it will affect her emotionally but it was a tough situation that we found ourselves caught up in. I needed to save her and the family. We needed to keep pushing even though we were all badly beaten up. Thabo pushed me, he pushed me too far and he will pay for this. He drove me to the edge

when he told Nasi that I didn't want the baby. Yes it's true I had my doubts and hesitations about the baby but I wanted it. It is my child and I will love him or her the way I love my other kids. She was so disappointed and hurt. He drove me to the edge when he electrocuted her with an electrical teaser. Her and Kamo's screams made me loose my mind. I fought like never before. We were on full attacking mode. We were all angered by Thabo's doings. He had no remorse and no heart to be doing such to his own wife. They were at a tight corner as they become

outnumbered. I totally lost my mind as I saw the blood fall down from her legs. She was loosing too much blood. Mbulelo threw me a knife and I was able to stab a few people. Nkosi took the knife and they fought as I went straight to their security leader. We fought till gunshots were fired and I got shot on my shoulder and near my chest. I fell and closed my eyes for a while

Bonga: Danny! Danny! Wake up man, we cannot loose you. Phila, Jabu and Mpho have also been shot!

I opened my eyes and stood up. Mpho stood up with me and we



continued fighting

Mpho: Go! Go save them. We'll deal with the 10guys thats left.

I took a gun and shot Thabo on his knees. The other officials who were watching ran away. Bloody cowards! They can run but I'll find them. I was loosing lots of blood too. But I couldn't let that stop me. I got to her and she was still breathing and her eyes were opened a bit.

Me: Hold on babe, the ambulance is coming. I love you

Nasi: I love you

Kamo: Look out!!

When I turned, the bullet went straight to Nasi and shot her in her stomach! She winced and closed my eyes. She was slowly loosing her breath. Thabo laughed and someone hit him on the head with a vase. It was Zandy, she untied Kamo

Zandy: We finished them, the ambulance is on the way.

Me: Take her first

Kamo: Danny you also need help. You bleeding too much

Me: I'm fine, I have somethings to take care off.

Nkosi: Danny, we cannot loose you.

You need to get help

Me: I'll be back!!!

I walked around with KJ following me  
limping

Me: Where are going?

KJ: I'm not letting you go alone.

Me: You don't want me to kill you

KJ: You'll fall and collapse before you  
even do that. You're shot near your  
heart, on your damn chest! You  
exhausted.

Me: Shut up

I walked and he was behind me.

Other agents arrived and they waited

for instructions from me.

Me: Take Thabo and Nkonzo to the warehouse.

Jomo: The families are on their way, they'll be here by tomorrow morning.

Me: Good

Jomo: Agents in Durban managed to disable all bombs in the safe house.

Me: Thank you

I was getting tired and dizzy. I stumbled as I walked back to where the ambulance arrived at. Zandy and Kamo were being checked. Mayi, Brian, Thapelo, Lubah and L'yanda were rushed to the hospital as they

needed to be under intensive care.

They took Nasiphi and I held her hand

Me: I'm sorry my love

KJ: Danny, you need to be operated on. You're soaking in blood.

I could hear people calling out my name but my eyes were shutting down and all I could feel was excruciating pain. Even if I die today, I'll die knowing that I have saved her life instead of mine. I squeezed her hand for the last time and I couldn't breath anymore.

Me: I love you Pearl Nasiphi  
McKenzie.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's  
of friends

#LBAR

Insert 50

I woke up feeling weak, I was numb  
but I opened my eyes. I looked  
around and I was hospitalized. Paula  
was laying her head next to me

Me: Paula

She woke up and smiled at me. She adjusted my pillow and gave me water.

Paula: It's good to see you're awake. How are you feeling?

Me: I'm fine, where is Danny?

Paula: He is in a coma, he lost too much blood and the bullet in his chest did alot of damage

Me: Will he be okay?

Paula: I'm not sure. You don't need to worry yourself about others and worry about yourself.

Me: My baby

Paula: I'll call the doctor

She went out and came back with the Doctor, Sneh and Ntokozo

Doc: Wow, you're awake. That's good

Me: My baby is dead?

Doc: Unfortunately, the baby didn't make it. I'm sorry Dr Nyathi

Me: Okay, leave please

Doc: I'll give you some time with your friends. I'll come back later to check you up.

Ntoko: Do you want something to eat?

Me: No, where are the others?



Sneh: Kamo is at her house resting. Mayi, Mpho, Phila and Bonga are in some room here at the hospital. Brian, Jabu and Mbulelo are hospitalized laying in their room. L'yanda and Nkosi are at HQ, Lubah and Danny are in the coma.

Me: Athi?

Paula: He went to check on Danny and Lubah. Thaps is with Zandy.

Me: Can I go see Danny?

Ntoko: Don't you want to rest a bit?

Me: No, when did we get back from Russia?

Sneh: Yesterday

Me: Where are the kids?

Paula: With the mothers

Me: Help me up please

Ntoko: We'll put you on this wheelchair so you won't have to walk.

Me: Thank you

They took me to Danny's room and he was laying there lifeless with so many machines on him. I just sat there and stared at him with so much to say but I couldn't talk. All I did was just cry and I held his hand.

Me: Come back to us McKenzie.

I wheeled myself out of the room and

the others were waiting for me so we can go see Brian, Mbulelo and Jabu. They were in the same room so it made things easier.

We stayed and talked just joking around. Nkosi and L'yanda also came and joined us

Nkosi: I believe this has been the toughest challenge we've veen through in such a long long time.

Bee: You can say that again. Too many men down

Phila: We'll rise

Me: Where is Thabo and Nkonzo?

Nkosi: HQ

I nodded and it was like they were skating on thin ice next to me. They gave me looks filled with pity.

Me: Don't feel sorry for me

Siya: I know what you're going through trust me, I had several miscarriages before having the Quads.

Me: I'm not feeling any pain nor do I have any tears. Is that normal?

Athi: People grieve in different ways.

Nkosi: Maybe it's because you haven't accepted it.

I nodded and they got the message of that I don't want to talk about it.

Me: So what will happen to them?

Mpho: They'll be tortured and they'll talk. But we will not kill them till Danny wakes up. He will give us the go ahead.

Me: I want to be there

Phila: Nasiphi, you know he won't allow you to be there.

Me: I'll do it while he isn't awake. I want to go there tomorrow.

Nkosi: That's really not a good idea

Me: Infact I want to go there today

Nkosi: No Nasiphi

Me: With all due respect Nkosinathi,

you do not take decisions for me. I will go there with or without any of you.

Nkosi: Fine

Me: Thank you, Athi, discharge me

Athi: Yes Mrs

Me: Where is KJ? I haven't seen him

Bonga: He's taking care of Danny's things. He went to Pretoria today and guess who he went with?

Me: Who?

Bonga: Sbahle

Me: Hehe ay those two, you can never understand what goes down.

Nceba: They are having smash and dash fun.

Lubah: Which will end very badly

We all turned and he was on a wheelchair behind us. Belinda just cried and ran to him

Me: Thank God you're up. When did this all happen?

Lubah: A few hours ago, I was just resting my body. After all of this is over, we need a vacation.

Naye: We have no time for vacations, we have a wedding to plan

Me: Do you think Danny will still want to marry me after all this?

Mpho: Ofcourse he will. He loves you and went through everything we've been through this past few days because of the love he has for you.

Lubah: Danny would do it all over again for you. You're his life and he will wake up from that coma and come back to you and the kids

Me: Did you bring me any clothes?

Siya: Lets go get you changed

I went back to my room and changed into a tracksuit and sneakers.

Me: I'll be able to walk, I won't use the wheelchair.

I went to Danny's room and kissed



his dry lips. I put Vaseline on them and left.

Athi: What do you think you're doing?

Me: I'm driving myself to my house and HQ

Athi: Move, I'll drive you

Me: I can drive myself!

Athi: You do know I can carry you and put you on the passengers seat?

Me: You wouldn't dare.

He really did carry me and put me on the passengers seat ignoring my screams and small punches.

Athi: You too stubborn.

Me: Whatever

Athi: My body aches, I haven't recovered as much as I thought

Me: And you decided to carry me

Athi: You not even heavy

He drove me home and waited for me outside. I went to Danny's safe and I cried when I saw what was there. It was a huge picture of me sleeping. He took this picture the day he took my innocents. I laughed to myself and took his gun. An alarm went off

Me: Shit! When did this happen?

Athi: I knew you were up to no good.

Put that gun down

He pressed some code and the alarm stopped.

Me: I need a gun

Athi: Why didn't you just ask?

Me: You wouldn't have agreed

Athi: You don't know that.

He gave me a gun and walked out.

That was easy and unexpected. I

looked at Dannys picture and smiled.

Somehow it felt as if he was with me.

I laughed to myself

Athi: I swear you're loosing your mind.

Me: Is it strange that I feel as if Danny is with me right now?

Athi: I wouldnt know but I'll just say  
you're not crazy. Let's go

I got in the car and he drove off

Athi: You're only going to see Nkonzo  
not Thabo. We'll deal with Thabo  
when Danny is awake

Me: Fair enough

Athi: And you will not kill him

Me: Yes sir

Athi: Good

We got to HQ and there was Lubah  
and Nkosi and Naye. Naye was  
holding Nkosi closely and they looked  
so perfect together. I noticed her

move away and looked at me with pity. I realized I had been staring at them for long and I even shedded a few tears.

Me: Sorry

I walked away and Lubah led me to the room they held Nkonzo hostage. It made me want to puke that this was my own brother and i looked so much like him. It pained me that he did this to me

Me: Sawbona Bhut'omdala( Hello big brother)

Nkonzo: I see you made it out alive. Thank that bastard of a fiance you

have. He's really fearless and persistent.

Me: He loves me and would do anything for me. Unlike my own family who turns their backs on me

Nkonzo: Just because we have the same father doesn't make us family. Where is that traitor of a brother you have?

Me: You don't need to know about where my loyal brother is. Why did you do this?

Nkonzo: I needed to bring you all down and get the chip

Me: What is it about this stupid chip

everyone is loosing their minds over on! What on earth do you have to do with it Nkonzo?

Nkonzo: The Russians and Colombians authorities will kill you. That chip has information that could bring us down. We could spend years and years in jail. Where is the chip Nasiphi?

Me: How am I supposed to know? Was Muzi involved in all of this?

Nkonzo: Yes, him and Hector.

Me: Why are you being so co-operative and answering all my questions?

Nkonzo: Because I know that fiance of yours will kill me eventually. You don't know him like you think you do Nasiphi. Run while you still can. You're going to marry a monster.

Me: A monster that loves me

Nkonzo: What happens when he doesn't love you anymore?

Me: I'll cross that damn bridge when I get there. Right now I need to deal with the monster in front of me.

I took a tool box next to me and I started torturing him. I took out two of his teeth and he was whining in pain. I slapped him and told him to



shut up.

Me: What you and Thabo did killed my baby!! You killed my child! This is nothing compared to what my fiance will do to you. You killed his child and put me through excruciating pain.

Nkonzo: I'm sorry, I didn't want you caught up and involved in all of this. You just had to come along. Killing Ziyanda was a waste! You came along with your smart ass and ruined things. Your smart sister Zee hid this damn thing perfectly. I hear she was working with the beautiful sexy and smart Zandy, I must say fucking that girl was the best fuck of my life. In

just a flash Nkosi threw in a punch and beat him up. I was confused, when did Nkonzo and Zandy have sex?

Athi grabbed me and we left driving off back to the hospital. We all sat in our designated room. Brian and Mayi were up and moving again.

Me: It's good to see that you guys are okay

Mayi: Yeah hey, It's been tough. Jabu is up as well, he's just in the bathroom.

I nodded and couldn't get what Nkonzo said off my head. I kept on looking at Zandy and Mpho, I

wondered what he meant. Did they once have a relationship? But wouldn't have Zandy mentioned that or mentioned that they knew each other before.

Zandy: Is everything okay Nasiphi?

Me: Yeah... Yeah sure.

Buu: I'm not convinced

Me: I'm just tired.

Nkosi looked at me like he wanted me to say something. This guy can creep me out at times.

Phila: I feel as if there's something you want to tell us

Me: I don't want to jump into conclusions. But Nkonzo mentioned something that didn't make any sense to me.

Jabu: What is it?

Athi: He said fucking Zandy was the best fucks of his life

Mpho looked very angry and he put his hands in his pocket.

Zandy: But I've never slept with Nkonzo. I didnt even know him before we met him at Nasi's

Nkosi: He was at the army Zandy

Zandy just cried, it is as if he put one and two together and figured it out.

They all did and Paula, Phelo, Buu and I were so lost.

Me: Please explain, I'm lost

Siya: It's a sensitive subject

Zandy: Years ago we were in the army, we didn't know each other at that time and it was just me and Zee at the army and other people of course. Long story cut short, they escaped since it wasn't really a legal army but we were trained to be ruthless and kill people old enough to be our grandmother's. When they escaped, they left a few loose ends which we had to pay for. We got raped trying to

tie those loose ends and trying to escape. I was raped by multiple of men so I guess Nkonzo was one of them.

I was in tears and we hugged. My brother raped my friend. Zandy was raped, she is indeed a strong woman to have survived all of that. She even managed to be with another man after that trauma

Me: I'm so sorry Zandile

Zandy: It's not your fault. Its that brother of yours. Its something I'll never ever forget but I've healed.

Mpho: I will kill him and you won't

stop me.

With that said he walked out and I ran after him

Me: Don't do it. I know you're angry, I'm also angry and we all are. We'll punish the both of them for the time being, we need to wait for the others to wake up and recover. We need to do this together, as a team. I know we not how we were, one of us chose to betray us but we're all we have now. I haven't been with you guys for long but I know we stick together at all times and we do things together. Thabo couldn't stick to that and its his loss which he'll pay gratefully for. I

for one knows Danny will be livid if he wakes up and Nkonzo is dead. He'll lose his mind and go crazy over not getting his revenge and making him suffer. Let's do this together Mpho

Zandy: She's right Lebone wam.

Mpho: I'm going to get some air. I'll be back

Bonga: I'm coming with you

Mpho: You're limping

Bonga: And so are you

We laughed and they left. While they were walking down the passage

Kamo came and they all turned back together. I haven't seen her since the



day of the tragic incident.

Kamo: Where were these two going?

Mpho: Going to get some air but that can wait.

Kamo: How's Danny?

Me: No changes

Kamo: He'll be okay. Hang in there, how are you?

Me: I'm fine and yourself

Kamo: I'll just say I'm fine too.

We sat together on the same couch and I sat like I sat when I was pregnant. I laughed as I realized I'm not pregnant anymore. I sat straight

and rubbed my stomach. My baby is gone and I'll never see him or her again. I closed my eyes and it was weird because I could smell Danny's scent. I knew he'll wake up and come back for me and the kids. He has to come back for us.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

## Insert 51

Its been 4 months, months filled with sadness yet I shedded no tears. He's been in the coma for a month and the doctors wanted me to switch off the life machines. That I will never do even if he stays in the coma for 10years. Today we're going to the hospital. Athi and Dr Nxumalo have been working on something that might help him wake him up and he'll be able to breath on his own. I have been praying since they started

working with it and I hope it will really work. Buu helped me bath the kids and prepare the kids for school. To them it has been a strain and they really miss their father. I have not even explained the death of my baby. Onika sometimes ask the gender of the baby and I just say its gone. I cannot even explain, I cannot even cry nor mourn my child. The past 4months have been hell and I've never been through so much all at once. Nkonzo and Thabo have lost one leg each? They've been tortured everyday since we held them hostage. Buu: Do you want me to come with

you?

Me: No you don't have to sis, you need to go to school. You're in grade 12 remember?

Buu: Yeah Yeah

Onika: Will dad come back today?

She asks this question each and everyday.

Me: I'll pray that he does wake up and comes to see us.

Danver: I miss my father

Me: He misses you too, now eat up so we can go.

We ate and they brushed their teeth

while I packed their bags. It's like I don't even work anymore. I have people running our businesses for me and Danny and we're so lucky to have KJ because we have everything under control and he is in charge of everything. He has been doing a really great job and I have been paying him very well.

Buu: I'm out y'all!!

Me: You're not leaving with us?

Buu: Gugu is picking me up, she said some shit about missing me.

Me: Say hi to her

My relationship with my siblings has

been rocky. They know what Nkonzo did and I don't trust any of them. It has been really hard to even believe that they had nothing to do with it. I know for sure that Cebisile and Zipho had everything to do with Nkonzo's betrayal. Pamela was disappointed and she was glad she was staying with my mother and doesn't get to see the family. I drove the kids to school, the drivers don't even argue with me these days about driving myself. KJ spoke to them about letting me be at times. I dropped them off to school and went to pick up Siya. She's always available since

she doesn't work at all.

Siya: Hey girl, you good?

Me: I'm fine and yourself?

Siya: I'm good. I know you're not okay, I used to say I'm fine all the time when I'm actually falling apart. We're all worried about you.

Me: You don't need to worry

Siya: You need to mourn Nasi, maybe it will be better when Danny is here.

Me: Is it okay that I want my baby back?

Siya: It's normal for you to feel that way. You and I both have similar



situations. Phila was in a coma, I was still suffering from experiencing multiple miscarriages. I lost my mind, I ended up in a psychiatric hospital because of how I felt. I was told I cannot have children and Phila had made someone else pregnant, it was all too much for me Nasiphi. I felt like my whole life was over. But look at me now, I'm happy, I have a loving husband and 5 children. Got blessed me abundantly and he will bless you too. Just hang in there.

I nodded and it was sad to hear all the things she has been through. Seems like mine are nothing

compared to what she's been through. We all have problems and we seem them as big problems only to find out that there are other people with bigger problems and might be other people who have went through bigger problems than Siya. We got to the hospital and Dr Nxumalo and Dr Buthelezi were already waiting for me to sign documents.

Athi: Want to see him before we start?

Me: Yes please

I went to see him and he looked so pale.

Me: My love, I know you haven't heard

my voice in a while. I haven't even been able to talk to you because I never even knew what to say to you. I don't even know what to say to the kids when they ask about you. I hope everything goes well today. Please cooperate today so you can come back to us. I need you, the kids need you and everyone needs you. The force needs their leader. Please come back to us. I love you

I kissed him and let the doctors come in. I went to the waiting room and sat with Siya and Naye who met us at the hospital. Nkosi and Bonga wanted to be here personally and they are in the

surgery room.

Naye: The wedding planner contacted me yesterday since you weren't answering your phone, she told me you cancelled the wedding.

Me: Yes I did

She nodded and noticed I didn't want to talk about it. We sat there for hours and hours. I went to fetch the kids from school and dropped them off at MaDlamini's. I decided to just stay there and catch up with my mom.

Me: How are you?

MaD: I should be asking you that, you even loosing weight my baby

Me: I'm fine mom

MaD: No you not, your mother and I are worried about you.

Me: Having two mothers is so overwhelming. You guys worry too much

She made me food and literally fed me.

Danver: Onika look, Grandma is feeding mom

Onika: Mom you're a baby now

They laughed at me and she fed me till she was satisfied that I'm full.

MaD: Did you bath?

Me: Mama! Yes I did

MaD: What? You look ugly so don't blame me

I got a call from Athi, I was so nervous but I answered any way.

Me: Hello

Athi: If you don't get her now, this man of yours will lose his mind.

Me: What do you mean? He's awake!

Athi: Alive and kicking, he's demanding to see his family.

Me: We're coming!

I was so excited and I screamed out loud

Danver: Dad is awake?

Me: Yes! Yes he is. Let's go, let's go.

We got into the car and drove off to the hospital. When we got there I rushed to his room and he wasn't there.

Me: Dr Nxumalo, where is he??

DrN: The waiting room with his friends. He didn't want to stay here.

I'm happy for you Nasiphi

Me: Thank you Phumlani

DrN: I'm happy we're back to the first name basis. I've missed you

Me: Don't cross the line

DrN: I'm sorry

I laughed at him and ran to the waiting room with my kids running next to me. Onika threw herself on him and he carried her and spun her around. It makes me so happy to see them like this and it shows how far I've went with fixing their relationship. They are inseparable now. He then carried Danny together with Onika and he looked at me smiling as I stood by the door.

Danny: Are you just going to stay there?

Me: I'm waiting for my turn with my



man

Danny: Well come to your man

Naye: This is so romantic

I walked to him and he put the kuds kids down. We hugged, just by being in his arms and smelling his scent made me feel secure. I was able to finally cry in his arms. Let go of all the tears I've been holding back. I cried as he held me and kissed my forehead

Danny: It's okay, I'm here now.

Me: The baby didn't survive Danny, I'm sorry. I'm sorry I wasn't strong enough for our child.

Danny: Sssh it's going to be okay. It's not your fault babe. Don't cry please  
I couldn't stop, I continued crying and he carried me and he sat down with me. He looked at me and wiped my tears

Danny: I'm here now, you don't need to be strong, I'll be strong for you.

I nodded and he kissed my nose.

Onika laughed and said its disgusting.

MaD: It's good that you're back son. We've been worried and kept you in our prayers

Danny: Thanks mah. Though I'm not happy

Me: Why?

Danny: You've lost weight Nasiphi

Me: I couldn't eat, but don't worry  
mom fed me today

Danver: It was like she is a baby. Just  
like how you're holding her like a baby.

Danny: She's my baby girl just like  
you're my baby.

I moved over to my seat and the kids  
sat on Danny while he held my hand.

Danny: Will your dress fit if you've lost  
weight?

Me: What dress?

Danny: Your wedding dress

Me: I cancelled the wedding babe

Danny: Why? You don't want to marry me?

Me: I do

Danny: Then?

Me: You were in the coma

Danny: I'm here now. We're getting married tomorrow

Me: That's too soon

Belinda: No it's not! We're having a wedding tomorrow!

Naye: I'm calling the wedding planner.

Me: I haven't chose a dress yet

Bee: Cuddle for just 30mins and we're

leaving.

Danny: Follow me to my room babe.

I followed him and we went to his room. He was getting discharged today so I decided to pack for him.

Danny: I didn't call you here to pack for me

Me: What did you call me for?

He started kissing my neck and held me closely.

Danny: I love you

Me: I know you do

Danny: Do you love me?

Me: Yes

Danny: I'm sorry I couldn't protect you. If I was there none of this would've happened. I'm going to step down as head of the force and be home at all times

Me: Danny, I know the force is a happy place for you. I don't want you to leave the force.

Danny: I need to be with my family

Me: I know you won't be happy. I know its something that's important to you. We'll just work things out, say you come home every second weekend of the month. We'll increase security even though I hate it but I'll

compromise because I love you and I want you to do what you love

Danny: We lost our baby

I looked at him and just cried. He cried with me and we kissed.

Danny: I love you, we can try for another baby when you're ready

Me: You didn't want a baby so there's no need

Danny: Nasiphi, that's not true. I had my doubts but I do want us to have 2 other babies and thats it

Me: You promise?

Danny: Yes I do

Me: Okay then

Danny: How about we start now?

Me: No Danny.

Danny: Okay fine

I laughed at him because he was ticked off. I held his dick and he looked at me

Danny: Don't start what you won't finish.

Zandy barged in and screamed

Zandy: Time for your quickiee is over!  
We need the bride and the groom's card.

Danny: Take my black card.



Me: Thanks babe

Danny: I'll go with Danver, you take Onika

Zandy: The Kids are all going with their fathers

Bee: We should pick up Kamo and Thembelihle. Kamo has been locking herself up too much.

We went to pick them up and went to the airport

Me: Why are we at the airport?

Siya: We're going to JHB. We've ordered everything we need so they'll drop it off at the hotel we're off to and then we'll do everything from

there.

Me: Oh good. I don't want to be walking around

Belinda: And we're having our bachelorette party!

Paula: Mia says they are now setting up.

Me: That was fast.

Kamo: You're marrying Mr McKenzie darling, anything can happen in just a flash

We laughed and poured Champaign as we flew to JHB. I was so excited but also worried if everything will be done by tomorrow. The wedding will

start at 1pm so I hope we'll make it in time.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

Insert 52

We woke up and I had massive headache. We were in a rush to catch

our morning flight which departed at 5am. We didn't even bath and we had breakfast in the plane. My phone had a flat battery since yesterday and I know Danny has been calling non-stop. We landed in Durban and went to Kamo's house where we'd prepare for the day. When we got there we were still a bit hungover

Me: Guys lets take a nap we'll wake up at 11am

Zandy: Lets wake up at 10:40am just to be safe

Kamo: I'll set the alarm.

Belinda: The dresses will be here at

11 then

I changed my phone and I immediately got a call from Danny like he knew I just put my phone on the charger

Me: My Fiance

Danny: In just a few hours you'll be saying My husband.

Me: Yes I will Mr McKenzie.

Danny: You haven't been answering your phone

Me: Flat battery sorry

Danny: So what went on yesterday?

I laughed by just thinking about my

bachelorette party. These girls can really be freaky and nasty. It was definitely the best night of my life.

Me: We had fun

Danny: No Male strippers?

Me: Uhm maybe

Danny: What the hell do you mean by maybe?

Me: I don't know, I don't remember.

I laughed and he ended the call.

Danny just overreacts and I sometimes love teasing him. We took our nap but we were disturbed by a loud knock on the door.

Belinda: Who the fuck is it?

It was a room with two big beds and we all just slept in it. They don't really like booking many hotel rooms if its just us girls because we enjoy sleeping together and being together.

Nceba: It's Danny, he's angry

Zandy: You cannot see the bride on your wedding day!

Kamo: Especially a hungover one.

Me: Kamogelang!

Danny: Open this door

Siya opened and he came rushing to me.

Buu: Bhut'Danny, you look like you're about to kill someone. Let me get you water.

Danny sat next to me and signalled that I should sit on him and I did so and kissed his forehead

Me: You do know that its bad luck to see the bride on the wedding day

Danny: I don't believe in bad luck so nothing will happen. Start explaining

Me: Explaining what?

Danny: What happened last night?  
Did you have strippers come over?

Naye and Ntokozo just laughed and that made things worse.



Me: I don't remember, since they are laughing. They can answer

They stood up and ran out. Where the hell are they going and leaving me with this crazy handsome man?

Danny: Don't upset me Nasiphi

Me: I was joking babe, there were no strippers. We put on our own show, I was teaching them a few things.

Danny: So there were no strippers?

Me: Yep, I was the only professional stripper there.

Danny: You're not a stripper, you're a doctor and business owner

Me: I used to be a stripper

Danny: But not anymore

Me: I'm not ashamed of who I used to be

Danny: I'm not ashamed either

Me: Mmh

Danny: What is that supposed to mean?

Me: Nothing Danny, you can leave now

Danny: I'm not leaving

Me: I'm going back to sleep.

Danny: You need to get ready

Me: Mxm

Danny: What is it with you?

Me: Nothing, just leave

Danny: Nasiphi

Me: Are you ashamed of me and my past?

Danny: I wouldn't be marrying you if I was.

I looked at him and cried. He was so confused and I was confused too.

Me: Do you really want to marry me?

Danny: Yes

Me: You won't leave me when something happens to me? What if I get into an accident and I cannot

walk? What if I get stroke? Will you pack up and leave

Danny: It hurts that you even think I'd leave you if any of that could happen. I love you and everyday I try to prove to you that I love you and I'm here to stay. Because I know where you come from and understand your insecurities, I'm not going to be angry and walk out that door because you doubting all this. I'm not Muzi nor Hector, I won't do what they did to your mothers. You choose what to do, either you sleep here and don't marry me because of those insecurities or you walk down that aisle choosing to

trust me and accepting that I'll be in your life forever.

With that said he took his keys and opened the door. The fright the girls got because they were eavesdropping at the door. He shook his head and left. They came in looking so guilty.

Bee: Sorry, we were just being nosey

Sbahle: We were actually waiting for you guys to have sex so we can hear your moans and groans

Buu: Sbahle!

I laughed and threw myself on the bed

Sneh: That man loves you and you need to start seeing that and trusting it.

Me: I do trust him and trust that he loves me, it's just that sometimes I think that its too good to be true

Naye: I thought about it too, alot actually. I knew he loved me and he showed it everyday. He loved me from the day we met but we only dated 4years later. Throughout that 4years he still showed me that he loved me. There was a time were he stopped talking to me, dated and slept with other girls and introduced his girlfriend to us who turned out to

be his wife

Me: What! I don't understand

Naye: Its a story for another day, there was just that day where he came to look after me because I had period pains, he told me he loves me after two years of him not telling me. I had thought he had given up on me but what I realized was that, he was tired of chasing after me and proving that he loves me. I needed to take a step forward and show him that I acknowledged his efforts and I do feel the same way but I have my insecurities and doubts. Throughout all that he loved me unconditionally.

He loved me in a way that nothing else mattered and I saw and felt his genuine love, that's why I ended up agreeing to be his second wife because I loved him and knew that if I left him, I wouldn't be happy. He made me happy and I wanted to be with my happiness regardless of the situation we were in at that time. I found myself compromising and changing my ways because sometimes in a relationship you need to put your guard down and allow him as a man to lead you to the right path. Allow him to love you and allow yourself to believe that his love is



true and he has good intentions about you. Danny risked his life for you and would do it again and again. Don't let what your fathers did to your mothers come in the way of your happiness.

Bee: We saw how he was with Ziyanda, we were there from the beginning and saw their relationship. What I can say is that, I've never seen him this way. I'm sure deep down you still think you're just Zee's replacement and that he loves you because you look like Zee but in all honesty, the way he loves you is way more than the way he loved Zee. We

vave literally never saw him like this and love someone the way he loves you. So what are you going to do? Are you just going to sit there and not marry that man?

Me: I'll get up and get ready. I'll walk down the aisle with my head held high and say I do.

Sbahle: Go bath

Belinda: We having a wedding!!! The dresses will come soon and the make up artists. We have just 2hours left. I ran to the bathroom and we bathed. My friends are so weird, we bathed together. The make up artists

arrived and they came with hair stylists. We did our hair first then the make up. There was a knock on the door and it was Nkosi followed by Mpho. It was visible that they were angry and frustrated

Me: What is happening?

Nkosi: I've never seen Danny so angry. MaNyathi has tried, she really tried to talk to your uncle's but they refuse

Me: What do they want?

Mpho: They want Nkonzo to be the one that walks you down the aisle. Its their tradition that he walks you down the aisle since your father has

passed away.

Me: That's bullshit. I won't do that

Mpho: It's their tradition or else you're not getting married.

Me: Pass me my tracksuit.

Nkosi: Where are you going to?

Me: I'm going to talk to them.

I wore my tracksuit and sneakers and went out. I got into my car, Mpho and Nkosi were following me. I drove to my house and Mpho called me to wait for them. I got there Danny was sitting outside drinking Whiskey.

Danny: You've decided to come

Me: Nothing is going to stop us from getting married

Danny: I love you

Me: I love you too

Danny: Talk to them before I kill them

He took out a cigarette and smoked. I don't recall seeing him smoke. I looked at him and he just winked.

Danny: I'm stressed.

I went inside and my uncle's looked at me

Uncle: You're not supposed to be here

Me: Well I'm here because of your

nonsense.

Uncle: You are a child in this family and you will obey our traditions and customs

Me: You did not raise me so you will not dictate my life. Nkonzo will not walk me down the aisle

Mbulelo: And he is no where to be found, clearly he does not care nor support his sister getting married

Me: He chose to disappear and I will not let him ruin my day.

Zipho: His disappearance has something to do with you and those friends of yours.

Mpho: Don't talk crap stupid bitch

Zipho: It's true!

Me: I will get married with or without your permission. You just met me and you already calling shots in my life? Who the fuck do you think you are?

Danny: Mind your language Nasi. You don't speak that way to your elders

Me: You cannot tell me that Danny. They are ruining our wedding!

Danny: Nasiphi and I are getting married even if we do it all alone. Its either you support us or you don't.

Mbulelo: I'll walk Nasiphi down the

aisle, it makes sense, when Nkonzo is not here I'm the one who is incharge.

Me: Why can't my mother just walk me down the aisle? You making unnecessary drama

Uncle: That will not happen, if any woman could walk you down it should be Mam Cebisile

Me: You're out of your mind.

Danny: I'm leaving and going to get dressed. We have just 30minutes till the wedding. All of you decide whether you're coming or not. Including you Nasi, I'll be at the alter



waiting.

With that said he took off and I followed behind him going to my car. This is not how I imagined my wedding day to begin. I went back to the hotel and they were all waiting for me

Me: Why aren't you dressed?

Paula: We couldn't get dressed without knowing whether the wedding is still on or not.

Me: Get dressed please. We don't have much time. Where is my dress?

Kamo: Here here girl

Me: Please come help me

She helped me get dressed. I had two dresses for the day, it was Naye's idea. I didn't have many ideas about my wedding. I've never really been into wedding stuff, I never thought I'd ever even get married. So it was something that I was really confused about and I am grateful for the friends I have. Venes was just so emotional when she saw me in my wedding dress. She was my Maid of honor. Danny's best man was Jabu. I was also shocked because I thought it might be Nkosi or Phila. I looked at myself once more on the mirror. I couldn't believe it was me. I cried as I

held my tummy.

Siya: You look beautiful

Me: Thank you, I feel beautiful.

My dress was a big Cinderella dress, it was strapless and had a boob tube and glitter on the tight upper part.

Phelo put my veil on and I just cried.

Nceba: You'll ruin your make up

Nasiphi

Me: Sorry Mrs Makeup

Ngamso: You so cute.

Me: Thank you

We got into the cars and left. We were heading to one of Thabo's

hotels which now belong to Kamo. She went to HQ and tortured him into signing everything over to her. We were an hour late and that is fine. Most brides are always late. My mother rushed back inside and I was told to wait a bit. After a few minutes it was time for me to walk down the aisle.

Mbulelo: Are you ready?

Me: Yes

Mbulelo: I'm sorry Pearl. I know it won't be easy for you to trust me but I'm really sorry. I wasn't part of what Nkonzo did.

Me: Let's talk about this some other time Twin

Mbulelo:( laughs) Atleast there's progress. I love you

Me: I love you too

We were talking all this while and he finally handed me over to Danny who shedded a few tears when he saw me enter.

Danny: You look beautiful

He removed my veil and kissed me.

The gents were growling making lots of noise and I just laughed.

Priest: Mr McKenzie, that was supposed to be done last.

Danny: Sorry, I couldn't hold myself.  
She's too beautiful

Phila: Do anything Danny boy! She's  
yours!

Siya: Oh Phila

She looked down and she laughed.  
The friends I have!

Danny: Ready to be my wife?

Me: Yes

Danny: I knew you'd make the right  
decision. I love you

Me: I'm glad I made the right decision.  
I love you too

To be continued in insert 53

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's  
of friends

#LBAR

Insert 53

#Danny

Seeing her walking down the aisle  
was the first time I felt so emotional.  
I've cried before but not this much.

She smiled as she looked at me and wiped my tear off. I wanted to kiss her again but I stopped myself.

Priest: I am a married man who made my very own vows to say to my spouse, it would be selfish of me to make them say after me and promise each other things that I had said. So when things go South, they cannot come back to me and say I caused it. So I will let you say your own vows.  
Dr Nyathi, you can proceed.

Nasi: I didn't not even prepare, I wanted to speak from deep down my heart. If I would have a paper and pen and right all the things you've done



for me and the way you've made me feel and the love you've shown me, I'd run out of pen and paper. If I could, I would write an entire novel filled with 1000 pages. You took me at my lowest, you didn't judge me for who I was when you met me. You told me my eyes sparkled and you loved me regardless of my situation. The time I found out I look alike with your late wife who happens to be my sister. I was certain that you were using me as a replacement for your heartbreak. But you proved me wrong. You loved me unconditionally, protected me and helped me make my dreams come

true. You helped me find out who I was and helped me find my identity and family. You've taught me how to love myself and feel good about myself. I promise to love you, care for you, support you and take care of our family.

Priest: Mr McKenzie, you may proceed

Me: My precious Pearl, I had written something, it wasn't even twenty words because I thought I could just say a short sweet poem but I also want to speak from deep down my heart. I'm standing here today, its not the first time I'm getting to do this but

it feels different. Many of the people here know me and have never seen me cry but today I cried because I saw this beautiful woman who has chose to be my wife and walk this path in life with me. A woman who has saw me fit and deserving my to be a husband. To trust me with our family, to trust me with yourself and to trust me to be your protector and provider. I've loved you from the day I met you. You took my breathe away by just seeing your eyes only. They told a deeper story and that intrigued me. I'd risk my life for you and our kids at any day. I love you Nasiphi, I

want you to know that I will never hurt you intentionally. I'm not perfect and I'll never be perfect. I'm not going to promise you that everything will be perfect but I want you to know that I'll try by all means to make you happy. I'll protect you and cherish you. I promise to love you till I die. Even death cannot put pass the feelings I have for you. I know we have our issues, everyone does but I know we'll work through it and make it work. I love you Nasiphi

We put on our rings while exchanging sweet words and she was in tears

Priest: They have said it and we've

witnessed it. There's nothing more to say than to let you kiss your bride Mr McKenzie

I held her closely and kissed her. Wiped her tears off and kissed her again

Nasi: I love you

Me: I love you too

#Nasi

Walking down the aisle I couldn't see anyone but him. He was standing there looking handsome in his tuxedo. It looked expensive but I'm sure it didn't hurt his pockets. The entire wedding throughout was a success. I

didn't care about what happened this morning. Everything that is happening right now washed away by the perfect moment. His vows made me cry and there was a lot of honesty. That's what I love most about him, he is honest. I went to the changing room and changed into my second dress for the reception. Mama came in followed by Onika

Onika: Mommy!! Can I change too?

Me: Yes sweetie

Onika: Buu will help me. Bye, you look good mom!

Me: Thank you my daughter

MaN: Pearl

Me: Mama

MaN: I'm so happy for you, you look beautiful my precious Pearl. I'm really proud of you. I'm proud of the woman you've become. I know I wasn't there to raise you, I know I wasn't there to groom you and prepare you for marriage but the level of strength you have, I know you'll be a good wife.

Me: Thank you mom

Kamo came in and told us to go. We went to the reception. I sat next to Danny who was looking at me like I'm the only person in the room

Me: You do know that staring is rude

Danny: It's not rude when I'm staring at the most beautiful woman on Earth

Me: That's cute

Danny: Baby, we need to talk

Me: What is it?

Danny: I know you wanted to go our honeymoon immediately after the wedding but can we go end of the week?

Me: Why?

Danny: I have a few things to take care off

Me: What is it?



Danny: Nkonzo, Thabo and the force.  
Then we can go

Me: Oh I don't mind.

Danny: Thank you

Me: Where are we going?

Danny: Paris

Me: What!!!! Danny!

Danny: I'm glad you're happy, come  
kiss daddy

Me: I think Daddy deserves more than  
a kiss.

Danny: Getting naughty aren't we?

Me: Well daddy will miss out if he  
doesn't follow me

I stood up and left with him following me

Phila: I know where that is leading to!  
Don't cum in 2seconds Danny

Mayi: Tell him

Danny: Fuck you guys, don't make me start on the juju talk.

They all laughed and I was lost. I walked to the room and took off my dress. I was left with lingerie on and he bent me over. It's the first time we were intimate since the tragedy we went through. He squeezed my breasts and inserted his dick from behind. He not into foreplay and went

straight to business

Danny: You're so tight. I've missed being inside of you.

Me: I've missed it too

He was not making love to me but he was fucking me. He was taking what belongs to him. He spanked me and I winced. It was not that rough unpleasureable sex but it was the rough, sexy and pleasureable sex.

Me: Danny

Danny: I'm here

Me: I'm about to cum

Why did I even say that!

Me: Danny!

He stopped thrusting and I was frustrated!

Me: Danny, don't do this.

He laughed at me and literally left me hanging. I got dressed and went to the others. I was pissed! I was really pissed and sexually frustrated.

Sbahle: What's wrong with you? You should be glowing

Me: Nothing I'm just tired.

It was time for speeches and Razor spoke first

Razor: I won't say much. I would like

to congratulate the couple of the day, my son, take care of Amahle. She's one of a kind and has changed you into a better man. Thank you for staying in this mans life Nasiphi, I for one know that he is a hard man to be around. And that's because of me and how I raised him. I know he's got everything he has ever wanted with you and the grandkids. Thank you

The speeches went on and on and they were touching and I cried through some.

Nkosi: I met this man years ago, over a decade ago. When I met him, we were both lost and had somethings in

common and were suffering from pressure that we got from our fathers. We bonded and got into lots and lots of trouble. We grew up and we got married. He's first marriage was his personal business but through my observations he was not this inlove. I was with him when he stared at Nasiphi at a shop while she was making groceries with Venes. That was when I first so Danny Triston McKenzie deeply inlove. He was fully committed and invested in his love for Nasiphi before he even spoke to her. He has risked his life for her and I know he would do it again at any

time. Thank you for being in his life Nasiphi. I haven't known you for long but I know you're exactly what he needed when he was down and we couldn't pick him up. And the precious Pearl came along and changed this, she made a change in us as a whole. We love you Danny and Nasiphi.

Siya, Paula and Jabu and Mpho sang This is why I love you and they were so perfect. I cried and Danny held me. I was mad at him but I was also emotional. I let go of him and he smirked

Danny: You're still mad

Me: Yes

He laughed at me, obviously he was enjoying this. MaDlamini came forth and said her speech

MaD: I won't be long but I just want to say that Danny, thank you for loving my daughter. Thank you for protecting her and keeping her happy at all times. My daughter, as your mother it is my duty to guide you. Both your mothers marriages didn't work out but that doesn't mean yours wont. Do not hang onto that my child and ruin a good thing that you have. This man will never walk out of your life. He's too obsessed with you to do



that

Danny: Thats so true

MaD: Congratulations my kids. I wish you a good marriage that will last forever.

Venes: Thank you Mah for those sweet words. Danny and Nasiphi, I wish you well and Danny, take care of my queen and don't you dare hurt her. If you do! I'll kill you. Nasiphi, don't hurt Danny. If you do, we're not friends anymore, fair right? I want to say that I'm very surprised that Nasiphi is getting married, I was suprised when she told me she's

inlove! That has never happened before, I've tried setting her up on dates before cause she was old not to have a boyfriend and no experience. I wanted to corrupt her at times by making her drink too much and we were strippers hustling for our families but what I loved about Nasiphi was that she never forgot nor lost who she was. She remained true to herself and knew the reason why she was doing this and knew that it was not a permanent situation. She has taught me alot in life, even when she succeeded she never left me behind. She took me and made me a

better person and thats what she did to Danny, she changes lives and always leaves a mark. Danny, you're lucky to have her as much as she is lucky to have you. My friend has always been a stylish person, when Danny came along, she changed her style for the better and she become someone different, someone happy. She has always worked hard and made sure that her mom was treated and healthy and that I was happy. She put us first and didn't put much effort into herself. Danny came and loved her regardless and made her feel good about herself and she gained

alot of confidence. I thank you Danny for having such a positive impact in her life. I love you guys

She hugged me and the kids came

Them: Daddy, Mommy! We love you!

They screamed and ran away. I

laughed at them and they came back

and sat with us. The rest of the night

was fun filled with laughter and crazy

dance moves. It has been indeed a

wonderful day and inspite of all that

happened today, it was a great day

indeed. I will never forget this day. It

was around 1am when everyone was

tired and retired to bed. I

remembered I was angry at Danny.  
He kept on speaking and I was  
ignoring him.

Danny: You mad?

I ignored and he came closer. He  
kissed my neck and I was wet already.

Me: Stop

Danny: Do you really want me to stop?

He had his fingers inserted in me and  
thrusting. I was breathing out loud  
and he inserted his manhood. It felt  
so good

Danny: Do you still want me to stop?

Me: No! Don't stop

Danny: Thats what I want to hear. I  
love you mother of my kids

Me: I love you too father of my kids.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's  
of friends

#LBAR

Insert 54

I kept on looking at my wedding ring  
not believing that it is me who is now

married. I'm officially Mrs McKenzie. I smiled looking at my husband who was sleeping peacefully next to me. I thought about the amazing things he did to me last night. The amazing things he has been doing to me the past few days since our wedding day. To me it has been a honeymoon but he still insists that we go to Paris. He has been busy at the force and HQ. They've made it clear that we are not in the force anymore. After we all deal with Nkonzo and Thabo today, we're out of the force as their wives. Kamo has been doing okay but you can see that she's deeply hurt.

Danny: What are you thinking about?

Me: How lucky I am to be with you.

Danny: And I'm the lucky one too

Me: What do you want to have for breakfast?

Danny: You

Me: I'm being serious

Danny: I'm serious too

I laughed and tried getting out of bed but he held me and tickled me.

Me: Danny stop or I'll pee on this bed

Danny: I don't care even if you pee

Me: You're crazy



He kept on tickling me and I managed to get away.

Danny: Run while you still can

I went to the kids room and woke them up. They went to bath while I woke Buu up. Her trial exams were coming up and she needed to focus more than ever. I prepared the kids for school and made breakfast for everyone.

Danny: You look so sexy

Me: Thank you handsome

He kissed me and Onika came in

Onika: Dad! Mom! Sies not in front of me

Danny: You walked in on us

Onika: I'm hungry

Me: Sit down, where is Danver?

Onika: Still looking for his shoes

Me: I told him not to throw them around but he doesn't listen.

Danny: He does have many pairs? Get him the others

Me: No, he must look for the pair he lost. He must learn to be responsible and don't lose things

Danver came in scratching his hair just like Danny does when he is frustrated.

Danver: Mom, I cannot find my shoes

Me: You better go back to that room and find them Danver

Danver: But mom, I looked everywhere

Me: It means you didn't look where you put them if you're standing here empty handed. Go find them

Danver: But mom

Me: You don't want me to go up the and look for them myself, if I find them Danver! You in trouble, you will not get your pocket money

Danny: Babe, you're being too harsh

Me: I've told him more than 3times to put his school shoes in the shoe rack. He must learn his lesson

Danny: I'll go look for them with you  
Danver, come

They left and came back too quickly. I just knew they took another pair.

Danny: See that was easy

Me: Give me those shoes Danny

He gave me and I knew it's the second pair. I bought them and marked each pair differently

Me: Danny and Danver, go look for those shoes

Danny: But you have them

Danver: Dad, I did tell you mom would see that its a different pair

Danny: Come on Nasiphi, I didn't look for the shoes. Honestly you're making a fuss about it

Me: I'm teaching him how to take responsibility

They had their breakfast and Buu packed the dishes.

Buu: I won't be coming back tonight sis, mom called me and said she wants me to sleepover because we need to talk. I wonder what is it that she wants to talk about

Me: You should go and find out

Buu: I hope she isn't going to waste my time.

Me: You didn't end up telling me why you hate your mother so much

She just looked at me and continued with what she was doing. There was a knock on the door and Buu went to open. When she got there she screamed and stood there frozen

Me: What is it?

Danny came from upstairs and we went to check

Me: Hector

Hector: My daughter

Danny: You have guts huh?

Danny took the kids to the car and the driver drove them to school. Buu sat down and it was evident that she was angry. I wanted to know why she is this way.

Danny: Leave my house Hector

Hector: I came to see my daughter

Me: I am not your daughter

Hector: I'm not talking about you

Me: What do you mean?

Hector: Bulelwa, she's my daughter

Buu: Please leave

Hector: I'm not leaving till we talk  
Bulelwa

Buu: Leave Hector!

Danny: You heard her, you don't want  
me to get you to leave in my own way.

Hector: I'll leave but we will talk  
eventually Bulelwa.

With that said he left.

Me: Are you okay Buu?

Danny: I'll get you some water

Buu: That bastard

Me: Care to explain?

Buu: Don't you realize that I don't look  
like all of Muzi's kids?



Me: You look like Nkonzo so its pretty much hard to see the difference

Buu: Well Hector Dlamini is my father, thats what that snake of a woman told me. It is possible that Pamela is also Hectors but I'm not sure.

Cebisile was having an affair with Hector, I was born and Pamela was born throughout that entire affair.

Danny: Wow, is that why you hate your mother so much?

Buu: Yes, it's part of the reasons why

Me: So you're not giving us the entire story

Buu: She once sold me

Danny: Bastard! Who the fuck did she sell you too?

Buu: I was just in grade 10, as you can see I'm gifted bodywise. Hector and Mbuyazi would come oftenly at home since they were Muzi's friends. They would always look at me, they were literally undressing me with their eyes but Dad never noticed. One time, dad left for the United States, he was leaving for two weeks. Mom called me to her room in the morning and told me to get ready so we can go shopping. I was excited and I quickly got ready. We went to the mall and did alot of shopping. She

bought me skimpy clothes that revealed my body. She said I was sexy so I should flaunt it. I took other clothes that I was comfortable with too. We got home and we were the only one's there. She told me to bath and wear the dress she bought me because we're having guests for dinner. I did as she said and got ready. I was so beautiful that I didn't feel uncomfortable in the short revealing dress I had on. I walked downstairs and saw that the guest was Mbuyazi and Hector. We had dinner and I was uncomfortable now because of the looks they were giving

me. When the dinner was over I quickly went to my room and changed into pyjamas. I remember I was washing my face in the bathroom when he came in and held my chin. I was shaken but I didn't let him see that. He kissed my forehead and I told him to stop, that what he was doing was inappropriate but he didn't stop. I called out my mothers name, for her to help me but she turned a deaf ear to all my cries. He took of my panties and slapped my thighs. I touched my clit and rubbed it. I knew that he was going to rape me when he took out his manhood and

rubbed it over my vagina. He said it looked good and freshly shaved just the way he likes it. I was in tears when his big manhood tore my virginal walls. It hurt, it hurt so much. I was trying to fight him off but he was too strong for me. He thrust deeper and deeper, the pain didn't stop. He kept on biting my neck, telling me how good and tight I am. I was disgusted by how an old man could do this to someone young enough to be his youngest daughter. He turned me over and he...

Me: Stop Bulelwa, stop, I cannot hear this.

I was in tears and Danny held us. Buu was in some other world. Her eyes were red and she looked like she was reliving the moment

Danny: Let her continue

Buu: He turned me over and he inserted his manhood inside my asshole. The pain I felt, its the kind of pain that leaves you numb. I couldn't cry nor scream anymore. I just let him be. He showered my body with his cum. It was all over my face. When he laid over next to me, I stood up and walked slowly to the bathroom. I looked at myself in the mirror and felt disgusted. I went downstairs and

took a knife. I hid it in my dress and he called telling me to come back to bed. That he isn't done with me. I slept next to him and held the knife. When he turned me over to face him, I aimed at his heart and stabbed the life out of him. I stabbed him numerous times and I screamed as I realised that I killed him. That I killed Mbuyazi Cele. I rushed downstairs and sat with blood all over my hands and carrying the knife. Hector and my mother came from her room laughing and it was visible that they were busy fucking while I was being raped. Well they knew exactly what Mbuyazi was

doing to me. They didn't see what I was carrying as they were behind me. Cebisile asked me where my future husband was, that alone drove me crazy and I screamed. That's when they saw the blood in my hands. That's when I confirmed their affair. They followed me to my room and saw his dead body on my bed. I told them to take care of their doings. Mom slapped me so hard but I couldn't feel any pain. I had felt more pain, I couldn't cry because of one stupid slap. I told them to get rid of the body and they did so while I was bathing. When everything was done



they sat me down to talk to me. From that day, I hated my own mother. And a man whom I now know is my father.

Me: Where is the body?

Buu; Buried somewhere in our old home. I couldn't stay there so I was able to persuade dad to buy a new house.

Me: I'm so sorry you had to go through all that.

Buu: It's okay, we all have our stories and bad pasts that we went through. Life isn't easy on any of us. I think that's why we all have this bond, the bond between you and your friends.

You all have stories to tell, you all have different pain you've went through, some similar situations and that brought you and held you together.

Danny: True, you have to deal with your trauma, I will take you to see a therapist and you'll get over this

Me: And you'll stop drinking alcohol like a fish. You have trails and finals coming up, you must be fully prepared. Did you even apply Bulelwa?

Buu: Thats something I wanted to talk to you and Danny about. I want to study overseas, I want to leave South

Africa

Me: What, why? That's so far

Buu: Please, I have some money from Dads will.

Danny: You don't need to use that money, I'll take care of everything.

Buu: Really!!?

Danny: Yes, anything that makes you happy Buu.

Buu: Thank you, I hope you don't mind sis

Me: No I don't mind. I will miss you though

Buu: I'll miss you too, we'll just have

to enjoy the time we have now.

Me: See, you're late for school now.  
I'll let you stay in just for today.

Buu: Thank you

Danny: We have to get going Nasiphi

Me: Let me go to the bathroom  
please, take my bag while you wait.

I went to the bathroom and Mr  
McKenzie decided to join me for a 10  
minute quickie.

Danny: Thank you, that was good.

I kissed him one last time and we  
were off to HQ

Nkosi: Took your own time huh?

Danny: I was busy

Phila: You good Mrs McKenzie?

Me: I'm good and yourself Mr Ngcobo?

Phila: Not good at all, Mrs Ngcobo is not taking to me

Me: What did you do to her?

Phila: Why do I have to be at fault? I didn't do anything

Bee: She wouldn't just stop talking to you if you didn't do anything.

We went to where Nkonzo and Thabo were. The room was stinking and I couldn't handle the smell. I vomited and Mpho laughed at me. Danny gave

me something to cover my nose.

They beat them up really badly, their legs were chopped off and their screams were deafening. It was horrible to watch but they deserved it. Danny was out of control and it was scary to see him that way.

Danny: Why the fuck did you betray us Thabo?

Jabu: Why go and betray our friendship that way?

Thabo: We were never friends to begin with

Kamo: Our marriage? Why Thabo? I need answers

Thabo: You were never part of the plan. But when you came along, you just fit in properly. From the day I met you all, I was on a mission, I already knew alot about you gents so that's why we were able to establish that friendship. I knew my mission would take years and years. First of all, I'm not Thabo, I'm Pallence Dutywa. I work for the Columbian Force, you did think I worked for the Russian Force but as you know those forces merged years ago. There's nothing to explain but you need to know that the Columbians and Russians knew everything about you for as long as I

was around.

Phila had his rounds of beating him up. They were all very angry and they had every right

Me: You killed my child!

Thabo: You'll get over it. Danny, you're so rich you don't even realize the money I've been taking from your accounts for the past few months, your accountant has been working for me. Nasiphi you're married to a very wealthy man, wealthier than all of us combined here. Kamogelang, I've never loved you. Why do you think I always cheated on you? Even our



marriage was fake, having a child together was a mistake. You're lucky that I'm leaving you with my precious seed. Why do you think you can't get pregnant anymore? I tied your damn womb. That doctor of yours lied to you because I told him to. I wouldn't want to have another brat with you. You even suck in bed, my whores are much better, maybe your child tastes better than you

We were shocked by the gunshots that followed. She was shooting at both of them and loosing control. She took another gun and shot till I couldn't recognize them.

Danny: Kamogelang!! Stop!

She dropped the gun and cried.

Kamo: I hate him! I hate him!

Me: Its okay, its okay.

Kamo: I killed the father of my baby,  
what will I tell Thembelihle?

Siya: Come, lets get out of here

Me: Babe, you fetch me at Siya's.

Danny: We'll fetch you really late. The  
kids will be dropped off at Siya's too.

Me: Okay

He kissed me and I got into the  
drivers seat

Zandy: You don't want Danny to kill

us. Jump off, I'll drive.

Me: Danny is treating me like a child.

Bee: He's protective, you've been through a lot, if something could happen to you, he would literally lose it. He loves you

Me: I love him too

Kamo: I don't believe in love anymore.

With that said we just kept quiet and focused on the road.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

Insert 55

I had never thought that it would one day be me who is walking all over the streets of New York, England, Paris etc. Our honeymoon has been wonderful. We've been travelling all around and I am having the best time of my life. Thabo was right when he said Danny McKenzie is rich, I don't know how rich he is exactly but our

honeymoon has served as evidence that he is rich. He has houses in all the countries we've travelled so far. When I asked him how rich he is, he just shut me up by saying I should have asked how rich are we. And that was the end of the conversation. We landed in Jamaica early today and I slept throughout the entire morning. When I woke up, it was blazing hot. Danny did warn me about the weather here but I wanted to come here so I have to suffer the consequences of my choices

Danny: Good morning Mrs McKenzie

Me: Good morning Mr McKenzie, how

are you today?

Danny: I'm good and yourself babe  
I was going to answer but I felt a bit  
dizzy

Danny: What's wrong with you?

Me: Nothing, just feeling dizzy

Danny: Maybe you're hungry, let me  
order you some breakfast

Me: A fruit salad please

Danny: That won't keep you full, I'll  
buy you a full english breakfast. I'll  
feed you

Me: Fine

I was angry and I slept facing the

other direction.

Danny: You're getting angry over nothing because you're dizzy, you need to eat. Why are you being so upset?

Me: Don't upset me Danny

The food came and he woke me up but I continued sleeping. He picked me up and carried me to the table

Danny: Eat

Me: Feed me, you want me to eat so you'll feed me.

Danny: You're confusing me, I don't know what is wrong with you

Me: I don't know too. Move away from my face

Danny: Didn't you say you want me to feed you?

Me: I don't want you to feed me anymore. Just move away from me

Danny: I'm going to make a call

Me: Go and don't come back

#Danny

Everything has been so perfect and its the best time of my life. Seeing her smile and enjoying herself made me happy. Making her happy made me feel satisfied and happy. But the way she is today, is really confusing



me. She's just lashing out for no reason. I cannot believe she just said I should move away from her face. Is she that annoyed by me? I didn't even do anything. Being the gentleman that I am, I chose to let her be and I walked away. I made a few calls to KJ and Jomo to check if everything is going well. I checked on Buu and the kids. I've missed them so much, its sad that I'll only get to see them this coming weekend. We've been away from them for too long, two weeks is too long. I need to spend as much time with them as possible before I leave for my next mission which is

for 4months. I haven't told Nasiphi, I know she will not be happy about it at all. I'll leave this October and come back in January. She is totally going to be more angry at me, I won't tell her now, I don't want her to be angry with me now and ruin our honeymoon. I looked at her as she stuffed herself with food, food that she didn't want minutes ago.

Me: Babe

Nasi: Yes McKenzie, I've missed you

Me: Really? You kicked me out

Nasi: Sorry, I don't know why I did that. I'm sorry

Me: Don't apologize. Come here

She came to me and sat on me. She drives me crazy. Just having her on me sends foreign feelings all over my body.

Nasi: I love you

Me: I love you too

Nasi: I want to buy a car

Me: How much do you need? What car do you have in mind?

Nasi: I want to buy it with my own money

Me: You don't need to

Nasi: I want to and you won't stop me.

Babe, we should shower and go car searching. I don't even know which car I want but I want a car. And we must go shopping, I promised the kids that I'll buy them clothes and sneakers. After that we look for a dress I'll wear at the grand opening of the CancerCare Centre.

Me: I guess we have alot of shopping to do wifey

Nasi: Yes we do

#Nasi

I don't know what is wrong with me. I've never been the moody type but I've been moody all morning and I just

got annoyed by Danny. He was so confused and it hurt me to see him that way but I didn't do it intentionally. I just wanted to conversate with him and I guess it just popped that I wanted a car, I don't even know which car I want but I'll get a car. Perks of marrying a rich man, I can spend my money however I want to. I knew he'd want to buy me a car but I refused. He'll just pay for the kids clothes, my clothes and his clothes. We got dressed and left. The streets of New York are so full and there's alot of traffic.

Me: Park the car here and we'll walk.

Danny: You're crazy

Me: It's going to be fun babe, and when you tired we'll come get the car and drive.

Danny: Fine, anything you want

Precious Pearl

Me: I love you

Danny: I love you too

We walked hand in hand and it was the best experience ever. Being in the crowd and we got caught up in a street mob dance. We had to dance along and it was funny seeing Danny dance but all in all we had so much fun. We started with clothing

shopping and we got more than we needed. The kids will be so happy about the clothes we bought them. We then had lunch at a restaurant and I tried different foods.

Danny: You ate alot, you're going to vomit if we keep walking. Lets go back to the car

Me: My feet hurt now, we can go back.

We walked back to the car and put our shopping bags in the car boot.

Danny: We're off to look for your car now

Me: Yep! I'm excited

We went looking and most cars didn't

excite me that much until I landed my eyes on a matte black Mercedes-Benz CL 03.

Me: Babe, I want this one!

Danny: You sure?

Me: Definitely

Danny: We're take that one Sir

The car dealer nodded and went to get some documents for us. Danny signed everything and he made the payment and I smiled. I knew he'd buy the car, theres no use fighting him about it. Saves me more money. The shipment will take about a month

Danny: Are you happy?



Me: Very happy

Danny: Then I'm happy, I love it when you spend my money.

Me: You make me spend your money

Danny: I'll get your own Black card made and all funds will be paid for by me.

Me: There's no need babe, you already give me so much money monthly

Danny: I'll start putting that money in the black card account

Me: Okay Danny

Danny: Money is something that I

have, so I don't want us arguing about it. Your companies are also making millions so money is something you also have, I don't want us to ever argue about finances.

Money is not a problem in our family

Me: The kids should have trustfunds

Danny: They do, they even have so many accounts which they will get at a certain age. You know, I even made an account for Tia

Me: Tia?

Danny: Our baby, the one we lost.

Me: You named the baby Tia? That's a girl's name what if it was a boy?

Danny: I don't know but I just knew it was a girl and I named her Tia. We've never really spoke about her

Me: She's gone Danny

I ignored him and walked to our hotel room. He came in and held my pinning my head on his chest

Danny: We cannot ignore this forever. She was part of our lives. She was our child baby, we lost her in a very bad way. I hate the man who caused her death. I would do anything to bring her back but I cannot. Its beyond me, forgive me for not being able to protect you both

Me: You did your best, you saved my life but saving hers was beyond everyone. Thabo's soul will never rest in peace for doing such evil. You're not to be blamed for anything

Danny: Let's not act like she was never a part of us

Me: What do you want me to do? Talk about her? I cannot do that, yes I'll never forget about her but talking about her everyday is something I cannot do. I cannot forever be reminded of the pain I felt when I lost her. I cannot, I cannot Danny.

He held me as I cried. I guess this is

the most sensitive subject we'll ever  
conversate about in our life.

Danny: I love you, I'm always here for  
you Nasiphi

Me: Thank you, I love you too.

I went to the bathroom and washed  
my face. I went back to him and he  
was laying in bed and I joined him

Me: So tell me

Danny: Tell you what?

Me: When are you leaving?

Danny: I don't know what you're  
talking about

Me: Danny, I know you're hiding

something from me and its about you leaving. Now talk

Danny: I don't want to ruin our honeymoon

Me: I'm not going to get used to you leaving if you'll tell me the day before you pack up and leave.

Danny: I understand

Me: Now talk Triston

Danny: I'm leaving in October and I'm coming back in January

Me: Okay

Danny: Thats all you're going to stay?

Me: Yes, I don't want to ruin our

honeymoon

Danny: So you're still going to bring this up after the honeymoon?

Me: Yes I am

Danny: Oh I guess I'm still going to be punished, can it not be silent treatment?

Me: You don't get to choose babe.  
Now kiss me

Danny: Music to my ears

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

Insert 56

Two Months Later

I never thought I'd miss him like this. I get so emotional by just seeing his pictures on my phone but I never call him because the moment he hears me cry, he'll come home in a flash. I have been living by locking myself up. I lock myself in the house and they



hardly ever see me at work because I shut myself in my office and work all day long. I haven't seen any of my friends except Venes and Athi merely because we work together. I have been distancing myself from them for good reasons. The opening of the CancerCare Centre was such a success. It was overwhelming to see how many lives I've touched and how many people needed the help of getting medical care to treat cancer. It went beyond than helping woman with breast cancer but it helped many men and children suffering from the disease who came forth. So far we

have had about 50 people who have survived from cancer. A few have passed on but we have made a huge change for the past two months.

Ngamso has been hands on and it is a success. Today is my birthday and so is it Danvers, and Onika's in a way. She wanted to celebrate her's with us so we didn't really have much of a celebration on her birthday. I was against it at first but she insisted on it so I had to support her decision.

They have both been doing very well at school and they are making me very proud. Danver is growing too fast, he know keeps curly hair and he

wants to change its colour and dye it black. Buu has started with her final exams and you hardly even see her. Her therapy sessions worked wonders on her and I could see a lot of change. She did very well on her trial exams and I know she will ace her finals. She's working really hard so that she can be accepted in Harvard university. I woke up not feeling well as usual. The kids came to my room and we sang for each other

Onika: I'm so excited!

Me: I'm excited too, please get me a bottle of water Danver

Danver: Okay mom, with your pills?

Me: No, not today sweetie.

He got me a bottle of water and I gulped it.

Buu came in with breakfast for us and we had breakfast in my room.

Buu: Does he know?

Me: Know what?

She looked at me with the "Don't fuck with me" look. And I shook my head.

Buu: He won't be happy

Me: I know

Buu: Go bath and look beautiful, I'll prepare the kids

Me: The party is starting early?

Buu: Yes, at 9am

Me: Argh, I don't even feel like going but I have to.

I went to the bathroom and took a long long shower

Buu: You're taking too long!!!

Me: I need to look beautiful, I'm almost done.

I dried myself up and lotioned my body. I went to my closet. Argh! Looking for clothes to wear is stressful. I wore a long black dress with a short denim jacket and flipflops. I put on some make up

because my face looked awful.

Buu: Finally, you look beautiful

Me: Thanks you too. Let's go

I called the kids and they were on point.

Me: You guys look cute

Them: Thanks mommy

I got into the car and we left. I drove off to Jabu's house. That's where the party was taking place. They were all outside waiting for us. The girls screamed when they saw me, Its been long since they saw me. Venes, Gugu and Pamela were also here and so were my mothers.

Sbahle: You stranger! Come here

They all hugged me and I was literally suffocating. We went into the house and we were led to the backyard at the chilling area. The set up for adults was there and the kids were in the play room.

Paula: How have you been Nasi?

Me: I'm fine, just busy

Zandy: You've locked yourself up for too long

Siya: I literally thought you were avoiding us

I shook my head saying no but deep down I knew that I was avoiding

everyone. Lubah didn't keep his eyes off me and it was making me uncomfortable. Very uncomfortable. I avoided his eyes by all means.

Kamo: You've gained weight

Me: I've been stuffing myself with food. Most times I work at home so I work, eat and sleep.

Siya: I totally get you, before I was serious about the gym, I gained weight all the time.

Lubah: May I have a word with you Nasiphi?

Me: Now?

Lubah: Yes



Me: Uhm sure

He literally pulled me into the house and Mpho was there too.

Lubah: You're pregnant

Me: You're crazy

Mpho: How do you explain your weight? Don't give me the fake story you gave the ladies.

Me: I don't know what you want me to say

Lubah: How do you explain your constant visits to Dr Cele? You going to the chemist and your stomach is visible.

Me: It's none of your business and why do you know about my whereabouts?

Mpho: You're married to Danny

Me: So?

Mpho: When he is not around, we are there to protect you. Does he know

Me: No

Lubah: He won't be happy

Me: I know

I left them standing there and I was angry. We sat for about half an hour and I was alarmed by suddenly smelling his scent. No I'm just being

crazy and missing him. I felt his touch on my shoulder. I closed my eyes and stood up. I opened my eyes and he was smiling like a 4year old boy. He looked at me carefully and he frowned. I immediately knew he now knows. This stomach is very much visible and I'm just 2months pregnant.

Danny: Mfazi wam, umithi?(My wife, are you pregnant?)

Tears just escaped from my eyes and I couldn't control them nor could I be able to see how he feels because he had a straight facial expression.

Danny: Is it not my baby?

I lost it, I slapped him twice and he was shocked. I took my bag but he held me and kissed me. I pushed him away

Me: Get off me you bastard!

Danny: Calm down, it's not good for our baby

Me: Its our baby now huh!? I cannot believe you would even doubt that it is your baby.

Danny: I didn't think straight, I thought it could be the only reason why you hid the pregnancy from me. You all knew but you kept it away from me!!

Mpho: No, we didn't know. We only

found out today, well me and Lubah. The others just found out well right now.

Bee: It's the first time we even see her today since you left

Venes: Besides me and Athi since we work together but she was hardly ever at work.

Why are they reporting all this to Danny? I'm standing right in front of them!

Danny: Mfazi wam, talk to me. I'm your husband, we talk about things because communication is key right? I nodded and he led me to one of the

rooms. I sat on the edge of the bed and he stood in front of me.

Danny: How far are you?

Me: Two Months and a few days

Danny: The baby was conceived on our honeymoon.

Me: Yes.

Danny: I don't understand why you didn't tell me

Me: I found out on the day you left for your mission

Danny: So?

Me: I knew you'd want to stay and don't go but the force needed their

leader

Danny: And you didn't need your husband?

I looked down and he cleared his throat

Danny: Look at me when I'm talking to you Nasiphi.

He's voice was stern and scary. He was angry and he had every reason to be. He really scares me when he is this angry.

Danny: I want to shout at you but I do not want to hurt you especially not on this day. I'm sorry for what I said earlier. I'm hurt and disappointed

Nasiphi and I cannot help but feel as if there's more to this. I'm going to see my kids

He left me and I cried stuffing my face on the pillow. Ngamso came in and smiled at me.

Me: Don't fake it

Ngamso: It's going to be a long seven months if you're going to be this rude and cheeky

Me: I'm sorry

Ngamso: Apology not accepted

Me: Mxm

Ngamso: I'll cut your toes off. This



pregnancy got you really bad, your face is ugly.

Me: Ngamso don't upset me

Ngamso: I'm just telling you the truth. I know you're hurt but babe, you're turning 27 today, you're pregnant and your man came back from wherever he was dodging bullets to protect us all just to spend this special day with his family. That's something special and you don't want to look back and cry about this day. Now he is angry and shocked and mostly confused, we all are but I believe you have valid reasons for your actions. He will come around and forgive you. He

cannot stay angry at you, he misses you even now. Chin up and come enjoy.

Me: Thanks, I'm hungry

Ngamso: I'll tell Danny to dish up for you while you fix that face of yours. There are fresh towels in the left cupboard

Me: Thank you Mrs Shezi

Ngamso: My pleasure Mommy to be I cringed, that alone creeped me out. I had this foreign feeling I didn't understand. I fixed my face and went back to the others outside. Danny fed me but he wasn't talking to me. The

kids were very happy to see him and it made me happy to see them smile and laugh with their father. My mom came to me and touched my stomach and I pushed her hand away. She looked at me for too long.

MaN: Congratulations

Me: Thanks

MaN: Are you sure you're okay Pearl?

Me: Yes. Excuse me

I went to the bathroom and looked at myself in the mirror. What is happening to me? I sat down and closed my eyes

#Danny

On the flight back home I was very excited about seeing my wife and kids. But what I found out when I got home didn't make me happy. She's been keeping such a secret from me, I know I was wrong to jump into conclusions but I didn't even know what to think. I couldn't even justify the reasons why she hid the pregnancy from me and she isn't even explaining. The way she is acting is also confusing me. Maybe its the hormones? But she's rude and cheeky, I heard her talking to Ngamso. It looks like we'll skate on thin ice next to her. I was angry, I was hurt

and disappointed but she's my wife and I'm worried about her so much. I have been keeping an eye on her and the way she reacted when her mother touched her stomach. She quickly removed her hand and hesitated. She quickly walked away and I followed her. She locked herself in the bathroom and I gave her some space. 30mins passed and she wasn't out yet

Me: What the hell could she be doing in the bathroom for so long?

Zandy: I'll go knock and check up on her

She went and came back saying she isn't responding

Me: Something is up. Jabu, I'm breaking your door

Jabu: Just as long as you'll pay for it.

I kicked the door down and she was laying on the floor.

Me: Nasiphi!

I went to her and she was fast asleep.

Me: How does she fall asleep in the bathroom?

I carried her and went to the bedroom and laid her down. I kissed her forehead and looked at my wife

Me: What is going on with you my wife?

I was in deep thoughts and I am worried so much about her. Leaving to complete the next two months will be hard but I'll only leave once I see that she is okay.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

## Insert 57

I woke up feeling really really hungry. Then I remembered, I'm eating for two and I don't remember having supper last night. I tried moving but I was stuck. Am I paralyzed? I realized Danny had his arms around me and there was no way of getting off of him.

Me: Babe, wake up!

He didn't hear me so I started kissing him on his neck and he moaned opening his little horny eyes.



Me: Move, I'm hungry

Danny: Eat me

Me: I need real food

Danny: Ouch... but you cannot wake me up in such a sexy way and don't take care of this boner that you made

Me: Babe that's just your morning erection. Take a cold shower

Danny: I have a wife with a hot pussy and I should take cold showers?

Those days ended when I was the most wanted bachelor

Me: Full of ourselves aren't we?

Danny: Now come kiss me again, I've

missed you

Me: I'm sorry about yesterday

Danny: We'll talk about that after you service me.

He laid down looking at me. I guess I'm doing all the work today. I kissed his neck all the way down to his penis. Sucking on it made me really horny and want it inside me already. I sat on it and inserted it in

Danny: Foreplay over already?

Me: I'm too horny

He laughed at me and I started riding him. He's moans turned into groans and that alone sent me over the edge.

I increased my pace and kissed him.

Me: I love you Danny

Danny: I love you too Mrs Danny

With that said we both reached our destinations.

Danny: That was amazing

I smiled and looked away. He's making me blush

Danny: I'm glad I still make you wanna hide your red flushed face. I've missed my wife

Me: I've missed my husband. Lets go shower

Danny: Round two in the shower?

Me: No

He spanked me and I ran away. We got into the shower and he got what he wanted. As he always does. We finished up and got dressed.

Danny: I'll order breakfast, I don't want you walking around the kitchen. You need to rest yourself

Me: But babe

Danny: No buts

Me: When are you leaving?

Danny: I'm not leaving

Me: You need to complete your mission

Danny: I have agents from all over this world, they can handle it. You're pregnant and I'm not leaving. You need someone to take care off you

Me: I can take care of myself, I don't need a babysitter

Danny: Oh so you can fall asleep in a public toilet and you get kidnapped or murdered

Me: I didn't fall sleep at a public toilet

Danny: You fell asleep in the bathroom in Jabu's house

Me: Not true!

Danny: You think you flew here? We had to break the door, only to find you

sleeping on the floor after locking yourself in there.

Me: Wow

Danny: Yes wow, care to explain

Me: How will I explain something I don't even remember?

Danny: Mmmmh

Me: Don't say that

Danny: I don't understand why you kept our baby a secret

Me: I didn't want you to worry and don't go on your mission

Danny: When did you find out?

Me: The day you left.

Danny: I'm really hurt. Are you happy about this pregnancy?

Me: I don't know how to answer that

Danny: Its a simple question, yes or no?

Me: Yes I'm happy but I'm scared too.

Danny: I am scared too, don't shut me out. Talk to me, you taught me how to communicate now practice what you preach

Me: I'm scared I might not be able to protect our child. What if we lose this baby too? I cannot lose another baby, Loosing Tia was the most hurtful and heartbreaking experience that I never

want to go through

Danny: You will carry this baby till full term. I will be with you every step of the way. That bastard killed our child, it is not because you couldn't carry the baby till full term. Thabo cut her life short. He caused the miscarriage. I understand why you're being like this but babe, I need you to stop being scared and stop stressing. It's not good for our baby. Allow us to touch you, your mother was hurt when you pushed her hand away. She's not going to hurt your baby, we're not going to hurt her.

Me: I will try my love. And do you



think its a girl?

Danny: Yes it is

Me: You sound so sure

Danny: That's because I'm hoping for another princess.

Me: Well I'm hoping for a Prince

Danny: Lets bet on it? Whoever wins gets a Porsche 811 turbo cabriolet

Me: Are you crazy!?

Danny: Deal?

Me: Fine, it's a deal.

Danny: When will we get to know the gender?

Me: When I'm 5months pregnant so

start saving up!

There was a knock on the door and  
all my friends came in

Venes: Morning!!!!!!

Buu also came downstairs

Me: Hey girls

Zandy: Go change, we're going  
shopping and having a catching up  
session. You've been awol for a long  
two months

Sneh: And we're mad at you. We've  
missed you soo much

Naye: You're paying for lunch to make  
it up to us. Now go get dressed

Danny: You can't take my wife  
without my permission

Sbahle: Yes we can dad, you go join  
your friends at Phila's. They're  
drowning themselves in alcohol

Danny: Kaitso said I should say hey to  
you, he knows you miss him

Sbahle: He's so full of himself. When  
is he coming back anyways?

Danny: Why do you want to know?  
You really do miss him

Sbahle: Just want to know so I can  
book myself a vacation far away so I  
won't see his ugly face

Danny: Mmmmh

I went upstairs and he followed me to the our bedroom.

Danny: What are you going to wear?

Me: I don't know

Danny: I'll pick out something for you

Me: Thank you

I freshened up while he was busy in my closet. I then went to him, mind you I was walking around naked

Danny: Baby, you're killing me right now. Couldn't you wrap a towel around your sexy body?

Me: No I wanted my husband to see my sexy body

He spanked me and I laughed at him.  
He picked out a floral green dress for  
me and sandals

Me: Thank you McKenzie

I got dressed and I looked beautiful.  
He gave me earrings to wear and a  
bag I'll carry

Me: I didn't know I had my very own  
stylist. How do I look?

Danny: I try my best. You look  
beautiful

Me: Thank you. I love you

He told me he loves me too and we  
kissed. He held my bag as we went  
downstairs

Belinda: You guys look so cute together, you're making me want to cry

Phelo: So much drama Linda

Me: She's always over dramatic

Belinda: I'm right here remember

Zandy: It's not something they didn't want you to hear.

Siya: Lets go or we'll be late

Danny walked me to a certain car which wasn't familiar to me

Me: Who's car is this?

Paula: It belongs to me sis

Me: What! OMG! When did you get it?

Im so happy for you, congratulations  
my love

Paula: Its been two weeks, my man  
takes good car of me.

Me: Brian is such a sweetheart.

Paula: Yeah he is, we have alot to  
catch up on so lets go.

Danny: Bye girls, take care of my  
queen.

He kissed me one more time and we  
left. I was in Paula's car with, Venes,  
Nceba and Sbahle. We drove off to  
the mall and we went to the Spa

Me: Like you guys knew how much I  
need a massage

Bee: We thought you might really need one.

We got full body massages, full body wax and we were now chilling in the Jacuzzi. I wasn't told to bring a bikini but my sister, Sneh carried one for me.

Me: Soo Paula, spit it all out

Paula: Well, life has been good! Brian is the best man on Earth. Yes we argue alot but he loves me guys and we did the deed so I'm officially not a virgin

Me: Mmmh Mr Ngcobo making my little sis Happy! That's all I need to



know, seeing you this happy makes me happy.

Zandy: And she stays at home all day and gets treated like a queen

Paula: I will work, just not yet.

Me: That's what you said when you guys left.

Paula: I'll work next year

Siya: Or you'll be like me and don't work at all

Naye: I don't work too, well I do but you know what I mean

Bee: You're a Queen, that's where your job lies

Me: How is it?

Naye: What? Being a Queen?

Me: Yes

Naye: It's hard and challenging but I love it. It teaches me new things all the time and makes me grow. Plus its worth it, I love supporting my husband in all that he does and being by his side when he makes tough decisions to serve the kingdom.

Every man needs a woman who will support him and advise him so he can be able to achieve all he does.

And I'm happy to be King Nkosinathi's suitable helper.

Me: Wow

Ngamso: Interesting hey, you also have a big responsibility of supporting Danny. He is the leader of the force. That I know is no child's play.

Me: I'm not that involved. At times I feel as if I'm holding him back

Sneh: What do you mean?

Me: I feel as if I'm holding him back because I don't know much about the force, well I doubt I even know a quarter of what goes on there. I've seen it in his eyes, he's passionate about it and he loves that he saves

people's lives and serves the country. But whenever he is away, he has to worry about me not being able to protect myself or the kids. When he is at home protecting me and our kids, he worries about what's going on at the force. Whether his agents need him or not. He's torn apart between two places. I want to support him but I don't know how, I want him to go on his missions and for it to be a success without him worrying about us. I want him to do what he loves and not regret not doing it one day all because of me.

Kamo: I suggest you talk to him

about this. And you don't want to be the reason why he doesn't do what he is passionate about.

Paula: I am in the dark more about this second life the gents live. Atleast you guys all know. I just keep quiet and when he is ready and trusts me enough to know about the shady things he does, he will talk.

Zandy: I wish I was as clueless as you are

Ntoko: We all wish so but we're not. It does hurt going to bed at night all alone and knowing he might even not come back. Its worse for you Nasiphi

because you get to spend months without him, I know I wouldn't survive that. But at the end of the day, they are all doing what they have always wanted to do and it is our job to support them and don't complain. They provide for us, take care of us. We wouldn't even know this kind of lifestyle if it wasn't for their hard work. Yes we do sometimes want our husbands all to ourselves but what difference would it make if you kept him to yourself all the time but deep within he is not happy? He is not doing what he loves to do all in the sake of us being selfish. Let him be.

And you will see a different side to him, you will see how happy he is and he will do he's missions successfully knowing he has a wife at home supporting him and waiting for him. Who knows, he might even be back earlier.

Sbahle: You guys are so married!  
Geez

Venes: You can say that again.

Ngamso: I'll just learn too, Jabu is going for the next two months. He's holding in for Danny

Me: See? Now another woman has to suffer from not having her husband

home because of me. Danny can not go back because of me.

Ngamso: No, no I didn't mean it like that.

Me: It's true.

Naye: Just talk to him and you'll be able to solve this.

Zandy: Plus we're always here for you, don't ever shut us out of your life like you did the past two months. We were miserable without you

Me: I'm sorry my ladies.

We got out of the Jacuzzi and freshened up.



Kamo: I love this spa!

Phelo: Salon then shopping?

Sneh: Yes

Buu: I wanna look for a dress, my Matric dance is coming up straight after my last exam.

Bee: Our designer will make a dress for you

Buu: Wow really? Thanks

Belinda: Don't worry, you'll be stunning. You got us!

We went to the salon and did our hair. I just washed my afro and styled it. On our way out we bumped into

some girl. She was very fit and sexy. She smiled at us and saluted. They greeted back

Me: Who is she?

Phelo: I was about to ask the same question

Zandy: She works for the force.

I nodded, wow Danny works with such pretty girls. I know its crazy but I was jealous

Me: How beautiful are the ladies that work for the force?

Bee: Some are ugly some are really stunning.

Me: Mmmmh

Naye: Trust me, Danny only sees you

Kamo: That's true. Probably Thabo slept with half of the girls there.

We all just didn't comment because it was probably true. I noticed how I wanted to walk in the middle of them and was careful of who walked in front of me. I wanted to protect myself and my child. I don't want anyone I don't know to have any physical contact with me. We shopped till I was really tired. We had lunch and it was really good to be with them. I didn't realize how much I

have missed my friends. We left the mall and picked up the kids at Jabu's but Onika and Danver had already left with their father. I got home and the kids were sleeping.

Me: I'm exhausted

Danny: I can see by the amount of shopping bags that you had a blast. You look beautiful my precious Pearl.

He kissed my forehead and the helpers took my bags.

Danny: Please prepare her something to eat

He said to the chef and he carried me to the couch.

Me: There's no need to, I just ate.

Missed me?

Danny: You have no idea.

Me: I missed you more though. We need to talk

Danny: About?

Me: Tell me about the force

Danny: What? Why?

Me: I want to know more about what you do.

Danny: Oh wow, I never thought I'd hear this

He had a big smile on his face and I could tell he was happy.

Danny: We basically work with governments all over the world. We protecting some and some countries we work to expose that they are corrupt and save its poeole. You find that some countries are still on wars and the people are affected, our job is to protect those people and make sure they are safe. We sometimes find ourselves in that war. Thats when we fight using weapons. The force has a good side, and thats the good side of it. The bad side is the smuggling of weapons and now ofcause your fathers drug business. We save people from human

trafficking and those greedy idiots who kidnapp young girls and sell them. Make them import and export drugs. We basically there to protect more than kill. We kill when its necessary, we kill the bad guys.

Me: I want you to train me, so that I can be able to protect myself

Danny: Not happening, you're pregnant.

Me: When I've given birth then Danny

Danny: Okay

Me: For now I want to have bodyguards

Danny: Who is this and what did you

do to Nasiphi? You bit my head off when I said that, well honestly you do have bodyguards but you just don't know

Me: You did that again? Well now I want to see them now and have them with me 24/7 just so I can feel safe and protected

Danny: I'm here

Me: No you're not, you're going back to your mission and it's not up for discussion

Danny: You're so sexy when you're shooting demands

Me: I am serious Triston. I know you



love what you do, I can see it all in your eyes. It would be selfish of me to tell you to stay yet you're not happy and your mind is somewhere else. You're their leader and a leader needs to be there and lead his people. I don't want you waking up one day and regretting things because of me. You are my husband and it is my job to support you. I want you to be happy, even if I have to sleep alone at night while you serve the world, then so be it. Just don't forget that you have a family too, I am setting you free but don't over use that freedom by forgetting that we have children

who also need their father. Do you understand?

Danny: Yes Mam, you don't know how happy I am to hear you say all this Nasiphi. You are indeed the best wife I could ever ask for. I will be back for our family, I know we have kids to raise and you won't do it alone.

Me: I hope so Danny. I really do hope so. It hurts but its worth it. Don't get Jabu to leave, his family needs him.

Danny: My family needs me too, I'm not taking him off the team. He is on board on missions for the next 4months.

Me: Ngamso will loose her mind.

Danny: She'll be strong. She needs to.

Me: So where is this mission?

Danny: I cannot tell you Mrs Me. You know, sometimes when I'm away, I'm actually around in Durban

Me: What!

Danny: Yes, but you just don't know. When I'm on a mission, I needed to be away from you so I can be able to focus, but at times I cannot, especially when I know you're not happy with me being away. Its really hard for me too, being away from my family isn't any fun babe, but this is

what I was trained for. This is who I am and what I need to do

Me: And I won't stand in the way of your happiness

Danny: You're my happiness too.

Me: But you can only be in one place at a time. And I will not make you choose, that would be selfish of me. You allowed me to follow my dreams and do what I love, now I am allowing you. Don't be held back because of me. In love, you have to compromise and that is what I am doing. I love you  
Danny Triston McKenzie

Danny: Where have you been all my

life MaNyathi? I love you too Pearl  
Nasiphi Amahle Nyathi.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's  
of friends

#LBAR

Insert 58

Its been two weeks since he left.

Letting him go was not easy but it

had to be done. He had to go lead his people into triumph. He will come back home when all is over and be with his family. Ofcourse being the overprotective Danny that he is, he didn't leave without us going to see a doctor to check on the baby. Our bet is still on and I do hope that I win. Ofcourse I will be happy even if its a girl but spending almost a million rands is what I'm worried about. If he wins, I'll use his money to buy the car. Fair enough right? I now have bodyguards following me around, I didn't want the entire team. Just three of them were enough for me.

The kids also have one each and Onika enjoys it very much. She is so sassy and grows by the day.

Danver: Will it always be this way?  
Dad always being away?

Me: Most times

I sat in between them and tried explaining why daddy is away

Me: See, Daddy has to work just like I have to work. Difference is, Dad works far far away so he cannot be here at all times. He goes for a few months and stays for a few months

Onika: But this will be the second December holiday he doesn't spend

with us

Me: He will come see us and guess what? We're going on a vacation and all your friends will be there. All the fathers won't be there though and when they do come, daddy will be there too

Danver: But I wish he was around more. I have a big soccer match next week Saturday, it's the final match. Onika has her hockey match next week Friday, he will miss all the important events

Me: If daddy didn't work, you wouldn't be able to even play that soccer. He



has go work so he can provide for us, so you can go to school, so you can have the food you eat and the clothes you wear. It is all because he works. I know you miss him and I miss him too but we have to be strong and understand that he is doing everything that he does for us. We're very lucky to have someone like him. So whenever he is around, we make the best memories right?

Them: Yes mom

Me: Good, now go bath so we can go to Grandma's

Onika: May we sleep over? Its been a

while since we visited

Me: You can but I'll fetch you first thing in the morning tomorrow okay

Danver: Yes mom

They bathed while I packed for them. Buu was at school. I prepared something to eat for them while they got dressed

Onika: May we also have ice cream after this meal?

Me: Yes you may.

We ate up and I left. The helpers were in the house and the driver drove us and we were followed by the bodyguards. We got at moms and

MaDlamini was in the garden. Paula was also around watching TV

Me: Hello Sis, why is my mother in the garden? She never listens does she?

Paula: Nope and she never will. She loses her mind when she's not doing anything. We've been cleaning this house since 5am, and trust me it was very clean but your mom thought it was dirty. I'm so exhausted

Me: You should be

The kids were already at the garden with mom. I went to greet her and we sat next to her with Paula while the

kids helped her plant vegetables

Me: Have you been seeing your doctor mom?

MaD: I should be asking you that, how is my grandchild?

Me: I have been seeing a doctor and your grandchild is fine. Now stop trying to change this subject, answer me.

MaD: Yes I have been seeing my doctor.

Me: Are you okay mom?

MaD: Yes I'm fine.

Me: Talk

MaD: I'm fine, your father just called yesterday. I hadn't heard from him in so long. He said he needs to see me

Me: I hope you said no

Paula: Amahle!

Me: What?

I was disturbed by a call from KJ, when last did I even hear from him.

Me: Kaitso the stranger

KJ: Mrs McKenzie, I told you to call me KJ not Kaitso.

Me: Well I prefare Kaitso. Shouldn't you be saving the world?

KJ: I would if my boss had his head

pulled together. I don't know what is it with him but he's loosing his mind. If he doesn't pull himself together, we will come back in coffins. Jabu and I tried talking to him, we are trying to manage everything but its too much for just the both of us. We need our leader

Me: Where is he?

KJ: In a meeting. I booked you a flight, you need to come here.

Me: Where? I cannot just leave

KJ: You have to, your flight leaves in 30mins, you don't need to pack. We're in Joburg

Me: You make so many demands.

KJ: Your driver already knows he needs to take you to the airport now.

Goodbye

I ended the call and sighed. I told the kids I'd be leaving and I'll come back Monday morning. They were happy to spend more days with their aunt and grandma. I got into the car and was driven to the airport. The flight took a long two hours and I was taken to Danny's house. I didn't know he has a house in Joburg but I don't get shocked anymore. He probably has houses everywhere he goes. I walked around and found the master

bedroom, there were two bags in there and my things were there. KJ is as sly as a fox. I won't even ask how my things got here. I watched tv the entire afternoon and cooked around 6pm. I dished up when I was done and I ate. I was exhausted so I went to bed. I got a silly idea and went through with it.

#Danny

Leaving home was sad as always but I was happy that my wife supported me. I was happy that she finally allowed me to be and let me take on my role as a leader in the force. The little time I was gone everything



turned into some mess. We have been dealing with many cases at once and they didn't do anything without my approval. I had alot to do in a short amount of time. It has only been two weeks since I returned to the Joburg Head Quarters but I'm already loosing my mind. How did my father cope with so much pressure? What makes things worse is how much I have been thinking about Ziyanda lately. It frustrates me so much but she has been in my mind. I smell her scent, I hear her voice and I know it sounds crazy but at times I feel her touch. It is like I'm being

haunted by her ghost. Maybe I am exaggerating right? Yesterday was our anniversary, maybe that is why she's been on my mind lately. I am confused whether I am missing her or I'm guilty of not going to visit her grave on our anniversary for the past two years. That has been affecting me and bringing me down because my emotions are all over the place and that alone can jeopardize my missions. Jabu and KJ have been head of some cases and they do need my approvals too and I need to be assisting everyone. I was in a parliament meeting which I went

undercover because I cannot be spotted. I wanted to do it personally, its a huge case. I went back to my office around 6:30pm. Lindelwa was still there, she has been a life saver lately

Me: Haven't left?

Lindelwa: I went to cook and came back with your food. Its on your desk

Me: Thank you so much. I was getting tired of take aways. I'll have it at home, want me to drop you off?

Lindelwa: Yes Mr McKenzie

I took the lunchtin and my bag. We got into my car and I dropped her off

at her apartment. I drove straight home and I was exhausted. I needed to go straight to bed. I took a spoon and ate my food while walking upstairs. I got the shock of my life and choked on the food I was eating when I saw Nasiphi laying on the bed in lingerie reading a book. When did she get here? I couldn't help but smile at the sexy creature that was right in front of me.

Me: Mrs McKenzie

Nasi: You dished up for yourself? I didn't think you'd even notice that I cooked

Shit! She cooked? How do I explain this?

Me: Uhm I didn't dish up, I came from the office with this food.

She frowned and I could see she was disappointed

Nasi: Who cooked for you? Cause that's not restaurant food

Me: Lindelwa, she's my agent

Nasi: An agent that cooks for you?  
Mmmh

Me: What is that supposed to mean  
Nasiphi?

Nasi: Nothing. Goodnight

Me: Babe, I'm in no mood to argue

Nasi: Don't be forward. No one was arguing with you

Tjo, she was pissed. Her hormones really do work against me. She's so rude and cheeky. I laughed and kissed her cheek. Seeing her made me better. I squeezed her butt cheeks and she laughed. That's my girl, I kissed her all over and removed the lace lingerie. She looked so sexy, even her round belly was sexy on her

Me: This was a great surprise, I've missed you. I won't even ask how you knew I was here and how you got

here. What's important is that you're here

Nasi: I did vow that I'd be there when you need me. What is going on? They telling me Mr McKenzie has been slacking these past few days

Me: Can we talk about it when I'm done with you?

Nasi: Fine

Her giggles sent shivers all over my body. I took her all in, she was mine and I was all over her. Her moans sent me to the edge. Feeling myself all inside of her tight vaginal walls made me feel some foreign way. I

was pouring all my love onto her in  
the most pleasureable way

Nasi: I love you Danny

Me: I love you too Ntombi  
yakwaNyathi

We came together calling each  
others names. I'll never get enough of  
my wife's pussy. She is literally the  
best I've ever had. I carried her to the  
bathroom and we continued in the  
shower.

Nasi: You look so handsome

Me: Really? Thanks babe

We showered and went to bed naked.



Me: Now honestly, how did you get here?

Nasi: KJ called, he was worried about you and he arranged for me to be here. What's going on?

Me: I thought as much. Babe I don't think its something you'll be happy about

Nasi: What did you do with Lindelwa?

Me: Really Amahle? Don't upset me

Nasi: I'm sorry

Me: As I was saying, I don't think you'll be happy about it because I've been thinking about Ziyanda lately. She's been on my mind almost all the

time. It was our anniversary  
yesterday.

Nasi: Oh

Me: I knew you wouldn't be happy  
about that

Nasi: I just don't know what to say.  
Maybe you should go visit her grave  
when you're back.

Me: You think so?

Nasi: Or you should do an unveiling  
for her, new tombstone maybe?

Me: That's an idea, how come you're  
not angry?

Nasi: It's not something to be angry

about Triston. She will always be in your heart, you loved her and maybe you still do. You will remember her on days you made unforgettable memories. She has a place in your heart no one can take away, not even I can. And I've accepted it. You can have the both of us in your heart, its okay with me.

A tear fell from her eyes and I knew she was saying this just to make me feel better. And she was trying to convince herself that she can accept sharing my heart with someone else. I knew deep inside she was hurting. She wants to be the only one and

what she doesn't know is that she is the only one in my heart

Me: Pearl, you have to know and never doubt that you're the only one in my heart. You're not sharing your place with anyone okay? As I've said before, I've never loved someone the way I love you.

She nodded and I kissed her.

Nasi: But we will still go on with my idea

Me: Yes.

We talked for a while and we eventually fell asleep.

**#NEXTMORNING**

#NASI

Last night was amazing. The things he did to me were filled with his love. There was no doubt that this man loves me. What we talked about yesterday did hurt me abit but it is natural for it to happen. I cannot expect him to never ever think about Zee and completely forget about her. She played a role in his life and gave him two adorable kids. He assured me that he only has a place for me in his heart and I believed him. He loves me and only me. When I woke up he was gone. He left a note telling me he has went to his office which I figured

was the JHB Head Quarters. I watched TV while stuffing myself with food. I cooked lunch for him and bathed once it was ready. Around 1pm I told the drivers to drive me to JHB-HQ. When I got there everyone was on their feet doing something. They all seemed very busy. Kaitso was happy to see me, we talked for a while and he showed me Danny's office. I walked in and he was busy laughing with some girl whom I just figured was Lindelwa. I walked in mind yu, I was looking very sexy. I had high heels on, tight ankle grazer jeans with a vest tucked in and a

blazer. I put my bag on his desk without even saying a word. They were both staring at me awkwardly.

Danny: Mrs McKenzie

Me: My husband

I kissed him for a while and held his manhood. He groaned within the kiss and I giggled. He was now squeezing my ass and he had a hard boner. This girl cleared her throat, what was she still doing here.

Danny: Oh uhm, Babe, this is Lindelwa and Lindelwa this is my wife Nasiphi

Lindelwa: Pleased to meet you

Nasiphi

Me: Mrs McKenzie to you Lindelwa.

Lindelwa: My apologies Mrs McKenzie. Excuse me

Me: You're excused

She went out and Danny cracked in laughter.

Danny: You scared the poor girl Nasiphi.

Me: She should know her place

Danny: Damn right she must. You're so sexy and you should know I have eyes only for you. Plus Lindelwa is a bit ugly, her face is weird



Me: Thats very mean.

Danny: Want me to show you around?

Me: Yes please

He showed me around and most of his agents met me. We had a wonderful afternoon and I didn't want to leave but I had to. I missed my kids, both parents cannot be away from them. We went back to his office and had a hot session of love making.

Me: I have to go, I'll see you when you come home

Danny: I thought you're leaving on Monday

Me: I thought so too but we both

cannot be away from the kids. I'm leaving now. The kids have big matches next weekend. You better show up or don't bother ever coming home.

I kissed him and he nodded. He drove me to the airport and we said our goodbyes.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

## Insert 59

We were all looking forward to this weekend. Mostly so because I expected Danny to be home and come support his kids but he didn't. Yesterday was Onica's last big game of the year, he didn't show up and he didn't show up today for Danvers big game. The hurt and disappointment they had hurt me so much as their mother. They both did very well and Buu, Sbahle and I took them to

Ushaka Marine with Kabelo, Junior, Thembelihle and Ngcebo. They got to be distracted and they were happy. I smiled and wished their father was here but he wasn't

Sbahle: KJ called me two days ago, telling me Danny has lost his mind

Me: What? What does he mean?

Sbahle: I think you should see it yourself, check Lindelwa Damane on Instagram

I did as she said and I was heartbroken. Danny was on a vacation with Lindelwa, in Dubai when he is supposed to be here with

his wife and kids. The caption was "I love my man, he takes care of me" I laughed and switched off my phone. I won't let this ruin my day.

Me: Be careful Onika please

Onika: Mom, I'm 6years old already. I can take care of myself

Me: You're still my baby

Onika: Yes I am

Jnr: I'll look after her Aunt Nasi, I am the oldest afterall

He's even coming to have a deep voice. Siya still cannot believe that her son will be 13. She says he grew up too fast. The years are passing by

very quickly. In all her kids, you'd swear Masande is the oldest. He's taller and has this deep but husky voice. He's personality is very intimidating. We had fun all afternoon and we went to eat at Centre Court. We had a lovely conversation as the kids were excited about the Vacation we will be going to in two weeks. The first week of December which is in two days, we're all going to Langelihle. There's a thanksgiving ceremony. I am not sure what for exactly but we have to be there. Later tonight, we are attending Buu's Matric Ball, Bee and I will be going and I heard

MamCebisile and Zipho will also be there. Everything is ready and she has been so excited. We finished up and went home. The kids went to shower and they were planning to watch movies all night. Kabelo's idea while the girls, Thembelihle and Onika want to just stay in their room and chat. I wonder what will go on in that conversation. I don't know what Kamo said to Thembelihle explaining the absence of her father but she never asks about him. But I don't think she told her that she killed him. She has her good and bad days, and today was one of the bad days. I took

the child so she can be alone and be able to cry if she wants to. I don't want Thembelihle to see her mom in a bad state. A kid's childhood memories should always be filled with smiles and laughter. The make up artist was busy with Buu as I also showered and got dressed. My stomach was very visible, I'll have to go shopping before we go to our vacation. I don't even know where we are going only Belinda knows as she is the one planning it. We were all ready and Buu looked beautiful in a royal blue mermaid dress with an open back and long lace sleeves.



Me: You look beautiful my baby  
She laughed and wiped off my tears.

Buu: Thank you Sis Nasiphi, you're the best sister I've ever had. You're like a mother to me and I thank you for that. God will keep on blessing you abundantly. I love you Sis

Me: You're making me cry, I love you too Bulelwa.

Her date arrived and he was sizzling hot

Bee: Yummmmy! You're so handsome, what is your name?

Him: Melokuhle Mthiyane.

Me: Take care of my sister tonight  
Melo

Melo: I plan to do so Mrs McKenzie.  
Pleasure to meet you Mrs Luthuli and  
Mrs McKenzie

Bee: Likewise Mthiyane.

Me: Stop drooling over the boy Bee  
She laughed and they left. We  
followed behind. The kids were left  
with Sbahle and Pam(Sbahles best  
friend). We got to Buu's school and it  
was packed. People recognized me  
and the schools principal made sure  
we get the best seats.

Me: Since when did I become this

popular?

Bee: You're Mr McKenzie's wife, who doesn't know that?

Me: Well they will know about his mistress as they are all over social media.

Bee: What!! Oh hell no

Me: Stop being dramatic Bee, we'll talk about it some other time.

The rest of the night was amazing. Buu had a good time, Zipho and MaCebisile did not show up. She wasn't bothered by that. We left her there as they were headed to their after party. Bee dropped me off at

home and I checked on the kids who were now fast asleep

Pam: You're back, I heard the door opening so I came to check

Me: I'm back sweetie sorry for disturbing your sleep

She nodded and went back to the room she was using. I took off my clothes and got in bed. I looked on Lindelwa's instagram and she had posted her hand, she was wearing a ring and the caption was "The new Mrs M" How could Danny do this to me? There was a loud knock on the door and I took my gun and went to

open. Well the guards wouldn't let a stranger pass through them but I carried the gun for safety. I opened and pointed the gun at him and it was KJ.

Me: What the hell KJ! Did you see the time?

KJ: Hello to you too Amahle. Where's Sbahle? I tried calling her

Me: She's asleep

KJ: Go back to bed, we'll talk in the morning

Me: I don't want to talk about it.

KJ: Fine

#TwoDaysLater

I woke up and ran to the bathroom and vomitted. I felt someone brushing my back and holding my hair. For a moment there I thought it was Danny but no it was Kaitso. I stood up and he gave me a glass of water

KJ: Drink up and get ready, we're leaving in an hour

Me: I have to pack for the kids

KJ: Its all been taken care off, we'll pass by your Doctor for a check up.

Me: Why are you doing all this?

KJ: Doing what?

Me: Taking care of me and the kids

KJ: You're my boss's wife. Mr McKenzie has done alot for me and I wouldn't want to see his family suffer because of his stupid mistakes. I don't know what's going on with him but what I do know is that he loves you.

Me: He's engaged with another woman

KJ: I don't know what to say. Just get ready so we can leave

I nodded and took a long hot bath. I got a call from KJ telling me that he will leave me behind if I don't finish

up. He is so annoying! And wants everything done on time. I finished up and got ready. I was wearing a tight long black dress with slippers and a denim jacket. I put a doek on my head and went downstairs

Buu: Sit down and eat

Me: Morning to you too

Buu: The way we running out of time, we have no time for small talks.

Kaitso is already in the car

She laughed and we ate. She took my bag and we left. The housekeeper was left in the house. We went to my doctor and everything was fine with



the baby. On our way out we bumped into some journalists who wanted to know about Mr McKenzie's sudden engagement. I knew my friends all knew about it but they just didn't want to bring it up. The kids wanted to travel with Siya and her kids. There was Buu, Nceba, and Sbahle in the car as we were driven by KJ. We had a fun ride all the way to Langelihle. The arguments between Sbahle and KJ were entertaining so we weren't bored at all.

Me: Stop by the garage, I want a Wimpy burger.

KJ: Yes mam, what do you guys want?

They all wanted burgers and he went out and bought them for us. Phila's car also parked next to us and Siya rushed to us while Phila went to Wimpy following KJ

Siya: You okay babes? I saw the live video while they ambushed you

Me: I am okay, the kids?

Siya: They are all sleeping.

We talked for a while and she left when Phila and KJ came back. We were just an hour away from Langelihle. We ate and I slept for the rest of the trip. Buu woke me up and we were at the parking lot at the

Royal palace. Naye was so excited to see us, she rushed to me and hugged me.

Naye: You look beautiful babes

Me: Thank you my Queen, you look beautiful too

She rolled her eyes at me and I laughed. It was because I called her my Queen. She greeted the others while another car drove in. My heart broke into pieces as Danny came out and went to open for Lindelwa. She was overdressed I tell you. I giggled a little and they were all surprised about my reaction.

Me: What? She's overdressed

Jabu: You're crazy

Onika ran to her father but it was as if he didn't even recognize her. Danny looked at Lindelwa and she shook her head. Danny then chased Onika away who then cried so much. I went to take her and walked straight to the palace. I heard alot of arguing but I didn't look back. He has no right to treat my child like that. She cried herself to sleep and I went to put her in her bed. MaQ came in as I was covering Onika with a blanket.

MaQ: You okay my child?

Me: Yes Ma I'm okay.

MaQ: I'm always here for you okay? I understand if you're not ready to talk.

Me: You'll be the first one I come to if I want to talk Ma

MaQ: Come join us downstairs for lunch, I know the little one in there is hungry

I laughed and followed her downstairs. My friends were worried about me, I could see it in their eyes and they were surprised by my reaction. I honestly had nothing to say or to do to Danny. I was hurt, being hurt is an understatement. I

couldn't be angry nor do something crazy. I was calm and that also scared me

Danny: Since we are all here, I would like to introduce to you, my fiance, Nasiphi Nyathi. She finally said yes

We were all shocked and confused. Is she pretending to be me?

Me: Danny

Danny: Ziyanda, I know since you're going to be my ex wife you might be unhappy about this but I'm happy.

She makes me happy. Here, these are our divorce papers, don't fight this.

I nodded and sat down. Zandy held

my hand and that alone just made me cry. What was going on with him? I wiped my tears off and faked a smile. Everyone was just shocked to even speak. Only Danny and Lindelwa well Nasiphi, were talking. Nkosi, His father and Danny's father walked in. It was intense, Razor looked around and saw that I was crying

Razor: Makoti, you were crying?

I shook my head saying no. I couldnt get myself to speak because I would just cry

Danny: Father, meet my fiance,  
Nasiphi Nyathi

Nkosi: What is going on here?

Bonga: We just as confused as you are

Razor slapped Danny and they argued.

Danny: I knew you wouldn't be happy for me. Why do you hate me so much?

Razor: I will not sit and listen to this bullshit.

Danver was looking from a distance. I went to him and he faked a smile.

Danver: Is this really daddy?

Me: My baby, your father is sick. Come, let's go check up on your sister.



Danver: He won't hurt you mommy, I'll protect you

I was on the verge of a breakdown. I couldn't breakdown in front of my son. I kissed his forehead and he laughed at me.

Me: I love you Danver

Danver: I love you too mom.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

Insert 60

I never knew at 27 I'd be getting divorced. With just being married for 11 months. Next month on the 28th would be our 1st anniversary yet by that time I will not be married anymore. Last night I signed the divorce papers and I cried myself to sleep. I slept with my kids, I just needed to hold onto them because they are all I had now. I didn't understand, but I knew the man who

was with Lindelwa was not my husband. I don't know what she did to him, I don't even know where to start, I want to help him but I don't know how to. He sees me as his late wife but he thinks I'm his "ex" wife, that I am Ziyanda. He sees Lindelwa as me. I don't know what to do but I'll let him be. I took a shower and wore a all black, black shirt, black long skirt and black doek. I left the kids sleeping and went downstairs. I was very hungry.

Phelo: It's so hot and you're wearing black

Me: It's never too hot for black plus

I'm mourning the loss of my husband.

Naye: Nasiphi

I ignored them and went to the kitchen. There he was drinking coffee, his scent, his masculine body, his eyes, his lips, he was so handsome. I drooled over him but he was no longer mine.

Me: Morning

Danny: Hey Zee

Me: I signed the divorce papers

Danny: Thanks, hand them over to my lawyer

Me: The kids Danny

Danny: What kids?

Me: Danny we have kids together

"She is lying my love. She's trying to get you to stay with her" Lindelwa said as she approached us.

Me: Stop it! Stop feeding him lies!

Danny, look at me!

Lindelwa pushed me over and I pushed her too. She fell and pretended to be hurt. I couldn't believe what just happened. Danny slapped me twice and my face landed on the floor as I fell. I could taste the blood in my mouth

KJ: What the fuck do you think you're

doing Danny!

He punched him and Danny beat him up. They were separated by Bonga and Brian.

Lindelwa: Let's just leave this place baby, I told you these people are crazy.

Danny: You're right, let's leave.

Me: Triston

He turned back and looked at me. For a moment there I saw my husband's eyes. He walked away with Lindelwa in his hands. Bonga helped me up and I thanked him. MaQ walked in with her husband

DadN(Nkosi's father): What happened to you?

Me: I slipped and fell

MaQ: The fingers on your face are from slipping and falling?!

Me: Ma please

DadN: Where is that idiot of a son I have! Danny!

I admired how all our parents saw each and every one of us as their kids.

Me: He left with his wife.

MaQ: I am calling Vulamasango, that slut did something to Danny and it is beyond us.

Me: Do you really think its witchcraft?

MaQ: What else can it be?

I shrugged and went to my room. I washed my face and put lots of make up. The ceremony was about to start. I woke the kids up and prepared them for the day.

Onika: I don't want to see Dad

Me: You won't see him, he is gone.

Danver: He is not our father Onika. Stop calling him Dad.

Me: Danver Mphendulo McKenzie!

Danver: I'm sorry mom

I sighed and just hugged them.



Danver is too matured for his age.  
This will kill his relationship with his  
father.

Me: You guys look good. Now go  
downstairs and have breakfast

They ran out and I laughed to myself.  
I love my kids so much. I took the  
divorce papers and went to give  
Bonga

Bonga: You going through with it

Me: Yes

Nkosi: Please don't Nasiphi, please.

Me: I am giving him what he wants.

Jabu: He is not in his right mind.

Me: Will he ever be in his right mind?  
He hit me, that alone made me give up on him.

Bonga: I'll talk to your lawyer

Me: I'm not contesting this divorce  
and I don't want any of his assets

Jabu: He is handling your business

Me: He can continue handling it or he  
can even have it. I don't care as long  
as he doesn't take my kids away from  
me.

Brian: It doesn't seem as if he knows  
about them.

Me: Even better.

I went out and sat with the girls under the tent. It wasn't a big ceremony, well that's what was said but half of the village was here. The ceremony went on and no one talked about this mornings event. I know the girls know that he hit me even though they weren't there. They know I never put this much make up and probably MaQ told them.

Me: When is the food coming? I'm hungry

Nongcebo: Let's go get you something to eat because all the uncles are still going to speak.

We went to the palace and went straight to the kitchen. She made me a chicken wrap and juice

Me: Thank you very much.

I hate while she had a salad and we spoke briefly. I got a call from the housekeeper Nonni

Me: Hello

Nonni: Mrs McKenzie, Mr McKenzie is here with some woman and they are throwing your things out

Me: What? Oh god. Uhm, please pack all my clothes and the kids clothes. Everything they'll need. Venes will come pick them up and also help you

Nonni: Okay mam, should I also pack Buu's stuff

Me: Yes please

I ended the call and called Venes. She agreed to it and I took my tablet and started looking for a house

Nongcebo: Everything okay?

Me: Yeah

We went to the others but I was busy with my phone.

Kamo: Why are you looking at houses?

Me: I'm buying a house. I've been kicked out of Danny's house

Kamo: Tell me you're joking

Me: I wish I was.

I found a fully furnished house with 6 bedrooms, lounge, dining area, swimming pool, 2 kitchens, 3 bathrooms and play area. It was big and comfortable by the pictures I saw. It was more than I needed and I contacted its seller. I wanted my children to keep on having the lifestyle they were used to. I know it won't be compared to what they had before but its better than nothing. I got the house and Venes said she will take care of everything so I shouldn't worry. She went off to see the seller and view the house and sign on my

behalf.

Siya: Where is the house?

Me: La Lucia

Siya: Yey! You'll be closer to me!

Me: I never thought this would happen. He loved me

Kamo: And he still does.

I wasn't even paying attention to the ceremony anymore. My mind was all over the place. Venes called me and she was fuming

Me: Venes

Venes: I will kill this girl! You'll find me in jail

Me: Don't do anything stupid Venes!

Venes: I'm taking your car as well and I will come back and take another car.

He cannot think you'll leave empty handed! That won't happen on my watch

Me: Don't cause any drama please

Venes: Drama is my middle name sweetheart. Bye

I laughed to myself, where do I find such friends?

Me: I will have to cut my stay short. I will be leaving tomorrow

Sbahle: Bulelwa and I will leave with you



Ngamso: Leave the kids here so they can be distracted a bit while you sort things out that side

Belinda: We are still going on our vacation, you'll be fine babe. You're a very strong woman.

The ceremony was over, people were just know having food and drinks. We went inside and MaQ called me.

There was this creepy man, Vulamasango scares me. He started chanting and walking around me.

Vula: There is a snake separating your marriage! She used a very strong potion which can cause death

to your husband. My child, there is nothing you can do about it. Even I don't have the powers of the witch she works with. It can only come out in a matter of life and death.

Here I was thinking he can come with a solution but no. He said something that worried me, I don't want him to die no matter how much he has hurt me. With that said he left.

MaQ: Okay that wasn't much help

Me: You can say that again. I'm just going to let things be

Nkosi: What if it lasts for years?

Me: Than so be it

Bonga: You're giving up on him

Me: This is beyond me, last thing I want to do is put my childrens lives in danger and my unborn child. I don't have the strength to fight this. You will tell him that I love him and will always do. But we're over now, we divorced.

Bonga: He thinks he's divorcing Zee, he thinks Lindelwa is You!

Me: You can help him, convince him. I don't know, I know nothing about these muti things. Excuse me, I have an early morning tomorrow.

Sbahle: Will see you in the morning.

I went to check on the kids and told them I'd be leaving them here to sort out a few things. They were understanding, they went to have dinner while I laid in bed. Kamo came in with food for me

Kamo: You have to eat before you sleep sweetheart.

Me: Thanks

I ate while she sat there watching me. She stayed till I finished my food and she left with the dishes. I took my phone and looked at Danny's pictures.

Me: You'll find your way back to me my love

#NEXTMORNING

We left Langelihle early around 8am. KJ didn't allow us to leave alone and he drove us to Durban. Venes had slept in my new house so we drove to La Lucia. There was a Mercedes-Benz G63, Audi A3 and BMW R8.

Me: God, Venes!

She came out with a bottle of wine laughing.

Me: This is not funny! You took Danny's cars!

Venes: He owes you that much. If I knew the pin to his safe, I would've took millions for you! By the way, your

new house is gorgeous, we should have a house warming party

Sbahle: Now you're talking!

Buu: When are we even going in the house?

KJ: Let's go in and leave them chatting out here. I just want to see the house already.

We laughed and went inside. The house was much more than what I saw on the pictures. Tears fell from my eyes as I saw my house, it belongs to me and my kids will be happy here.

Venes: Hormones, I moved

somethings and put them the way you'd want them to look. Oh and Nonni was fired by that Lindelwa and she's working here now. I know she'll be great help

Me: Thank god, where is she?

Venes: She'll be here by tomorrow. She went to see her family.

Me: Thank you, I don't know what I would've done without you

Venes: I'd do anything for you

I laid on my bed with Buu jumping on it.

Me: You're so annoying

Buu: I'm just enjoying your new bed.  
Let me go check out my room

Me: Lets go

We went around and checked the  
entire house.

Sbahle: We should go do some  
groceries now

Me: KJ, you don't mind?

KJ: No I don't mind, lets go

Me: Can we pass by Dannys house  
first, there are some documents I  
need?

Venes: Are you sure?

Me: Very sure



Venes: Let me go shower

We watched TV as she showered and got ready. When she was done we left and went to Danny's house.

Security at the gate didn't want to let us in. I went out and spoke to one of the guys I knew there. He opened up for me and let me go in alone.

KJ: Will you be okay?

Me: Yes

The walk from the gate to the main door is exhausting! Danny was sitting outside reading a newspaper.

Me: Danny

Danny: Ziyanda, what are you doing

here!

Me: Don't shout at me, I'm here to pick up a few things. Where is your wife?

Danny: She went out with a friend, she'll probably be back soon

Me: Let me not take up too much time. She won't appreciate me being here. I went inside and he kept on following me. All our pictures were taken down and in a cardboard

Me: Carry this for me please, I'm pregnant.

Danny: I don't understand why you cheated on me Ziyanda, is the father

even supportive

Me: The father is engaged with a woman who is pretending to be me! I am Nasiphi Nyathi, your wife! Ziyanda is your late wife, mother of your two kids!

Danny: Stop talking nonsense

Me: Fine, whatever. I'm not here to argue with you.

I went to my office and took all the things I needed. Venes idea popped in my head and I laughed to myself. Danny was not around me and I went to his safe. Idiot didn't even change his password. My big picture was still

there and I smiled while looking at it. I took a black bag filled with money. I closed and left. Lindelwa was downstairs when I got there.

Lindelwa: What are you doing here?

Me: Whatever it is that I'm doing here has nothing to do with you. Danny, Follow me with the boxes please

Danny: Sure.

Lindelwa: Don't do that Danny!

Danny: I'm just helping her out, she's pregnant.

Lindelwa stormed out and I laughed

Danny: Don't start Ziyanda.

Me: I did tell you I'm not Ziyanda.

He gave the guards the boxes and I looked at him. I looked deep into his eyes and kissed him. He moved away and looked at me

Me: Goodbye Triston

Danny: You keep on calling me Triston, who is that?

Gosh! This is worse than I thought.

Me: Triston is your second name. Triston is my husband's name.

Danny: I am your ex husband, thank you for not contesting the divorce

Me: I'm giving you all you want.

Compromise remember? That's what you do when you love someone.

Danny: Why did you cheat?

Me: I didn't cheat on you damn it!

Lindelwa came and screamed out Danny's name. Danny left and went to his wife.

Me: We can go

The bodyguards followed me and they put my things in the car. I thanked them and KJ drove off

Me: Guess what?

Sbahle: What?

Me: You're supposed to guess but

whatever. I went ahead with Vene's idea!!!

We all laughed as I showed them the bag filled with money

Venes: That's my girl!!!!

Buu: You're so corrupt! What did the Mrs say?

Me: That idiot told Danny shit stories, he knows that I cheated on him, that I'm pregnant with someone else's baby. He didn't even know that his second name is Triston

KJ: I just think if you guys become friends, make him fall inlove with you all over again, you can help him and

this will be over

Sbahle: I agree with him for the very first time

Me: No, he's hurt me enough. I just want to stay away from him and enjoy my life with my kids.

Buu: You're really letting him go?

Me: Yes I am.

I sighed and digested my own words. Was I really letting him go? I nodded as I answered myself. I am letting him go, and if it was meant to be.

He'll find his way back to me. All I will do is just keep on praying for him. I know God will make a way for him to



be set free from the devils hands.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's  
of friends

#LBAR

Insert 61

Work, work, work! I'm so exhausted.

Driving myself home, no more

bodyguards, no more drivers. No

more perks of being Mrs McKenzie.  
I'm back to being Dr Nyathi. I had  
went to check out if everything was  
okay and I ended up working. I got  
home and Buu had already packed  
for us.

Me: Let me shower and then we'll be  
off

Buu: KJ said he'll fetch us

Me: Okay cool

I went to take a shower and got  
dressed. I wore a comfortable  
tracksuit. I'll be on a plane for  
28hours so I need to be comfortable.

Buu: You look sexy

Me: I hope you packed me sexy things, I need to be on point. I'm single so I need to flourish!

Buu: Danny would kill you if he heard you say that. Well the Danny you knew before

I laughed at her and thought about how jealous he would be. I last saw him the day I took his money. That was about a week ago. He had already made an appearance with Lindelwa and the calls I received from Journalists! I ended up publishing a statement stating that Mr McKenzie and I were now divorced. Anything he does is not linked to me nor does it

impact me in any way. Lindelwa gave a statement on behalf of Danny since Danny was not feeling "well" I know she was afraid Danny was going to call me Zee and her Nasi then her plan gets messed up. She's smart, that I can applaud her for. KJ fetched us drove to RoccoMammas

KJ: You have to eat first, you're so boring Nasiphi, you have no cravings

Me: Yup, well I sometimes do but not all the time.

KJ: Your next doctors appointment is when you guys come back. We'll find out the gender right?

Me: No you'll have to wait one more month

KJ: Wack!

We were then off to the airport. He made sure we were all in the plane and we were all safe. It was just us ladies and the kids.

KJ: Have a safe trip, California is waiting on you.

Me: We're going to Cali!? Awesome!

Belinda: I'm glad you're excited! This trip is for the kids, you and Kamo.

The both of you have been through alot lately so you need to relax! No crying, no sadness, just happiness

and laughter okay?

Me&Kamo: Yes Mrs Mtoti

Phelo: We're getting drunk!!! Well  
except you mommy to be

Me: Let me go greet my kids while  
you're at it.

I ended up seated with my kids. We  
fell asleep throughout the flight

**#NEXTMORNING**

I felt a foot on my face, I just knew it  
was Onika's. That baby slept like... I  
don't even know what to compare her  
to because she is on her own league.  
She takes up the entire bed. And  
when did we even get to sleep on a

bed? I woke up and looked around.  
We were in California already?  
Bulelwa barged in with her eyes all  
out

Me: What?

Buu: Don't be mad, Danny is  
downstairs with his wifey

Me: What are they doing here?

Buu: The gents wanted to surprise us  
I guess he tagged along. They  
couldnt desert him plus Nkosi seems  
eager on helping him. Mbulelo is here  
to and so is Bonga's cousin brother  
and Venes.

Me: Oh okay, when did we get here?

Buu: About 8hours ago. You were totally out so Jabu carried you and tucked you in. The kids just joined you about 2hours ago. Shower and come eat

Me: I'm too hungry, I'll come eat first. We went downstairs and our new couple seemed very cosy.

Me: Morning good people

KJ: Morning mamabear, you good?

Me: Yes I am and yourself

KJ: As always

KJ and I have become very close. He has been a great support system and I couldn't thank him enough.



Nkosi: Dish up for me too please Nasi

Danny: Me too please, why are you calling her Nasi?

Nkosi: Because thats her name.

I looked at Nkosi and he was having none of it. If it was up to him this Lindelwa girl wouldn't even be here. I served them their food and our hands touched when Danny took his plate. The way he looked at me made me feel some type of way. Lindelwa cleared her throat and I laughed

Me: Feeling threatened huh?

I winked at her and went to sit down.

Zandy: I have a feeling you haven't

really given up on this guy

Me: How could I ever? I did alot of thinking and I realized that he wouldnt have given up on me easily. Danny has risked his life for me so why can't I do the same?

Zandy: You're pregnant

Me: I won't do anything outrageous, I'll love him and pray for him.

Zandy: Amen.

#Danny

I feel like I'm living a life that is not mine. I feel like someone who has just lost their memory. I don't know who I am and I don't even know my

life. I am engaged to Nasiphi, she's all I ever think about. Gosh! I think I'm even obsessed. I've loved her since the day I met her. I always laugh when she tells me about how we met. But something doesn't add up about the story, she keeps on saying she's forgotten most things because of the accident we went through at the force which caused me to lose my memory. Thing is, I don't even remember that accident nor do I have the scars to show as evidence of it but she does. Her face was damaged but she still looks beautiful like she was on the picture she showed me.

Sadly our pictures together were burnt by my bitter ex wife who cheated on me. The evil doings that woman has done! I thought the moment I saw her I'd kill her but there's just something about her. Something that I cannot even figure out. What's more confusing is how my father and friends keep on telling me that she is Nasiphi and she's my wife. I'm tired of arguing with them. Probably Ziyanda paid them to do so, I have been told by my lovely fiance that she is capable of doing such. We were all on a vacation and she dished up for me. I would be lying if I said I

didn't feel the spark between us when our hands touched. I cannot explain the feeling but it was magical. I shouldn't even be feeling this way about my ex wife? Do I still love her? I shoved the thoughts back and finished my food.

Zandy: Lindelwa

Who is this Lindelwa they keep on talking about?

Zandy: Argh Nasiphi I mean, uhm lets go shopping abit. We need some groceries in this house before we hit the streets of Cali

Lindelwa: Uhm no I don't think so, I

have to be with my fiance

Bee: Danny is not a baby, surely he'll be fine without you

Me: Yeah you can go babe, I just suffered from a memory loss not that I'm paralyzed now.

She was hesitant about it but eventually agreed. They left after a few minutes. Curiosity got the best out of me. I needed a few answers, I felt as if there's more to my life story than what I knew.

Me: Can we talk?

Nasi: Yeah sure what is it?

Me: Ziyanda, I need to know more

about my life

Nasi: I came here to enjoy myself and I don't want any trouble, go to your wife.

Me: She's not here

Nasi: My name is Nasiphi Pearl Amahle Nyathi, You're Danny Triston McKenzie. Your wife is Lindelwa, I am not sure about her other details but she is your agent. You're head of the force, you're a multimillionaire well let me say billionaire because you're very rich. You own companies and one of them is my fathers drug business which he left for me to run but I let

you handle it since I don't want anything to do with it. We met when I was still a stripper, you said my eyes sparkle in the dark.

She laughed a little, you could see she was lost in her own world as she told me about us. There was something that made me believe her but more of my mind told me all that she was saying was a lie.

Nasi: We have two amazing children, Danver Mphendulo McKenzie and Onika Lethukuthula McKenzie. Their mother is Ziyanda Nyathi, well McKenzie since you guys were married. She died while giving birth to



Onika. When time went on as we were together we found out that she was my older sister. That explains why we look alike.

Me: I have kids? Where are they?

Nasi: They hate you Danny, you've been treating them badly. Especially Danver, he is so upset it scares me. He had so much anger in him, your anger issues are being passed on to him!

Me: I don't remember them, I'm trying. A part of me feels as if I'm lost.

She gave me her phone and showed me video's and pictures of us and our

family. My head started paining, I tried remembering but I couldn't.

"Danny!!! Danny! What are you doing with her!" A voice screamed. It was my beautiful Nasi, or should I say Lindelwa. Just by looking at her I felt different. I thought differently.

Lindelwa: She's a danger to you  
Danny! She wants to kill you. There is a brick behind her and she wants to kill you with it

Jabu: Oh come on! Shut the fuck up Lindelwa!!

Nasi: I have had it with you!

Indeed she took the brick and walked

to Lindelwa, she was screaming and I found myself beating Ziyanda up. I pushed her off and she fell on her face. I kicked her face and Mbulelo beat me up. We were now all fighting as they took turns with me

Phila: We will beat this crap out of you!

Jabu: Are you out of your mind!

By then Ziyanda screamed telling them to stop

Siya: You must be crazy! Don't stop

Nasi: Stop, please you'll kill him. He has kids to live for, please

KJ: Kids that he treats like shit!

He said kicking my back.

Nasi: You have killed us Triston, there is no hope and there will never be.

Even when you're in your right mind.

Leave please

Nkosi: Leave Danny!! Take your skank and leave!

Nasiphi(Lindelwa) picked me up and we went to our room.

Lindelwa: Lets leave and you will never ever see these people! They are not your friends if they are capable of doing such to you.

She called a cab and we left as we went to another hotel. When we got

there I took a shower and I couldn't stop thinking about her screams. The blood on her face and her silent cries. What did I do? Why was she still on my mind? My fiance joined me in the shower and we made love. Gosh she was beautiful! Her face was so perfect, just like Ziyanda's. Was she serious when she said they were sisters?

Me: Why didn't you tell me you and Ziyanda are sisters?

She looked shocked and confused at first. Which confused me too. She started crying and kissed me.

Lindelwa: I didn't want you to see me as a homewrecker. I felt bad enough that I looked like her and that you might be using me to just replace her.

Me: I love you and I'll never do that. You are my life Nasiphi Nyathi. You are my life

"You did well today my love, you did well" she said.

#Nasi

I couldnt believe it as he threw punches at me. It happened so fast, even its memory just flashes by fast. He killed me, he killed us and our future. I looked at my face as I wiped

the blood off. He kicked my face, he ruined it. I couldn't believe that I, Nasiphi Nyathi was beaten up by the love of my life, Danny McKenzie. I took a long bath, my body was in so much pain. I cried, I cried so much for the very first time since this happened it was the first time I cried like this. I cried for losing my husband, the father of my children, I cried because he laid his hands on me. He manhandled me. I cried so much I lost my voice. My throat was dry. I wore a tracksuit and sneakers. I went downstairs and the mood was sour. They looked at me like I'm

some crazy person

Mbulelo: Where are you off to?

Me: I need to clear my head. I'm just taking a walk

Buu: I'm coming with you, you cannot walk alone. It's getting really dark

Me: I'm grown, I can take care of myself

Bee: But Nasiphi, you cant go alone

Me: Shut up!!!! All of you! I'm not a baby, I will walk alone! And if I find anyone following me there will be hell to pay.

Athi: Take this



Mpho: Are you crazy Athenkosi?

Me: Thank you

I took the gun and left. I walked around not even knowing where am I going. I sat down on the pavement and cried.

"What is a beautiful lady like you doing out here so late and who the fuck made you cry?" His voice said.

I didn't look up because I didn't want whoever it was to see the bruises and scars on my face and how swollen it was.

Me: Keep walking

Him: I might as well just sit down.

He sat next to me and lifted my face so I could face him. The anger was visible

Him: Who did this to you?

Me: I don't want to talk about it

Him: My name is Lucas Miller and you are?

Me: Nasiphi Nyathi is the name

Lucas: I'm heartbroken, my fiance cheated on me with my brother.

Me: I'm heartbroken, my ex husband beat me up.

He held my hand and I cried. Here I am, in California, sitting on a

pavement, crying and finding comfort from a stranger. Life has a way of doing the unexpected.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

Insert 62

The rest of the vacation actually got

better as the days went by. My scars were fading away but there was one spot that didn't want to fade. We had a blast and I was able to forget about everything that went on. The night I took a walk, I made a friend, Lucas Miller and we've been chatting since then. We have met up for lunch twice and he was with us on New Years eve. Ofcourse the guys weren't that happy about it but we had a great night. He is indeed a very good friend. He is from South Africa and he works all over the world as a Military Doctor. He travels alot and he was on vacation in Cali. He has a daughter

which he loves very much and has been a great support system. We are both going through a rough patch and we're able to talk to each other. We were back in South Africa and I must say, I was not looking forward to going back to reality. Lucas was in Nigeria and he did manage to buy me flowers and chocolates and they were on my mothers doorstep when I woke up. We visited MaNyathi for the last week of the holidays before the kids go back to school.

MaN: Who is this mystery man sending you flowers? You just got divorced two seconds ago

Me: Mom please, Lucas is just a good friend.

MaN: Just a friend?

Me: Yes

MaN: You do know that Danny needs you

Me: Danny has a wife. I stopped being his wife when he beat me up. So what has been going on with you?

MaN: Nothing and we're talking about you here so don't change the topic. He wasn't in his right mind. What this girl is using is strong

Me: Right mind or not. He shouldn't have laid his hands on me

MaN: I don't like this at all, especially this Lucas friend of yours

Me: You're such a mother.

Speaking of him, I got a call from Lucas

Me: Mr Miller

Lucas: My beautiful lady, how are you today?

Me: I'm good and yourself Dr Miller

Lucas: I'm okay just busy. Thought I should check up on you. How are the kids and the bun in the oven?

Me: They are all doing very well thank you

Lucas: That's good. Let me go, I'll call you later okay?

Me: Yes Lucas and thank you for calling.

Lucas: That's what friends are for. You won't believe what happened! But anyways I'll tell you later

Me: You didn't have to do that, now I'll be curious all day long. And thank you for the flowers and chocolates I feel special

Lucas: You are special my Pearl. The news are juicy so they are worth the wait.

We laughed and said our goodbyes.



He's honestly just the best!

Me: Let me go read my emails

MaN: No, you are not reading any e-mails. You're on leave.

Me: I have to mom.

I took my laptop and there was an emergency at work that I needed to attend to. I emailed back saying I'll be there tomorrow.

Me: I'm leaving tomorrow

MaN: You cannot drive such a long distance

Me: Well I have to mom and we won't argue about this please.

MaN: Fine. Danny won't be happy

Me: You're acting as if I'm still married to him.

MaN: God still sees you as a couple and he will work in a mysterious way to get you back together

Me: I'll believe that when I see it

The rest of the day we spent indoors catching up and spending time with the kids. They were very happy about being here and they made a few friends too. Later when I was in bed I received a call from Lucas.

Me: You finally decided to call

Lucas: It's been a busy day, I just got

to the hotel room.

Me: You should rest

Lucas: I'll rest peacefully now that I've heard your voice but I have a flight to catch in 2hours

Me: So what is it that you wanted to tell me? You always travelling

Lucas: I got a call from the stupid ex wife of mine. She's pregnant

Me: Oh

Lucas: it's my brothers child and they are getting married

Me: You lie!

Lucas: I'm serious

Me: Why is she telling you though?

Lucas: To give them my blessing. I won't even attend that stupid wedding. All this time they have been inlove and doing it right under my nose. They have always got along but nothing ever made me think they are together. I feel really angry and betrayed

Me: I'm so sorry

Lucas: It's not your fault buttercup, let me not keep you up.

Me: You need to rest too so  
goodnight

Lucas: Goodnight

I ended the and drifted off to lala land.

#NEXTMORNING

The kids weren't very happy about waking up at 4am and travelling all the way to Durban. They wanted to be left behind but there was no way I'd leave them. I don't want to be lonely in that new house. I dropped them off at home and they were with Nonni. I went straight to work and it has been busy since 8am! I am so exhausted but I need to work and provide for my family.

Venes: You look beautiful and happy.

Me: I am happy

Venes: You're so grown and calm, I don't know how I would've dealt with what you went through, I'd probably be depressed right now.

Me: I guess accepting the situation made me deal with it easily.

Venes: I guess so, so I booked your appointment for 1pm

Me: Thank you

Venes: Want me to come with?

Me: No thanks, I'll go alone.

Venes: I'll be on my desk if you need me.

She left and I sighed. I will be finding

out my babies gender today. I am very excited but yet again I'm hurt because Danny and I were looking forward to this day. We even made a bet and now that is all gone. It was now 12am and it was my lunch time. I went out and couldn't believe who was talking to Venes.

Me: Lucas!!

He smiled and walked to me. We hugged and he kissed my forehead.

Me: OMG! What are you doing here?

Lucas: I thought I'd just surprise you.

Me: I'm so surprised!

We hugged and it felt so good to see

him. Someone cleared their throat and we pulled away. It was Danny, Mpho and Athi. Athi had been the one who cleared his throat.

Me: Hey guys

Mpho: Mr Miller

Lucas: Lebone, Buthelezi, good to see you again and you must be Danny McKenzie

Danny nodded and didn't even shake his hand. It was so awkward

Athi: Good to see you to Lucas.

They left and went to Athi's office.

Me: I was going to have lunch, wanna



come with?

Lucas: Yes ofcourse. We'll use your car, a took a cab here

Me: You're driving

Lucas: Who drove you here from Bizana?

Me: I drove myself and don't lecture me about being unfit to drive and all that stuff.

Lucas: I'll keep it all to myself but I'm not happy.

I rolled my eyes at him and he shook his head. We got into my car and he drove off to California Dreamings.

Me: Fancy for lunch

Lucas: Imagine it as a mini date

Me: Oh wow okay Miller but I only have an hour. I have to see my doctor at 1pm

We had our lunch as we got to know more of each other. I enjoyed his company alot and I don't even remember when last did I laugh so much. Honestly, I am very happy right now and I don't feel guilty about it. We then went to see my doctor.

Dr: Dr Nyathi and ?

Lucas: Dr Miller

She nodded we sat down.

Dr: Excited?

Me: Yes I am

Dr: You know the procedure

I laid on the bed and she lotioned the gel on my stomach.

Lucas: This is so cute

He was taking pictures and videos. Everything was okay with the baby and its heartbeat made me so emotional.

Dr: Look, it's a boy!

Me: What? Oh my, it's a boy!

He took a picture of me as I was crying and laughing at the same time.

I'm having a boy. I guess I won the bet after all.

Lucas: You look so cute when you cry.  
Congratulations Nasiphi

Me: Thanks Miller

The doctor cleaned me up and gave me a prescription and the scans.

Me: I'm looking forward to telling the kids! Danver will be so happy

Lucas: Will you tell Danny?

Me: What for? He thinks I cheated on him and he doesn't even know his kids. I don't want to talk to him about our past.

Lucas: If that's what you want sweetheart. I just feel as if you need to fuck him and he'll be back to his senses.

Me: Why did I forget how crazy you are?

I pinched him and we laughed as he drove me home. Honestly, Lucas is such a good friend. He has genuine intentions of being my friend, nothing more and nothing less. Most people might think we might end up falling inlove but I don't see myself being in a relationship with him and so does he. We've both come out of bad heartbreaks, the last thing we need

right now is a toxic relationship.

#Danny

The past few days have been hectic for me. My own father pulled me off of work, he stripped me off my missions as he said I'm not well. I have been loosing my mind and what is frustrating is how I have my ex wife in my mind all day, everyday. I find myself slowing loosing interest in Nasi. She is lazy, doesn't have any ambition and is always spending my money. She has no inspiration, no dreams and no future. She is different, makes me wonder how on earth did I fall head over heels for her.

This memory loss thing is an issue as there is so much I want to remember because I feel as if I am living someone else's life. That this is not my life. I don't know how to describe it but something is wrong here, something is missing. I am not happy and I am in need of someone. We were walking to Athi's office when I saw Zee hugging some man who kissed her forehead. She seemed so happy without me. What am I saying? I divorced her and maybe she is with the man she cheated on me with. I left her and I am with someone else, but why do I feel this way? Mpho and

Athi seemed to know this guy and it bothered me how Zee didn't care to even look me in the eye not even touch me. Why would she when I've hurt her? I regretted laying my hands on her everyday. I wish she could hear me out.

Mpho: Why do you seem so frustrated?

Me: I don't know man, I miss Ziyanda maybe? I keep on thinking about her. But she cheated on me and who is this Miller guy?

Athi: Firstly, that is Nasiphi as we've been telling you a million times. Wake



up Danny man! The woman in your house is Lindelwa not Nasiphi. The woman who you think is Zee is not Zee!

Me: This is all just confusing me

Mpho: We are your friends and we would never ever lie to you. Ziyanda is an ex wife of yours that passed away while giving birth to Onika who is your daughter. We later than found out she was killed by someone who injected her after giving birth. Your wife, your real wife is Nasiphi Pearl Amahle Nyathi whom you met at a strip club where she worked. She is your wife not Lindelwa

Me: So Lindelwa is the woman I'm with now? She is not Nasiphi?

Athi: Yes

Me: Was I involved in an accident at the force which caused me to loose my memory?

Mpho: No, She is using some strong substance on you

Me: I cannot believe this.

Mpho: Believe whomever you want to believe but just know, you're ruining your own life. That Lindelwa chick is ruining your life. The only reason I haven't killed her is because I fear what could happen to you if I kill her.

Me: Don't kill my wife

Mpho: I think I'll end up killing you

He laughed and something made me want to believe all that they said. We spent the rest of the afternoon working with Athi in his office. I didn't care that Razor took me off the force, I am the boss so he cannot do that to me. He is so angry at me and I don't understand why. I came across a wedding picture of me and Ziyanda or Nasiphi

Me: Who is this exactly ?

Athi: The real Nasiphi

Me: Do you happen to have a picture

of me and the real Ziyanda ?

They gave it to me and I looked at them trying to compare and analyse it.

Me: This is frustrating.

They gave me a picture of some ugly woman who's face seemed very weird

Me:(laughs) Who the fuck is this?

Athi: So you can see the real Lindelwa on pictures but when you see her live, you think it is Nasiphi?

Me: Is this the Lindelwa chick?

Mpho: It's the woman pretending to

be Nasiphi.

I've never been so confused in my life. Not even algebra confused anyone this much. I packed my things and drove home. I found Nasiphi dancing in the lounge

Her: Honey! You're home

Me: Sit down, we need to talk

Her: You seem angry, what is it?

Me: Where did we meet?

Her: We've talked about this, we met at the mall at mugg n bean?

Me: Why does the story change all the time? From my knowledge I met

Nasi at a strip club. Who are you woman!? Are you really Lindelwa?

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

Insert 63

#Danny

She looked at me and chocked on the wine she was drinking. Her eyes popped and that to me confirmed it. I felt the anger inside of me surpass every other feeling inside of me. Yes I have been angry before but not this much.

Me: Talk

Lindelwa: Danny baby, it's me. Its Nasiphi. I don't know what you are talking about.

Me: So they lied to me?

Lindelwa: Yes they did. I don't know what they told you but they lied.

Me: Okay, I'm sorry for not believing

you.

She hugged and kissed me. I felt disgusted. I could still see her as Nasiphi but in my mind, I had a picture of the real Lindelwa. She seemed hesitant and kept on looking for her phone.

Me: I'll be in my office after I shower

Lindelwa: I'll prepare you something to eat soon

I nodded and locked myself in the office. I hacked her cellphone and I was able to hear the conversation of the call she just made. She was basically informing someone that the



I have found out about her true identity

Person: "Argh that's a lie. You are just panicking. What we did to him will last his entire life. He might know your name but he sees you as Nasiphi. He will not leave."

Lindelwa: You do know we will lose the money we make out of him?"

Person:" You must come to me tomorrow and we will seek for something stronger"

Lindelwa:" What if it kills him!?" "

Person:" Yewena! Nothing will kill him, just feed your man properly and stop

hesitating. You will ruin this entire plan."

Lindelwa: "fine, I'll see you tomorrow"

I felt really disgusted, hurt and angry. I wanted to hurt her but I couldn't. I needed someone. I went to my room and took a shower. She came in as I was finishing up.

Lindelwa: Supper is ready

Me: No thanks, I just want to sleep. Have you eaten?

Lindelwa: Yes

Me: Let's just sleep.

She smiled and we got in bed. I felt

like I was betraying someone. I closed my eyes but I wasn't asleep. I heard her shuffling around and she got closer and closer to me and strangled me with a rope. I held her roughly and pinned her against the wall.

Me: What the fuck are you doing!!

Lindelwa: I'm sorry, I'm so sorry. I don't know what came over me.

I slapped her and she fell. My head was starting to hurt and I was getting dizzy.

Lindelwa: Don't hurt me please

Me: Shut up

Lindelwa: I am your wife!

Me: My wife wouldn't try to kill me.

I carried her and locked her in the basement. The dizziness was becoming heavier and my body was becoming weak. I called Nasiphi while I was on my way to my car. I believed only she could help me and I could get all the answers I needed. I drove not even knowing where I am going. I don't know where she stays now but I was going to find her one way or another. I drove to Bee's house so she could tell me. I was determined to find her, even though I couldn't see anymore. All I could see

was Lindelwa's face. I don't know what happened after but I heard loud crashing sounds and my head was throbbing in pain.

Me: Nasiphi

I whispered in pain and closed my eyes.

#Nasiphi

After all this time and everything that has happened he decides to call me at 9pm! He's really kidding me and thinking I'm stupid? I ignored his calls as I was watching tv. I was watching Catfish the tv show. I couldn't sleep so I decided to have junk and watch

tv. Around 10pm I kept on receiving calls from different numbers that I didn't know. I switched off my phone and walked to my room when there was a knock on the door.

Me: Who is it?

I took my gun out and opened

Lucas: We'll discuss the gun situation later. Why is your phone off?

Me: I kept on receiving calls from different numbers that I didn't know.

Lucas: I missed you

Me: I did miss you too so why are you here?

Lucas: I'm spending the night. Plus I'm hungry what are we eating?

Me: Look in the fridge

Lucas: Did you even cook?

Me: No I didn't

Lucas: So lazy, won't you switch on your phone?

Me: Danny called earlier so probably he is using all those other numbers or its the crazy wife calling to swear me

Lucas: Hectic, has she ever did that before?

Me: No but we'll never know. Plus I want nothing to do with those two

Lucas: You gave up on him so easily

Me: I didn't really give up on him but I don't want anything putting my children's life in danger. I'm a pregnant woman who has lost a child before and I cannot afford any harm to be near him.

Lucas: I understand

Me: Plus I trust Danny, he's a fighter. One way or the other, he will beat this. It's like there's nothing that can beat him down. But he did beat me up

Lucas: I don't support woman abuse but we both know the situation he is in.



Me: Why are you so supportive of him and on his side? Who's friend are you anyways?

Lucas: I just know true love when I see it.

Me: Yeah whatever I'm going to sleep now. You'll use that room. I'm going to sleep

Lucas: Party pooper, goodnight.

I left him there and I slept for about two hours and someone was waking me up.

Me: What the hell!!!

Lucas: Wake up!

Me: Lucas, I will kill you

Lucas: Just get the fuck up!

I got out of bed and I was in my thong and vest. He breathed out loud and closed his eyes

Lucas: Gosh! You're so sexy Nasiphi but please get dressed so I can focus

I wore a gown and he disapproved and threw me my pyjama pants.

Lucas: We're going to the hospital

Me: What why?

Lucas: The kids will be left with Nonnie. Danny is in hospital fighting for his life.

Me: What! What happened?

We got into his car and he drove off to the hospital.

Lucas: I watched the news channel and that's where they showed the accident scene. He was involved in a car accident on his way to Mr Luthuli's house. So I switched your phone on and you had tons of missed calls from your friends and his father. I told Kamo you're on your way

He held my hand as the tears just flowed. What if he needed my help when he called me and I ignored him? Why did I let anger rule over me?

None of this would have happened if I wasn't selfish. But he hurt me so bad I wanted nothing to do with him.

Me: Was it bad?

Lucas: From what I saw, it was bad. Two other trucks were involved.

We got to the hospital and I rushed in.

Me: Somebody tell me where is he!!!

Nurse: Calm down Dr Nyathi

Me: Don't you dare tell me to calm down!

There was alot of journalists and security that was trying to chase them off. Dr Nxumalo came and took

me to the waiting room where some of our friends were.

Bee: I'm so sorry Nasiphi

She was crying and I cried as we held each other.

Me: How bad is it?

Phila: It's bad Nasiphi, it really is.

Me: What was he doing?

Bonga: Driving to my house, I don't know what for though. He didn't inform me.

Me: I need to see him

DrN: He is still in surgery

Me: What did he need surgery for?

DrN: A glass went through his shoulder and neck.

I stumbled and couldn't stand properly. Phila held me and I sat down

DrN: The two trucks smashed his car and both sides of his head were badly hit, it was very hard to find he's body but we did and he was still a bit conscious. He kept on calling your name.

Phila: My guess is that he was looking for you.

Me: How? Why? What for? Where was Lindelwa when all this happened

Kamo: We also don't know. Mpho and Thaps have went to check his house.

Bonga: Thank you for bringing her here Miller

Lucas nodded and gave me a bottle of water

Me: It's a boy

Phila: Huh?

Me: The baby, it's a boy

Bee: Congratulations sweetiee!

Me: He doesnt even know about him, nor Danver or Onika.

Phila: Don't think nor stress too much, it's not good for the little Danny in

there.

I nodded and sat down. I couldn't stop thinking about him. I got onto my phone and there was a video from the camera's on the road. It was really a terrible accident. An accident no one can survive from. It was by God's grace that Danny came out still conscious.

Lucas: Come one, stop watching this Nasiphi. Stop

I couldn't speak. I was hurting and all I could do was pray silently. I closed my eyes and prayed. There's nothing that God cannot do. He listens to my



cries, to my pleads and my prayers. He said when you call his name he will reply. I know there is a miracle that he will perform and he will save Danny's life. I know that he will touch my heart and make me heal and forgive Danny for his wrong doings. Jesus is the answer to all our problems.

Bee: Nasiphi!

Me: What?

Bee: I've been calling you. Let's go home, you need to rest

Me: No, I'm not going anywhere without seeing him.

Bee: You've been sitting like this for the past 3hours, we even thought you blacked out.

Me: Its been 3hours?

Bee: Yes, the doctor said you can see him but just for 5mins. After that, we're going home

Me: Okay

She walked me to Danny's room and the amount of machines on him made me cry.

Me: Triston

I called him as I held his hand. I had a silent conversation with him. Words couldn't even come out. I saw

flashbacks of him hitting me. I  
couldnt do it, I couldnt be with him  
anymore. I kissed his hand and left.  
Maybe I'll be better tomorrow and I'll  
be less emotional. Lucas drove me  
and Bee to my house. The guys were  
left behind.

Me: Your kids?

Bee: Kamo will come with them here

Me: Okay

Bee: Go sleep Nasi, you need to rest  
yourself

I nodded and went to my room. I  
prayed for him one more time and fell  
asleep.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's  
of friends

#LBAR

Insert 64

I woke up and it was around 8am. I  
felt different, I felt less angry and I  
wasn't in much pain that I was in  
when I slept. I went downstairs and

made breakfast for everyone. After that I went to take a shower and got dressed.

Onika: Where are you going to?

Me: Somewhere, come lets go have breakfast. You'll spend the day with Aunt Nonni

Onika: Okay mom, Danver is not feeling well though.

Me: Go downstairs and I'll go check on him.

I went to Danvers room and he was sleeping

Me: Danver

Danver: Mom

Me: What's wrong?

Danver: My throat is sore.

Me: Sorry babe, come try eating then I'll give you some meds and you can sleep the entire day.

Danver: I want to sleep with you

Me: I cannot sweetie, I have to go somewhere but I promise I'll come check up on you lunch time and we'll sleep together tonight.

Danver: Pinky promise?

Me: Yes

Danver: Are you going to see Dad?

Me: How do you know about that?

Danver: I saw it on my tablet

Me: I did say its a bad idea for you to have that but your father insisted.

Yes I'm going to see him

Danver: Can I come with?

Me: Are you sure?

Danver: Yes

Me: Bath while I make your bed.

Danver: No need, I'll come back to it. I'll just see him for a few minutes. Do you forgive him?

Me: Who?

Danver: Danny, for hitting you?

Me: Danver, you must not call him by name.

Danver: I just want to know

Me: I don't know

Danver: You don't have to rush yourself, it takes time to heal. Plus you shouldn't be scared, he'll never do that to you again.

Me: How old are you?

Danver: Old enough to see the situations around me.

Me: Go bath Mphendulo

Danver: Okay Amahle

I threw a pillow at him and he ran



away. This child! After he was done he got dressed and he was uncomfortable doing it in front of me. Since when did he grow like this?

Me: You're worrying me

Danver: Just because I need privacy?

Me: What do you even know about privacy?

Danver: What I do know is that this is uncomfortable. Let's go

Me: Yes sir

We got downstairs and Kamo had dished up for everyone. We ate in comfortable silence and left, Bee was driving us. We got to the hospital

Athi: I have good news

Me: What?

Athi: He's awake. He woke up about an hour ago

Me: Why didn't you tell me?

Athi: We were still busy with him and you're here now so you can see him

Me: Can the kids see me too?

Athi: Only for a few minutes. I don't want them having such an image of their father. He's awake but he still looks awful. It's not a bearable sight.

Me: Just a few minutes okay?

Kids: Yes mom.

Athi: I'll cover his face up. We opened the bandages to let it dry up.

We went in after he had covered him up. I heard them talking. Danny didn't want the kids to see him at his state

Onika: Daddy

Danny: Lethukuthula, hello princess.

Onika: Danver told me you were hit by two trucks, are you in pain?

Danny: Yes but it's nothing I cannot handle. Hello Danver

He just nodded. Awu? I thought he would talk since he wanted to see him.

Onika kept on talking, Danver and I have not even uttered a word.

Me: Say something Mphendulo

Danny: It's okay, no need to force him.

Danver: I saw you beat up my mother. I saw you the first time you did it and the second time. I saw you kicking her face, I saw the blood and I heard her screams. She cried for you when we slept, she prayed for you and loved you.

Me: Danver, its time for you to go

Danver: I told her to forgive you this morning, I told her you'll never do it again. I don't want to regret my words.

With that said he left us shocked and I went after him. He was crying in KJs arms

Me: Denver baby, I love you okay?

Danver: I love you too mom, I'll protect you.

I laughed and nodded as I kissed his forehead. They left and I went back to Danny. I uncovered his face and he was really injured.

Danny: He hates me

Me: I don't blame him

Danny: I hurt you

Me: More than you'll ever know

Danny: How do I fix this Nasiphi?

Me: I don't know

Danny: Call Mpho for me please

I nodded and did as he said.

Me: You're ugly

Danny: Tell me something I don't know

He said as he threw a pillow at me but he got hurt instead which made me laugh at him.

Danny: You look beautiful my precious Pearl

Me: Thank you

Danny: Did you eat?

Me: Yes

Danny: When last did you do your hair?

Me: You talk too much

Danny: I'm trying to keep up a conversation with you

Me: I don't want to have a conversation with you

Danny: I didn't hurt her

Me: Who?

Danny: The baby, when I beat you up?

Me: No and it's a boy

Danny: I guess you won afterall

Me: I guess so.

I kept quiet and looked out the window. Lucas came in followed by Mpho and I smiled as he carried flowers

Me: Thank you

Lucas: They are not yours Nasi, they are for the patient

Me: Mxm you're such a bad friend

Lucas: You're just jealous. I know I'm attractive

Mpho: Stay in your lane Miller

Lucas: I'm in my lane Lebone

Danny stared at Lucas who didn't seem scared by the look he was



given. I wanted to laugh but I kept it to myself. They had their own conversation which I tried very hard listening to but I couldn't hear a thing

Me: Are you guys speaking English?  
No that's not English

Mpho: It's Spanish

Me: You guys are so boring.

I took some nuts in my bag and ate them while they gossiped. Whatever they were talking about seemed like I wasn't supposed to hear. After some time they finally left and I was left alone with Danny.

Danny: Come closer please

Me: Okay

I sat next to him and he held my hand. He's hand was a bit weak but I could feel the spark between us. I just cried

Danny: I'm sorry Nasiphi

Me: No, sorry is not enough Triston! You hurt me, sane or not. You hurt me. You had no right to hit me

Danny: Nasiphi I'm sorry you know surely I would never ever hit you. Even thinking about it makes me angry at myself. I didn't do it intentionally

Me: You have no right to hit me nor any other woman. I am damn

pregnant, that did not even stop you. A pregnant woman, whom you thought is your ex wife? Just because of the filth that was in your head, you think it is right?

Danny: Ofcourse not Nasi, nothing justifies what I did.

Me: Danver saw you! He will have that in his mind for the rest of his life.

Nothing can take that memory away. I love you Danny but you hurt me and our family.

Danny: What did she use on me?

Me: I don't know

Danny: Did you contact Vulamasango?

Me: Nkosi's mother called him when we were in Langelihle. He said there's nothing we could do, only a matter of life and death would cure you. I couldn't fight her, I couldn't fight for you because I am pregnant and I was putting my child first, putting our children first. If I was invested in fighting for you, who would be a parent to our kids if she also used something on me? That drove me insane, we both don't know the measures she would have taken and I wasn't going to risk my unborn child's life. Rather you die or I die so our child can live. I'm sorry if I am selfish

because you would jump off a cliff for me but our child comes first. I lost a child before and I wasn't going to lose another child Danny. I love you but I love our children more.

Danny: If you were given a choice to kill me or the kids, who would you kill?

Me: I'd kill you. Our kids come first, no matter what

Danny: You are such a wonderful mother. I wish I knew what a mother's love feels like but I'm glad my children have what I've always longed for.

Me: Your mother would've been a

great mother to you

Danny: I'd love to believe so

Me: Maybe you should give MaPhindy a chance. She's a great woman and a great mother to your little sisters which you haven't seen in months Triston!

Danny: I sometimes even forget I have younger sisters, I'm used to just being the only child.

The doctor came in

Dr: Mr McKenzie, Dr Nyathi.

Me: Hello Dr, how long will his face take to heal?

Dr: Probably an entire year

Danny: That long!

Dr: Your wounds will take time to heal, if you're lucky and your skin reacts well with the medication, it will take less time. You were badly injured Mr McKenzie, I don't even know how you survived

Danny: It's all because of my wife's prayers Doc.

Dr: You're a lucky man. You'll have just another hour with him and visiting hours will be over, Mr McKenzie needs to rest

Me: Yes I will leave

Danny: My wife isn't going anywhere  
The doctor laughed and left us. He  
has no right to make demands

Me: You cannot make demands. I'm  
being a good friend here plus I'm not  
your wife, you divorced me.

Danny: Nasiphi

Me: No Danny!

I started crying and shouting at him. I  
don't know why I was even acting  
that way. He whispered "hormones"  
and that just upset me even more.

Danny: I'm sorry my love, I'm going to  
fix things. I'll win you over again, I  
love you.



Me: Its too late

Danny: You're just saying that because you're upset. Baby, we're soulmates. You know you cannot get over me

Me:(laughs) Don't be so cocky.

Danny: It's good to see you smile

I laid down next to him being careful not to hurt him.

Me: You slept with her?

Danny: Yes I did, countless times.

Me: Did you even use protection?

Danny: Shit! No Nasiphi

Me: Where is she?

Danny: They took her to HQ

Me: What are you going to do to her?

Danny: So many questions, I'll kill her Nasiphi. She will suffer, but not yet. I need to know who she is working with. Mpho is working on tracing the call she made before the accident happened. She is working with someone, she was after my money.

Me: Before you do anything, make sure you do a pregnancy test on her first.

Danny: She's not pregnant

Me: Just to be on the safe side  
Triston

Danny: Okay I'll do so.

We stayed in comfortable silence and he decided to drop a bomb on me.

Danny: Marry me again Nasiphi

Me: You're still married to her

Danny: We'll be divorced by the end of the day. We can get married tomorrow

Me: No Danny, lets just wait for you to heal first and we'll see from there.

Danny: You don't want to be with me anymore?

Me: I didn't say that

Danny: Then why don't you want to

marry me?

Me: I will marry you Triston, just not now. Let's focus on you getting healed and then we'll work on us.

Danny: It's this about Lucas? Do you love him? Are you guys together?

Me: I'm not going to listen to this nonsense.

Danny: Talk!

Me: Don't you dare shout at me Mr McKenzie! You have no right! Stop being insecure, Lucas is my friend and he respects me and you!

Danny: I'm sorry Nasiphi

Me: You just talk crap sometimes

Danny: I still need to be respected, I'll let it pass just for today. But never will you ever talk to me like that ever again, do I make myself clear?

I nodded with tears. He was using his authoritative voice on me and it still does scare me.

Me: You still look ugly though

I managed to make him laugh and forget that I disrespected him. Indeed he was a bit ugly, for someone who didn't know him much, he or she would never be able to recognize him. But he still is my handsome Danny.

We talked for a while and the nurse came to inject him with his medication and I was asked to leave. He wasn't happy about it at all but I told him how I promised to be there for Danver. We said our goodbyes and Athi drove me home after a long lecture of why I drove myself here. These people fail to understand the situation I was in. I got home and the kids were watching tv while having snacks

Me: Hey guys, did you even have proper food?

Onika: Yes we did

Me: Good, Denver, how do you feel?

Denver: I'm feeling much better. I just need a foot massage

Me: You should be giving me a foot massage

Denver: Unfair, I always give you one but you don't do it in return.

I laughed and gave him the foot massage he wanted. I ended up doing it to Onika too. We had a great afternoon together and we cooked supper together. I looked at them and saw how lucky I am to have them as my kids. I'd protect them with everything I have, I would lay my life

for my children.

#Danny

Waking up, all I wanted to see was Nasiphi. I was hurt and disappointed in myself about everything that I've done to her while I was under Lindelwa's influence. Never have I thought that one day such things would happen to me. We watch movies and hear from other people of stories that people use muthi on others for them to love them and never did I think I'd be in that situation. It all seems surreal but what has happened, has happened. Even the thought of me beating up



the love of my life makes me wants to shot myself but I will not take the easy way out. I hurt her and I deserve everything that is coming for me. I know Nasiphi and I know that she won't let this go easily, I am willing to put in all the hardwork and win her back. She's softhearted when it comes to me but I will not use that to my advantage. No woman deserves to be beaten up, especially a pregnant woman. What I did is unforgivable. I know in my sane mind I would've never done that but that is still not an excuse to get off my wrongs. Knowing that my son

witnessed his father beat up his mother is the worst. I know it will forever be embedded in his memory but that I will try by all means to remove that in his mind. As Nasiphi always says, a child's memory of their childhood should always be filled with smiles and laughter and that is what I plan to do for the both of them and our unborn son. I am happy about having another son and I do owe Nasiphi a car. Earlier on I asked the nurses to give me a mirror so I can see myself, I was badly injured on my face but I believe it will heal soon. As long as Nasiphi still loves me even

when I look like this, I'm happy. I understood her when she told me she couldn't fight for me. If I was in her shoes I'd do the same. She shows me everytime that she's an amazing mother, no one comes before her children. Even I, and that makes me happy because I know they are in good hands. She loves them in a way that also amazes me. I am indeed lucky to have such a woman in my life. As for Lindelwa, she doesn't know me. She has worked with me for years and certainly, she's brave to have the guts to do that to me. That I applaud her for but no one messes

with Danny Triston McKenzie, no one. Being stuck in this hospital bed upsets me but I will deal with her accordingly. Mpho and Bonga made sure she's at HQ Basements, she's an agent, she was fully trained and she knows the ins and outs. She's smart and would be able to escape. They poured boiling acid on her leg so she is in enormous pain with no means of getting out. She's under high security and she knows she's in deep shit. My people are working on finding whoever it is that she was talking to on the phone. She was working for someone and they will both lose their

lives. While I was in deep thoughts my father came in, now I was in deep shit judging by his face. He was angry

Razor: Triston

Me: Razor

Razor: Sit up when I talk to you

Me: But dad, I can't.

Razor: You know I can beat you up on this hospital bed.

This was pure punishment, I'm 37 already but my father still bullies me and beats me up. I sat up as I was in so much pain but he didn't care.

Razor: Did I teach you to beat up your

wife?

Me: No but you did slap your ex wife

Razor: I brought you into this world and I won't hesitate to get you out of it.

Razor: She was a slut. Never did I ever beat up your mother and never have I ever beaten up MaPhindy.

When you leave this hospital, I will show you. You think you strong enough to be beating up Nasiphi? I will show you who is stronger you idiot.

Me: Dad, you can't beat me up. I'm so old. You should be happy that I'm

alive and didn't die in that accident instead of wanting to beat me up.

Razor: As long as I'm still on Earth, you are a child to me and I have every right to beat you up.

With that said he left and I sighed. I'm never getting out of this hospital.

Razor will land me back in here. KJ came in and he was followed by L'yanda and Jabu.

Me: Gents

Jabu: You good? Just saw the old man storm out

Me: I'm in pain, he made me sit up and threatened to beat me

KJ: Trust me, that was not a threat. He will do it. He beat me and Jomo up yesterday for not doing monthly check ups on the agents. Things are tough at the force, he's breathing fire.

Me: Razor is crazy

L'yanda: And you take after him. We not even allowed to be in here but we snuck in so we can see you

Me: Why?

L'yanda: Nasi left strict instructions that no one should come in so you can rest.

Me: Oh wow

KJ: She loves you, don't mess up



again

Me: I won't and thank you for taking care of her.

KJ: I'd do anything for you and her.

Me: I appreciate that

Jabu: Argh! Lets go before you get all moochy on each other.

Lyanda: Sharp bro!

They left me and I decided to sleep again. There's nothing much to do other than sleep. I hope I'll be out of here by tomorrow.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's  
of friends

#LBAR

Insert 65

It's been a week since he's been at the hospital. He's been wanting to get out and finally it has happened. KJ and I were on our way to fetch him and he kept on calling us telling us that we're taking our own time. When

we got there he was standing by the reception with his bags ready.

Ofcourse there was journalists taking pictures of him and he didn't even care. All he wanted was to go home.

Me: You didn't cover your face

Danny: It won't heal if I'm always covering it.

Me: Okay, you'll be coming in for a check up every weekend

Danny: Can we check up on the baby?  
If you don't mind

He was nervous and I didn't understand why.

Me: I don't mind.

We went to Dr Cele's office and luckily she wasn't busy at all. We did the scan and he heard the heartbeat. He shedded a tear and I got emotional too. I've seen him cry before but each time seems like the first time. We were given the scan photos and we said our goodbyes. KJ drove and Danny was quiet all the way home. We went in with KJ but he stood outside. I watched him through the window as he walked around in deep thoughts and talking to himself. I unpacked his bag and made him something to eat while he was outside. He came in and ate without

saying a word

Me: You okay?

Danny: Yes I'm fine. Babe, I think we should get a new house.

Me: Why?

Danny: For a fresh start

Me: You can decide what you want, I have my own house that I just bought. If you don't want to stay here you can move out.

Danny: But I thought you'd be moving back home

Me: No

Danny: Nasiphi

Me: Not now Danny

Danny: When?

Me: I don't know just not now. Just because I'm taking care of you doesn't mean we're back together. You'll be staying alone in your house.

He nodded and I felt bad. But I wasn't backing down easily. I washed the dishes when we were done eating.

KJ: Let's go

Danny: Sure, want to go home or you'll stay here?

Me: Where are guys going? You're supposed to be resting

Danny: HQ, I have to deal with Lindelwa plus they've found whoever she was working with.

Me: I want to come with

KJ: You sure?

Me: Yes. Did you guys do that pregnancy test?

KJ: Yes and she's not pregnant

Danny: Let's get going

We went to the and Danny drove us off to HQ.

Phila: What are you doing here?

He said looking at me. They were now a bit hesitant

Me: What is going on?

Bonga: Nothing

He pulled Danny aside and they spoke for a while. Danny seemed so angry

Danny: Let's go in.

We went down to the basement and I was so shocked to see who Lindelwa was working with.

Me: Zizipho

My sister, we have the same father. Why does family do this to one another? Seems like she's just like Nkonzo.



Me: Why? Why did you do this?

Zipho: Let me go!

Me: You cannot be making demands here. Speak

Mpho gave me a chair and a bottle of water. I sat down and waited for her to speak

Lindelwa: Mrs McKenzie I'm sorry, I'm so sorry please tell them to stop torturing me this way. I'm in pain, my legs are all burnt by acid please!  
Please

I ignored her and focused on Zipho

Zipho: There's nothing to explain, I needed money. She owed me so she

worked for me. You know how much I've always loved Danny but I couldn't be the one who drugs him, I had no access to him so basically I made Lindelwa live my life for me.

Me: Its my life, not yours Zizipho

Zipho: That's where you getting it wrong young lady, it's our sisters life. It is Ziyanda's life!

Danny: You are crazy

Zipho: And you love me Danny!

Me: Does MaCebisile now about this?

Zipho: No, but she knows that you killed Nkonzo! If you kill me, she will know and she is coming for you.

Don't underestimate her

Me: And she must not underestimate me. You think you're always going to win huh? That's never going to happen. I have never done anything to you and your family but you and your sick brother do terrible things to me!

Zipho: That's because you took what belongs to us! Dad left you all the wealth he had! That was unfair because it belonged to us! Gugu, Pamela, Buu, Mbulelo and the young ones are stupid! So stupid to treat you as our sister yet you took away our wealth

Me: I didn't, your father did that. It was his money and his decisions. I didn't even know him!

Zipho: Doesn't change a thing. You're living the nice life while we suffer

Me: You're not even suffering, you've got a good life and a good job.

Zipho: That is not enough!

Me: You're just being greedy.

Danny: You can leave now babe, leave us to deal with them. They won't see the sun rise tomorrow

Me: Don't, don't kill them.

Bonga: What? Are you crazy?

Me: Their blood shouldn't be in your hands

Lindelwa: Thank you, thank you for letting us go

Me: I'm not letting you go. Jomo, pass me the acid and those chemicals

He did so and Danny mixed them together. We poured it on their legs. What it will do is put them in intense pain. Their legs will burn into ashes as they watch them. I made sure that the chemical doesn't go beyond their knees. Danny went as far as cutting off their fingers. That has been

something that disgusts me. I left them as they tortured them. Gone was my sweet and merciful heart. I wanted them to suffer and die a slow painful death. Shooting them would be letting them go easily. As for MaCebisile, I know she will wage war.

Jabu: Her mother needs to be taken care off

Danny: We sit down and wait for her to wage war. I know she will act as soon as she discovers Zipho is missing. We will attack when she attacks, we'll be ready for her.

Me: That's a good idea

Danny: A good idea would be you, going home to eat and rest. My son must be hungry

I rolled my eyes at him and we went to his car.

Danny: Want to grab something at the stores?

Me: We can go get some burgers for the kids and some goodies. They'll be happy to come back home to it.

Danny: I haven't seen Onika in such a long time. I miss the both of them, is it okay if I sleep over?

Me: Danny

Danny: Its okay if you don't want me

to.

Me: You'll sleep in the guest room.

Danny: Beggars can't be choosers.

Thanks

We went to the mall and did a mini grocery shopping and bought the burgers. We got home and I ate. I laid on the couch and he squeezed himself next to me. He went down and laid his head softly on my stomach.

Me: What are you doing?

Danny: Listening to my baby breath

Me: Did you feel that? Ouch



He laughed as he felt him kicking. It's the first time he even kicks

Danny: Hello little McKenzie

I laughed at him as he had a long conversation with his son. He held my hand and I smiled. I got a call from Danny's father.

Me: Hello Mr McKenzie

Razor: Nasi my daughter, how are you and my grandchildren?

Me: We are well thank you and yourself?

Razor: I'm okay, I called to invite you for supper. I've missed my grandchildren

Me: We'll come over dad, thank you for the invite. The kids will be really happy and excited to see the twins.

Razor: Tell Danny to stop ignoring my calls, when I find him. He'll regret it

Me: Yes I will tell him

We said our goodbyes and Danny's eyes were all out

Danny: What did he say?

Me: Yes inviting us for supper and he said stop ignoring his calls, you'll regret it when he finds you.

Danny: Oh god, I'm not going to that supper.

Me: You have to be there or he'll be angry

Danny: Nop, I'm not going at all.

Me: Wow!

Danny: I still want to live and see my child.

Me: I can't believe you're running away from your father

Danny: Best believe it. I'm going to fetch the kids from school.

Me: Okay.

He left and I watched TV as I waited for them to come back. After 15mins the kids came running to me.

Onika: Mama ka Lethukuthula!!!!

Me: I'm here baby

Onika: Mom, stop calling me a baby.  
How are you?

Me: I'm good and yourself? Hey  
Danver

Danver: Hello mom, I'm hungry

Onika: I'm Okay, I'm hungry too.

Danny: Come get your burgers

Them: Yey! Burgers!

Me: And guess where we're going  
this evening?

Danver: The cinema?

Me: Wrong

Onika: Uhm Aunty Kamo's?

Me: Wrong, we're going to grandpa's!

They screamed as we cheered and did our happy dance. Danny was taking a video of us and laughing.

Onika: We should teach Dad.

Danny: Tomorrow, I'm a bit tired now

Onika: Daddy told me what happened to his face. He still looks handsome, right mom?

Me: Yes he does

Danny smiled and I rolled my eyes. I didn't compliment him, Onika did. I got a call from Lucas.

Me: Luluuuu

Lucas: What the hell! You're bad at giving nicknames

Me: Whatever, like you're any better. What's up?

Lucas: Nothing much, I was just checking up on you.

Me: Oh thank you, so hows work?

Lucas: Work is very tempting, why didn't you tell me there are so many thick and beautiful woman in Nigeria?

Me: I didn't even know you were in Nigeria! Remember you said you won't have sex for the next 5months?

Lucas: Fuck that! I'm seriously not sticking to my words. How's Danny?

Me: He's okay, he's just giving me a grumpy look

Lucas: I knew you guys would get back together

Me: Well you're wrong

Lucas: You're so boring Nasi but anyways, goodbye. Say hey to the kids and Mr grumpy face

I laughed and said goodbye. I had a huge smile on my face which seemed like Danny wasn't happy about

Me: What?

Danny: He makes you laugh and smile

Me: Yes he does

Danny: I'm not happy about that. Only I should make you smile like that

Me: You're so jealous McKenzie.

Danny: Why are you even talking about his sex life?

Me: Because Lucas talks about anything and everything. He's very outspoken

Danny: I don't like this

Me: Well you'll have to suck it up. I'm going to shower



I left him with his grumpy face and his kids and I took a shower. I wore a tight navy dress which was a little below the knees and white sneakers and a black doek over my head and shoulders. I might be divorced but I still respect Danny's parents. I got the kids ready and Danny was watching tv.

Me: You still not coming?

Danny: Nop

Me: What will I say to him?

Danny: I don't know, you'll come up with something.

Me: Who will drive us?

Danny: I'll drop you off

Me: This is so crazy Triston.

Danny: Razor is even crazier.

Me: We ready to leave

Danny: You look beautiful my precious Pearl

Me: Thank you

He carried both the kids as I took my bag and we left. He really did drop us off on the drive way and he sped off.

This guy! I knocked and MaPhindy opened the door.

MaP: Hello! Well, what do we have here? My grandkids!

She carried them and kissed their faces

Danver: Grandma! I'm old now.

MaP: You'll never be too old for me young one.

She put them down and she hugged me.

MaP: You look beautiful and bloated

Me: I am so looking forward to giving birth. Just two more months to go.

MaP: Hang in there. Let's go have a seat.

We went to the dinning room and there was Kevin, Danny's cousin and

Razor

Me: Hello Kevin, Hey dad

Razor: Hello my daughter

Kevin: Hello Nasi.

They greeted the kids and then looked at me. Oh oh, I don't know what lie I'll tell

Razor: Where is he?

Me: The doctor said it's best if he gets some rest so he's at home resting.

I hope my white lie works. Fingers crossed!

Razor: That boy!

Kevin: Let him rest uncle

Kevin wanted to laugh and so did I but we held it in. Razor took his car keys and left.

Kevin(laughs): He is in deep shit

Me: Tell me about it

Kevin: I don't get why Danny still thinks he can cross Uncle Razor. He'll regret not coming here.

MaP came from the kitchen with the kids.

MaP: Where is your father?

Kevin: He went to sort out Danny

MaP: Oh my son.

Me: Do you really think he'll beat him up?

MaP: I know my man, when he says he'll do something. He really does it.

The twins, Jane and Jenna came downstairs and they've grown so much!

Jenna: Hello aunty Nasi

Me: Hello Jenna, you've grown so much!

She laughed and Jane waved at me. She was sucking on her thumb so there was no way she was going to talk. We sat down and had a lovely conversation while we were catching

up and the kids were watching cartoons. The chef called us when the food was ready. I prayed, blessing the food and just when we were about to dish up Danny and Razor came in. Danny was even limping. The way Kevin laughed at him, I felt so sorry for him. I stood up wanting to help him but Razor stopped me. Danny made his way to his seat and lifted his middle finger on Kevin.

Kevin: You still have the courage to swear at me

Danny: Don't worry, I'm not that hurt. Dad is slowly losing his fire.

Me: But the way you are tells me otherwise.

He laughed and kissed my hand. He greeted MaPhindy and his sisters. We dished up for everyone and we had a lovely meal and great conversations. Most of the time we were listening to the kids. After having dessert we listened to music and the kids were dancing. Razor pulled me aside and danced with me.

Razor: Are you happy?

Me: Yes I am.

Razor: I won't blame you if you don't forgive that idiot of a son I have. But



you do have to know that he is sorry and it wasn't his intention to hurt you.

Me: I know but its just hard to forget about it

Razor: You shouldn't force yourself to forget because that might never happen. Focus on moving on. Focus on being happy, even if it means being happy without him.

Me: I don't think I can be happy without him

Razor: You really love him don't you?

Me: Yes I do

Razor: I'm glad he found you. He'll make it work, trust me. I see alot of

me in him.

Me: True

Razor: Someone once told me that love has the ability to break and restore. He's broken you into pieces but he can restore you. Whatever happens from now onwards, be sure that it makes you and your kids happy. You're a precious Pearl, you deserve to be happy.

Me: Thanks Dad

He kissed my forehead we continued dancing. He's words really meant alot to me. I looked at him as he wasn't facing me, he was talking to Kevin

and MaPhindy. I smiled to myself as I thought about the beautiful family we have and how excited I am about our new member that will be joining us soon. I touched my stomach and smiled.

Me: I love you son

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

## Insert 66

It's been a month since Danny came back from the hospital. He has recovered but not fully. Being the stubborn man that he is. He has went back to the force and has been gone for the past two weeks. We argued about it but he saw it as the best decision to do so and I let him be. Lindelwa couldnt bare the pain any longer and she passed away. They took her remaining body parts to her family and said she died in a mission.

Zipho died shortly after and her mother has been up and down searching for her. She suspected that Buu, Mbulelo and I had something to do with her disappearance but she doesn't have her facts straight. I do not feel guilty at all because her daughter called her death upon herself. It was the severe punishment she deserved.

Onika: Mom, I don't want to go to school today

Me: You have to go to school, it's the second term, a very important term.

Onika: I'm so tired of school.

Me: You still have a long way to go sweetie. Now get up, your water will get cold.

She huffed and went to the bathroom. She was laughing and screaming and I rushed to the bathroom and she was making such a mess in the bathroom.

Me: Onika McKenzie!!!

Onika: Oops

Me: You did on that on purpose. Bath or you'll be late.

I went to check on Danver and he was already dressed. I combed his hair and tied it into a bun. He's curly

hair has grown too much

Me: We will cut it soon

Danver: But mom!

Me: Not all of it, it's too long now.

He sighed and nodded. We were done and we had breakfast.

Me: Hurry and brush your teeth, the driver will be here any minute.

They brushed their teeth and we waited for the driver after they were done. The driver came and took them to school. While I was cleaning the kitchen Ntokozo and Siya walked in.

Siya: Mammi ka Danver

Me: Hey sweeties

Ntoko: You look beautiful

Me: Really now?

They laughed at me and we sat down.

Me: Since my beautiful friends are here, I need a foot rub

Siya: I'm out

Ntokozo being the soft and kind hearted one gave me a foot rub.

Siya: These men of ours are so unfair, you'd swear they are married to this force. I miss my husband but he is busy.

Ntoko: True and when I complained



L'yanda said I should stop nagging him like an old granny, can you believe it? I was so angry but when he called this morning, being the fool in love that I am, I melted.

We laughed as we continued talking and them telling me how it gets so busy but so much fun at the force. They once worked full time for Ta'Razor.

Siya: Razor didn't play, if he wanted a job done, it had to be done one time.

Ntoko: The training was tough! I literally cried everyday

Me: Why didn't you leave? It's not like

you were forced to be there

Ntoko: As much as I was not forced but I had to be there. Zee and Zandy were in trouble so it meant the rest of us were in trouble. We needed protection and the force could protect us so in return, we had to work.

Me: Zee and Zandy together means trouble hey

Siya: You don't even want to know. They're gifted with so much brains and they just do dangerous things for fun. They are too inquisitive and they don't stop till they find what they

were looking for.

Ntoko: Zee loved trouble, like she literally smelt the direction of it and threw herself in. The fun she has! She's just always been an adrenalin junkie.

Siya: I always said she shouldn't have been a doctor, she belonged on those NCIS type of things.

The more I'm told about Zee is the more I get to know about my sister.

Siya: But weird enough, she was all that and still had this side of her which was so innocent, so down to earth and respectful. So submissive

in a way, when she got into a relationship with Danny, we thought they'd bring the house down and shoot each other but she never even argued with him nor challenged him in any way. She was indeed a special character

Me: I guess she was unpredictable just like Nangamso

Siya: Ooh that one! Like I literally get scared of each and every thought she has. Always afraid of what she'll do next or what she'll say. She's too unpredictable.

Me: You guys are just something else.

Ntoko: Take your bag, we're going out.  
We'll fetch Kamo

Me: Give me a few minutes to change.

I went to the room and changed into a white long dress and sandals. Took my bag and we were off to Kamo's.

We got there and her cars were all there but the doors were closed

Siya: She's not answering her phone

Ntoko: Lets get the keys from the security.

She did so and we opened. There were a few wine bottles on the table.

Ntoko: Where is she?

We looked around the first floor but couldn't find her. This is the disadvantage of having big mansions. You don't even know where to find someone

Me: I'm going to the basement, you go to the second floor and Siya go to the third floor.

Ntoko: Yes mam.

I walked downstairs to the basement after a few minutes of walking. I sat on the last step feeling very exhausted. I looked around and couldn't believe what was before me. I screamed out loud calling Ntokozo

and Siya

Me: Oh no! Kamogelang no! Don't do this please. Please! Stop

They both rushed in and screamed.

How could Kamo do this? Oh no

Siya: Kamo! Kamo!

She opened her eyes, they were blood red. She hung herself with a rope and was floating in the air. She's committing suicide

Me: Kamo, please stop. Think about this

She looked at us like we were crazy. Siya was already crying and couldn't even speak. She's always so quick to

cry

Ntoko: Kamogelang! What are on earth are you doing! Get the fuck down, don't piss me off!

Me: Ntoko calm down

Ntoko: She's being very selfish! She has a kid!

Me: I understand that. Kamogelang, please I know you're not in a good space right now, sweetie please, you're hurting, you feel as if you're alone but you're not. I don't know how it feels like to be in your shoes right now but what I do know is that I know the feeling of being divorced. Maybe



what you're feeling ain't even about the divorce. The feeling of being betrayed like that, that your entire marriage and life with Thabo was a lie. That you were a fool all this time. For someone as intelligent as you and you're a PI, I know you're beating yourself up for not even connecting dots nor finding even the slightest clue. You cannot blame yourself, you were inlove and blinded by it. He had his act together and you stood by him even when he cheated. I don't know how many times he did it but you forgave him because you love him and you wouldn't just easily give up,

you have a child together and you wanted her to grow in the presence of both his parents. But how will that happen if you're both not there? She doesn't know what happened to her father, she doesn't have a father anymore, you play both roles, now you want her to grow being an orphan because you were hurt. I'm not going to cover it up, Ntokozo is being honest, you're being selfish. You living Thembelihle alone in this world, yes she has us but it's different, you're her parent. Don't you dare do this Kamogelang. Don't, please think about your child. No one and nothing

is more important in life than your child. Even you're not, you come second and she comes first.

Whatever you're going to through, don't take rash decisions that will have a bad impact on her. Haven't you seen or heard how people suffer without their parents? You have friends who grew up without their parents and have told you their life stories and how their childhood was, is that what you wish for your daughter?

I looked at the door as they barged in. When did they all get here? All the guys came in rushing and Bonga and

Danny managed to climb up and untie Kamo. How did she even reach that far? She laid on the floor and looked like she has no life in her. I wiped off my tears as they carried her and we went upstairs.

Jabu: We're taking her to the hospital.  
Ntoko, drive these two there.

Ntoko: Will do

Danny: Are you all okay?

We nodded as he hugged us and kissed our foreheads.

Phila: Danny, I'm watching you

Danny: Your wife is my wife yabo?

We all laughed as they left. We sat down for a while and drank some water.

Me: How did they know?

Siya: I called Phila

We talked for a while and then headed to the hospital.

Me: We're always at the hospital, I'm beginning to hate this place.

Ntoko: Woah, you cannot hate it. You work here.

Me: I'm just tired of this never ending hospital visits. Maybe something is wrong or maybe its a way of us being punished for our sins. At the end,

they'll be lives that will be lost.

Question is, how long do we have to wait till the next burial?

Siya: Stop speaking like that Nasiphi.

We sat at the waiting room with the gents and the other ladies were on their way.

Me: We'd be in a different situation had we not arrived on time.

Thaps: Hay Nasiphi

Me: What? We need to face many facts. This was a wake up call

The girls rushed in and greeted. We all sat down in silence but I just couldn't keep my thoughts to myself.

Me: This is all a wake up call, we're also at fault for her actions. We're at fault for thinking she is okay just because she acted okay. We let situations go too easily without making sure that whatever we've went through, that specific person has fully healed. We let her deal with the pain alone and in her ways, look where that has landed us. When she said she wanted to be alone, we allowed it when we shouldn't have. I know we're always there for one another and love each other deeply but there's something we're not doing right, we're not communicating the

way we should. Yes we all have our own lives and challenges we face each and every day, but there should be time for us, time for us to deal with our demons and love one another and share things we keep deep in our hearts. We need to be present in each others lives

Brian: We're always together thought most times

Mpho: True

Me: We need to be more present emotionally. I don't even know how to put this but we do. If it means we need to hold hands and cry together,



we will. If it means you wake me up at 3am, wanting me to hold you as you cry and talk, I will wake up and listen, even if it means I have to drive all the way to Cape Town, all the way to Langelihle, all the way to Johannesburg I will do so. We need each other more than we need anything else. I wasn't around when you lost Zee but I saw the damage it caused, I witnessed it and we wouldn't want that to happen again. It almost happened in our watch, what do we do next time if we arrive to late

Danny: There won't be a next time

Me: How will we know if we don't

take action now! Now is the time we stood up and took action! Now is the time we opened both eyes before its too late.

I was standing and everyone was listening to me. They had to listen and I had to get it all out.

Me: The 2years and 3months that I have spent with you, all of you has taught me alot. I've observed a lot about each and every one of you. We would die for each other, that we wouldn't hesitate to do. We're always protecting each other from our enemies but when do we protect each other from ourselves? Buu once

told me that we all have one thing in common and that keeps us together, we all have bad background stories, we all have challenges that we've faced in life, we found a family in this friendship and that's why we'll never let go of each other. All of us here, we are damaged to the core, deep deep inside, yes we've healed on some baggages we had and there's a lot of improvement but we haven't forgiven ourselves and told ourselves that whatever we went through was not our fault. Jabulani, it was not your fault that your kids and wife died in that car crash, it was inevitable,

Nkosinathi, it is not your fault that you were born in Royalty and you had a tough upbringing and you don't know how being a child is, L'yanda, it is not your fault that your father turned his back on you, your mother and your siblings, that was his mistake not yours, Danny, it is not your fault that you were molested, that your mom died while giving birth to you and that Zee died, Zandy, You didn't ask to be raped, all that wasn't your fault, Bee, Nceba, Siya, you didn't not chase your father away, nor did your mother, he was doing it for you! Him not being around was your you

and your own good, let go of the anger deep inside of you, Naye, your fear of weddings ain't your fault, you didn't ask for your parents to be murdered on your wedding day, you couldn't protect them nor could you Nkosinathi. There are so many more situations but we couldnt stop them because they were inevitable. Some things are not in our hands, some situations we cannot save ourselves from but we can only do ourselves a favour by forgiving ourselves for the pain we went through. Some situations we had to go through so we can be where we are today and

look at us? We've become better than we ever dreamed. When we leave this place tonight, you think about everything I've said and you decide whether we want to be sitting here again, in the same waiting room crying our eyes out for such situations or we want to be back here for joyful moments such as popping heads out of our virgina's and you being fathers again. I'm done

I said down and Athi decided to clap his hands and we laughed at him.

Danny: Where do you come from?

L'yanda: Where has she been all our

life is what I want to know.

We laughed and had a group hug. We sat down in comfortable silence. I guess everyone was just in their thoughts. Danny smiled at me and I smiled at him to. He was sitting a bit far from me.

Danny: I love you

Me: I love you too

Phelo: Ooooooh love birdies

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

Insert 67

We were able to see Kamo and she looked so lost. The guys didn't want to go in with us and they sat at the waiting room. She was looking at the ceilings and her arms were bandaged. It was evident that she didn't only try to hang herself but she tried to cut her wrists too. Siya, Phelo, Paula and Zandy were still crying.



Kamo: Don't cry for me.

Zandy: How can you say that? How  
can you try to kill yourself  
Kamogelang?

Kamo: I don't want to talk about it

Bee: But you will talk about it  
eventually, we're letting this go just  
for now.

Kamo: I'm having an abortion

Linda: An abortion? What abortion

Kamo: I have that bastards child in  
me

Naye: It's too late for an abortion.  
You're over three months pregnant

Nceba: Your stomach is so small, you're not bloated like someone I know

Me: Whatever

Kamo: I'm so close to giving birth, all these months I've been pregnant and I didn't even know about it. No signs, nothing! All the alcohol I've been drinking hasn't even killed this baby! Why didn't she die!

Me: Stop speaking such about a baby that is not at fault here, you're having a girl! That's so cute. When will you give birth?

Kamo: 22cnd

Linda: That's this week!

Kamo: I don't want the baby

Bee: I think you should see a professional

Kamo: I don't need a professional, can you all just leave?

Siya: Hawu Kamogelang

Me: Lets give her some space

Kamo: I want you to stay Nasi

Paula: Atleast you won't be alone, don't shut us out Kamo.

Zandy: We're off to the shops, we have two baby showers to prepare for.

They left us and Mpho peeped through the door and waved at Kamo, she laughed and waved back.

Kamo: I know you miss me

Mpho: Ofcourse I do, we'll see you later.

They closed the door and I took off my shoes.

Kamo: How? How did this happen?

Me: I also don't know, I'm shocked too. Like that was so long ago, you can't be exactly 9months

Kamo: It's 11months, I don't even know what to do or think. I didn't feel anything, no pain, nothing abnormal.

Me: Is everything okay with the baby?

Kamo: Yes, I still cannot believe it

Me: It's such a miracle. You've been such a heavy drinker

Kamo: Don't make me feel worse than I do

Me: It's true though, you have to thank God.

Kamo: How? How can God do this to me when he knows what the father of this child, is a bastard. When he knows that I killed my own husband. Well a man who I thought was my husband. My life is such a mess

Me: But killing yourself isn't the

answer.

Kamo: What is the answer?

Me: Taking care of yourself and your kids is the answer. God knows what he is doing, you just have to trust him

Kamo: I'm just being punished

Me: You do know that you're talking crap right now. I'm hungry, are you?

Kamo: No

Me: You are hungry

Kamo: I don't want to eat

Me: You will eat

I texted Danny telling him that I'm hungry and so is Kamo. He texted

back "Caught up in something,  
Sbahle will bring the food"

I thanked him and we stayed in  
silence while she was just crying. I let  
her cry and I knew she was going to  
be able to talk after she's let it all out.

Kamo: Can you call Dr Cele?

I called the Doctor and she came.

Kamo: Can we do the scan again?

DrC: You still cannot believe it?

Kamo: No

Me: I also want to see for myself

DrC: I've only had this case once and  
I've been a gynae for 11 years. It's

really rare and special. You're really blessed

Indeed there was a baby and the heartbeat filled the room.

Me: Wow

Kamo cried while laughing. I couldn't tell whether she was happy or was she sad. It was all just unreal. It was just unbelievable

DrC: You're going to have to give birth through C-Section, giving birth naturally can cause a lot of damage. We want what's best for you and the child. In some other cases, the child doesn't make it. It's highly possible



that the baby can be stillborn. Excuse me please

Me: Wow this is really unbelievable Kamo.

Kamo: I don't know what to do

Me: We're here to help you, we're all here to help you.

Kamo: Where is Thembelihle?

Me: With all the other kids at Bee's

Kamo: I don't even know how I'll face her

Me: She doesn't know what you did. She'll never know

Kamo: I was supposed to fetch her

from school, I let her down. I gave up on my life without even thinking of her, who will I be living her with? It was very selfish of me

Me: I'm glad you realize that and you'll never ever do it again.

Sbahle came in with the food followed by the others and the gents were also here

Athi: Poodle poo

Me: Who the hell is poodle poo?

Athi: She knows

Sneh blushed and we all laughed at her. Danny kissed my cheek and brushed my tummy.

Zandy: We were able to get a few items, I've sent some people to work on the nursery room at your house Kamo, aah! This is so exciting

Phila: At Kamo's? Why does Kamo need a nursery room

Me: She's having a baby

L'yanda: A baby?

Ntoko explained everything and they still didn't understand

Lubah: How is that even possible?

Nceba: We also can't believe it but its true.

Bonga: Wow congratulations. How

far are you?

Kamo: I'll be giving birth this Friday

KJ: Ay ngeke, where is the stomach?

Kamo: It didn't show all these months.  
I'm even overdue.

Thaps: Now the things we did while  
you were pregnant didn't affect the  
baby?

Me: What things?

Thaps: We smoked weed all night

Me: What! When?

Kamo: Blame Mayibongwe for that

Mayi: Hey, it wasn't my fault

Nceba: You started

Danny: Who was there anyways?

Thaps: Nceba, Mayi, Kamo, Jomo, KJ and myself

Athi: If this child comes out with a half leg and twisted eyes, it's your fault

Kamo: What? That could happen

She was so frightened she even cried, we all just laughed at her and she ended up laughing

Athi: I was just joking

Kamo: You scared me.

Nkosi: You'll be staying with Mpho and Zandy

Kamo: What? Why?

Danny: You can't be alone again, not after what happened. We're keeping a close eye on you

Kamo: I cannot stay with a married couple, I'll lose my mind. Its always overwhelming even at times like these, you're all lovey dovey and it always reminds me of what I had, of my fake marriage.

Me: You feel like that? Why have you never mentioned it?

Kamo: Didn't want to stress you guys or have you guys behave differently because of me.

Danny: We're also sorry, we should have thought about it or considered it. A lot has been going on and we all quickly moved on from the things that have happened without properly addressing the emotional impact it had on us. We are also to blame for what you did, things are tough Kamo and you know that, we don't live normal lives nor do we even get time to live and address our personal lives, especially us gents, we always on the road or dodging bullets. We go through shit together but suicide, shouldn't be the way you solve a problem. This is the first and last

time you try to take your own life, and that goes for everyone here. Please, allow us to help you, Thembelihle and your unborn baby need their strong mother, I know you might not be so happy about the child but she is yours, love her. I also didn't know how to love Onika because I blamed her for Zee's death, trust me, you do not want to put yourself through that, you don't want to turn Thembihle into mothering a newborn like I did to Danver and you don't want your unborn child to go through being unloved by her mom. We're here for you



Sbahle: And since I'm not married nor in any relationship, I stay alone and get bored all the time, I'll move in with you! I know you'll enjoy my presence

Kamo: Oh God

KJ: Good luck Kamo

Sbahle: You were going to say something vele Kaitso? You always have something to say. You're so forward

KJ: I know you've missed me Sbahle, not need to get on my neck when you can get on my dick.

Sbahle looked so shocked and her eyes popped. We all literally didn't

expect that. Athi burst the bubble by laughing at Sbahle

Mpho: I'm still here Kaitso Jwara

KJ: Hade bozza, I just needed to shut her up.

Phila: Dick power

Bonga: I second that!

They all roared and made a loud noise. If it wasn't my hospital, and owned by someone else, we'd be kicked out of here.

Ngamso: You guys are so childish, Nasi, I wanted to talk to you about something. There's an event coming up after you give birth, you'll be the

guest speaker and you'll need to share your story.

Me: Okay cool, I sometimes really forget that I have one boob. It's all kicking in now, how will I breastfeed?

Danny: Do you have to breastfeed?

Me: I don't have to but I'd love to. But I guess if it doesn't work out, I'll have to use formula

Danny: That will be fine babe, don't stress.

Bonga: We have to love and leave you guys!

Me: Give me a lift to my house please  
Nceba

Danny gave me a deathstare and I didn't understand what it was about

Lubah: Someone's not happy

Nkosi: Lets leave before he blows up.

Danny: You're coming home with me, that's not up for discussion.

Me: Hah but Danny, I don't want to go to that house

Danny: Then we're going to your place

Me: I don't want to be in a house with you in it

Danny: Now you're loosing it. Let's go

Danny just loves ordering me around.

Like really! He forgets that we're not married anymore. He opened the door for me and spanked me as I got in. He doesn't know the meaning of boundaries. He got in the drivers side and drove off. But he was not heading to my house.

Me: Where are we going? I want go home and sleep

Danny: Chill Amahle

Me: Don't tell me to chill! Take me home!

Danny: Why the fuck are you yelling?

Me: Why the fuck are you cursing?

Danny: Because I can

Me: Because I can too!!

Danny: Whatever, just enjoy the ride.

I started crying and he laughed at me.

Me: You're laughing

Danny: I know fake tears babe

Me: I'm not your babe

Danny: You are, you're my wife

Nasiphi

Me: I'm divorced

He's facial expression changed and he had anger and he was hurt. I guess I touched a nerve. He kept quiet and turned driving back to my house.

Me: What happened to where we were going?

Danny: You said you wanted to go home and sleep.

Me: But Danny

He ignored me and went to my house. He parked and didn't even open the door for me. I worked my big self to the house and went in. He quickly sped off and I just sighed. What went wrong now? I'm all alone in this house and I know the kids will not come back home. But let me try my luck anyways. I called Bee and she answered, there was so much noise.

Me: I don't think I'll be lucky

Bee: Yup, they are definitely not coming back. You'll see them tomorrow after school

Me: I'm alone

Bee: Where is Danny?

Me: I think we had a fight or whatever it was so he stormed off.

Bee: Aaah sorry girl. Byee, I'm making food for these rascals.

Me: Bye

Bee: Oh, Danny just came in. Probably coming to check on the kids

Me: I don't even know what to say



Bee: Just stuff yourself with food.

Me: You've got so many good ideas.

I ended the call and ordered some pizza, Nandos and 4 Steers burgers. I took out some orange juice and a plate while I waited. Luckily it didn't take that long, see? Food never lets me down! I sat at the lounge, ate while watching Nigerian movies. They are literally just the best! And I love them because they play for a very long time. After about 4hours later, it was around 9pm. Danny called, I ignored his calls till he came to my house. He kept on knocking, well he was banging the door

Me: I am coming!!!

I walked slowly to the door finishing my pizza slice. I'm sure he was getting irritated. Once I was done I opened the door and he came in. He held me onto the wall and kissed me. I wasn't supposed to kiss him back but I was so weak, my body just melted. He didn't waste time, his manhood was already penetrating me as he had my leg up on his shoulders and he was carrying me, how can he carry me when I'm this big? Oh I hope I don't fall!

Me: Danny!

Danny: Do you want me to stop?

Me: No, don't stop

Danny: I love you Nasiphi! Don't you understand that?

Me: I do

Danny: Then why are you making things so hard for me! I know I hurt you and I'm in no position to be complaining about you giving me a hard time, but you're not even letting me try to fix my mistakes.

I kept quiet as he laid me on the couch and entered from the back. I held onto the cushions and kept on biting them.

Danny: Marry me Nasiphi

Me: What?

Danny: Marry me again, be my Mrs  
McKenzie

Me: Danny

Danny: Please, I'm begging you. I  
need you in my life, I need our family  
together and I need to show you how  
true love is, just marry me please

Me: I'll marry you Triston

Danny: You will?

Me: Yes! Yes I will.

We reached our destination and I laid  
down catching my breath. He came

with a towel and cleaned me up.

Danny: Did you have somebody over?

Me: No why?

Danny: So much food, just by yourself?

Me: Don't judge, plus its the two of us.  
Your son loves eating.

He kissed my forehead and touched  
my stomach. The way this boy kicked!  
I screamed a bit.

Danny: That's a McKenzie kick! Sorry  
baby

Me: Ouch!

Danny: Let me kiss it better

I laughed as he kept on kissing my

stomach. It actually tickled. He gave me house keys

Me: What are these for?

Danny: Our new house, everything has been taken care off

Me: Is that where you were taking me?

Danny: Yes

I smiled and we kissed again.

Me: Thank you

Danny: I love you Amahle

Me: I love you too Triston

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's  
of friends

#LBAR

Insert 68

Days went by and Kamo was better, she even felt better emotionally and mentally. A lot of help has to do with the professional help she's been getting and the love and support from her friends. It has been indeed

wonderful to see that the words I spoke made a difference. It's like in the few days we've spent since I spoke, it's like we've grown to another level of communication and with each passing day I know we'll grow more and more. Agreeing to marry Danny again made me happy because he's my soulmate, we've been through a lot together, so much but I know there's no place I'd rather be than be in his heart and go to bed next to him every night. I told him that we will go to Home Affairs today and sign so later on I can accompany Kamo to the hospital. I got ready as



he drove the kids to school. They are so happy its a friday, Onika is growing to hate school and that worries me so much, she cannot always be pushed to another grade. Her over intelligence worries me. He came to pick me up and drove off to Home Affairs. It was so full but I'm with Mr McKenzie here so we were attended to first. On a normal day I wouldn't agree to it because its unfair to those who are at the back of the line but I have swollen feet and a stomach big enough to fill all these people so I took advantage just for today. We were attended to by some guy who

seemed to know Danny. He was busy on the computer checking on the system.

Him: It appears you both are still married and have never divorced

Me: What do you mean by that?

Him: You're both still married legally, it shows that you divorced Ms Ziyanda Bhengu

Me: Can you check if he got married to a Lindelwa?

Him: No mam we don't have that in our system

Danny: Thank you sir, sorry for wasting your time.

Me: What is going on?

Danny: This has Bonga written all over it.

We got into the car and he made a call and put it on loudspeaker

Danny: Start explaining

Bonga: Congratulations, you are still married

Me: Bongani Luthuli

Bonga: What? I saved your asses a long time ago and you should be thanking me. Those divorce papers were fake and so was your marriage certificate with Lindelwa. I was being a good lawyer and for that, I want to

be paid double this month.

Danny: Thank you man, thank you

Bonga: That's what friends are for.

I had a little pain and I closed my eyes as they continued talking. It really hurt but I thought it was just Braxton hicks.

Danny: You okay babe?

He asked after ending the call and held my hand.

Me: Yes I'm fine. Water please

He gave me a bottle of water and I drank.

Danny: Lets go get something to eat,

I'm taking you out on a mini date

Me: That's exciting

I faked a smile and pretended not to be in pain. I know he'll freak out if I tell him I'm in pain. Rather I say so when there's someone who can actually help me. We got to the restaurant and I was at ease, I wasn't in much pain anymore, he was just kicking a lot. We ordered and ate our food through a long lovely conversation.

Danny: You know, Kamo's situation really freaks me out. To have a baby all this time and nothing shows, no

signs nothing. She didn't know she was pregnant all this time. Mayi told us about a show he watches, I didn't know I was pregnant on TLC, he explains that it happens alot. One woman gave birth while she was taking a shit in the toilet, can you believe it!

Mayi and watching these shows, he really enjoys them more over soccer. He never misses The Real talk show. They always laugh at him but now, he is well informed about the situation at hand.

Me: I guess you also should start watching the show

Danny: Oh no babe, I'm not doing that.  
I wanted us to talk about our wedding

Me: But we're still married babe

Danny: But don't you want another  
wedding?

Me: No babe, we can have something  
small just to celebrate and exchange  
vows again with just our family and  
friends.

Danny: Whatever you want babe, as  
long as I have you by my side I'm  
happy.

We moved into our new home two  
days ago. Danver was so happy  
because he's room had everything he

wanted and more. He's literally always there and making so much noise with his play station and guitar. Onika on the other hand is always in her room playing dollyhouse and she's always the teacher. I've been one of her students and she is so brilliant. She really did take after her mother.

Me: Let's go, I promised Kamo I wouldn't be late.

He paid the bill and when I stood up, the pain was excruciating. I sat down and drank water

Danny: You sure you're okay?



Me: Yes Triston

He carried me to the car, drawing everyone's attention and people taking pictures. That's the last thing I needed today, I look and feel ugly. We got to Kamo's and she was with Sbahle and Pamela(sbahles friend)

Sbahle: She's been so nervous, walking all over the house. You'd swear its the first time she's going to have a kid

Kamo: I'm right here you know. Let's go please

Me: Lets sit down for a while

We sat and had ice cream when we

were done. Danny said we should leave because he wants to go see his friends after he drops us off. I stood up and I had a funny feeling

Pamela: Sis Nasi did you just pee on yourself?

Me: Oh gosh! Danny

He was laughing so hard I was so irritated

Danny: Babe! Why the hell did you pee on yourself? This is funny, I'll take a picture

Kamo: Her water just broke man!!

Danny: What do you mean? What water?

Me: Danny? This is not your first child, I expect you to be more educated about this!

Danny: Fuck, the baby is coming.  
Uhm breathe Nasi, Kamo, what do we do?

Sbahle: Oh God! Danny, go fetch the babies clothes and her clothes. You'll meet us at the hospital. Come Nasi

We went to the car and Kamo was so freaked out. I guess it was kicking in that she's also going to give birth

Kamo: We're going to have kids born on the same day

Me: This is so painful Kamo, so

painful.

Kamo: Have some more ice cream,  
Drive Man!

Me: I don't want ice cream! Drive  
Sbahle!

Sbahle: I have two pregnant woman  
going crazy on me, I cannot drive any  
faster. If you both just shut up,  
maybe I might

Pamela: This is funny

We all ended up laughing and we got  
to the hospital

Zandy: You're also in labour? Wow  
this is so cute

Siya: Tell me about it

Danny arrived shortly after we did. Kamo was taken to theatre while I was taken to our room. We wanted our room to be combined and I'd see her afterwards. Dr Mkhize, who is Naye would be my gynae for the night. It was really funny and cute that my friend will help me give birth. Dr Cele had to monitor and perform the c-section on Kamo.

Naye: You're ready. Open your legs a bit wider

Nkosi: Its our time to leave Danny

Danny: When last did you do this

Naye?

Naye: Been a while, trust me. I got this.

He kissed my forehead and he was very worried. A part of me understood his concerns. The last time this happened he lost his wife. He made sure that all the nurses that were assisting Naye were checked. She kept on slapping my thighs and telling me to push while Ntokozo was holding my hand.

Ntoko: Push!

Naye: 1, 2, 3 push! Push harder

Nasiphi, push!

Me: I can't

It was so painful, I gave it my all and pushed so hard.

Naye: Good, push harder again, I can see the head.

Me: I'm tired!!!!

I screamed as I pushed harder and harder

Ntoko: Ouch, you're hurting my hand

Me: Shut up!!!!!!!!!!!!

I was losing it, I wanted this baby out!

Me: I'm never getting pregnant again!

Ntoko: Danny won't like that

I pushed one last time and his cry

filled the room. He was placed on my chest and I saw his little hands for the first time. He was taken away for cleaning as I was also being cleaned and stitched.

Me: My virgina hurts. Why didn't you tell me it was this painful!

Naye: We wanted you to experience it for yourself.

Me: Lame excuse

Danny came back in as he was carrying our little prince. He was followed by Onika and Danver

Me: When did you guys get here?

Danver: Aunty Ngamso fetched us.



I'm a big brother!

Onika: And I'm a big sister!

Me: Yes you are

Danny: He looks so much like me,  
he's too cute

Me: Can I hold him?

Naye: It's okay to breastfeed him with  
your other boob, your doctor assured  
me that its clean and clear

Me: Thank you

I held him and tried to do it. It was  
painful at first but the way he was  
sucking on my boob, the pain was  
worth it.

Danny: What will we name him?

Danver: I have a name for him

Me: What is it?

Danver: Onika and I came up with it,  
he's name is Taylor

Me: I love it, Taylor Siphephelo.

Danny: I love it too.

The others came in and took turns on  
holding Taylor. He was so adorable,  
they kept on fighting over him

Mpho: I want another baby Zandy,  
Kabelo is old enough to have a sibling  
now.

Zandy: Oh God

Jabu: Maybe it's even time for a baby, right Ngamso?

Ngamso: Yes Shezi

Kamo was brought in carrying her beautiful princess.

Me: Danny, hold Taylor.

I was the first to take Kamo's baby and she looked so cute. There was a lot of Thabo in her.

Me: She's a beautiful princess

Sbahle: We have about 25 kids now, no pregnancy must stop

Bonga: Yoh and we're still going to add more

Mpho: I second that Bonga

Sbahle: All of you should stop having sex for atleast a year, imagine if someone else gives birth to quads or triplets! Oh God

Nceba: We still don't have babies, we'll add on

Sbahle: I'm not having babies

KJ: Why?

Sbahle: I have enough already.

Me: What is her name?

Kamo: Langaletu Hope

Bee: Langaletu, such a cute name.

Paula: You guys give such beautiful

names, I don't think I'd be able to even come up with a name for my child

Athi: Nkosi will name your child, he is good. I still find the name Sabelosababakhe the best name I've ever heard. I don't even know how he came up with it.

Bonga: He dug deep

They went on and teased each other while we just had our own conversations and Zandy talking about the baby shower which has turned into a baby welcoming ceremony. The nurses took the kids

to the nursery. We had food to eat and Ngamso briefing me about the upcoming event.

Brian: We have to rush somewhere but we'll check on the kids first then leave.

Thaps: We'll be back later on.

Bee: Make sure you also go see the older kids and buy them burgers

Danny kissed my cheek and they left.

Me: Apparently ladies, all thanks to Bonga, Danny and I were never divorced.

Linda: Thank God, so no wedding?

Me: We'll just have something small as a celebration

Zandy: I'm planning that "something small"

Me: Oh hell no! It will be something big and extravagant. Ntoko and Belinda can head this up

Ntoko: I'm the best for the job.

Phelo: Yes you are

Mpho, Jabu and Thaps came back rushing in.

Kamo: What is it?

Jabu: The baby is missing

I didn't hear that correctly, Kamo and

I stood up

Us: Which baby?

Thaps: Taylor

I couldn't breath, I couldnt even stand properly.

Nceba: Calm down Naye, calm down.

Me: Where is Danny?

Mpho: He's loosing his mind, all over the hospital looking for him

Me: Take me there! Take me to my son!!

Jabu: He is missing Nasiphi

Me: No!!!! No!!!!

I stormed off and went to the nursery



looking for my son

Nurse: Dr Nyathi, you cannot be in here. You need to leave

Me: Listen here Ntando! I hired you and I can fire you! You will not tell me what to do. Who was on duty here?

Nurse: Sis Zombuso

Me: Bring her here! Now!

Nurse: Mr McKenzie called her, she's with him.

She's in danger if she's with Danny but right now I don't care.

Me: Look for my baby!!!! Everyone look for him! Everywhere! Everywhere

I was screaming and pushing things over. They held me and got me out as I was screaming and kicking them off. Gone was all the pain I had from giving birth! I was numb, all I could do was cry. Will I ever be at peace?

Danny came looking angry and lost. He looked me in the eye

Me: Find my baby Triston, I don't care who you have to kill! Find him!

He kissed my forehead and left me standing there. Where is my son? I need my son!

Hope you

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's  
of friends

#LBAR

Insert 69

The pain I felt can never be compared to any other pain in the world. The first child I carried in my womb for nine months, the child that officiated me being a mother, the first fruit of my womb, the first gift God blessed

me with and the first being that made me experience pregnancy has been taken away from me. How do I survive from that? How do I go on? It's been a week since his disappearance and since then I have never seen Danny but I have heard from him. He is searching for our son and I can confirm that he has lost his mind. I don't blame him, he lost his son. He calls me everyday and we cry together but those tears just never bring Taylor back. I was discharged from the hospital two days ago and I've been in his nursery since that day. I have never left this place and I'm not

planning on leaving. I don't know what to say, I don't want to face people because of the looks I get. I don't know what even do. Onika and Danver sometimes sit with me and we have a meaningless conversation. They understand why I'm this way and they've been forcing me to eat. I have the best kids ever. They have been going to school with a lot of bodyguards, their father is not taking any chances at all. He did go on live television to speak out and for people to be aware and come forth with information that they can find. The reward is 10million rands, luckily we

had a photo of him but its difficult since he is just an infant, we cannot go looking at everyone's baby that we see on the road. What hurts me even more is that the camera's were switched off in the nursery and the back exit which only the staff use, it was evident that whoever did this was someone who worked at my hospital but what is confusing is that everyone who was working that night was there and no one had escaped with the baby. Everything was just so stressful! There was a knock on the door and I didn't respond as always. Sneh and MaNyathi walked in.

Me: When did you get here?

MaNyathi: I came as soon as you kids remembered to tell me such news.

Sneh: Ma, we all had alot going on, we really forgot to inform you.

MaN: How are you feeling?

Me: I won't answer that mama

MaN: I understand, years ago I was in your shoes. I know how it is to hope and pray that your kids are safe wherever they are. I went through what you're going through, you can talk to me. I waited years and years, not knowing whether you're dead or

alive, wanting and longing to see my beautiful girls each and every passing day. Sitting under the tree waiting on you, celebrating your birthdays and talking to you all like you were with me. People were sure that I had lost my mind and I didn't care because I knew I wasn't crazy but I needed my kids.

Me: I don't think I'll survive, I don't think I can wait that long. I want my son

MaN: Danny is doing everything he can, he is flipping every ant and stone looking for Taylor



Me: What if that isn't enough? What if the reward money isn't enough?

Sneh: It's driving people crazy, they've been calling telling us crap, the things people do for money. They don't understand that this isn't a game at all

MaN: I know Danny would triple the money if he had to, he would give up all his has for Taylor.

Me: What if God is punishing us? This is a way of us to repay for our sins

Sneh: Don't speak like that Nasiphi

Me: It's true, you ended up never going to see your parents. Do you

know what they are going through right now? Its exactly what I'm going through. We never know what life has for us, do it before its too late.

Sneh: But I'm here for you, I cannot leave you while you're like this

Me: Your parents matter more. You should go, I never took it to heart till it happened to me. Nothing hurts more than not knowing where the fruit of your womb is.

She nodded and they left me alone. I sat there staring at his teddy bear that Danver had bought. All the gifts that were bought by everyone else.

They did go to Kamo's baby welcoming party, they wanted to cancel it but I didn't want them to at my account. I didn't attend because each and every time I look at Langaletu, I think of Taylor. I think about the time I had him wrapped around my arms. I can still smell his scent, I can feel his little hands and his small nose. I can hear his little cry. I cried and prayed. I hope God protects my son wherever he is. I hope he is still alive. There was a knock on the door and I ignored it as always.

Danny: Amahle

He was back! I stood up and ran to the door. He held me as I cried in his arms.

Danny: Sssh, don't cry. Don't cry my love

Me: Did you find him?

Danny: I'm sorry, we haven't found him. I'm sorry

Me: Our baby Triston! Our baby is gone

Danny: Listen, hey, look at me and listen.

He held my face up and wiped away my tears.

Danny: We will find him okay, we will find him. I don't know how, I don't know where. But we will find him Nasiphi.

Me: He just disappeared into thin air

Danny: We're looking all over, please stay strong

Me: I cannot, I cant. I need my baby

Danny: This is so hard, it hurts. I'm in pain just like you're in pain. I love you Nasiphi and believe me when I say I will never stop looking for him even if it takes the rest of our lives, I will do so.

I nodded and he looked at me weirdly

Me: What?

Danny: Your shirt is wet and dirty

Me: My breasts are leaking, but mom brought me breastpads.

Danny: Mmmmh

Me: What now?

Danny: When last did you bath?

Me: Two days ago

Danny: Please don't tell me you're on your periods and you haven't bathed in two days

Me: I'm not on my periods. Naye said it's normal, I might start after a full week. The cycle gets irregular

Danny: But still, you stink. Let's go bath

Me: I don't want to bath

Danny: I've been told you've been in here since you came home, you're getting out

Me: No I'm not

He carried me forcefully and I ended up laughing and telling him to stop. Mom smiled as she saw us walk by. I'm sure she was happy to see me laugh. He took off my clothes and looked at my body

Me: What is it?

Danny: You're sexy

Me: Whatever, let's go shower

Danny: No, we're using the bath tub

He had already ran the water into the tub. We got in and he bathed me.

Danny: I love you MaNyathi

Me: I love you too McKenzie

Danny: Promise me that this won't drift us apart, that we'll talk and make things work between us and our family. Promise you won't push us away

Me: I promise

We finished up and he helped me get dressed. He kissed me and answered



a call. I went downstairs to get something to eat while he took his call.

Bee: Kamo is on her way here

Me: Okay

Bee: She's with Langalathu

Me: It's okay

Nceba made me a sandwich and apple juice. Siya arrived with Kamo and Langaletu. We sat and had a brief conversation while Sbahle was on the phone. Her and Paula have been busy answering calls of those who may have any helpful information but so far it has been

useless. Langaletu cried and it reminded me of Taylor's cry

Me: Can I hold her?

Kamo: Sure

She passed her onto me and she stopped crying after I sang her a song my mom used to sing for me

MaD: I taught you well, you're a natural

Me: You used to make me sing it to my dolls

We laughed as I played with Langaletu's hand. We heard the clicking sound of a camera and it was Danny taking a picture. I could

see that he has been crying.

Me: What is it?

Danny: Brian and Mpho are coming to fetch us.

Me: Why?

Zandy: What is going on Danny?

Danny: We have to go identify a body, there was a car accident. A nurse who happens to be accused of stealing a child at a hospital same day Taylor was taken was involved in a car accident with the baby. Its hard to tell since its just a baby but the identity has been matched with Taylors.

Sbahle: Apparently, three new borns were taken that same day.

I couldn't, I couldn't take that there was a possibility that Taylor was died. It can't be

Me: I'm not going, it's not our child

Danny: You have to be there, I'm not saying it's him but we need to be sure.

Kamo tried taking Langa but I couldn't let go of her.

Danny: Let go of the baby Nasi

Kamo: You'll find us here when we get back.

Bee: Yes we'll be here

#Danny

It's been a challenge, more than a challenge actually. It seems as if things are just being thrown at us we are not even getting time to breathe and enjoy our lives. Ever since we were together we seem to be having more bad days than good days. This has been the worst, not knowing where your child is. Seeing your other children eat and being taken care off while not knowing that your other child has eaten nor is he well taken care off. Its all taking a toll on me but luckily I have the best of friends who haven't been resting, who have left

their families at home to come help me look for my child. Nkosi told me that marriage is not easy, that being a parent and husband is hard and it really is. I know my wife is looking up to me and trusting me to find our Taylor. She didn't want let go of Langaletu, it hurt me to see her like that but she had to let go. We needed to go identify a body. Just an infants life has been taken away because of someone's selfishness. To know that we are not the only family going through this also just hurts. I don't wish this on anyone. I held her as she cried while walking to the car. We got

to the mortuary and went to see the body. I don't even know if its okay to say its a body, he was so small.

Nasi: It's not Taylor

Me: It really isn't

She cried and closed her eyes and prayed. She kissed the baby's forehead and we left.

Me: Weren't you scared to do that?

Nasi: Do what?

Me: Kissing a dead baby

Nasi: You make it sound so like its a sick thing to do

Me: Its just that I don't think I could

ever get myself to do it. You're brave  
She laughed at me and got into the  
car.

Nasi: I'm sad that such a young child  
has just passed on. I cannot begin to  
even imagine what the parents are  
going through right now but I'm  
relieved that it is not Taylor

Me: I wanted to say that a while ago  
but I didn't want to say it, I thought it  
would be wrong of me

Mpho: I'm just happy you didn't just  
blurt it out

Brian: He doesnt have timining, he  
never knows when is the right time to



say something

Me: When is the right time to say something sensitive?

Mpho: I really don't know

We debated about it and Nasi kept on laughing at us. It was good to see her laugh, she hardly ever smiles lately.

Me: We'll drop you off babe and we'll head to HQ

Nasi: Will you be back tonight?

Me: I'm not sure

She seemed sad about it but I had to work, I had to continue looking for our son. Everything is on my hands

Brian: He'll be back, by 8pm he'll be home.

We dropped her off and she didn't seem happy about me leaving. I kissed her and she walked into the house.

Me: How will I be home by 8pm?

Mpho: We'll handle everything Danny, you just need to be with your wife. She needs you

Brian: He's right, you also need to rest. Taylor is our baby too, we won't rest till we find leads.

Me: Thank you gents.

We went to HQ and continued

working. Hours passed and I had to go home. I left them working and bought some fruits for Nasi. I got home and they were watching news. Taylor's picture was there and I did raise the reward. Nasi switched off the TV and Kamo gave me supper.

Me: Thanks Kamogelang

I had supper and we sat for a while then went to bed. She fell asleep in my arms and I also slept. I was woken up by a scream. I went downstairs and Kamo was crying

Me: What's wrong?

Kamo: I cannot find my baby

Me: Oh god no, what do you mean?  
Don't tell me she's been kidnapped.  
How did anyone get in here?

Bee: I don't know, let's not panic

MaN: Where is Nasi?

Me: She... I don't think she was in bed  
when I ran here

MaN: She has the baby, calm down  
Kamo.

I went to Taylors nursery room and  
indeed she had Langaletu and she  
kept on calling her Taylor and she  
was asleep in her arms. I just stood  
there and felt defeated.

Me: Nasiphi

Nasi: Taylor just woke up.

Me: Babe, please give me the baby, it's not Taylor.

She just cried and handed the baby over to me.

Nasi: They took Taylor, where is Taylor. She screaming and crying.

MaN: Calm down my baby, calm down. I handed the baby over to Kamo.

Me: You can all go back to bed. I'll handle her. Come babe, lets go to bed.

She nodded and I carried her. She's so light, she's always so quick to loss

weight when she is stressed. I put her in bed and she rested on my chest.

Me: I know we're going through alot but babe, you cannot take other people's babies

Nasi: I'm sorry, I don't know what went over me.

Me: Its okay, you need to apologize to Kamo.

Nasu: I will. I just heard her cry and I wanted to make her sleep. It seemed as if it was Taylor.

Me: No need to explain my love, just sleep. This will be over soon, close your eyes.

Nasi: Make love to me

Me: Are you sure?

Nasi: It will make me feel better

Me: Okay, I love you Nasi

Me: I love you too Triston.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's  
of friends

#LBAR

## Insert 70

It's been three months, the most dreadful and most hurtful three months of my entire life. It has been challenging and draining. We've had so many dead leads, some where people acted out a concrete story and handed over a baby which was not Taylor just to get the 12miliion. It hurts me everyday to see how people go beyond measures just to get money. The world has just seen this as a way to make money. The police is failing and so is the force. We have nothing, nothing at all and I've started



to just give up. It's true when they say Things happen in life. You find yourself in situations you've never pictured yourself in. If I was told that I'd be going through this in my life, I would've never wanted the life I have now. I would've never wished to even grow. I'll we've been doing is working. I lock myself up in my office and work. Danny has never stopped looking for Taylor, he would sometimes just wake up and leave. Searching peoples houses, searching at hospitals, orphanage homes, mortuaries everywhere. It has truly taken a toll on him. It has taken a toll

on our relationship? We hardly ever spend time together. When I come back home, I spend time with the kids, cook and go to bed. If he comes home first he does the same and he leaves after putting the children in bed. He goes to HQ and comes back in the morning. I sometimes think it's me who he is avoiding and I don't know why. I woke up and he wasn't home as usual. I woke the kids up and prepared them for school, it's their last day at school, it's June holidays and they want to leave and go to Bizana with MaNyathi straight after school. I understand why they

want to leave, Danny and I haven't been great company at all. I drove them to school and went back home. I was not going to work today but I was going to see my man. I miss him and I hate what he is doing. I put on some lingerie and looked at myself in the mirror. I wasn't happy about the way I looked at all, I've lost weight and I'm a size 32 now. Sneh is even bigger than me now, speaking of Sneh. She went to see her parents and only to find out that her father had passed away. Her mother stayed alone and when she saw Sneh, she couldn't stop crying. She came back

with her and she stays with her. She's been the happiest woman on Earth, they give me hope that one day I'll also find Taylor. That he would one day walk in here and call me mom. I just wonder how many years of his life will I miss? Will he accept me as his mother or will he ever even find me or will I ever even find him? Lucas has been back for about a month, he decided to settle in South Africa and he's been working at one of Athi's hospitals. He has been having a good relationship with the guys and Danny has seen that Lucas had never had intentions of being in a romantic

relationship with me. He saw me as a good friend from the get go. I put on a black coat and stilettos and a bit of make up. I texted KJ to find out if Danny is at his office at his company or HQ

KJ: "At HQ"

I got into the car and drove off to HQ. I went inside and everyone seemed to be so busy, even Sbahle, Nceba, Paula and Zandy were there

Me: What's going on?

Lucas: Your man won't be happy about you being here, who drove you?

Me: I can drive myself Lucas

Zandy: Tell that to Danny and he'll tell you what is going on.

She kissed my forehead and peaked under my coat. She laughed and spanked me.

Danny: Hands of my wife Zandile

Zandy: Yes boss

She winked and went away. Danny held my hand and we walked to his office. He sat down and poured me water. I wonder who said I wanted water, I wanted my man.

Me: Danny, you've been avoiding me

Danny: I'm sorry

Me: I don't want an apology, I want an explanation.

Danny: It's been three months Nasiphi, I've failed to bring our son home. I've failed myself as a man, as a leader, as your husband, I've failed my son, I've failed my family and most of all I've failed you. I don't even know how to go home and look at you without having Taylor in my arms. Every time I come home you look at me with pleading eyes, begging that I have our son when I don't. It is all just draining Nasiphi, I've failed you

Me: I don't think you've failed me, you're human not a superhero. I don't

expect you to find our son in just a day, babe these things take time, especially since it is a baby. You've been doing your best and I appreciate that, there's nothing you haven't tried and you've done more than what anyone has, more than what the police have done about it. You've never failed me Danny, you're not a failure.

He looked down and I took off my coat and locked his door.

Danny: What are you doing

Me: I miss my husband, I want my husband home because I need him



and he needs me too.

Danny: You look so sexy right now.

He kissed me and laid me on his desk. He took his time with me and made passionate love to me. I got dressed after we were done and he did too.

Danny: Where are off to now?

Me: Maybe I'll stay here for a while.

Danny: You're not dressed under the coat remember

Me: Yeah

Danny: Grab a tracksuit in that drawer

Me: You even keep clothes here

Danny: Yes

I changed into his tracksuit and laughed

Danny: Why are you laughing?

Me: I came in here in a coat and I'll come out in a tracksuit, that will raise suspicions

Danny: They are adults, they also have sex. So they'll understand that I just had my wives cookie.

Me: You such a perv

Danny: Doesn't it feel weird that we're having sex while our child is missing?

I laughed a bit because it is how I felt

too.

Me: It's guilt, I feel guilty even when I eat because I wonder if he has eaten too.

Danny: It will all be okay. I didn't get to give you your ring

Me: My ring?

Danny: You have no ring on your finger Nasi

Me: Oh, I forgot.

Danny: May I?

Me: Yes you may

He opened the box and it was a new ring. I thought he would give me my

old ring. It was a beautiful diamond ring.

Me: Its beautiful

Danny: Just like you

Me: Thank you

We kissed and there was a knock

Danny: What is it?

Bonga: Stop sucking each others throats and come here, we have a problem

He opened the door and we went to join the others.

Me: What is it?

Lubah: Its Duo Lieriez, King of The

Columbian Drug Lord's, who of course is working with the Russians. He sent a video to us

Danny: Play it

This Duo guy looked scary

Duo: Hello, I see the mighty have fallen. I have your son Taylor McKenzie. Give me the chip Thor, give me the chip and I'll give you your son.

The video ended just like that. Thor?  
Who is Thor?

Me: Who is Thor?

The gents just stood up and they all went to Danny's office without even

saying a word.

Me: What is going on? Who is Thor?

Zandy: Thor is your husband. It's a name he was given in the army, let's just say it's a side of your man that you don't want to meet.

Me: Oh

Bee: And let's just say, keep your guns close. It's about to get heated

I went to Danny's office and the look he gave me was so scary. I looked down and bit my nails

Danny: Talk

Me: I don't think they have the baby

Brian: What do you mean?

Me: They don't have Taylor

Bonga: You cannot be sure of that, we haven't been able to find him and it would make sense that the baby is with them

Me: Think about this, why didn't they come forth the same week the baby was stolen? They want the chip as quickly as possible, they wouldn't wait this long. They are looking for the child as much as we are. They are just using this as a bait to get the chip. Danny, they know your children are your weakness and they are using

this to their advantage.

Danny: Call the other ladies in

I called them and we sat down like we were in trouble. He didn't even look at me in the eye, most probably because he knows I want to know about this Thor name. I looked at the time and it wasn't on my side.

Me: I have to go, I'll be back in an hour

Danny: Where are you going?

Me: Picking up the kids and dropping them off at my mothers. They are going to Bizana with MaDlamini and MaNyathi



Danny: I want to see them before they leave

Me: I cannot bring them to HQ

Danny: You'll see what you can do, I want to see them before they leave

Me: You're being crazy right now, If you want to see them. You'll come with me

He gulped on his whiskey, mind you, he didn't even use a glass he drank from the bottle.

Me: Who will drive?

Danny: I'll drive

Me: No ways, you're angry and you

drank alcohol. You're not even good company right now

Zandy: Ooooooh

Mpho: Shut up Zandile

She looked down and God knows how we wanted to laugh. Why are they suddenly just so angry and we're getting punished for it.

Paula: I'll drive, I wanted to see mom too before she goes.

I gave her the keys and we went out with Danny following behind us. We got into the car and he started making calls. We picked up the kids and they were happy to see Danny.

Other three black cars parked near us at the school parking lot, there was a lot of bodyguards and the mothers were in the car. Danny changed cars and I said my goodbyes to the kids as he left with them taking them to Spur before they leave. We chilled at Mom's for the time being and when he came back they left heading to Bizana.

Danny: Go back to HQ

Paula nodded and drove us back to HQ. Danny was now in his own car. He was truly just being very dramatic. When we got to HQ I pulled him aside.

Danny: I don't want to talk about it

Me: I don't want to talk about it either, for now though. Stop acting this way

He just kissed me and left me standing there.

Danny: Call Duo

Jomo made the call and put it on loudspeaker. They spoke in a language I didn't understand. They were arguing though. Mpho joined in the conversation and it ended after a long 30mins

Danny: He doesn't have Taylor but he's in South Africa, he wants war.

Phila: We cannot afford to go on war

with everything that is going on.

Me: Hand over the chip

Mpho: You are crazy

Me: What happens when the chip is handed over?

Zandy: I go to jail and they'll definitely kill me

Jabu: You will go to jail to

Me: Me? Why?

Jabu: Your sisters sins are your sins, according to them.

Me: Where is the chip?

Zandy: We cannot access it, only Zee can and she is dead. We're just in shit

Me: You always have different stories about this chip and it's just starting to piss me off

Zandy: You think I'm joking? Follow me

I followed her and we went down to Zee's dark room. She punched in somethings on a door we didn't know existed. Zee was really twisted. She opened the door and there were so many papers on the wall and so many computers and everything just screamed technology. There was a chair in the middle of the room.

Me: What is this?

Zandy: This is where she did everything, see this chair, once we're able to figure out her programming, we have to sit here, connect it to our brains and move the information amongst us which she installed in us and into this.

She opened a glass table which had a small gold and black metal piece.

Me: So this is the chip?

Zandy: But it is empty

Mpho: So all along when you said it is in all of you, you were telling us the truth

Zandy: Yes

Siya: But we all cannot access it.  
Even Kamo

Me: This has never been invented  
before

Bee: We can say that Zee invented  
this system and its here. She never  
wanted anyone to know about it.

Lucas: I have never seen such, you'd  
swear she was an alien

I roamed around and opened one  
computer which opened them all. It  
needed 8passwords.

Me: Where on Earth will I get these!

Athi: I feel so dumb right now



Sbahle: You're not alone.

Me: I have a plan

Danny: What plan?

Me: We're finishing this chip shit, I'm tired of leaving in fear and danger because of this piece of metal.

Zandy: We have children, we cannot die

Danny: We won't die, we're not going to hand over the chip but we will destroy it.

Me: Just as I was thinking. Danny, call this Duo guy and tell him we'll give him the chip in a week.

Mpho: We cannot pull this off in a week

Me: We can and we will. Nceba, Call Kamo. KJ, prepare the agents. Zandy, who else has this in them?

Zandy: Siya, Naye, Ntoko, Nceba, Bee and Sneh

Me: Paula, call Naye, she needs to be here now. Mayi, Call Razor

Danny: A word please Nasi

I followed him and we got into his office.

Danny: You do know that what we are doing is dangerous

Me: I don't know what I'm doing  
Triston but I know I'm doing it  
anyways.

Danny: I love you Nasi

Me: I love you Thor

Danny: Don't call me that.

Me: What? It's sexy, Thor

Danny: You don't listen do you Mrs  
Thor?

I nodded and laughed. All in all, I was  
scared of what I initiated. But theres  
no going back. I'm taking care of  
what my sister left behind. I don't  
know where do I get this bravery from  
but I'm finishing this. They've been on

the run for too long. I don't know the people I'm dealing with here but they do. If Danny has agreed to this than he knows we'll be able to make it.

Danny: I hope you're ready for what you just started. It's in your hands

Me: I'm leading this mission?

Danny: Yes boss lady, just the technical side of it.

Me: Argh, but I wanted to lead it all

Danny: Not happening, you're still my wife and you won't use any gun.

Me: Fine.

Danny: We're doing this for our kids

future and Taylor

Me: For our future generation

We joined the others and I made a silent prayer.

Me: We ready?

Them: Yes

Me: To our future generation!

Us: To our future generation

This is for you Taylor, I whispered to myself. I knew they didn't have him but what I wanted was to get this out of the way. For our kids to grow up and take over our legacy without having to worry about our major

enemies and our wars. If we don't finish this now, it will impact them later on when they take over. It has to be done. It's dangerous but it is a risk we are all willing to take.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

## Insert 71

I had stayed up for so long, we only have two days left till Duo and his people come to fetch the chip. No sleep, Danny has been with me and helping me. We all took shifts and sending all the kids down to Bizana was the best idea Athi has ever come up with. We understood when Kamo left with the kids because she had a small baby to take care of. Whenever we needed her help we would skype. I managed to crack all Zee's passwords, they were kind of easy because she used the names of the people she loved and the food she

loved. Today is the day I put what I have been working on into action. I will be able to put them on the seat and connect very dangerous cable's on them which will collect the information that I need. After that, it will programme itself and I will have to install it on the chip.

Danny: Let's go home, we'll be back when everyone is here and prepared.

Me: Okay

Danny: Leave the systems on so won't have to start again.

I left the systems on and he carried me to the car. I didn't even realize



how tired I was. He drove us home and I immediately got really hungry

Me: Babe, I'm hungry

Danny: Let's go shower first while the chef prepares something for us.

Me: I never had time to admire our new house

Danny: When all of this is over, we'll see it all and make sure we have sex in every room

Me: Triston!

Danny: What? He also has sex with his wife

I giggled and greeted the chef then

went upstairs. We showered together and we made love. I wore a towel and went to sit by the balcony. I thought about Taylor, Danver and Onika.

Danny: What are you thinking about?

Me: Our kids

Danny: I miss them so much

Me: Me too, do you think we will ever find him?

Danny: I believe so. We cannot give up

Me: I love you Danny

Danny: I know you do, who wouldnt love me? You couldn't resist my

charms and my very sexy body

Me: Getting cocky huh?

Danny: Lets just say I know myself  
sweetie

Me: Whatever

He held me tightly from the back and  
kissed my neck.

Danny: I love you too

I giggled as he kept on tickling me.

Me: Zee was smart

Danny: Yes she was, I guess it runs in  
the family. I would have never figured  
those systems out.

Me: We only have two days left

Danny: How long will it take?

Me: Two hours each, since theres 7 of them we'll need 14hours. So we'll start at 10:00 so probably around midnight we'll be done.

Danny: Okay, let's go eat. Get dressed first

Me: Yes sir

I wore a Adidas tracksuit and slippers then went downstairs. While I was walking out to just to see the garden and fresh flowers I came across a lizard. I screamed like I just saw a snake. Danny and some bodyguards were there in an instant with guns. I

was frightened by them even more.

Me: Put the guns down

Danny: Are you okay? I heard you scream. He kept on checking me and I rolled my eyes. He can be so overdramatic or maybe I was being dramatic by screaming that much?

Me: I saw a lizard

He looked at me with the "you've got to be kidding" look. The bodyguards went back to their positions and he went back inside as I was following him

Me: I'm scared of lizards

Danny: What were you doing outside

because you were supposed to come to the dinning room?

Me: I wanted to see the garden but instead I came across a lizard

Danny: Serves you right, thats what you get for not listening to instructions.

Me: Hah Danny

Danny: Yini, andithi buphapha Amahle( What, you were being forward Amahle)

Me: Yoh

I dished up for myself because he didn't seem like he was going to do it for me. I don't get why Danny was

angry, like literally I didn't get it at all. He finished eating and went to his office. I dished up again and ate. The food was delicious. I poured myself some wine and just as I was about to drink it, he took the glass away.

Me: What are you doing?

Danny: You're not supposed to be drinking

Me: Says who?

Danny: Says me

Me: You think you're God yaz wena

Danny: Then so be it.

He gave me orange juice and I drank

it even though I wasn't happy about it.

Me: Why are you angry at me?

Danny: I'm not angry

Me: You are

Danny: Do you know how much I panicked when I heard you scream? I thought something bad has happened to you but no, it was just a lizard. Nasi you don't scream that much when you see something as harmless as a lizard

Me: But I'm afraid of a lizard, it scared me that's why I screamed.

Danny: Don't do that again, you scared me. You know how crazy I'd



go if something happened to you

Me: You too protective of me,  
remember how crazy you went when  
I fell?

Danny: That really upset me

Me: It wasn't a bit deal dude

Danny: I'm not your dude

Me: Yoh lets go before you bite my  
head off.

Danny: You can be so annoying

Me: You too

We laughed and I took my bag. He  
held my hand

and kept on kissing it while we

walked to the garage.

Danny: You're beautiful

Me: Thank you babe

Danny: I'm a lucky man

Me: Indeed you are

He opened the door for me and went to his side then drove off. I was very nervous about everything. We got to HQ and Mpho seemed to be worse.

He didn't like the idea of having his wife connected to all those machines

Danny: See? I'm not the only one who's over protective when it comes to my wife.

Mpho: Nasi, isn't there any other way of doing this?

Me: There's no other way

Zandy: I've been telling him since yesterday. I'll be fine Mpho

Nkosi: I also don't like this at all but it has to be done.

Kamo was here today so she could assist me.

Me: The baby?

Kamo: Left her, I made sure to pump enough milk for her.

Me: You ready?

Kamo: Yes, who is going first?

Siya: I'll do it first

Phila: Ahana, what if it doesn't work and busts your brain?

Siya: Oh God, where do these men come from? You're all just overreacting now come on

KJ: I really don't want to get married if this is how I'll be

Sbahle: it's called being romantic and loving your partner unconditionally and being protective of her

KJ: Sbahle, you're so forward. You're always commenting on everything I say when it doesn't even concern you

Me: Oh gosh, not this again. Guys,

we've had this fight more than once

Sbahle: He always starts

KJ: What did I do? You just love  
having my attention sweetie

Bonga: When last did you guys have  
sex? Please do it again soon and  
remove this sexual tension between  
you too

Thaps: I second that Bonga

Mpho: You're encouraging this  
nonsense going on between them?

Me: Can we get back to what we're  
here for?

Nkosi: Yes please, the sooner we

finish the better. While she is on this we have to discuss a few things.

Siya sat on the chair while Brian and L'yanda connected the cables to her and injected her.

Me: I'm switching them on

L'yanda: We done

I switched them on and started working on her.

Phila: Will she even remember after this?

Me: Yes Phila, we not flushing her memory but we're retrieving information. The two hours start now.

Kamo was busy while we started

discussing our plan forward.

Me: We are destroying the chip

Nceba: What are we going give Duo?

Danny: An empty chip, and that alone declares war. He is definitely not coming alone, we're killing him and Tropez, he will definitely come with him and with a motive.

Nkosi: In that way ladies, you're not coming with us when we're handing over the chip. We cannot put you in that kind of danger.

Linda: But that's not fair

Lubah: You won't question our decisions

Me: Danny

Danny: There's no use in giving me those eyes. You're not going

Zandy: They will want to see me, that's for sure.

Mpho: We were getting to that, you ladies just need to listen and stop interrupting.

Brian: Thank you, now listen. We will leave with Zandy, but she'll be back in a record time of an hour. Belinda and Nasi will fetch her, Belinda will drive and while Nasi and Zandy shoot because they'll definitely attack you. They want us all dead, what Zandy



will do is meet up with Tropez and hand it over, a Mic and camera will be connected to all of us so you ladies left in HQ will see it all.

Bonga: There is a high possibility that Duo will want to sit down and have lunch with us, you know how he does things. We will be searched and they will be disconnected

Me: What's the use of putting them on from the get go?

Danny: When they take them out, they'll put them where we'll be. There's a bug installed in all of them, which Kamo will program and they

will get the information we need.

Ntoko: What information?

Jabu: The information they have against us

Linda: And why don't we know about that?

L'yanda: You're not going to know about everything

Naye: What do they have against you?  
They looked at each other and didn't say anything.

Zandy: So much for being honest and trusting each other

Bonga: This you cannot know about.

Naye: Wow

Danny: We'll get to that when all of this is over okay?

Mayi: After we get the information we need, the bug will be programmed back into this.

He showed us a small black container. They briefed us in everything that would go down tomorrow.

KJ: We are leaving at 12 tomorrow, everyone should be ready.

Me: The agents?

Phila: Only 30agents will be working with us. The weapons?

Lucas: They are ready.

Two hours had already passed and we disconnected Siya.

Phila: She's not waking up

Me: Relax

I injected her and let her rest.

Me: Next

Zandy: I'll go

Mpho: I love you

Zandy: I love you too

I laughed at how Mpho was so worried about Zandy. She did her hours and the Ntoko was next.

L'yanda and I went to get some pizza

and lots of food and alcohol. Me: I don't get why you guys are drinking while we're so busy

L'yanda: We are thirsty

I laughed at him and we went back to HQ. We stayed for hours and hours as they took their turns and retrieved the information.

Naye: Am I the only one feeling weird now?

Ntoko: You're not alone

Phila: As long as my wife still remembers me.

Kamo: This isn't working

Me: What do you mean? You cannot say that. We have worked hard and only have a few hours left

Kamo: Come see this

All of the information was retrieved but couldn't get installed in the chip. There needed to be access codes and it was very complicated. I tried but failed. We all did try but couldn't do it. It came to my mind of who could help us.

Me: No, it can't be. Oh wow

Danny: What, what is it?

Me: Onika

Jabu: What is wrong with Onika?

Me: Danny! Onika! Onika is what we need

Danny: Elaborate

Me: Onika is super intelligent, when she's supposed to be doing her homework. She works on these codes that even I don't know. She has Ziyanda's intelligence and more, she always teaches her dolls, I've been part of her classes and you haven't but she can help us

Danny: That's not happening, I'm not involving my child in this.

Me: She won't be in any danger, she just needs to do this

Danny: This is too much for a 6year old, even the both of us cannot do this, what makes you think Onika can?

Me: Because she has a gift Danny, she has a gift that she got from her mother. This is what she can do. Just give it a chance

Danny: I don't know Nasiphi, I need time to think about it

Me: There's no time Triston. I know you're worried and protective of her but this, this needs to be done.

Danny: We cannot drive to Bizana now

Me: Is that a yes?



Danny: Yeah I trust you

Me: Okay, you drive

Kamo: It's very late, it will take too long.

Nkosi: Did you guys forget that Danny has a private jet?

Danny: Right, KJ, inform the pilot. We're leaving.

Me: Thank you

Danny: I love you and I trust that you know what you're doing

Me: I wouldnt do anything that could harm Onika

Danny: I know, I'm just worried.

Me: I am too but this is for the best.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's  
of friends

Sorry if it's short

#LBAR

Insert 72

Convincing Danny to let Onika help us

with the codes was not easy but in a way, it was easier than I thought it would be. I ended up not going as he went to fetch Onika, he left with Brain, Thaps and Lubah. We were still waiting for them to come back. That man loves his kids and has come very protective of them especially since Taylor was kidnapped. I think of my son each and everyday, what has kept me away from drowning myself in sorrow was this mission. It has helped me be able to focus on other things and not sink into depression. Siya once told me about how she landed in a psychiatric hospital

because of depression and they thought she was crazy. She says she literally saw and spoke to Phila yet Phila was in a coma. It all seems surreal, listening to her story makes me just cry, she inspires me everyday and she really is a very strong woman. All these ladies sitting here with me are the strongest woman I know, who have been through the worst but still stand tall and take charge of their lives. Nangamso was busy sharpening knives and looked so deeply into it. She was in her deep thoughts mode.

Paula: You look like you'll kill

someone Ngamso

Me: You can say that again, what are you even doing with knives?

Ngamso: You never know when you need kill someone, quick and easy. There's a story behind knives, never underestimate them.

Bee: Yes Mrs Knife

Ngamso: I'm pregnant, in going to have a baby.

We screamed and she focused on her knife. Really? How weird can she ever be?

Jabu: What? What did you just say?

Ngamso: What I'm trying to say is that you don't shoot blanks, you scored.

She was now in tears but still sharpening her knife. Jabu took it and carried her. It was a very emotional moment, Jabu was the happiest man on earth. After having to lose a wife and his kids all at once in a car accident must have not been easy for him. To now be blessed with a weird but loving wife who is carrying a child for him is just a blessing that he will forever be grateful for.

Jabu: Thank you, I love you.

Siya: Halala halala halala Shezi! Dlaba!  
Sgananda chube! Shukulase!

We ululated and had a little moment  
of celebrating.

Ngamso: I'm giving this knife so you  
could hide it and use it in this crazy  
mission you guys are going to. I want  
you back home and alive, I cannot  
raise this baby alone.

So all along this was the story behind  
this knife. We laughed and Jabu took  
the knife. After an hour Danny walked  
in carrying Onika. Onika ran to me  
and we hugged.

Me: Hey baby girl, Danny, what took

you so long?

Danny: She was still sleeping so I didn't want to wake her up.

Me: Really Danny?

Couldn't he just carry her and she'll sleep on the plane? Danny is just something else. I explained to Onika about what she would help me with

Mpho: Do you think she'll be able to?

Me: I don't know, I hope she will.

Onika looked at the codes for sometime and she smiled.

Me: Can you do it?

Onika: I think so



We were depending on a 6year old, how life can be unpredictable. She started typing and I was so lost. Kamo was helping her and there were too many things going on, on the screen.

Me: Why didn't I study IT?

Linda: Like literally, I feel dumb.

There was a call and Sbahle answered. She then ended the call and came to us

Phila: What is it?

Sbahle: It's about Taylor, they think they found him

Me: What? Where is he?

Sbahle: Limpopo, but theres just something making feel uneasy about this. She sounded so hesitant like she was forced to say what she was saying

Me: I don't care, we're going to find my son

Danny: We don't have the time, in plus minus 4hours the Russians and Columbians will attack if we don't show up.

Me: What do you mean by not having time!!! This is our son, he is more important than all of this!

Danny: Babe, think. This is not true,

the timing, whoever called doesn't have our baby

I started crying as to how Danny didn't believe we'll find our child anymore. I took my gun and car keys.

Danny: You're not going anywhere

Me: Triston McKenzie! I am leaving

Danny: No you're not, it's not safe okay.

Me: I want my baby

Bonga: We'll excuse you guys

KJ: Yoh Bonga, you always want us to miss the drama. If you don't wanna watch, you can excuse them

Athi: Thank you very much KJ, Don't say "We" say "I" because you wanna excuse them not us.

Naye: They will fight and seal it with a kiss

KJ: It will be so romantic

Nkosi: Ayabonga, you're also at this?

Naye: It's not my fault you guys are hopeless romantics.

Bonga: Let's go

Naye: No you, and take Nkosi with you.

Now Danny and I were watching them as they argued about this. I found

myself laughing at them and sat down

Nkosi: Atleast we made you laugh

Danny: Amahle, look at me.

He sat infront of me and held my hands.

Danny: I want to us to save our child and for him to come back home. I really do but think about this, theres no child in Limpopo. Whoever it is just be working with our enemies who we are about to go on war with and they will use anything and everything to distract us. They know our kids are our downfall and Taylors

disappearance has been in their advantage. They definitely knew this would distract us, you know I wouldn't just give up on Taylor that easily. But this, this is a plot of the enemy.

I nodded and what he said made so much sense but my mind was not even here anymore. I just longed for my child. He kissed my forehead and we went to check on Onika and Kamo. They were still working

Me: We only have 2 hours left. Thaps, get the agents ready.

Thaps: On it boss

Danny: Let's prepare

We went through the action plan all over again and did confirmations of everything. Everything seemed to be in order and as much as I was scared about this, I really trusted them.

Kamo: We done

Me: What?

Kamo: She did it!, Onika did it.

I was so happy and I excitedly hugged and kissed Onika and she was so not into it.

Onika: Mom, put me down.

Me: But I'm still giving love to my

baby

Onika: I'm not a baby anymore

I tickled her and kissed her again. She ended up laughing and enjoying.

Onika: Can I always do this and stop school?

Danny: Now you're pushing it.

Onika: But Dad!

Danny: You're going home now.  
Jomo, take her back to Bizana.

Onika: Bye everyone! Bye mom

She's such a sassy little girl. I was so proud of her, I couldn't even put it in words.



Kamo: This is it

She handed over a small briefcase and the chip was in there.

L'yanda: This is the fake one

Me: Pass me the oil and paraffin

Zandy: You're really getting rid of it?

Me: It has to be done. Too many lives have been lost because of it. It staying more only causes alot more bloodshed. We will be free after this.

We went outside and destroyed it.

Phila: Am I the only one feeling relieved right now?

Nkosi: Like alot has been taken away

off of our shoulders

Zandy was literally crying.

Zandy: Indeed you have rested in piece Ziyanda.

Ngamso: Indeed.

Jabu: Don't get too comfortable, we have alot to do now.

The guys went to freshen up and changed into black formal suits. We installed the cameras, mics and bugs.

Me: You look decent.

Zandy came out looking so sexy in a black sparkly dress with an open thigh slit.

Mpho: Not happening.

Zandy: We went through this Mpho, not again

Mpho: You never said you'll look so sexy.

Zandy: It is the only way I'll be able to distract him so I can get away. Don't do this

Mpho: MaNcwane

Zandy: No Lebone, I know Duo, I worked for him a long time. I know his weaknesses and strengths and right now I'm using it to my advantage. Nothing will happen to me, I'm a big girl.

Mpho: I'm not happy about this

Zandy: No one is.

One of our camera's started working, we had an agent install camera's in Duo's hotel. He is working undercover as Duo's bodyguard.

Bee: Zandile, look at this

Zandy: Fuck! Damn it. I'll need back up

KJ: What do you mean?

Zandy: There's Lapita and Tropez, I cannot take them all on.

She looked at me and I nodded. The stare I got from Danny. I ignored him

and Zandy threw me a dress similar to hers but mine was grey. Sbahle also took a red dress

Sbahle: We're doing this

Me: I used to be a stripper, luring men into taking out money was my job.

This should be easy. Danny pulled me to his office and closed the door.

Danny: What are you doing?

I knew I wouldn't win this argument but I needed the upper hand. I took off my clothes and he looked at me like he wouldn't budge. I kissed him and gave him head.

Me: Let me do this

I said as I started riding on him. He was getting so aggressive but in a good pleasureable way. He was angry at me and I let him have his way with me. After we were done, we freshened up and got dressed.

Danny: Be Safe

Me: You too

I kissed his cheek and we joined the others

Bonga: Ready?

Me: Yes

Zandy: Let's go.

I could see that KJ wanted to say

something to Sbahle but he held himself.

Me: I'll keep an eye on her

KJ: Please do

Linda: I'll be driving you.

I got a call from Duo and I put it on loudspeaker

Me: Duo

Duo: Mrs Thor, location of drop off has changed. We shall meet at the Dickens Warehouse.

Me: Fine

Duo: No funny business and Thor, your location hasn't changed.

We switched off the call and Danny wasn't Danny, he was slowly showing that he is Thor.

Linda: Let's go

We took our bags and left. Belinda drove off to the warehouse. I was getting nervous as we got closer and we said a little prayer.

Sbahle: Its now or never ladies

Zandy: Let's do this.

We got out of the car and walked to where we were led by the bodyguards. We had to start by seducing them so they couldn't take away our guns. It was really easy, sick pervs were



drooling in 2mins.

Sbahle: Some men, mxm.

We got to a nice set up and they were sitting drinking whiskey. I recognized each of them from the pictures I've seen.

Duo: Zandile Zungu or shall I say Lebone, we meet again.

Zandy: Duo Lieriez, I knew this day would come. You still look the same

Duo: And you've grown to be much sexier than the last time I saw you. Shows how you're married to a powerful man. But you know where home is, I Duo am your home.

Zandy:(giggles) I see you still have a soft spot for me.

Zandy wasted no time and went to sit on Duo's lap. The smile on Duo's face was priceless. He was indeed taken away by Zandile.

Tropez: How rude of you Duo, you will not introduce us to the lovely Mrs Thor?

Me: We need no introductions gentlemen. The Great Tropez

Duo: You look so much like that trouble maker Ziyanda, I hope you're not any trouble.

Me: We might look alike but we're

different sir

Tropez: Atleast you have respect

Lapita: Ziyanda would've been shooting everyone by now. Young Mrs, I didn't get your name.

Sbahle made his way to him and I made my way to Tropez. It was really uncomfortable to be touched by another man. We had to go along with everything, they were strong well known men but every strong man has their weakness. Especially men hoes like them.

Duo: Let's take this to a proper place shall we?

Zandy: Uhm sure.

We were definitely not sure of the next move but they will be able to track our whereabouts. It seemed as we were headed to the conference room they'd be meeting the guys. We went in and they were seated there. Danny looked damn sexy as he was so angry.

Tropez: Fancy seeing you here Thor

Danny: Likewise Tropez

His veins were visible but I winked at him, hopefully he'll understand that I'm tell him to cool off. We sat down and they insisted we sit on them.

Mpho was about to lose his grip as he saw Duo touch Zandy's thighs. They literally hated every minute of this but we had to do it.

Duo: Let's get straight to business.

One of the bodyguards played music and Tropez looked at us.

Me: What?

Duo: Show us your magic

Sbahle: You've got to be kidding me.

They had the upper hand at this, for now.

Danny: Not happening.

I stood up and went to the pole in the

middle of everyone. I've done this millions of times. Sbahle and Zandy followed my lead, their eyes were on us and Lapita, Tropez and Duo were having the time of their lives.

Duo: The chip

Mpho: They leave first

Duo: No no no, I know you're smart and tricky, this chip might be empty.

Danny: Have I ever crossed you Duo?

Duo: Thor, you have not. But Ms Zungu here and your late wife have. I will not forget that. Search them guards

Just as planned, the guys were

searched and they found cameras and microphones. They were tossed on the side and the bugs would be activated by Kamo in HQ. I handed over the small briefcase and some geek came forward and opened it Lucas made his way to me as they were still focused on the chip.

Lucas: They will discover that the chip is fake and empty, we shoot, you run.

Me: Got it.

Geek: Sir, this chip is not real and empty.

Mpho fired the first gunshot and it

landed on Duo's arm. We took out our guns and fired as we ran.

Sbahle: This is awesome!

Zandy: We have to leave

We ran leaving our men behind and our agents came in. We got to the back exit and Belinda was already there. As we got into the car, I got shot on my thigh and Sbahle on her arm.

Me: Shit! Drive Belinda

Linda: No need to say it twice.

She drove off and we got to HQ. Naye was ready with a first aid kit and she helped us while I was busy on the



computer system. I had no time to be in pain.

Ntoko: I'm going in, I'll leave with more agents, they need back up.

Me: L'yanda will kill us but Go

Paula: I'm coming with

Sneh: No!!

Paula: I have to, Phelo lets go.

Ngamso can't leave, she's carrying a precious cargo. Belinda will drive, and the others will be left here with you.

Ntoko: Can you even use a gun?

Paula: I haven't been around Brian for this long, running a drug empire and

not know how to use a gun.

Phelo: Yes girl!

We laughed and they left after stashing the weapons. It was really scary for me but we had to. We were able to retrieve the information that the Russians and Columbians had against the gents.

Kamo: Do you think we should open it?

Naye: No

Siya: I'm so curious

Me: Me too

Kamo: Okay lets not open it.

We sat for a while and all systems

connected to where they were,  
wereshut down.

Me: Shit!

Kamo: This is trouble.

Bee: I guess we have to wait.

We sat in silence for about 2hours  
and I guessed we all had one thing in  
mind.

Us: Let's open it

We laughed as we said it the same  
time. We were just so curious but it  
was once said that curiosity once  
killed a cat. Kamo opened it and we  
were all shocked

Kamo: Still wanna go ahead?

Us: Yes

Bee: Oh God

Me: Stop, stop please.

Naye: Wow

Me: I guess we got what we wanted

Nceba: I guess we did.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's  
of friends

#LBAR

## Insert 73

The wait was draining, not knowing what was going on was defeating. We stayed for hours and only the ladies came back. They gave us a feed back we didn't want to hear. It was tough and they sent them back.

Ntoko: I've never used so many bullets in my life

Paula: Tell me about it, I cannot believe I have so much blood in my hands. Whats wrong with you? Why

are you all so sour?

Kamo didn't speak but just showed them what we saw. Phelo went to the bathroom and vomited

Paula: Wow, just wow.

Bee: This is what they don't want us to see

Naye: Plus this is very recent, hence there's Lucas too.

Sbahle: Very recent.

Me: Why were our systems shut down?

Paula: Mpho shut them down

Me: For what reason?

Phelo: Things were getting intense, there was no one to monitor them.

Bee: Can we all just go to my house and rest? We cannot be here all night again

It was around 7pm and we went to Bee's house.

Ngamso: I'll order food.

Kamo: I'm leaving, my job us done here. I need to go to my baby.

Linda: The plane is ready?

Kamo: Yes

She said her goodbyes and left. I went to take a shower and when I

went downstairs the food was already there.

Me: Looks delicious, I didn't realize I was so hungry.

Bee: Breastpads?

Me: Yeah, sometimes the milk leaks that's why I put them on. You know, I'm starting to slowly give up on finding Taylor

Nceba: You shouldn't.

Siya: You shouldn't give up, you're the one who always tells us to never give up and God has a way of doing mysterious things.

Me: I guess so, I have to hold on. We



stayed up for a few hours and we heard cars coming in. The anger rose again, I started about the despicable trash they did. I felt like vomiting by just looking at them as they came in. They looked like they've been beaten up badly but they were laughing and happy so it meant everything went well.

Lucas: Where is Kamo?

Me: She flew back to the Eastern Cape

Mpho: Why do you all look so sour?  
Were you that worried about us?

Zandy: Not at all, let's go girls. They

make me want to vomit

Me: I'm with you there

Ngamso: Nxx

Belinda took our wine and we went upstairs. We left them with blank stares. They were really confused but we really didn't care that much. We were really hurt. After about an hour Nkosi came in followed by his crew. They were already freshened up and changed. Danny had a little scar on his forehead and he reminded me of Razor. They sat down across us

Danny: Ladies, we see that it is us who are in trouble but we have no

idea why. It would be best if we talk about it

Bee: Talk about what?

Nkosi: Whatever it is that is troubling you.

Ngamso: How did it go?

Thaps: It was hard but it was a success. It went better than we even imagined

KJ: Duo, Lapita and Tropez are dead, before all of that happened they signed over their regions to us. Isn't that amazing?

Me: Wow

It really was a huge success. It meant they had control over the section of the force that Duo, Lapita and Tropez owned in Russia and Colombia. But it did also mean there would be a lot of agents that need to be recruited and it means a lot of war and bloodshed because some of the Russian and Colombian Drug Lords and force leaders will not appreciate that. It was indeed just such a huge success. We know our children's lives are secured financially even our grandchildren were covered. They discussed business while we sat and listened to them. You could see how

passionate they were about this.

Ntoko: You're all just fucken assholes.

They were shocked and L'yanda seemed to be angry. I was also shocked because I didn't know she would burst out like that. I thought Zandy or Ngamso would. Literally you never know what to expect from Ntokozo.

L'yanda: What are you talking about?

Bee: Follow me.

We stood up and followed her to the cinema room.

Naye: Sit down

They sat down while we stood and she played the video. It was literally sickening. Danny bent his head over and Nkosi was busy rubbing his nuckles. Phila took off his shirt. They all reacted in very weird ways

Me: It's getting hot in here isn't it?

Sbahle: You're all just disgusting

Siya: How could you do this?

Phila: Baby, I can explain

Naye: There's nothing to explain!

Phila: I am talking to my wife

Me: Oh she's your wife now? You weren't thinking of that when you had

your dick deep inside that slut! You all did this together and you're going down together. You think you can hurt us like that and then say you can explain? Don't upset me more please, you do not want to see what I am capable off.

Nceba: You definitely do not want to see what we're capable of together, you cheated on the wrong woman.

Naye: You know what hurts the most? That all of you participated in the group sex, you make group porn video's now? You're professionals, your women will never find out because we're fools huh? You were

all so pussy wipped that no one stopped one another, none of you saw anything wrong in what you did?

Zandy: And you better not tell us that it was a long time ago, Lucas just came into our lives, he was there too so this, this is recent.

Lucas: Did Kamo see this?

Linda: We all did!!

Athi: Shit

Paula: I'm so disappointed, in all of you. Let's go before we upset ourselves more, its not good to be angered by fools.

Bee: You all know the way out, we



don't want to see your faces.

Me: I'm going to bed.

Bee: Me too.

We all went to the rooms we'd be using. Danny was following me like a lost puppy. I honestly didn't even know how to look at him or what to even say to him. I was so hurt but I wasn't going to cry. He slept with another woman, well not just one because on that video it was very evident that whatever was going on, they had some sort of exchanging. It was just group sex and they were having the time of their lives. I went

back downstairs to have coffee. It seemed as if everyone had went to their rooms and there was a lot of arguing going on. I went to the room and changed into my pyjamas. All this while he was sitting on the edge of the bed with his hands running in his hair. His hair was just a mess right now. He saw my bandaged thigh and he got angry

Danny: What happened?

Me: I got shot.

Danny: Who did this to you?

Me: He is dead.

He nodded and rubbed his hands

together.

Danny: Nasiphi

I ignored him and got into bed then switched off my side lamp.

Me: Switch the lights off

He did so and got in bed. He held me and I pushed him away.

Danny: Please, can we talk? Please Nasiphi. I know you're angry right now but please let's talk

Me: Talk about what? That you cheated on me, that you all cheated on us and felt no remorse. You continued and behaved like nothing ever happened. You were not guilty,

you loved every minute of it. It shows how it wasn't the first time if this is how you all covered it up and reacted normally.

Danny: That's not true, Nasiphi it was the first and the last time...

Me: How am I supposed to believe that? You broke all the trust I had for you.

Danny: Nasiphi I'm sorry

Me: Just shut up Triston, I want to sleep. Switch your damn side lamp off.

He sighed and switched off the side lamp. Just as I was starting to fall

asleep I was woken up by three  
gunshots

Danny: Shit!!

We went out and everyone was running to the room Ngamso and Jabu were using since it is where the gunshots came from. It didn't help because Ntoko, Siya and Zandy also had their own guns shooting up a storm. At least no one got hurt. They managed to take away the guns from them. Ngamso was livid! They say you should never mess with a scorned woman.

Siya: Get out! All of you, get out!!

I used to just hear stories about how crazy Siya becomes when she is really angry. Today I witnessed it with my own two eyes. She was throwing everything she could get ahold of to the guys. KJ and Lucas were the first to go running it. They had no sin in this since they were the single guys but still they were all at fault.

Me: Calm down Siya

Phila: I love you Siya

Siya: Don't tell me that trash. Tell it to your whores

Nkosi: You might not believe us but we love you. It might be a very bad

time to say something like this but It was a mistake

Naye&Sneh: A mistake!!

Me: Don't upset us more please

Bonga: What he is trying to say is that it wasn't something planned, it wasn't something we've done before. It really was a mistake, a weak moment for us.

Athi: We're nothing without you, we're really sorry

Sneh: Bullshit

L'yanda: We cannot even tackle this individually or have someone to point to and blame, it was us and we were

all in. As much as we were high and drunk but we knew what we were doing so I will not blame it on the alcohol.

Danny: We were stressed, we had too much to drink and too much at hand. We went about dealing with things the wrong way. It was stupid of us and really immature and such a disgrace. We cannot apologize enough about our actions

Lubah: Nor can we even expect you to forgive us right away but we hope you will forgive us and really know that we're sorry



Zandy: When was this? When did it happen?

They looked down as they were contemplating whether to tell us or not.

Danny: I'm sorry

Sneh: Just talk!

Thaps: A week after Taylor disappeared.

Me: Please leave

Danny: Nasiphi

Tears just fell from my eyes, I couldn't hold them back. I was so hurt, it hurt deep deep inside. You know when

you feel you've been hurt right to the core? That's what I felt.

Paula: You heard her, leave, you don't want her to repeat herself.

Mayi: We will be back

Phelo: We don't want to see you again

Brian: We won't give up on you

Mpho: You're speaking out of anger and hurt, we will be here first thing in the morning

Zandy: Tell this Lebone man to shut the fuck up!!!!

She threw a vase at him but it hit the

wall. They all went out and left us standing there.

Naye: Wipe your tears off sweetie, he is not worth it.

Sbahle: I am single but this really hurts.

Siya: It hurts so much like its the first time it happens to me but it isn't.

We all kept quiet and we went to sit at the lounge

Linda: This needs more wine

Sbahle: Yes please!!!

Ngamso: You guys are so unfair, you drink so much when I'm pregnant

Me: Trust me, I felt the same way when I was pregnant.

Linda: It feels like some sort of punishment, but we all just heavy drinkers, so you can sulk all you want. We'll still drink

Sbahle: Wine solves all of our heartaches!

Ntoko: What heartache wena? You're single

Sbahle: I feel as if KJ cheated on me, ever since we had this, this whatever it is, I've never slept with anyone else. I know we said no strings attached, we won't have any feelings involved

but look at me now? I caught feelings when I wasn't supposed to. Plus KJ was just full on about not having feelings. Its like he has no feelings at all, that's what annoys me about him. This is just such a mess

Naye: As much as that is true but he does have some sort of feelings for you

Me: And he will come and explain himself to you

Sbahle: He wont, and by that he won't be at fault because we both knew what we were doing. We weren't supposed to catch feelings and I did,

I am just his shag buddy nothing more, he owes me no explanation

Paula: This is so hectic! Why did Brian have to be my first boyfriend?!

Phelo: Tell me about it...

We laughed at them and sipped on some wine. We got a video call from Kamo

Kamo: Hey ladies!!

We responded with such a lousy hey and she laughed at us.

Kamo: I hope you didn't kill anyone

Ngamso: Not yet

Sneh: She almost did, we were woken

up by gunshots, Siya and Zandy and Ntoko added fuel to the fire.

Kamo: I'm so thankful I wasn't there, you know how crazy you guys are. Other than that, are you okay?

Me: We are not, especially Sbahle

Kamo: She caught feelings hey?

Sbahle: Tell me something I don't know

We laughed at her and continued talking. I didn't even know how I felt or how I have reacted was appropriate for this situation. But what is the way to react to this anyways? I am really still thinking it

will all just turn out to be a dream or some sort of joke but it isn't. It all just seems surreal. It all just seems like a dream. I looked at the ladies next to me and saw how strong each and every one of us was. We were laughing and happy yet deep inside we were hurting, I know we're still going to wake up and cry together and help each other through every situation that comes our way. I got on my phone and looked at the few pictures I had of Taylor and pictures of Onika and Danver. They are everything I need in life and what keeps me going. I love my kids with



everything inside of me and I know that one day, I will find my son. God will make a way. We all went to sleep in one room combining our beds. I got a text from Danny, we all ganged up on my phone and read the text "I hope you're still awake, I just wanted to tell you how sorry I am. I love you" Zandy took the phone and sent a an emoji of the brown middle finger! We laughed and swtiched my phone off.

Zandy: Goodnight sisters

Us: Goodnight sister

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's  
of friends

#LBAR

Insert 74

We woke up the next day and took a  
long long bath. I got dressed in a  
bikini and the girls eyed me

Me: What? We are all going for an  
morning swim

Ngamso: Such a good idea, infact we're spending all day by the pool area.

Bee: Let me go shower!

They showered while I ordered breakfast for everyone and went downstairs

Zandy: Did you order something?

Me: Yes I ordered breakfast

Zandy: Awesome

She attended to the door and they set it up outside at the pool area. She paid, that's really something she hardly does. The ladies were done and we all headed outside. We had

breakfast in comfortable silence. All you could hear was just peace, we were all just at a peaceful place and we were all just in our own thoughts.

Zandy: All I am thinking of is revenge, revenge, revenge.

Naye: You read my thoughts

Me: What do you have in mind?

Zandy: I'm calling strippers

Sbahle: Oh hell yeah!!!!!!

We all laughed. In all honesty I was up for this revenge idea. As much as we were putting our lives at risk, we went ahead with the idea.

Phelo: We will be in so much trouble

Zandy: Its just 50/50, they have no right to be angry at us.

The strippers arrived and this turned into a party. We danced and had fun that we haven't had in a while. We were twerking and dancing with these strippers. Phelo and Siya eating suchi from their bodies. One of the carried me and making me grind on him and we were laughing while Zandy also did it with another guy and Belinda throwing money at us. We were all so shocked when we heard gunshots.

Me: Damn it

There they were standing in line one next to the other with their guns pointed at the strippers. Mind you, he was still carrying me. I got down and I laughed a little. I didn't think anyone heard me but they did and the ladies laughed with me. I guess it was the alcohol in our heads.

Naye: Why are these ugly ducklings looking so grumpy? Want my whiskey King Mkhize!

She giggled and fell down. The strippers so were so frightened, they wanted to shoot them but we stood in front of the strippers

Paula: You kill them, you kill us.

Brian: Move!

Lucas: Gents put the guns down, these are your wives. I'm sure theres another way of solving this.

Siya: Lucas Miller! Don't you ever ever ever get married again! Marriage is a trap

The strippers took thier things and ran out. Lubah fired some gunshots as they were running away

Bee: Yey Wena!!! You breaking my glasses!

Bonga: All of you! Get dressed

Danny: What nonsense is this? Are you crazy, have you lost your mind?

Naye: Oh so it's nonsense when we do it?

Me: You lucky, you arrived just in time. We were about to have group sex!

Zandy: With strippers!!!!

We laughed and I felt someone holding me roughly and the ladies screaming. It was Danny holding against the wall.

Me: What? It hurts when it happens to you huh? So I shouldn't have my own fun and fuck handsome men like you fuck sluts? Was she good?



Danny: Take her away from me before I do something I'll regret.

Me: Do it! Do it you fool!

He put me down and one thing led to another. He was on the floor with blood coming out. I hit him on his head with a glass vase.

Me:(giggles) Did I just kill him?

Athi: You have completely lost your mind. I heard him say ouch and touch the back of his head. Oh, he isn't dead. I jumped into the pool and the ladies joined me. We were so drunk we couldnt even swim properly

Ntoko: I don't want to die from

drowning, let's get out.

The way we were all just laughing you'd swear we were so high. The anger I saw on the mens faces was something I'd be scared of if I was sober. Athi was busy nursing Danny while we passed them and went to the room. We all got into our combined beds and slept.

**#NEXTMORNING**

I felt someone so heavy on me, I couldnt even breathe. I opened my eyes and it was Sneh.

Me: Move! You're so heavy

Sneh: But you're bigger than me, I

can't be that heavy on you.

Me: Well you are, now move

Sneh: Whatever little sister, I'll be going to see my mom again soon, will you come with?

Me: Tell me the date and time and I will be there.

Sneh: Cool then.

She moved over and continued sleeping. I was hungry so I went downstairs. I was met by a group of red eyes and a bandaged Danny.

Me: What happened to you? Why are you all so grumpy?

Danny: So you don't remember how you tried to kill me yesterday Amahle?

I stood there thinking about what the hell was he on about? Oh shit! I hit him with a vase at the back of his head.

Me: Oh well, you should've died.

He couldn't believe what I was saying but I was really just fed up with Danny. I was not overreacting or being dumb. I've been through a lot of pain because of him and I have had enough. Zandy came downstairs followed by Nceba and Paula.

Paula: Argh! What a day we had

yesterday!

Nceba: I found myself having a wet dream about that handsome guy!

Zandy: I should've let him fuck me, but then I remembered I'm a married woman who is married to a man whore!

We laughed and they were so irritated

Naye: Morning bitches!!!!!!

Us: Hey!!!!!!!!!!!!

Naye: When are we hitting the club? I just wanna dance! Dance and dance! She said that while twerking on the table

Nkosi: Nokukhanya Naye Ayabonga  
Mkhize!!!!

Naye: Its Naye Ayabonga Khoza,  
don't get it twisted.

That hit Nkosinathi hard, the look on  
his face said it all. He took his car  
keys and left, his crew followed him.

Bee: Tom, Dick and Harry

We laughed and made ourselves  
breakfast. I loved what was going on.

Phelo: Did you see his face? They are  
all just loosing it.

Sneh: Serves them right, they  
shouldn't mess with us. This isn't  
over

Ngamso: Let's just pack and go to Bizana guys, we all need a break and the rurals have so much peace.

Me: Such a wonderful idea.

We finished up breakfast and everyone went to pack. When we were done we all wanted to travel together and not in different cars. But we didn't have a car to accommodate all of us.

Sbahle: Let's go buy a car

Nceba: Okay you're crazy

Zandy: We do have the money

Me: You and your sister will put us in jail one day , trust me.

We went to a Mercedes Benz garage and found a perfect car. Mercedes-Benz H1. We made a payment, cash! And Belinda took the wheel. Naye made a video of us singing Beyonce\_Single Ladies. We had actually taken off our rings just to make that video

Sbahle: I'm soo glad I'm not single alone today

We laughed at her and told her we'd go manhunting for her. The video was actually circulating on social media and I knew it would get to our husband's. That's what we wanted after all.



Phelo: Prince Mayibongwe Mkhize calling!!!

Ntoko: Ignore it

Bee: Bongani Luthuli calling!!!

Us: Ignore it!!

We laughed and ignored our phones. They kept on ringing. We answered them but didn't talk, all they could hear was the music playing and us screaming our lungs out.

Me: After Bizana, we're taking the kids to Joburg!!!!!!

Bee: Let us buy a private jet!

Sbahle: Okay woah, enough alcohol

and spending

We had such a fun trip all the way to Bizana. After 2 hours we got there and the kids were all playing outside with MaNyathi and MaDlamini. Kamo was standing next to Masande while carrying Hope. She has grown so much, each time I see her I get so emotional because I see how Taylor has grown wherever he is. I don't believe that he is dead, I believe I will feel it in me when he is in some sort of danger or when he dies. I believe God will never do that to me. My child cannot die. I held Hope and she was playing with cheeks.

Me: She's so big and heavy

Kamo: A few days of staying with the grandma's, makes you gain weight.

MaD: True, so how are you young ladies?

Sneh: We're good and yourself mom?

MaD: We're okay, just happy to see you all. Its always wonderful to see my beautiful children.

MaN: Why are you behaving like unmarried woman?

Me: Hawu mama

MaN: Don't "Nyawu nyaya" me, what nonsense video is this? Do you think

oMkhwenyana will be happy about this? Yewena Sbahle, that Kaitso boy will never marry you if he sees you behaving like this.

Linda: But mama, we don't care if they are happy or not.

MaD: It is just the anger, Kamogelang told us what happened. What they did is a disgrace and it is very disgusting. But they are men, they make mistakes

Zandy: Well this was their biggest mistake, they didn't realize what it would cost them.

MaD: Do you know how many times

Hector cheated on me? I even lost count, I always forgave him because I loved him and I knew he would change one day. Men are men, they will always lie or cheat. They are the most imperfect beings on this earth. Hector did change, but he didn't change for me because he didn't love me. A man knows home, and that is where he changes and becomes fit for that woman. Those young men love you...

Siya: Sorry to cut you off mama but I am not understanding, we should wait for them to change? How long will we wait and cry for someone who

might never even change, our tears should be the foundation of someone else's joy?

MaD: That is not what I am saying, before these men were loose cannons, before meeting you. They thought with their dicks and not their minds. They changed for you, you did see the change in them before everything happened

Us: Yes

MaD: They changed for you, what happened to them was a weak moment, every man has those whether it is 16 years into his

marriage and he has been faithful or it is 3years of his marriage and he has been faithful but he has his weak moment. You should understand that us woman and our private parts, are such a weakness to men, you could go and lure another mans woman into your bed using the power of that thing between your thighs. Let them explain themselves, give them that chance atleast, I'm not saying do it today, do it tomorrow, but find it in your hearts to forgive them. Zandile, what would you do if you got a call right now telling you that Mpho is dead?

Zandy just cried without even answering.

MaD: You never know what life can bring tomorrow, you never know the time you have with your loved ones. Just give them a chance to speak and that is all I ask.

My mother was not making any sense to me. I was convinced that there's no going back now, nothing will fix my relationship with Danny. I love him yes but he has hurt me so much

MaN: You and that stubbornness Pearl, it will not get you anywhere.



Didn't you get your fair share by doing what you did with those strippers?

Didn't you hurt them enough to pay back for what they did?

How the hell did she know about that?  
I looked at Kamo and she shrugged.

MaN: oMkhwenyana called me and told me everything, and how you almost killed him. Don't go back there, don't be the angry Nasiphi. You are only punishing yourself.

Me: I am not angry

MaD: Keep telling yourself that. I am having a family lunch tomorrow, I have called their parents and your

parents, now you should call them, they all need to be here tomorrow. It starts at 12, go ahead call your men. And wena Sbahle, call Kaitso. We all took our phones and excused ourselves, Kamo laughed at us as she was enjoying this.

Linda: You're such a traitor  
Kamogelang

Kamo: "All the single ladies, all the single ladies" she mimicked our voices and laughed. I was still carrying Hope and I made a video call. He quickly picked up

Danny:" Hey little one, she looks so

big"

Me:" That's what I thought when I saw her"

Danny:" I guess Taylor would be this big too by now"

Me:" Yes he would"

There was a bit of silence and it was just so awkward

Me:"Hows your head?"

Danny:" Its just painful, nothing I can't handle"

Me:"Okay, I was calling to inform you that my mothers are having a family lunch tomorrow and you should

come."

Danny:" We'll be there 1st thing in the morning"

Me:"Come with Lucas, your family will also be here and you'll see your twin sisters"

Danny:"I haven't seen them in a while"

Me:" Me too, I'm looking forward to it"

Danny:"What is it about anyways?"

Me:"I don't know but she's inviting everyone, it will be a very big family lunch, MaDlamini actually planned this whole thing"

Danny:" It will be good to have

everyone around"

There was a knock on the door and Bulelwa barged in. Danny was so surprised and happy, she joined the call.

Buu:"I thought you'd be here! I wanted to surprise you"

Me:" I'm in Bizana, this lunch must be so important, you flew all the way from America"

Buu:"I had no choice, MaDlamini was on my neck. I had to come, what is it about anyways? All our siblings will be there too?"

Me:" I don't know, your mother is also

coming"

Buu:"I don't think so, maybe MaZethu will. I'll come with Bhut'Danny."

Me:"Okay cool, bye then"

They waved and I made Hope wave too. I went back to the others and we played while Onika was telling me about how she was working on these new codes. How I wished I could take out her brain and just let her be a kid. Her over intelligence really scares me. Danver wasn't paying much attention to me, he was with the boys as they were playing with sticks.

Zandy: Kabelo is so tall

Me: They grow up too fast hey?

Siya: They didn't even come greet us, they didn't miss us.

Phelo: Surely Ngcebo missed you, he is a mama's boy. Masande, you can forget about him missing you.

Siya: My boys though

We looked at our children as they played and I was really at peace.

There is just something about the villages that I cannot pinpoint. It is so calm and peaceful. It is so refreshing and welcoming. I just love being home.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's  
of friends

#LBAR

Insert 75

When Danny said they'd be here first thing in the morning, I didn't know they were talking about 3am in the morning. I heard him walking in the room and shifting Onika so he could



sleep. I didn't pay much attention to him and I slept. Waking up this morning, there was breakfast on my side desk with a rose and a note.

"Mama wabantwana bam, uyathandwa ndim"(Mother of my children, you're loved by me)

I laughed and had my breakfast. After I was done I took a shower and I heard alot of shuffling and he was humming a song so I knew it was Danny. I finished up and went to the bedroom naked. He stopped everything he was doing and stared at me. I bent down lotioning my legs. He cleared his throat and touched my

butt. I gave him a death stare and he moved away

Danny: Babe

Me: I'm not your babe and you're not getting any of this for months

Danny: Babe, I'm really sorry.

I ignored him and continued dressing up. Danny: Your mothers have called for us before the lunch starts

Me: Why?

Danny: I don't know so hurry up, the others are there already

Me: The others?

Danny: The couples

Me: Oh God, She's going to turn herself into a marriage therapist.

Danny laughed and threw my shoes at me. I wore them and pinched his arm for throwing them. He then just totally caught me offguard and carried me. The smile on MaDlamini and MaNyathi when he walked in and he was carrying me. You'd swear they just won the lottery.

MaN: Now this is what we want to see.

We all laughed and I went to sit down next to Sneh.

MaD: Where are you sitting? Nasiphi,

are you married to Sneh?

Siyamthanda are you married to Belinda?

Us: No Mah

We had to all swope seats and we sat next to our spouses.

MaD: Now this is how it should be, my children we are your parents, not your peers nor friends and we should not interfere in any of your marriages but we have seen how things have just blown way out of proportion. We have seen no one else appropriate enough to intervene than us your parents, we could not invite a

stranger here or anyone else showcasing your home affairs.

MaN: Siyamthanda, we'll start by you because I can see how hard it is for you to sit next to your husband.

Siya: He disgusts me mah, I am so angry at him because this is not the first time he is cheating on me and they also know that. I fail to understand the reasons why he does that, he has done it before and I do not trust him at all when he says he will never do it again because he does it again just when I think he has changed and I am giving him a chance to prove what I have

accepted wrong

MaN: What is it that you have accepted?

Siya: That he will never stop cheating on me. He is a disgrace to men, more especially married men who try so hard to be taken away from the phrase "all men cheat" and it is true, not all men cheat but it is those men like him who always seem to bring men down because they cannot control themselves at all. By just seeing free pussy their zips automatically open and their mouths are hanging drooling for it not even thinking about your wife at home, the

mother of your children. Did you even use a condom?!

We all looked at them and they nodded shamefully

MaD: What is a nod? Is it a yes or a no?

Them: Yes, we used them.

They chanted like a choir.

Paula: It doesn't even matter if there was a condom, never mind the diseases they could infect us with which were prevented by that condom but the fact that your private part entered another woman's private part, multiple women at that. People

tend to underestimate the power of sex, whether it was just another meaningless shag but spirits are connected when having sex. It is more than just reaching an orgasm but you're binded with that person in many ways than one. You carry all that from all those women and then sleep with me, pouring all that to me, Brian I remember carefully that on that very same night, you came home, took a shower and then we had sex? Am I wrong?

Brian: No

Paula: You did not even care to think of me, what you were doing to my



body and spirit? How you were connecting me to those women you had? Didn't you get enough from them and then come to me? Only your selfish desires matter.

Brian: Babe, no it's not like that

Paula: Then how is it?

He kept quiet and looked down. He had no come back for that.

Me: You did it because you had the same mentality of that we will forgive you because we cannot leave you.

We want our children to grow up in a home with both parents. No matter how much we are hurt and wish to

just leave but we cannot because being the mothers that we are, we have to compromise because our children come first. I have stayed with our children without you Danny and it is sad when they keep asking about thier father, they keep looking at the door wishing you'd come in and carry them. Most of us here know how it is to be without both parents and we do not wish that upon our kids. You taking advantage of true loyalty and taking advantage of your kids too. Trust me Danny, if we didn't have kids I would have left you, period. And I'm sure I'm not the only

one.

Ngamso: I'm with you there

Paula: And you Mr Ngcobo, you forget that we are not married and I have no kids with you. I can leave at anytime when you do bullshit like this, don't get too comfortable.

That hit Brian deeply. He gulped a bottle of water and he was so hurt but he deserved to know the truth.

MaN: What I want to know is how you would've felt if it was them who were on that video having sex with multiple men

Nkosi: They wouldnt even be alive by

now

Bonga: We would've killed them

Zandy: And yet you expect us to just forgive you?

Phelo: Do you think we can't kill?

Mayi: We know you can kill and we've seen you

Ntoko: So you underestimate us that much? What makes you think we are not capable of doing what you did

L'yanda: Ntokozo don't even think about it

Mpho: What you did with those strippers is fuckn enough

Me: Enough? Watch your words

Mpho Lebone, watch your words

Sneh: What we did is nothing compared to what you did.

MaD: We are not here to fight but to talk, Mpho apologize for your statement

Mpho: I'm sorry

Sneh: That's what is wrong, you think all you can say is "I'm sorry" and you're forgiven. You sing those words like its a national anthem thats why it is has lost it's truthful meaning and value. Those words are not able to cure the heartbreak but actions do.

Thaps: What we did is unforgivable and unforgettable. No words can justify what we have done. It is shameful, disgusting and inappropriate. We are sorry and we don't want to lose any of you because of this, I don't want to lose my wife and I don't want to lose any of you ladies as a friend and my brothers wife and a sister to me. We are all a family here, I see you all ladies as my sisters, besides my wife ofcause and I see these men as my brothers. We were stupid that I can say, we are at fault and we know the damage we have caused

Jabu: And we will do our outmost best to fix it, it won't take a few days it could even take a year but we are willing to do whatever because you are worth it.

Nkosi: Divorce is out of the picture though

They agreed amongst each other.

Bee: Avesuke nikhulumelane wemah ungafunga ukuthi niqale nilungiselele ninikane iziscript( The way you talk for each other, you'd swear you first practice and give each other scripts)

Nceba: Ungasho uphinde(You can say that again)

I knew things were getting serious when I saw Bonga's dad walking in followed by Razor, Nkosi's dad, Phila's dad and Mpho's dad. We stood up and greeted them. My mothers went out to join the other mothers and when we stepped out we were called back by Mr Buthelezi(Bonga's dad)

MrB: Sit down my daughters.

MrM(Mkhize,Nkosi's dad): You idiots who I am even ashamed to call my sons! When have you ever seen me cheat on my wife? Nkosinathi, Mayibongwe, I raised you since you were toddlers, did you ever see me



cheat on my wife?

Them: No father

Razor: Now where did you learn that from?

They kept quiet and looked down.

MrL: You cannot speak now? You have no voices

Jabu: We can speak, father

MrN: You know you are still kids to us, we can still whip the answers out of you! What foolishness is this? Don't you see the beautiful, smart and sophisticated woman in front of you. Woman who have been with you through thick and thin. Women who

stand by you and help you reach all your dreams, supportive woman who stay months without seeing you because you are doing good for the country, you don't find them complaining or in another mans bed but they stick by you because they know that it makes you happy. These women are your pillers of strength but this is how you thank them.

Bafana bam akwenziwa kanje( my boys, this is not how it is done)

They got long lectures from their fathers and we were told to leave after the fathers also apologized on their behalf. We went and helped out

in the kitchen. There was nothing much to be done as a catering team was hired. It was fully packed and it was good to meet some of their family members that I didn't know. Sneh's mother was also here so I got to meet her. KJ pulled Sbahle aside, I knew he was going to apologize. I just wish they could just be a couple already. I saw Siya blinking twice as she saw a woman walking in.

Sneh: What is she doing here?

Me: Who is she?

Siya: Namhla, Phila's sister.

Me: I don't understand, why shouldn't

she be here?

Siya: She's supposed to be in jail.

Me: Wow

Nandi went straight to her and dragged her back into the car.

Siya: Nongcebo!! No, leave her.

Nandi: She's not welcomed here

MaD: Today is about peace and forgiveness. Let her be, if Siya is comfortable with her being here than it is okay.

MaQ: She is your sister, let her stay.

Namhla thanked them and we all sat down at the table that was set, the

kids had their own table and they were with the nannies next to us. Siya kept on watching over her kids. I really wanted to know why Namhla was in jail but I made a mental note to ask Danny later on. The men came joined us and this was really a good idea because it was fun filled. After we ate, Emihle was singing with Sabelosababakhe, Onika, Thembelihle, Luthando and Kabelo. Masande and Junior said poems. The kids all performed and it was magical. What was more magical was when Nkosi sang with Mpho! Their voices are just so beautiful. Everyone went

outside and we danced together. It was really just amazing family time nothing mattered besides family.

Naye got emotional a bit and Lwazi hugged her, she mentioned how she wished her parents were also here. I wished Taylor was here, looking at Hope makes me think of him. Danny hugged me and whispered " He is okay, God is watching over him"

Everyone was doing their own thing and I was sitting with Danver and Siqalo.

Naye: Where is MaDlamini, she was supposed to come make a speech?

Me: Let me go look for her.

I went inside the house and looked for her

Me: MaDlamini!

I found her sitting by the lounge.

Me: There you are, you're needed outside. Speech time

I turned and she didn't respond. I went back and went closer to her.

Me: Mama

She was silent and not even moving. Her eyes were opened and looking at towards me. I kneeled infront of her and touched her pulse. She wasn't

breathing anymore. She had no life in her anymore. My mother had passed on just like that

Me: Mama!!! Help!!!

I started crying and screaming. I was shaking her but I was just shaking a corpse. I closed her eyes

Me: Rest in peace MaDlamini.

I kissed her cheek and felt someone holding me. I held him closely and cried

Danny: Sssh, everything will be okay

KJ: Cover her up, I'll make a few calls

Everyone was inside already besides



the kids. Most were crying, I know had an understanding as to why she wanted everyone together. She wanted one last moment with each and every one of us. She knew she was leaving us. That she was leaving me. I looked as they took away her body. It all felt surreal, like it was all just a dream.

Mbulelo: I'm sorry sister

MaQ: She will rest in eternal peace, because that is what she wanted today. She wanted love and peace. Stay strong my child, stay strong.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's  
of friends

#LBAR

Insert 76

Mourning my mother, the mother that raised me and helped me be the woman that I am today is still surreal. We know one day our parents will die, or any of our loved one's but when it

happens it just comes unexpectedly. What's weird about this is like she knew her time was coming. She gathered us here so she could be with each and every one of us for the very last time. She wanted to fix our relationships and have peace so that she can have eternal peace. The past week has been a very different, I wouldn't say I've been miserable and crying my eyes out. I am actually okay, I know my mother is in a better place. The preparations for the funeral were not hectic as Hector took care of everything

Danny: Wake up

Me: Go away

Danny: Babe, come on. You need to wake up. We have a funeral to attend to.

I sighed and then got up. She was getting buried at Hector's home, I tried fighting it but it was beyond me. She was supposed to get married there because she was still a wife there and her family also agreed to those traditions. Hector behaved in a very unexpected way, he had some sort of change of heart but that didn't make me trust him. He was just as the devil like his partner in crime Muzi. He was deeply saddened by my

mothers passing, he didn't get the chance to say goodbye. When we were having umlindelo, he cried.

There was a moment where he asked to be alone with her. I stood by the door and listened to him cry and apologize. I knew my mother had forgiven him but I haven't. Buu was dodging him in all possible ways. He still wanted to talk to her. I got up and took a bath, we were staying at a hotel near Hectors home in Lady Smith. We couldn't stay at Phila's since it was very far from here. Danny was already dressed and waiting up on me. I took my own time getting

dressed.

Danny: Why are you wearing lingerie to a funeral?

Me: Just to hold up my body together. I'll be wearing a tight dress

Danny: But your body is perfect

Me: Danny, I've lost so much weight. I even have some skin hanging around my waist. That is not proper

Danny: You're being dramatic, I love your body as it is. You'll just have to eat alot so you can go back to your normal size

Me: I don't think that will happen babe

He had a huge smile on his face which I didn't understand.

Me: What?

Danny: You called me babe, you haven't said that in a while.

I laughed at him and continued dressing up.

Me: Please help me with the zip.

He didn't just go straight to pulling the zip up, he touched my body caressing it in such a pleasurable way. He held me tightly making me feel his huge erection. I breathed out loud as I felt my body betraying me. It was getting weaker and weaker. He

kissed my neck and I closed my eyes. I felt myself getting wet down there, oh how my body was betraying me! It surrenders to his touch. The unzipped dress allowed him to put his hands inside and touch me. He pulled up the dress and it was around my waist. He kept on touching my clit. I couldn't stand on my own anymore, my legs were failing me.

Danny: You've been getting naughty on your own huh?

I didn't respond because I didn't understand. I let out a huge moan when he rubbed a vibrator on my nana. Now I understood what he



meant. I put my arms on the wall leaning on it as he tortured me in a very pleasureable way. I called out his name as he inserted it on my entrance and worked its magic.

Danny: You like it huh? I didn't respond, my knees were shaking. He stopped and I caught my breath and looked at him

Danny: Answer me

Me: Yes I do

He turned it on again and I felt my body fluids build up. My moans got louder and he was attacking my neck. Just as I was about to cum, he

stopped. Does this man want me to kill him!! He whispered "I love you MaNyathi" and he fixed me up and closed the zipper.

Me: Triston

Danny: Breakfast is ready, you'll meet me downstairs.

He got up and left my horny ass standing there. I sighed and did my hair. Got everything ready and went downstairs. He opened the seat for me and I thanked him. The kids came with MaNyathi and Onika sat next to Danny and Danver sat next to me.

Danver: Morning motherbear

I laughed at him and greeted back.  
We had breakfast while chatting up a storm. Well KJ and Mbulelo were the one's who were talking the most.

Sneh: Let's get going guys, we have a long day ahead of us.

Athi: I don't think we'll drive back to Durban tonight, I'm sure MaBhengu is going to be exhausted

MaB: Yes I will, old age my son. Old age

MaN: It is really getting to us.

MaQ: Kuguga othandayo

Nkosi: Mah, You're also getting old

MaQ: Excuse me, have you seen my fresh body? Tell your father to tell you how young and fresh I am

Nkosi: Okay, let's just go before this conversation goes any further.

The fathers had left long before we even woke up. When they are together, I'm always just so scared. They are so intimidating.

Lucas: Who's driving you Kamogelang?

The way he pronounces Kamo's name, If I was Kamo, I would be so charmed right now

Kamo: I am

Lucas: The roads to the church are a bit rocky, will you manage?

Kamo: I think so, Thembelihle take Hope and come please. Where is her carseat?

Thembe: In your car I think.

Lucas: Just come, I'll drive you.

Kamo: And your car?

Lucas: We can leave it behind.

Kamo carried Hope and they followed Lucas.

Danny: Don't smile so much, your cheekbones will crack.

Me: Argh Triston! I was still watching

a very romantic scene

Danny: Don't try to set them up

Me: Who said anything about setting anyone up?

Danny: Get in the car please

I rolled my eyes and got in then he closed the door.

Onika: Say thank you mom

Me: Thank you Danny

Danny: You're such a good princess

Onika

Onika: Always remember to say please and thank you, you always taught us that mom.

Danver: And now she's forgetting it.

Me: I'm old, I forget things

Onika: Does that mean you will also go to heaven just like gogo?

Me: What? No sweetie, I am not going anywhere

Danver: Pinky promise?

Me: Pinky promise

Danver: Mommy also went to heaven. I remember how dad was crying and I was told to close my eyes and sleep. That I will see her again one day, in heaven.

Onika: What are you talking about?

There's mommy, why are you saying she went to heaven? You watch too many cartoon Mpendulo

Danver: I am talking about our first mommy

Danny looked at me and I shrugged

Danny: Say something

He whispered and I looked at him.  
What will I even say?

Me: What will I say?

Danny: I don't know, you know how I can't deal with these things. I don't even know what to say, I'm surprised that he even remembers. Just help me out here



I sighed and he seemed pretty freaked out. Here I was thinking Danny is over the way he was when I met him. Back to square one! It was silent for a while to the conversation was over. Okay, I said that too early

Onika: Mom, Dad, did we really have a first mommy?

Me: Uhm yes sweetheart

Onika: And she went to heaven?

Me: Yes

Onika: Why don't I know her?

Oh God, how do I answer this.

Danny: Kids, those questions are

enough now.

Danver: 1st mommy looked just like second mommy.

Onika: So where is the 1st daddy?

Me: Oh God, topic closed. We at the church now, no more talking.

Them: But Dad!!

Danny: You heard your mother, one finger on your lip

Onika: We do that at school, not at home

Danny: Well you will do it here too, unless you want me to put ducktape on your lips

They quickly did it and I sighed

Danny: Your kids talk alot

Sbahle: And then? Whats with the fingers on your lips

Onika pointed at Danny and went to the other kids

Danny: They talk alot.

Gugu and Mbulelo waved at me and showed me that MaCebisile was here. She was wearing the biggest hat ever, she walked towards me with MaZethu.

Danny: Here comes She-Devil

Me: Danny

He laughed and left with Sbahle and the others had already went inside the church.

MaZethu: Nasiphi my child, how are you?

Me: I'm okay mama and yourself?

MaZethu: I'm good as long as you are okay. Just know that we are here for you just because you've lost one mother doesn't mean you have no mothers left. You had 4mothers now you have 3. You're very lucky to have so many mothers

Me: It's very overwhelming

MaCebisile: Why have you included

me? I don't remember giving birth to this murderer

Me: Murderer?

MaCebisile: You killed Nkonzo!! And Zizipho has been missing for months and months now, I am sure you killed her

Me: Those are serious accusations mother

MaCebisile: Don't you dare call me your mother! I will find out and I will kill you! Whoever took that bastard son of yours did the right thing, I hope he or she has killed him. You don't deserve to be a mother!

I let my anger get the best of me, I slept her twice. MaZethu held her when she tried to slap me. Danny ran to me and held me as I wanted to hit MaCebisile. I know she is older than me but what she said upset me.

Danny: Nasiphi! Calm down

Me: Mark your words Cebisile.

I walked away and Danny followed me. Tears threatening to come out but I didn't let them. I walked in the church and sat at the back.

Danny: Your seat is at the front

Me: But I'm fine here

Danny: You don't want me to cause a

scene and carry you there

I stood up and went to seat at the front next to Bulelwa.

Buu: Hector wants to speak to me after the service

Me: Okay

Buu: I should talk to him?

Me: Just to hear him out, when are you going back to the States?

Buu: Tonight

Me: What?

Buu: I have already missed out on many classes. I will come back soon

Me: How soon?

Buu: November

Me: That's too far, it's still just July.

Buu: I will be back, soon. Don't worry

Me: I am worried

The service started and I didn't think I would cry for her because I was at peace with her passing but it was sad. It hurt me and I cried as they read her obituary. I didn't want to do it. I had to go forth and talk about her. Danny went with me and held my hand

Me: My mother, Yenzolo Dlamini. You were a wonderful woman. You were a great mother, you were not only just a mother to me but you were also a



sister and a friend. You always made sure that I was happy, that I was well fed and I had everything I needed. Even when things went south, when we suffered and you had a stroke, you still pushed yourself so that I can have a better life. No one would've said that you weren't my biological mother, all that doesn't matter. You were indeed my mother and I love you and will always do. Never have you ever raised your hand at me, even when you shouted at me you'd end up apologizing because of the soft hearted person you were, you always wanted peace and happiness and

that is something that made you shine amongst many people. You inspired me everyday, I remember how worried you were about me when I got very angry, you said my rage and anger would make my heart black and it will stop beating, thats how she threatened me so I could stop being angry, I can't believe I actually believed her when she said that. You taught me how to love, how to be kind and forgiving. You taught me alot in life and about life, when they talk about role models I always think about you. I look up to you and one day, I want to be like you. One

day, I will be like you. Right now, life has been testing me in so many ways, but I will hold onto your words. That nothing beats prayer and having faith in God. Nothing is stronger than a praying woman. And that I will hold onto and I will never forget your words of wisdom. I love you, and rest in peace MaDlamini.

I sang one of her favourite songs and went to sit down. The service continued and we went to the Dlamini graveyard afterwards. Everything proceeded and she was buried well and peacefully. We went to the Dlamini homestead and sat inside the

tent. I saw Buu arguing with Hector.

Gugu: She's so angry, I've never seen her so angry

Me: I don't blame her

Gugu: What do you mean?

Me: Nothing, I'll be back.

I went over to her and Hector

Me: Hector

Hector: Pearl

Me: Is everything okay here?

Hector: Yes it is

Buu: We are done and don't you ever call me again. Let's go Pearl

Me: Doesn't seem like that went well

Buu: I will never forgive that man.

Me: Did you speak to Cebisile today?

Buu: What for? I hate that woman

Me: You hate your parents

Buu: True parents do not sell their child. I'm leaving now, I have to be at the airport in an hour.

Me: Did you even eat?

Buu: Yes I did sis

Me: I miss you, you will call me everyday Bulelwa?

Buu: Hah, everyday. I'm not your husband

Me: Bulelwa

Buu: Okay fine, I will call you everyday.

Me: Good, go say goodbye to your siblings. Mbulelo will drive you to the airport. Travel safely

Buu: I'll go say goodbye to the kids and Danny too.

Me: And your mother

Buu: I will shoot you

I laughed at her and went to sit down with the girls.

Sneh: Buu has grown alot

Me: I'm just worried about her. I'll go visit her soon

Naye: I was thinking of changing my parent's tombstones

Phelo: That's a good idea

Naye: Everytime I attend a funeral I always just think about them.

Siya: It's hard to forget.

An Italian looking man come towards us and he looked old yet so handsome. He patted Bee's shoulder and she screamed and hugged him. Siya and Nceba went to him too

Nceba: Daddy!!!!

Oh wow! Its their father, I've heard about him but just have never seen him before.

MrSantoz: My girls, its good to see you. Where is your beautiful mother?

Siya: She's in the kitchen helping out.

MrSantoz: Where are my manners?  
Hello young ladies, and I am seeing two faces that I don't know.

He said looking at me and Paula.

Paula: Mr Santoz, we've heard about you. I'm Paula Nyathi and this is my sister, Nasiphi McKenzie. They shook hands and we did too

Santoz: Pleased to meet you young ladies. My condolences on your loss Mrs McKenzie, and my apologies for meeting under these circumstances.



Me: It's okay sir

Santoz: Oh no, call me dad. I'm the coolest dad amongst them all.

Where's Razor?

Me: They are somewhere around the house.

Santoz: Let me go look for my sexy babymama and those idiot friends of mine.

I laughed and we sat down

Me: Your father seems like such a funny character

Siya: He is.

Kamo: Let me go look for Lucas

Zandy: Why will you be looking for Lucas?

Me: Care to explain, Kamogelang.

She laughed as I was trying to imitate Lucas's voice

Kamo: I need the car keys, theres something I need in the car.

Ngamso: Mmmmmmh, in the car.

Kamo: Stop it.

She left us and we continued chatting and we left in the evening going back to the hotel. I took a shower and went to bed. Danny would come late to bed as they were still having drinks with the fathers. I got a call frok Buu and

after the call. I prayed and asked God to protect Taylor and let him be with someone who will love him and take care of him. MaCebisile's words got to me. If I am really not deserving to raise him, let whomever has him be a good parent and protect him just like MaDlamini did to me.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

## Insert 77

Its been two weeks since we laid MaDlamini to rest. I had still haven't got used to it, there's this day where I found myself calling her and it only kicked in when the phone went straight to voicemail. Danny deactivated her cellphone number after thinking I was crazy. I've been busy, in and out of work. Danny had just come back from Russia, apparently since they killed Tropez, Duo and Lapita. Siya's father can

come back to South Africa and stay for good. I don't know how he was involved in all of this but he is now free. After the kids had so many questions, it was pretty clear how we had to give them answers. Danny was not supportive of my idea and I was not supportive of his idea, he wanted to hypnotize them and I was having none of that. I wouldn't want to put my children in the same situation that I was in. It is not a life that I want for them and they will know the truth. I woke up and made chocolatechip pancakes and blueberry milkshakes with

marshmallows.

Me: Kids!!!! Breakfast is ready

Danny was the first to come downstairs followed by the kids

Me: You're a kid now?

Danny: Yes I am

He kissed me and spanked my ass.

Me: Stop being naughty

Danny: Why should I? Tell me you don't like it

Danver: Mom and dad, please stop. We still need to eat

We laughed and Onika stared at Danver with her hands on her hips

Danver: What is it?

Onika: Wena Mpendulo, you're a hopeless romantic

Danver: Lethukuthula, what do you know about hopeless romantics?

Onika: I hear the conversations you, Kabelo, Kwenzokuhle, Ngcebo and Masande have.

Danny: You boys seem to have naughty topics

Danver: We don't have naughty topics and she is lying. I'm just 7 years old, what would I know about hopeless romantics plus its Kwenzokuhle's always says that you guys are

hopeless romantics, especially Uncle Bonga

Danny: Well that's true

Me: You guys listen to adults conversations

Onika: Its not like you guys have those conversations when we are not around.

Danver: Onika and Sabelosababakhe like eavesdropping even when we not around, they always come and listen to our conversations.

Onika: You don't involve us in the conversations you have

Danver: Why should we? You are girls



and we are boys.

Onika: Whatever.

Danny: You talk too much, finish up eating. We need to talk

We all finished up eating and the kids cleared the kitchen while Danny washed the dishes and I was relaxing. They came and joined me after they were done.

Danny: Okay, remember how you guys have been having alot of questions about having a first mother and second mother?

Them: Yes Dad

Danny: Well Onika, what Danver was

telling you is true.

Onika: I'm confused Dad

Danny: Your mother died when you were born sweetheart, that's why you don't know her. She gave birth to you and then she went to heaven, Danver knew her because he was there before you were born.

Onika: So who is mom?

Danny: Your mother is Ziyanda and this is your step mother, Nasiphi

Danver: Why does mother Nasiphi look like mother Ziyanda?

Me: Because I am her sister

Onika: Oh so we have two mothers just like you did but the other mother went to heaven?

Me: Yes

Onika: Oh I understand now

Danny: Do you understand Danver?

Danver: Yes Dad

Danny: The woman sitting next to me is your mother, she loves you and takes good care of you. She found us in a position where I had never thought we would recover from and for that we should and forever be thankful for. No one loves you like she does and everyday she inspires

me to be a better parent to you guys,  
never ever disrespect her or show no  
appreciation to her, do you  
understand?

Them: Yes Dad

Danny: Now tell her how much you  
love her and give her some love

Them: We love you mom!!!

They screamed and came to hug me.  
I tickled them and we had a warm  
group hug.

Danny: Now who wants to go to visit  
hope?

Them: We do!!!

Danny: Let's go

Me: Please drop me off at work

Danny: It's a Saturday, a day of rest

Me: There's a few things I need to sort out. I won't stay for even 2hours

Danny: I'll drop them off at Kamo's and go to Richards Bay with KJ.

There's something he needs to take care off

I took my bag and we left. He dropped me off at work and Venes was waiting for me in my office

Me: Hello stranger

Venes: I should be saying that to you,

you've been so scarce lately

Me: You've been scarce, you weren't at work the entire week, last week.

How were your exams?

Venes: So challenging but I know I passed.

Me: Now that's what I want to hear all the time

Venes: I want to make you proud, I'm forever grateful. When God created you, he created an angel. You know many people would've left me behind when they get millions of rands but you didn't leave me behind, you're really are sent from heaven. I love you

Nasiphi

Me: Ncooh, you're going to make me cry. You stuck with me when I had nothing, leaving you behind when I have everything would be very selfish of me. I love you Venes, so what's going on in your life lately

Venes: I think I'm inlove

Me: What!!! You never fall inlove remember?

Venes: I don't know Nasiphi, I'm so confused. There's this guy man, argh he literally makes me weak.

Me: Please don't tell me its the new doctor?

Venes: It is!! You've seen him?

Me: No, I just know he's Dr B something, I didn't listen to Athi when he told me his name. I actually have a meeting with him in a few minutes just to discuss a few things

Venes: He is so delicious, he makes my knees go weak!!!

There was a knock on the door and I couldn't believe what I was seeing! The new doctor was my high school crush who almost become my boyfriend. By that I mean, he was inlove with me as much as I was inlove with him. When he told me and



things were looking good for us, some girls threatened me and I backed off and I never spoke to him until some party we had after our matric exams where we almost kissed and were disturbed by his girlfriend. Everything was just "almost" between us. He stood by the door and smiled at me. Venes kept on looking at us and she knew there was something there and she broke the awkward silence

Venes: I'll excuse you, Mrs McKenzie, you'll call me if you need me.

Me: Sure, uhm please be seated Dr Siboniso Butterworth.

Siboniso: Thank you Dr.... Dr Nyathi  
I saw how he looked confused when  
he saw my nametag

Me: It's a long story, I know you know  
me as Dlamini but later in the years I  
found out that my surname is Nyathi.

Siboniso: And I just heard Mrs  
McKenzie

I showed him my wedding ring and he  
replied with a long "oooohhh"

Siboniso: So why do you have Nyathi  
on the name tag?

Me: I just like having my own identity  
apart from being Mrs McKenzie

Siboniso: McKenzie as in Mr Danny McKenzie?

Me: Yes, that would be my husband

Siboniso: Wow Nampopo, you've made it in life! Wow

Me: See why I use Nyathi, to avoid such encounters. And please, not that name.

Siboniso: What? I love it, it was your high school name

Me: That was in high school, could we please get onto what we're here for?

Siboniso: Some people never change, you're still stubborn and feisty. So

you're the boss?

Me: Yes along with Dr Buthelezi but I'm always here more than he is. So I know he's given you the contract, have any questions?

Siboniso: Not at all, it's signed and sealed.

He passed it over and our hands touched sending an awkward feeling on my body. I literally felt my armpits sweating. He cleared his throat and fixed his tie

Me: A cardiologist huh? Such a copy cat

Siboniso: You can say that, you know

how I just didn't know what to do with my life. I just wanted to be a model and be on every magazine's front page but I realized that just doesn't have any value and doesn't make any difference in the world

Me: And you were tooo smart to be just a model, like who gets 100% on physics and Maths! You were just crazy

Siboniso: See and I couldnt just let that hardwork go to waste, so when I was called by numerous universities and I was offered to go study in Cuba for medicine, I just realized that I should do something meaningful with

my life. And then I remembered how you wanted to make a difference in the world and save people's lives and I decided to do cardiology.

Me: You've really done a lot for yourself and have become very successful, it's an honour to have you at our hospital, someone with years of experience of working in Cuba and Paris. What made you come back?

Me: My family hey, I really wanted to be back home and I just missed my mother so much, I slept on the same bed with for an entire week when I came back. I was really missing my family

We talked and he told me alot about himself and the things that have took place in his life. We had a catching up sessions and it was really good to see him again.

Me: We'll be working closely together and I'll send some documents over to you so you can take over some patients for me. And Venes will show you around. Let me call her

I called her and I told her to show Dr Butterworth around and she screamed thanking me for getting her to spend time with MrBae. I don't blame her for going crazy about Siboniso, he was very handsome with

a handsome body and his height just added onto it. He really deserved to be on every magazine's front page. He was a version of Lungelo Tshabalala and had the sexiest voice. Not only does he have the looks but he had a personality that everyone would fall inlove with. He would get any girl that he wanted, girls literally threw themselves at him. He always complained about how girls just dated him for his looks and the title of dating "Siboniso Butterworth", he never got something genuine and made me sometimes hate how he looked. When he spoke about it, he



would really seem so hurt and he always loved how I challenged him and how I accepted him and looked beyond his looks. He gave me the name Nampopo when we were in grade 9 and it was used throughout high school. We were always in the same class since primary school and we really had a special bond growing up. He was always there and always just a friend until I fell inlove with him and it was weird because I was always around him and known him for a very long time, why did I fall inlove with him in high school? Seeing him took me back to so many

memories and my high school life. I ended up laughing alone and started packing up. I called one of my drivers and he picked me up and dropped me off at home. The security came up to me

Security: Mam, there is a young lady that is here to see you. I told her to leave but she insisted on staying until you came back. She is pretty stubborn mam, she is not going anywhere.

Me: Okay, thank you.

I walked on the never ending driveway till I reached the maindoor.

She sitting on the doorstep wearing a brown dress and pink torn slippers. She was carrying a black small one arm bag.

Me: Hi

Her: Mrs McKenzie, hi I'm sorry for just showing up but I need to talk to you

Me: Uhm okay, come in.

She followed me and took off her shoes when she entered

Me: No, no please put them on. Tiles can be very cold, put them on

Her: I don't want to dirty your house madam, it is spotless

Me: No don't worry about it. Whats your name?

I asked as we entered the kitchen. She was looking around the house and she seemed out of place

Her: Asanda, Asanda Ditshabe.

Me: Nice to meet you Asanda, what brings you here?

Asanda: Mam, I came all the way from Mpumalanga, in a small village called Tsherilo. I came here about your missing son, his name I believe is Taylor Siphephelo McKenzie

Just by hearing my sons name, I wanted to cry. I didn't know how to

feel.

Me: Can I call my husband before we proceed?

Asanda: Yes Mam

I stepped out and called Danny

Danny: Sthandwa senhliziyo yam

Me:(sniffs) Come home Triston

Danny: Babe? What's going on? Are you crying?

Me: Please just come home

I was already crying and getting very emotional

Danny: Okay, I'll be there in an hour.

I ended the call and went back inside

Me: Are you hungry?

Asanda: No Mam

Me: Asanda, you look hungry and you seem tired. Let me make you some food

She nodded and I made her two chicken and mayo sandwiches

Me: Coffee, tea, juice, milkshake, drink, alcohol?

She laughed when I mentioned alcohol and wanted juice

Me: I have orange juice and guava juice

Asanda: Guava please

Me: Coming right up

Jabu and L'yanda barged and they really scared us

Me: What is wrong with you two? You scared us

Asanda was already standing behind me hiding.

Me: Sorry about that, sit down

L'yanda: Danny sent us to come check up on you.

Jabu: He said you were crying and wanted him home immediately. We came as fast as we could. Who is this?

Me: I am fine, yes I was crying and I need him home now but I am fine.  
There's nothing wrong

Jabu: So who is this? Hello young lady

Me: Its Asanda and she is my guest.

L'yanda: Oh so you are okay? Not in any danger

Me: No danger, see I'm still alive and not harmed.

Jabu: He'll be here soon.

L'yanda: Can I also have a sandwich, to compensate for how worried I was.

Me: Sit down



I made sandwiches for them and they ate. I thought they would leave but they stayed. After about an hour and 30minutes Danny came running in screaming my name. He came to me and hugged me holding me so tightly

Me: Babe, I can't breathe

Danny: I was so worried, are you okay?

Me: Yes babe, I'm okay

L'yanda: We out!!

They screamed and left. Danny only realized then that there was someone else here.

Danny: Uhm hi, sorry, I didn't even see you. I was so worried about my wife

Asanda: It's okay Sir

Me: Babe, this is Asanda uhm, what's your surname again?

Asanda: Ditshabe, I'm Asanda  
Distshabe

Me: And she's coming from all the way from Mpumalanga.

Danny: Oh wow, that's so far. You seem like you've been travelling on foot. Did you give her something to eat?

Me: Triston!

Danny: What? Sorry, so what brings you here Ms Ditshabe? How old are you?

Me: Danny you really talk alot

Asanda: I'm 20 years old and I came here about your missing son

And then the seriousness took over, he's facial expressions changed and Asanda seemed a bit frightened

Danny: Lets move this conversation to the lounge please

We followed him and we sat down

Danny: Speak

Asanda: I've been travelling for a week, trying to get here. I left Mpumalanga with only a R150 that I had managed to save up from selling sweets in the street so I could come

tell you that I know where your son is.

Danny: Why didn't you call? Is this about the reward money? We've had alotof people coming and calling us telling fake stories

Asanda: I don't want your reward money, If I had a phone I would call and save myself such a long trip.

Me: I'm sorry about my husband's response to this, this is a very sensitive subject to us.

Asanda: I understand. My neighbour is a nurse who has lived there since I was born. She was married but couldnt have kids so her husband left

her. She has had about 5 miscarriages and has given birth to 2 stillborn babies. That's when she lost her mind for a while. When she was okay, she worked again. There's this one weekend where she told me that I should guard her house because she'll be in Durban for a week and work there for a while filling in for her sister. When she came back, she came back very happy, with a new born baby, she lied and said she was pregnant all this while and she hid it not wanting to tell anyone because people would laugh at her if she gave birth to a stillborn baby

again. I'm old enough to understand that it was all a lie and the baby looked nothing like her, none of her boyfriends were even white guys. She was old, around her late 40's and she really believes that its her baby. So I babysitted for her while she went to work so I could earn money and she really loves and takes care of Themba, she calls him Themb'alibulali. What made me sure that she stole your child and it's Taylor, I was watching the news at my friends house when I saw Mr McKenzie and Taylor's pictures. She has your baby, I left my friend at

home so she can keep an eye on her.

Danny: We must go to Mpumalanga immediately, call Kamo that the driver will fetch the kids and take them to Siya's house. They can't sleep over there, she has to pay full attention to hope. I'll call Sbahle and KJ, we'll go with them.

Me: Okay, let me go pack

Danny: There's no time for that Nasiphi. Where are these bodyguards!!! Gumede! Sibiya! Call my pilot, the jet must be ready when I get to the airport.

Me: Let me get my bag atleast and

my phone

Danny: Nasiphi, you're still standing there? Don't annoy me please or else I'll leave you behind. Follow me Asanda.

I rushed to the room and took my bag and my phone then I called Kamo and also called Siya to tell her about the kids sleeping over. I remained silent and kept on thinking about my son. I was grateful that he is still alive and he was well taken care off. I just needed my son in my hands and talking to Danny isn't something I'm planning to do throughout this entire trip. He seemed so angry and if it was



up to him and he had wings, he would be in Mpumalanga right now.

Danny: You're okay?

Me: Yes I am, I'm just nervous

Danny: I will kill her

Me: No Danny, she's been through enough

Danny: Right now, you're talking nonsense.

I knew he wouldn't understand why I said this but all in all, her story is touching and somehow, I understand that it all lead to her doing such drastic things. Unfortunately it happened to be my child that she

stole and the father of this child does not understand nor care about her reasons. She is in trouble, that's all I can say. I am feeling very nervous about seeing my child, seeing him and touching him for the first time in so many months. I looked at his pictures on my phone and closed my eyes.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

Insert 78

I felt him kiss my cheek and I woke up. He smiled at me and I removed the blanket that was covering me.

Me: We've arrived?

Danny: Yes we have arrived, wake up.  
KJ, wake Asanda and Sbahle

KJ: Asanda snores alot

Me: Yes she does

We laughed at her and she was confused as she woke up to us

looking and laughing at her.

Danny: The cars are here, lets go.

Asanda you'll have to direct us to your home

Asanda: We still have alot of travelling to do. My home is about 8hours away from the airport and 6hours away from the bus station

Sbahle: How did you get to the bus station?

Asanda: I walked

Me: Oh God, you went through so much to find us. God will bless you

Asanda: Thank you sis Nasi

We got into the cars and luckily the closest village to hers was on the GPS and we travelled for a very long time.

Me: Stop at the garage please, I'm very hungry.

Danny: Okay babe

Sbahle: Did we really need to have a convoy, like we would've come here without bodyguards. Now everyone is just looking at us

KJ: We need to be safe

We stopped at the garage and went to get some food and drinks. We then proceeded with the travelling

Me: Aren't you going to eat Asanda?

Asanda: I can't really eat while travelling, I'll vomit.

Danny: I'll stop the car so you can eat and you'll have water afterwards

Asanda: Thank you

We stopped the car and we ate and relaxed for half an hour.

Danny: Feeling okay?

Asanda: Yes sir

Danny: Call me Danny, here's a paper bag use it when you feel like vomiting

Asanda: Thanks Bhut'Danny

Danny:(laughs) Just Danny

We travelled and she directed us to her home.

Me: I think one car should go to her home, what if we draw attention to ourselves and this woman panics and runs away

Danny: The bodyguards will stay behind but they'll be nearby, what's this lady's name

Asanda: I know her as Philiswa, we call her Sis Phili

KJ: Her surname?

Asanda: Philiswa Khuboni and she was married to a Gumede so maybe she uses Gumede

KJ was getting information on her and she was using Khuboni. She looked very beautiful and decent, she doesn't even look like someone who would do such a thing.

Asanda: There it is, that's where I stay.

Me: You stay there? With who?

Asanda: Alone

She stayed in a small house and the yard was full of grass, it was so long it covered half of the house.

Sbahle: Don't you come across any snakes here?

Asanda: I do, I don't have money to hire someone to cut the grass for me.



I'll go in first and go check Sis Phili,  
when I come out, you'll then come in.

Me: Where is her house?

Asanda: The pink one near my home.

Danny: Okay go

She walked over to Phili's house and  
she stayed there for a while. She only  
came out after about an hour

Me: What took you so long?

Asanda: I usually stay over for a long  
time, I didn't want to jinx it and have  
her suspecting things.

Me: Is my son in there?

Asanda: Yes he is, he's sitting on the

floor playing with his toys.

I nodded and tears flooded my eyes uncontrollably

Danny: Don't cry, he'll be in your arms soon

Sbahle: Let's go

I wiped off my tears and we went to her house

Asanda: Ousie! Open up please, I left my bag

Voice: Okay, I'm coming.

She opened the door and looked confused.

Phili: Who are these people Asanda?

Me: May we come in please?

She looked at me for a while and then looked at Danny, her eyes popped and she tried closing the door but Danny beat her to it, he was already getting in. He was too strong for her and she ran and took Taylor. He looked so grown, he had lots of hair just like Danver, he looked like Danny but he had my eyes. He kept on making noises, groaning and screaming and then he laughs. I couldn't move, all I did was stare at my baby. Danny was so angry, he had his gun tucked in at the back of his pants. Sbahle and Asanda went close

to Phili begging her to put the baby down. Phili was crying and screaming that the baby is hers. Taylor started crying and that woke me back to my senses.

Me: Sis Phili, please sit down and we will talk about this. No one will hurt you or Taylor

Phili: Its Themba!! Not Taylor

Me: Yes, no one will hurt Themba.

Sbahle: Just give the baby over please

Phili: He has a gun

Me: He won't hurt you, move away from her Danny

Danny: She has my child!!

Me: I know Danny but please, we all want to leave unharmed here. Please, just step away.

I went closer to her and she was crying and speaking to herself.

Me: Hand the baby over, please

She nodded and handed Taylor over.

Me: Thank you

Sbahle: Come, lets sit down. Come Phili

Philiswa was really disturbed and just looking at her made me cry. I held my baby and he stopped crying

Me: Hello, hello little Taylor.

He was so heavy and so grown. He smiled and held my hair. Danny came close and held him.

Danny: Hello McKenzie

I didn't think it would happen, Danny is a strong man but today, he cried. He held Taylor and cried. It was such an emotional moment, even KJ had glassy eyes. Asanda gave Phili a glass of water and she couldn't even hold it. Asanda held it for her and she drank. Taylor kept on crying and Danny passed him over to me

Phili: He must be hungry, Asanda

pass his bottle, its at the kitchen in the blue jug with warm water.

Asanda did so and passed it over to me. I fed him but he didn't want it

Phili: Hold him with your left hand, put him in a sleeping position and then rock him up and down while feeding him.

I did as she said and indeed it worked. He was sucking on his bottle and his little eyes were closing. After he was done, I rubbed his back and he burped. He fell asleep in my arms for the very first time. Phili passed me a blanket and I covered him up. A

stranger was a mother to my son. It hurt me how I had to take advise from someone I don't know on how to feed my child. Taylor was used to her and her ways. I saw how much it angered Danny, how he just wanted to put a bullet in his head but he couldn't. He was doing it for me, I begged him not to harm her.

Sbahle: Why did you do it?

Phili: Do what?

Danny: Don't upset me woman, why did you steal my child!

Phili: I don't know what came over me but I did it anyways. I was at the



hospital coming to see my sister, she had just given birth and I was in my nursing uniform which is very similar to the one they were at that hospital. I went to the nursery room to check on her baby and all the kids there were so beautiful and I wished they were my own. Themba was next to my sisters child and he cried a bit, I took him and it felt so right, when he fell asleep in my arms, I felt so connected to him. He was mine and I ran away with him.

Danny: He wasn't yours!!!

Phili: He is mine! He knows me as his mother and you are strangers to him!!

Danny slapped her and I screamed for him to stop

KJ: Danny, control yourself

Phili: You can beat me up but he is mine. I've always wanted a child but I kept on having miscarriages and giving birth to stillborn babies, do you know how painful that is it? It is nothing compared to what you were feeling when you realized your baby is missing. He wasn't dead!

Me: It felt like he was because you took him away from me! Not knowing whether he is alive, if he is eating and well taken care off, you wanted me to

feel the pain you felt! That made you happy?

Phili: Yes, because I had a child and he was making me happy. I did not even know who his parents were until I saw you on TV. You were hurting and I felt bad, but I couldn't bring him back to you, I had built a strong bond with him and I wasn't going to give that all way.

Asanda: But what you did was wrong Sis Phili

Phili: You snitch!! Shut up because it is because of you that this is happening!! No wonder your mother

left you idiotic child!! You are a damn  
snitch and you betrayed me!

Asanda: My mother has nothing to do  
with this Philiswa.

Sbahle: Why didn't you adopt a child  
than stealing a baby?

Phili: They said I was crazy and I  
wasn't fit to raise a child. What do  
they know about being crazy! I  
wanted a child and they told me that  
shit!

Danny: You are crazy

Danny was just adding fuel to the fire.  
I looked at him and he said sorry.

Danny: Let's just get out of here

please

Phili: No!!!! No don't take him away from me! Nooooo! My son

Me: He is my son and I'm leaving with him

Phili: Can I please just hold him, just to stay goodbye?

Danny: No

Phili: Please, please Mrs McKenzie. Please

I felt so sorry for her, yes she stole my child, I should be breathing fire and wanting to kill her but I couldnt. I understood her pain, no woman should go through what she has went

through.

Me: Just once

She nodded and I gave her Taylor.  
Little did I know that she would do  
such, I felt it on my thigh, she  
stabbed me on my thigh and held the  
knife against Taylors neck

Phili: If I can't have him, then no one  
can.

I couldnt keep my balance and I fell  
on the floor. That's when I heard two  
gunshots being fired and she fell  
down next to me. I heard my babies  
cry and Danny took him

Danny: Please take him Sbahle

Sbahle took Taylor and Danny picked me up.

Danny: Let's go

Asanda: We are leaving her behind?

Danny: Yes, she'll rot in here if no one ever finds her

Me: She's dead?

KJ: Yes

I sighed and closed my eyes. She wasn't supposed to die, she was not supposed to die like this but because she double crossed me, she called for death.

Danny: She took the easy way out,

she's lucky I didn't do things my way.

Me: I'm sorry for putting our child's life in danger

Danny: You didn't know she had a knife.

We got into the car and Asanda didn't

KJ: And then?

Asanda: You guys have Taylor and you can leave. I'm going home

Danny: You're coming with us

Asanda: What do you mean?

Me: There's no way we're leaving you here.

Asanda: I can't just leave



Danny: What do you have here that you need to stay for?

Asanda: Nothing

Me: So then? Let's go

Asanda: Wait please

She ran to her house and came back with a picture frame and a small box. She got into the car and we drove off.

Sbahle: Who are these people?

Asanda: My mom, dad and little sister

Me: Where are they now?

Asanda: My dad and little sister died in a car accident. My mom couldn't take it and she left me. Well, that's

what she said in the letter she wrote. She left when I was 9, that's the last time I've ever seen nor heard from here.

Me: I'm sorry.

Danny: Where is the nearby clinic or hospital?

Asanda: Its in town

Danny: That's so far, drive KJ.

He took a kit and nursed my wound. Taylor was sleeping peacefully in Sbahle's arms. She passed him onto me when Danny was done addressing my thigh and I held onto him like never before.

Danny: Give him space to breathe  
Nasi

Me: Sorry, I didn't realize I was  
holding him too tight

#Danny

Seeing my little prince in my wife's arms made me feel at peace. The way she looked at him, the way she held him, it all showed how happy she was to have him back. But there was something in her eyes that I was not sure about. Maybe she really didn't want that Philiswa to die but I had to kill her or else she would've killed my son. And there was no way I

would've let that happen. We got to the clinic and she was treated, my strong wife was immune to the pain, all she wanted was to just be with her son. She was limping a bit but she was strong enough to walk on her own.

KJ: It's late for us to travel and I'm tired, we should book into a hotel

Me: Yes that's a good idea, so Nasi could rest and Taylor needs to rest too before travelling.

Sbahle: I'll book into a hotel close to the airport.

She booked while we drove to the

stores. We got diapers and formula and everything that the baby will need and changing clothes for all of us. We went to the hotel

Sbahle: I'll share a room with Asanda, I'm sure she doesn't want to be alone.

We all went our separate ways and I carried the bags into our room.

Me: I'll make his bottle

Nasi: Thank you

I made his bottle and took him for feeding.

Me: Go shower while I feed him

Nasi: No, I'll just stay here

Me: Nasi, he is not going anywhere, go shower.

She nodded and I fed Taylor, not doing it the way that woman instructed. He has to get used to our ways or else we will have a problem. He cried at first but finally gave in. Once he fell asleep, I tucked him in bed and sat next to him. I called Razor

Me: Razor

Razor: Its dad to you young man

Me: I found my son, dad.

Razor: Oh thank God! That is wonderful news boy, where are you? I

want to see my grandson

Me: You'll see him tomorrow, we're in Mpumalanga

Razor: He was all the way in Mpumalanga! I hope you took care of the kidnapper

Me: Yes I did dad, bye. Send my greetings to my sisters and MaPhindy

Razor: Will do, is makoti okay?

Me: Yes she is

Razor: That is good, well done son. I am proud of you

Me: Thanks Razor

He swore at me and I ended the call. I contacted the gents informing them and I called Danver and Onika to wish them goodnight.

Nasi: I'm done

Me: Let me go shower, he's asleep for now.

I took a shower and halfway through the shower I heard him crying, he has such a loud cry. I finished up quickly and went to help Nasi

Nasi: I don't know what to do Danny, he keeps on crying.

Me: Did you feed him again?

Nasi: Yes



Me: Lets bath him, maybe he'll be fine.

He was laughing and playing with the water when he was taking his bath.

He really enjoyed being in the water. I took many pictures of him and he was such a happy child until Nasi took him out of the water

Me: You cry so much Taylor

She lotioned him and got him dressed. She walked around trying to get him to stop crying but he kept on crying. I cleared up and she felt helpless. She was also crying and I took the baby. After a few minutes he stopped crying and fell asleep.

Nasi: He doesn't want me.

Me: No don't say that, he's just getting used to us.

Nasi: I can't even get him to stop crying McKenzie.

Me: It's just still our first day Nasiphi  
She cried and I held her.

Me: Don't cry, everything will be okay soon.

Nasi: I hope so

Me: I know so, now stop crying and sleep.

Nasi: No, I won't sleep, I'll watch over him

Me: You need to rest, sleep. I'll watch over the both of you.

She got in bed and held him closely. She fell asleep immediately and I took pictures of them. They looked so peaceful but the little guy here with a loud voice will be screaming his lungs out soon. I didn't do this parenting thing properly with Danver and Onika, especially Onika, but now I'm going to do things differently. I'm going to be the best father I can possibly be. I thank God for blessing me with such a lovely family and most especially, my beautiful wife.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's  
of friends

#LBAR

Insert 79

It's been a week since Taylor was found and home safely. It didn't take him long to adjust and I also got used to having him around. Even though he cries alot and likes staying up at night,

it is all just worth it. I have took my 4months maternity leave and I'll be going to work after the four months. Danny didn't want me to go to work at all but he knows he can not stand in the way of fulfilling my dreams. I woke up and Taylor was on the floor with Onika and Danver, they were playing and they love having him around. When they come back from school, they change, eat and then babysit. They enjoy spending time with their little brother.

Danver: You're awake mom

Me: Yes I am

Onika: Dad has rushed to work, he didn't want to wake you up.

Me: Oh okay

I kissed their cheeks and carried Taylor

Me: Morning handsome

I kissed him and he laughed, he has such a huge heartwarming smile.

Just looking at him so grown reminds me of how much I've missed out on but I will definitely make up for it. Its not too late, I'll still get to see him crawl, see him take his first step, hear him say his first words, I'll be there to experience it all with him. We went

downstairs and I put him on my back and prepared supper. He was moving around, he really doesn't like it when I put him on my back.

Onika: Put him down, we'll watch over him

Me: You sure?

Danver: Mom, we're old enough

Me: Oh wow

I put him down and they played with him while I cooked breakfast for them.

Onika: I hope you have cooked sausages and baked beans

Me: Yes I have

Onika: Awesome!!

Danny: Daddy is home!!!

They ran to him leaving Taylor screaming on the floor and clapping his hands. Danny carried Danver, Onika and Taylor

Me: Oh God, my kids will fall

Danver: We won't, Daddy is a big strong man. When I grow up, I want to be like him.

I smiled and Danny had this expression that I didn't understand. He kissed Danvers forehead and put them down and carried Taylor alone.



Danny: My beautiful wife

Me: My handsome husband

Danny: You good?

Me: Yes I am and yourself?

Danny: Never been better. Food is ready? I'm hungry, I hope you got my message

Me: Yes I did

Danny: Well done kids!

Onika: Payment please

Danny took out his wallet and gave them R20 each and they ran to put it in their money tin.

Danny: I had an early meeting, I didn't

even have breakfast

Me: Well sit down my husband,  
breakfast is ready

He set the table and we sat down and  
ate while he had Taylor. After we  
were done, I

cleared the table and washed the  
dishes.

#Danny

Having Taylor home has made this  
house into a home. We don't have  
many memories in this house since it  
hasn't been long since we stayed  
here but we'll building more and more  
memories and the entire family is

here and all I feel is warmth and love.  
Nasi is happy, happier than I've ever  
seen her before and my heart and  
mind is at peace

Me: Babe, when last did you go to the  
salon?

Nasi: Is that your way of telling me  
that I'm ugly?

Me: You're not ugly but your hairstyle  
is old now

Nasi: I'll go today if you can babysit

Me: You should take Asanda with you

Nasi: I will do so when she's awake

Me: I was thinking that we should talk

to her about going back to school

Nasi: Yes we should, maybe she'll love that.

Just as we were speaking about her she came downstairs

Asanda: Good Morning

Taylor opened his arms for her and she carried him

Danny: Slept well?

Asanda: Yes I did thank you

Nasi: Your breakfast is in the microwave

Asanda: Thanks sis

Me: We were just talking about you,

how would you feel about going back to school?

Her facial expression wasn't something we both expected, we thought she would be happy but clearly she wasn't. We looked at each other and waited for a response but she didn't reply

Me: Okay, I take it that it's not a good idea

Asanda: I really appreciate the thought but, I'm not gifted academically. In simple terms, I'm very dumb and I failed my matric dismally, I failed it twice. I never

applied to any university or college or FET because I didn't want anything to do with school. I was always just a laughing stock at school for how dumb I was, I don't even want to put myself through that misery.

Me: You'll be attending the best schools, you'll improve drastically, you'll have tutors and everything will work out. No one is dumb, you have a lot to look forward to in life.

Nasi: Danny is right

Asanda: I appreciate you trying to help me but I think getting a job is what's best for me.

Nasi: What type of job?

Asanda: I want to join the defence army, I want to be soldier

Nasi: Oh no, that's putting your life in danger. You'll be far away from home, you're young Asanda.

Asanda: Home, I don't have a home sis Nasi. I have no one, I can go to the army and do good for the country, protect people, that way, I'll do something that will make me feel good about myself.

Nasi: You have a home Asanda, this is your family. You have us and you're not alone.

Nasiphi was getting emotional about all of this and I had noticed how she had grown so fond of Asanda for the past week. Asanda just cried when she heard her say those words. They had an emotional moment and I took Taylor as they hugged each other.

Asanda: It's something I'd love to do

Me: And we cannot stand in the way of her dreams Nasiphi

Nasi: But Danny

Me: Okay, I have a way that will make things best for everyone. Asanda will join the force, I will train her and monitor her, she will be safe under



our care, that way she fulfills her dream of protecting the people and that way, Nasiphi, you'll know that she is with us and she is safe. She'll be closer to home and she won't be in intense danger

Nasiphi looked at me as if I was crazy

Nasi: The force, Danny, please don't upset me.

Me: Its the best way possible, I know you want to protect her, but you know she'll be safer with us than somewhere else in the world in the army with people she doesn't know.

Nasi: You do have a point, but she's young

Me: She's 20 Nasiphi

Asanda: May I ask?

Me: Sure

Asanda: What is the force?

Me: You'll find out if your mother here, agrees that you will join the force.

Asanda: Please

Nasi: I'll think about it

Nasi walked away and Asanda followed her. It was adorable as to how Nasiphi has become so protective and motherly to her. I

loved how my wife had a big heart and she was loving and I could see how she wanted to give Asanda the best life possible, and that is what I wanted to. Taylor fell asleep and I went upstairs and tucked him in his bed. He has a cot that he uses only during the day and I sat on the bed near him and checked on a few things on my laptop. Nasiphi came in with our washed and ironed laundry and she packed it. She was silent and she seemed to be thinking deeply.

Me: We can adopt her

Her eyes lit up and she looked at me.

Nasi: Really?

Me: Yes, I've seen how you look at her, how you're protective of her and how you treat her as your own. She's a precious child and I'd love to have her as part of our family

She looked at me and came to sit down next to me

Nasi: I don't think she'll agree it, I'm just 8years older than her, you're 14years older. It just wouldn't make any sense

Me: To whom? So what if we're only a few years older than her? We are fit physically and financially to take care

of her.

Nasi: I want to give her the love she longs for, what she has done for us is something that I'll forever be grateful for. Now I just want to take care of her and give her the best life possible.

Me: And that is what she will get.

Nasi: Let us talk to her first

Me: Let's go then

Nasi: The baby

She took Taylor and we went downstairs, he also has a cot there so she put him to sleep. Asanda was watching tv with Onika and Danver.

Me: Asanda, join us in the living room please

Asanda: Sure

She followed us and we sat down.

Nasi: We have something to talk to you about, you don't have to agree to it if you don't want to, we'll understand

Asanda: Oh okay

Me: We would like to legally adopt you, we want you under our care and for you to be part of our family

Asanda: What?

Nasi: It's okay if you don't want to,

you don't have to feel pressured into doing that, I know I'm just a few years older than you and it might be weird for you, I understand

Nasiphi tends to talk alot when she is panicking, Asanda and I ended up staring at her as she was busy blabbling.

Asanda: I am just shocked, you guys don't know me and you've took me in and now you want to be my parents, it's all just so overwhelming.

Me: We want you to have the best life possible

Asanda: Thank you very much, you

don't know how much that means to me

She started crying and Nasi cried too, these two have so much tears.

Nasi: Is that a yes?

Asanda: Yes mom and dad

We stood up and hugged each other.

Me: Thank you

Asanda: Thank you too

They went to the tv room and I made a call.

Me: B'man

Bonga: Talk to me McKenzie

Me: I need you to be on my lawyer



mode

Bonga: What's up, you're in trouble?

Me: Not at all, we want to adopt Asanda.

Bonga: Oh wow man! That's awesome, I'll get the papers and get right on it. I'll be there in an hour.

Me: Good

I went back to them and sat next to my wife and we cuddled

Me: Are you still going out?

Nasi: No babe, we'll go out tomorrow all day long. I've just invited everyone over for a little celebration.

Me: That's good, Bonga will come with the documents

Asanda: It can happen that quick?

Me: Yes it can

Asanda: Oh wow, thank you again.

Nasi: Babe, we need to get Asanda a phone

Me: Asanda, take my tablet and look for a phone you want so we can order it. You can select any electronic devices that you want. Do you have your ID document?

Asanda: Yes dad, I brought them

Me: Good then

She went to take my tablet and I went upstairs followed by Nasiphi.

Nasi: My love

Me: Yes

Nasi: Thank you for making me the happiest woman alive, I don't know if I'd be this happy if it weren't for you. I am really happy and lucky to have you in my life.

Me: I am happy to hear those words and it makes my heart be at peace if you're happy. You know I'd do anything and everything for you to be happy, because when you are happy, we all are happy. I love you Nasiphi

Nasi: I love you too

She kissed me hungrily and pinned me on the wall

Me: Oh?

She giggled and took off my shirt. She kept on kissing my neck and holding my manhood.

Me: Is that what you want?

Nasi: Yes sir

Me: And that is what you will get.

She giggled as I carried her and took off her clothes. Her body looked so sexy and I loved that she was gaining her weight back. Seeing her lose

weight wasn't making me happy at all.

Me:(singing) I'll make love to you, like  
you want me to

Nasi:(laughing) You're singing!

#Nasiphi

I stared at my husband after the  
amazing session of love making we  
had. I kissed his chest and kept on  
making circles near his little nipple.

He has made me the happiest  
woman alive, he loves me  
unconditionally and shows it each  
and every day. I know we've had our  
troubles but I'd never ever want to be  
with someone else. I heard the noise

downstairs and I knew the family has arrived

Me: Wake up

Danny: They're here already?

Me: Yes

We took a quick shower and I changed into a black long dress and I went downstairs

Me: Hey hey!!

Them: Hey girl!

My girls were sitting by the kitchen counter having drinks. I went over to the lounge and greeted MaPhindi, MaNyathi and MaQ. I went to the kids

playroom and checked on the kids.  
Asanda was in her room changing  
into a yellow maxi dress. She looked  
so nervous

Me: You okay?

Asanda: Yes mom, I'm just nervous.  
What if everyone else does not  
accept me?

Me: They will, don't worry yourself.  
We are one big happy family here,  
you have many mothers and fathers.  
Your fathers will be very  
overprotective of you

She laughed and we went downstairs  
together. The table was set up

outside and the kids were all playing on the open field. Lucas was setting up the braai stand and Bee, Kamo and Phelo were marinating the meat

Me: Ngamso baby!

I kissed her very visible pregnant tummy. Razor was carrying Taylor and everyone was having a good time. Venes came in followed by Siboniso. She came and hugged me

Me: What is he doing here?

Venes: He was at my desk when you called and he wanted to tag along. I couldn't say no, I can tell him to leave if you don't want him here



Me: No, it's cool.

Siboniso was chilling with Athi and Lucas. Venes and I went to sit with the other ladies. Asanda was with Sbahle and Pamela.

Bee: He should keep his eyes to himself or he'll be in trouble, Mpho is already giving him bad looks

Me: Who?

Bee: The guy next to Athi

Me: Oh Sibiniso, he isn't looking at me

Bee: Yes he is and what's his story?

We were whispering to each other all

this while and I told her everything

Bee: That's not good, does Venes know since she brought him here?

Me: She knows the story but she doesn't know its him. And I won't tell her.

Danny went over to them and I was a little scared for Siboniso, Danny will not hesitate to hit him if he sees him staring at me.

Zandy: Let's go sit with everyone else

We went there and I stood next to Danny.

Danny: May we have everyone's attention please? Thank you, over to

you my beautiful precious Pearl

Me: Thank you babe, I'd like to thank each and every one of you who is here today. Today is a very special day for me and I am happy because I have my family here. Mbulelo and Gugu came rushing in

Mbulelo: Sorry we're late! Atleast we made it in time for the speech

We laughed at him and I proceeded.

Me: I'm happy more especially because our son is home, safe and sound. I'd like to thank everyone you've been a good support system to us through everything and words

can never describe how thankful we are

Danny: We would also like to specially thank Asanda, we wouldn't be here without you. We wouldn't be this happy if it wasn't for you. Thank you for everything. And we do have an announcement that we want to make

Us: We are adopting Asanda

Razor: Wonderful!! The family keeps on growing!

They clapped hands and we shared hugs while Asanda was being bombarded with hugs and welcoming

her to the family. She came to us and we took pictures together. I carried Taylor and we sat down

Nkosi: We have a daughter, stay away from boys young lady

Naye: Oh and there it starts, she's 20 years old Nkosinathi

Nkosi: So? I'm her father, I have every right to tell her not to be with boys

Sbahle: Hawu kodwa

Mpho: Don't hawu kodwa us here wena, you as young as her. No boys

Lucas: Did you hear that KJ?

Lyanda: Entlek, KJ needs a beating

MaQ: Never, you will not hit my young boy.

KJ: Thanks mah

Thaps: Welcome to the family sis

Siboniso came to me and smiled

Me: Hi

Siboniso: Hey, congratulations I guess

Me: Thank you

Siboniso: Its good to see you again, you've been scarce in the office so I thought I could grab this opportunity and come see you. You look beautiful  
I felt him hold my shoulder and

Taylor's hand.

Danny: She does right? My very own beautiful wife, I'm Danny McKenzie, The husband and you are?

Siboniso: Siboniso Butterworth, the colleagues and ex-boyfriend.

Damn! He shouldn't have said that. He earned himself a punch from Danny and he fell.

Me: Triston!

Danny: You better get out of my house young man.

Siboniso stood up and left. Venes looked at me and I shrugged.

Me: That wasn't necessary

Danny: He's your ex and he called you beautiful. He stepped on a wrong mans territory

I smiled and kissed his cheek. I honestly had no come back for what he had just said. I sat next to him and we cuddled with Taylor. I looked at Asanda as she was dancing with Pamela and Onika. She looked very happy

MaN: I am so proud of you my child, you did the right thing. You've grown so much

Me: Thank you mom



MaPhindy: She really has such a good heart, just like you.

Danny: The twins should come over tomorrow and help me babysit

MaPhindy: I will surely bring them over

Danny: And you can stay too, so we can bond as mother and son

MaPhindy: That would be lovely son.

I smiled at Danny and he squeezed my hand. I was happy that he was genuinely working on his relationship with his sisters and step mom without being told. I guess he is really becoming more of a family man and

realizing the importance of family

MaQ: We are all going to church on Sunday!!

Lubah: What? Nooo, I have a meeting mom

MaQ: And it will be cancelled

Me: Amen

Ngamso: No excuses, church it is.

The guys seemed to be irritated but there was no way of getting out of this one. They were all going to church, like it or not.

Bonga: The papers are in your office

Danny: Thank you

Emihle came to take Taylor

Me: You have grown so much young lady

Emihle: I'll be a mom soon

Danny: Not happening

Emihle: But Dad

Danny: You're still a little princess

She smiled and laughed at Danny

Emihle: If I'm still a little princess, then I'll get the new nike airforce takkies I asked for

Danny: Yes you will.

I went over to Asanda and she hid her drink from me

Me: I guess theres alcohol in there

Sbahle: Just a bit

Asanda: I'm sorry

Me: Don't be, just don't let your father see that for now. I know you're a grown woman

She nodded and I sat with them for a while. I really loved my big family and I am very thankful that I met these people in my life. There's no better place I'd rather be than being here with my family. I looked at Danny and he winked at me. He's such a weird character, I love him anyways.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's  
of friends

#LBAR

Insert 80

2years later

"Mom! Mom! Mom!! Hurry or we'll be very late!" The loud annoying voice that woke me up from my deep sleep kept on screaming. I opened my eyes

and it was Onika screaming and Taylor pulling my bed covers.

Me: Fine! I'm up already

Taylor: Food, food, food.

Onika: I'm also hungry

Me: Me too, let me wake up.

I woke up and took a quick shower. I got downstairs and the kids were nowhere to be found.

Me: Denver!! Taylor!! Onika!

These kids will make me lose my mind completely.

Me: WeMpendulo, Lethukuthula noSiphephelo, sanungangihlanyisi

nina niyezwa?( Don't drive me crazy,  
you hear me?)

"Bengithi imina kuphela okwazi  
ukukuhlanyisa("I thought I was the  
only one who is capable of driving  
you crazy") I turned and looked at the  
door, it was Siboniso.

Me: What are you doing here?

Siboniso: I came to drop off the files  
you asked for.

Me: Couldn't you wait till I got to the  
office?

Siboniso: No I could not since I'm  
taking the rest of the day off, so I  
thought I should just drop them off.

Me: Thanks, will that be all?

Siboniso: Yes and you look beautiful

Me: Thank you

2years ago, after the encounter Danny and Siboniso had, he never really stopped bothering me nor did he stop flirting. We've had a rocky relationship, we get along and then we fight again and again. He says its the sexual tension between us and it needs to be taken care off. The past two years have been good and bad. We've had our bad days, we've had our good days. Taylor has grown so much, watching him grow right



infront of my eyes was a blissful experience. I ended up not going back to work till this week. I've had my fair share of being a housewife and I've had enough of it. After Siboniso had left I looked for the kids and they were playing outside.

Me: You said you wanted food but you're busy playing here.

Danver: We thought you're busy making breakfast all this while

Me: Stay here, I'll just order.

I ordered breakfast from where our chef works and it came in 30mins.

They laid it out and we ate. I got a call

from Danny

Me: My husband

Danny: Hello wife, my senses tell me that there was a man I despise in my house

Me: Your senses or your spies? You like keeping tabs on me

Danny: It is my duty

Me: You're just crazy, he came to drop off a few files

Danny: Why didn't he do that at work?

Me: I also had the same question

Danny: You haven't been back at work for even a week and already

there's trouble.

Me: There's no trouble Danny, when are you coming back?

Danny: You know I still have to stay here for the next two months

Me: I know, I was just hoping I'd see you soon

Danny: I'll make a plan

Me: And where is Asanda, she doesn't call me lately

Danny: I assigned her on a mission

Me: Triston

Danny: She's ready now, I trust her and KJ also went with her so she is

safe. Don't worry.

Me: She better come back soon, I miss her.

Danny: And I'm sure she misses you too. Bye babe, I love you and send my greetings to the kids.

He didn't even give me the chance to respond. He dropped the call and I sighed. He has been away alot since last year, him and Asanda have been all over the world. Asanda's training didn't take that much as she was just a natural in everything. I was proud of her but a part of me was also scared.

Me: Your father sends his greetings.

They were happy and we finished up eating.

Onika: Can we go bath now? I really don't want to be late

Me: Oh Onika, you're just going to Sneh's house, you can get there at anytime

Onika: And miss out on the fun? No thank you

Athi and Mpho are hosting a kids fun day, That's the event we're getting so late for. Ngamso gave birth to a beautiful chubby cheeks princess who they named Ndaloyenkosi, named after Jabu's late first born.

Mpho and Zandy had another baby, it was a boy again and his name is Kgotso. Nceba also blessed us with a baby boy, Sandile, who Thapelo is always glued to. As always Sbahle said we are all incubators and we have soo many kids. Only her and Paula don't have kids. Sbahle and KJs potential relationship just turned into dust. We all don't know what happened besides the both of them. Whenever we ask, they say it just didn't work out. So I guess that is between them and they are good friends, and yes they still argue like alot as always. Kamo, She's been

really happy. She's single and not looking for any man, I had my hopes up for her and Lucas but they also seem to be just pretty good friends. But I still have hope, Naye and Nkosi were friends for four years before they made things official so they give me hope. Speaking of Hope, She's an adorable happy baby, Kamo makes being a single parent so easy, She's happy and her kids are so happy. But she's not really a single parent, her kids have fathers that love them very much and she's not alone at all. Later tonight we will be off to Orange Farm. Naye's older brother is getting

married and Naye has never been so happy. Even Nomkitha, they say he's been dating this girl for about 7 years now. They did break up a few times and now they are finally tying the knot. She says she had already given up on his brother, who is getting into his early 40's and he is now getting married. I am also getting old, I'll be turning 30 this year!! And Danny is turning 37, his birthday party is coming up soon joined with Phila's. We are going to party!! We haven't done that in so long. We are all wondering what the year 2019 has for us. On New years, we all wrote a



few things on a piece of paper that we would like them to happen this year. We put them in a small bottle and let it go with the sea. It was all Nceba's idea but it was a good thing to do. There was a knock on the door as I was watching tv. It was Kabelo and Junior. Junior is so tall, he has grown to be taller than me and has a deep voice. Siya doesn't like that his little son is now a teenager, she feels as if she's aging yet she's only turning 37. Zandy, Bonga, Mpho, Bee and Nkosi are turning 38 this year.

Me: Hello boys

Kabelo: Mah, we young men now

Me: Says who? You'll always be young boys to me

Junior: I'm a young man, not you Kabelo.

Me: How did you get here? I don't see your driver

Junior: I drove here, we're here to fetch you.

Me: You drove?

Junior: Yes

Me: And how old are you? You drove all the way from La Lucia?

Junior: No, from Kabelo's. You know mom would never allow me to drive

from La Lucia. She even doesn't like the fact that I'm driving. She says she wants her little boy back, she doesn't understand that I'm growing

Kabelo: And that you have a girlfriend now

Junior: Oh that's driving her crazy, she thinks I'll impregnate the poor girl.

Me: Junior, you're just 13! Please don't impregnate any girl.

Junior: You all should be telling Emihle not to get pregnant. Her father would kill that poor boy

Speaking of Emihle, She's also just so grown. Naye and Nkosi do not believe

that they have a child who is turning 18 later this december. She's doing her matric this year and she's been so excited. When Naye tells the story about having her at just being 19years old, She's also afraid that Emihle will be pregnant at 19. She's just overthinking things so much. Nceba, Thapelo, Paula, Sbahle, Kaitso and I are just young compared to them. We not even close to 35 yet. At least Ngamso is 34. Its just shocking how time flies. I went upstairs and helped Taylor get dressed. When we were done, we got into the car and Junior drove. I made a video because

I just couldn't believe it. We got to Athi's house and the music was pumping.

Me: This has turned into a party

Junior: You know when theres Mam'Zandy there's always a blast.

Kabelo: My mom loves to party but she's a horrible dancer

Onika: MamSiya is the one who knows how to dance

She was right, Phila and Siya have killer dance moves. She says Phila taught her in high school. They've been part of each others lives since they were 14, it's been 23years, if you

exclude the 5years they were apart, it has been 18years.

Me: Hello hello!!!

Phelo: Hey hey! Here's a glass of good wine sweetheart

Me: Thank you very much

The kids went to the others and Emihle was busy on her phone

Me: MaMkhize

Emihle: Hey mah, this phone is giving me trouble!

Kamo: I told you to tell your father and he'll sort it out.

Emihle: Daddy Jabu said we'll go

fetch my new phone in an hour.

Me: Be patient then

Naye: I still think you don't need a new phone, who do you talk to on that phone?

Emihle: Mom

Ngamso: Leave the child alone. No one monitored your phone when you were 18

Naye: She's 17

Emihle: Turning 18 in December, I'm 18 mom.

Masande: Can I have 4beers?

I chocked on the wine I was drinking.

Me: What?

He laughed at us, we were all just shocked. What will he do with beers?

Masande: I'm just pulling your leg, they're not mine. I'm sent by Dad, they don't want to come this side. They are having a heated conversation

Zandy: I was so ready to hit you with my shoe Masande

Masande: Hah mah, Mah, where is Daddy Danny? He owes me

Me: He's out of the country with Lucas and Asanda. Which reminds me, I have to go to the office now. I'll be back in an hour or two



Paula: Okay cool, we'll see you soon

Siqalo: Can I go with you mah?

Me: Okay come

Sbahle: Come back with Venes, I miss her crazy ass

Me: Will do.

As I went out I met up with Dodo, Nongcebo, Isiphile and Lusanda.

Me: Hey girls!

Dodo: Hey, where are you going?

We've just arrived

Me: I'll be back soon, I'm going to the hospital to check on a few things.

Lusanda: Be back soon, hey Siqalo

Siqalo: Hey Aunty Sanda.

We got into the car and he played music from his phone. I thought we'd talk on the way but he was just focused on his phone.

Siqalo: Can we pass by the flowershop?

Me: What for?

Siqalo: I wanna buy flowers for Buhlebenkosi

Me: Oh wow, Okay.

Siqalo: Don't think deep, it's just a thank you gift. She packed my wardrobe

Me: But I didn't say anything

Siqalo: You didn't have to say anything.

I laughed at him and parked the car.

Siqalo: I'll wait for you here

Me: I'll lock you in

Siqalo: Okay

I locked the car and went inside

Me: Lara! Venes, hello beautiful ladies

Venes: Hey prettyface. Sbahle called me, I'll be leaving with you.

Me: Okay babes

Venes: Let me finish up here

Venes went on a date with Siboniso, she told me the date went South. All Siboniso talked about was me, me and me. I can't believe that he just spoke about me. Venes wanted to know the truth and I told her. From then, she got over her mini crush on him. She was mad at me for not telling her on the get go but she forgave me when I bribed her with wine and chocolates.

There was a knock on my door and Siboniso came in.

Me: Didn't you say you're taking the rest of the day off

Siboniso: Don't be rude, I was called here. There's an emergency and you need to be at the theatre right now.

Me: I'm coming

Siboniso: Now Nasiphi

I sighed and gave my car keys to Venes so she could stay in the car with Siqalo. I don't want him to be alone for a long time. I changed and went into theatre. We performed a quick heart surgery which we had to exchange hearts of two women.

Me: Why is she covered up?

The woman we were operating on, her face was covered up.

Nurse: Her face is burnt, something about a bomb attack. The person who brought her here knows the story.

Me: And the other woman?

Siboniso: Apparently, she was tired of living and she wanted to die so she offered to exchange her heart and give this other woman a chance to live. She's suffered alot but she was still alive, her heart was the only thing that was failing her.

Me: Oh okay

Siboniso: Shes coming all the way from Columbia, the woman shes with

wanted you to operate on her and no body else.

Me: Does she know me?

Nurse: We don't know.

They took the bodies and I changed into the clothes I was in.

Siboniso: Don't you want to go see the lady that brought her in and give her the feedback?

Me: No, I'm in a rush. Please do so

Siboniso: Okay cool. Bye

I went to the office and got the shock of my life as I saw Danny

Me: You don't sneak into people's

offices like that. You gave me fright.

Danny: I didn't sneak in, you were not here so I waited. How are you my wife?

Me: I'm happy now that you're here

We kissed and were disturbed by Siboniso

Danny: What do you want?

Siboniso: Nasi, you'll have to come back later today and check on that woman. They want you and Dr Buthelezi on her case, no body else. I'm out

Me: Okay thank you



Siboniso: Your rounds are at 7pm.

McKenzie, good to see you again.

He left and Danny clicked his tongue.

He looked irritated

Danny: Why is he still working here again?

Me: Danny, let's just go. We not getting into the Siboniso conversation

Danny: Who is that woman anyways?

Me: I don't know, she's from Columbia.

Danny: Why is she operated in South Africa?

Me: I don't know Danny, I'll know this afternoon. Where is my daughter?

Danny: At Athi's, I'm coming from there, I wasn't happy when I saw that my wife isn't there.

We got to the parking and my car wasn't there

Me: Siqualo and Venes?

Danny: I told them to leave.

Me: Siqualo wanted to go to the flower shop, I hope Venes took him there

Danny: What for?

Me: To get flowers Danny, at least he is romantic. Come to think of it, when

last did you buy me flowers?

He played with his hair and I laughed at him.

Danny: I got to up my game, I see the little kids are doing better than me

Me: You should take some tips from Siqalo

Danny: Who is he buying them for?

Me: Buhlebenkosi

Danny: What?

Me: Don't read too much into it, its a thank you gift. She packed his wardrobe

Danny: Mmmmh and you believed

that?

Me: Danny, just focus on the road.

We laughed and drove to Athi's. We got there and I went to my beautiful daughter.

Asanda: Oledi

Me: Maye I'm Oledi now

Asanda: Hey beautiful mom

Me: Now that's it.

We laughed and went to sit with the others. It was a beautiful wonderful and fun day. We shared lots of memories and we talked about alot that we have went through lately in

our lives.

Sbahle: We need more drinks and paper plates

Me: I can go get them at spar

Siqalo: I'm coming with, you promised to take me to that place

Me: Oh okay, come lets go

Kwenzokuhle: I'm also coming and Mngobi

Me: Lets go my boys

Nkosi: Seems like Siqalo likes driving around with you Nasi

Me: Yes he does

Danny winked at me and we left.

Kwenzo sat at the front and he was the DJ. We got to the flower shop first and bought lillies.

Siqalo: Will she like them?

Me: Yes she will.

We then went to Spar and got what we needed. We were on our way home now.

Mnqobi: Mom, I think we're being followed

Me: Are you sure?

I looked back and indeed we were being followed.

Me: Shit!

They started shooting at us and I increased my speed.

Siqalo: Where is your gun mom?!

Me: My gun! Argh why now!

I took out my gun and started shooting but I couldn't do both driving and shooting. Why didn't Junior come with us atleast. I was shocked, I almost peed on myself when Siqalo took my gun from me and started shooting

Me: What the hell are you doing!!!

Siqalo, put the gun down!

Mnqobi: You can't do both mah, just drive!

Kwenzo: I'll call dad

Tears were running down my eyes as I drove off and ended up parking because whoever it is that was attacking us had stopped. I took my gun and looked at the kids I was with. No one said a word and I drove to Athi's in silence. We got there and they were waiting for us at the gate. The guys had their big eyes out. A part of me knew that they all knew that Siqalo can use a gun.

Naye: Oh my babies, are you okay?

Nasi, no one got hurt?

Me: No we're fine. Let's just go inside,



it wasn't a big deal.

Sbahle: Oh I'll get the plastics

Mnqobi: I'll help you.

Mpho: We'll be at the office looking into this attack.

They went to the office following each other. I drank some wine and checked on Taylor. He was with Venes and Dodo. I then went to Athi's office and they looked at me with fear in their eyes.

Me: Care to explain how Siqalo knows how to use a gun?

Nkosi: MaNyathi

Me: Don't MaNyathi me! Just explain

Danny: Babe, calm down.

Me: I am very calm right now, do not upset me.

L'yanda: They have went for training

Me: Since when?

Jabu: Last year

Me: Are you out of your mind?

Phila: Only the boys who have reached 10years old have went.

Me: Are you hearing yourselves!! 10 year olds! How stupid can you be! Is this the life you want to expose our kids to?

Mayi: They have to train at a young age, they have to start learning to protect themselves

Me: They are just kids

Danny: We were kids when we got into this life

Me: And did that do you any justice? No it damaged you! And these kids will not go through that

Lubah: We understand that but it has to be done

Me: It will be done at the right age, you will stop this training nonsense, do I make myself clear?

They kept quiet and looked at me like

I'm some crazy woman

Me: Do I make myself clear?

Them: Yebo MaNyathi( Yes MaNyathi)

I left them there and I was angry but I pretended so the ladies wouldnt be suspicious of anything. All in all we had a wonderful day and the kids had fun. We were all staying over but I had to do my rounds since I've been specifically assigned to this.

Me: Athi, let's go.

Sneh: Where are you going to?

Me: The hospital we'll be back in an hour.

Danny: Be safe

I nodded and we left.

Athi: We're sorry, please don't inform the others

Me: I won't

Athi: Thank you

I went to the wards as soon as we got there and he went to his office.

Me: Nurse, where is the woman I operated on earlier?

Nurse: She's been moved to a private room. Follow me please

I followed her and another nurse was busy removing her bandages that

covered her face.

Me: Hello, I'm Dr Nyathi I'll be monitoring....

Oh no, no, it can't be. I closed my eyes and opened my eyes again. Oh no

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

Insert 81

In all honesty, I couldn't believe what I was seeing. I only saw her on pictures, but I really did recognize the face when I saw her.

Me: What? What happened to you?

Her: I'd rather not explain now. I need to rest. Don't tell them I'm here, please. I just came back for my son, we need to get out of here as soon as possible. Don't tell them I'm here, please Nasiphi

Me: How do you know me?

Her: I just know you. Please let me

rest

Me: This is not over.

I nodded and went to Athi's office.

Athi: You look like you've seen a ghost.

Me: Trust me, I have.

Athi: Ghosts don't exist

Me: Call your friends, tell them to come here, now.

Athi: Yes Mam

This was going to hurt Naye, I had too many questions in my head. I was confused mostly but I chose to keep calm. They got here in a flash and I



told them to sit down while I stood by the door

Danny: You're okay babe?

Me: I'm fine

Thaps: Why are we here? We need to be on a flight to Orange Farm already

Me: Nkosinathi

Nkosi: MaNyathi

Me: Where is Ndiphiwe?

Nkosi: What do you mean? I haven't seen her in years.

Danny: She disappeared after the princess stunt she pulled right?

They all agreed with each other and I

sat down on the floor.

Me: She's here

Mpho: Where?

Me: She's back and she's back for her son

Nkosi: Stop speaking in riddles and talk!

Danny: Do not raise your voice at her Nkosinathi

Nkosi: I'm sorry

Me: She's the woman who specifically asked for my care. I operated on her earlier today, she got a heart from another woman who

said she was tired of life. I don't know the full story but I just saw her now. She says she's back for her son and she needs to leave as soon as possible

Nkosi: I need to see her.

Me: You can't

Athi: Why?

Me: Because she doesn't want to see anyone but me. I don't know how she knows me but she knows me.

Jabu: How do you know her?

Me: I've been told about her and I've seen her pictures.

Nkosi: We're most definitely not going to take orders from her. We're going to see her

Danny: After that, we're off to Orange Farm and this, this stays between us until we get back from Orange Farm, understood Nasiphi?

I nodded, I am keeping so much secrets today it will drive me insane. I took them to her room and luckily she was fast asleep so there was no way she would see that I betrayed her by letting them see her

Nkosi: She has alot of explaining to do.

Me: I guess so

Nkosi: She must just forget it, she won't be getting my son.

Danny: That's right.

Nurse: Dr Nyathi, you need to come see this.

Danny: So you're still addressed as Dr Nyathi?

Me: Danny, we'll talk about this later okay.

I could see that he was upset but I'll deal with him later on. They followed me and I stood and looked at them

Me: Where are you going?

L'yanda: We're just making sure  
you're safe

Me: I am safe

Lucas: You wouldn't be sure, there's  
too many mysteries in this life

Me: Stay here

I went inside following the nurse.

Nurse: I think you should see the  
woman who gave up her heart.

I couldnt take the smell, I ran out to  
the bathroom and I puked. Danny  
was already there holding my weave  
up.

Danny: You okay?

Me: Yes I am.

Danny: I guess we're expecting baby number 5

Me: No we not, that room just had a bad smell.

Danny: You taking a pregnancy test tonight.

Me: Fine

I went back and checked on her. I knew the face but I just didn't know who it was. I mean, I've seen her before but I just can't pinpoint where exactly did I see her.

Me: Nurse, call them in.

They came in and Brian just bent his head and tears escaped from his eyes. Right there, I remembered how I knew her. She's Phila's and Brian's elder sister, the second born right after Nandi. She's the one who tried taking Siya's baby. She's the one who killed those 11 men. She's the one who gave up her heart for Ndiphiwe.

Me: Where is the other woman who came with them both?

Nurse: She left about two hours ago.

Phila: We have to leave, we have a flight to catch

Brian: Philasande, she is our sister



Phila: And right after the wedding, her body will be taken to Lady Smith. Lets go, I have a few calls to make. Nasi, don't mention this to anyone

Me: My lips are sealed.

He's reaction towards this was just Phila, I couldn't even read if he was sad or what. We then left and headed to the airport where we met with everyone else and they were all in high spirits. I took Taylor and went to our seat.

Asanda: You okay?

Me: Yes sweetie, Its just been a long long day.

Asanda: You should sleep once Taylor falls asleep.

Me: That's the plan

We chatted for a while and the guys were also in high spirits like nothing ever happened today. Once Taylor fell asleep, I covered us up and I also slept. I woke up when Asanda said we've arrived at the hotel. I didn't even remember getting out of the plane to the car that drove us to the hotel. I was so exhausted but they were still hype and singing wedding songs

Me: Its 11pm guys, lets just go sleep.

Zandy: You're an old granny today

Me: Whatever.

I got to my room and put Taylor to sleep and went to shower. When I got out Danny was waiting for me with a home pregnancy test in his hand

Me: Really now?

Danny: Yes really now go take it.

I sighed and went to the bathroom. I took the pregnancy test and indeed I was 3weeks pregnant.

Me: Triston!!

Danny: I'm coming

He came in and looked at me. I

showed him the two lines and he kissed me.

Danny: See? I told you

Me: Yeah yeah whatever

Danny: So, are we having the bet this time?

Me: Yes we are and I say its a girl

Danny: And I say its a boy. Let the best man win

Me: Whatever

We laughed and I cleaned myself up and went to bed

**#NEXTMORNING**

We were screaming, singing and

dancing having so much fun. They were having a traditional wedding. Lungelo was really happy, he was marrying Akhona. It was funny how Danny looked so sexy wearing iBheshu. The way I laughed when I saw him for the first time. I couldn't get over it. I was wearing a Xhosa Traditional attire "umbhaco" and he couldn't stop complimenting how it suited me. I loved how the wedding mixed the Zulu tradition and Xhosa tradition and it complimented each other very well.

Aunt: Ngane yam, come help me carry this to the rondavel, the uncles

need more traditional beer

Me: Okay Aunty

Danny: No no, she's not going to lift anything heavy. Don't worry, I'll take it there

Aunt: Washada ingane yomlungu ekutotosayo. Waze wanenhlanhla( you married a white man who treats you like an egg. You are very lucky)

Danny: Imina onenhlanhla mah( I am the lucky one mom)

Aunt: Hawu hawu hawu! Habe, uze ukhuluma nesiZulu!( He even speaks Zulu)

I laughed at her, she seemed really shocked and Danny was happy to have made an impression.

The rest of the day continued very well and everything was a success.

Naye: After so long big brother!! After so long! But still, I am so proud of you. This has to be the happiest day of my life. I love you bro

Lungelo: You're going to make me emotional and I don't want that. Last thing I want is my wife to see me cry

Lwazi: Your wife, that has a nice ring to it don't you think?

Akhona: Yes it does.

Me: Congratulations Akhona

Akhona: Thank you very much and thank you all for coming. I'm honoured to have the King and Queen here and their council.

Thaps: That sounds so formal

L'yanda: I sometimes even forget that this dork over here is a King

Nkosi: Hey, watch it. I can ban you from Langelihle

L'yanda: You wish

Danny: Have a seat MaNyathi, I don't want you to stand for too long

Mayi: You have been keeping an eye



on her more than any usual time. Is there anything we're not being told?

Danny: My beautiful wife here, is pregnant. 3weeks

Sbahle: Oh Jesus

Ntoko: Yeah yeah, we know what you're going to say Sbahle.

Congratulations sweetie

Me: Thank You

Phelo: I want to go sleep now and relax

Brian: You'll relax on the plane, we have somewhere to be

Ngamso: Hawu, where are we going?

Phila: We'll explain later, everyone should just get to their hotel room and pack.

Lungelo: Is it something you'll need help with?

Lubah: No brazo, go enjoy your honeymoon. We'll be fine

Mpho: Go make millions of babies. We want them running all over the yard

Sbahle: By 2025 we'll be having 70kids

Razor: I actually want 200 grandkids so boys, you have to work.

Bonga: Yes sir

Me: Yhu, we'd really be out of our minds.

We said our goodbyes and went to the hotel. I took a quick shower and changed into a comfortable tracksuit

Me: Do you want to bath Taylor?

Taylor: Yes mom

Me: Okay come

He was getting sleepy and I quickly bathed him

Me: No more travelling after this, the kids need to rest Danny.

Danny: No more travelling babe, I promise.

We were taken to the airport and the amount of bodyguards we had was really so dramatic

Asanda: Was the intense security necessary? I still can't get used to this at all

Naye: Yup, same here

Zandy: I love it when its like this

Mpho: Ofcourse you do, you love drama babe

Zandy: And you love me just the way I am.

Mpho: Your friend is very dramatic, theres this one day. She barged into my office, carrying a gun, screaming

my name from down the hallway.  
Looking like hell, the hair is not  
combed, she looks like she's been hit  
by a truck and is just about to kill me!  
Just for some damn dunked wings  
that she was craving. Her stomach  
was so big, when she shouted it  
literally was jumping up and down  
imitating every word she says.

Zandy: And you're just exaggerating  
Mpho

Bonga: Trust me, It's true. I was there

Zandy: You're surely going to side  
with him

Mpho: Who do ypu believe guys?

Me: Zandy, I'm with Mpho on this one

Athi: As much as what Mpho is saying did happen, but he is adding a little bit of spices to it.

Zandy: Thank you! Thank you

Athenkosi

Thaps: You're both just the same

We were having a good time all the way to Lady Smith. We arrived just in time for supper

MaNgcobo: Welcome! Welcome my beautiful kids.

She was already dressed in black. I guess Phila had already informed them. The girls were confused as to

why the family was wearing black and there was candles lit up.

Bee: Who died and why weren't we informed?

Jabu: Sit down, we'll explain.

Nandi: Kids!! Follow me, wanna know where we're off too?

Buhle: Aunty, you do know you cannot bribe us with the play room anymore?

Nandi: And how old are you? You still need to play, only the teens can tell me that

Buhle: I want to be bribed with Ice Cream

Masande: Yeah me too

Nandi: Fine, Ice cream it is then

They followed Nandi with Taylor holding Hopes hand, they get along so well. Well I guess its because they are born on the same day. We sat at the dinning table and ate.

Ntoko: Is anyone going to explain now?

Paula: I mean we are halfway through the meal now

The guys looked at me, really? Are they really going to do this to me

Me: Really now?



Bonga: What? It's going to be more appropriate coming from you

Athi: Plus you're the one who found out first

Me: Mxm you can't be serious

I looked at Danny but he chose to be more focused on his food

Me: Fine. Yesterday when I rushed to the hospital, I had to operate on a woman who happened to be transferred all the way from Columbia. We had to exchange hearts between two women. Long story cut short, in the evening when I was doing my rounds. I discovered

that the woman I was operating on is someone we know and she said she is here to take her son, it seems as if she is in trouble.

Siya: Who is she?

Me: Ndiphiwe

Naye: Excuse me please

Nkosi: Ayabonga

Naye: Don't follow me Nkosinathi

Nkosi: MaKhoza, don't leave.

Naye: I just want to be with my son,  
My King.

Naye addressing Nkosi as "My King" said it all. She had completely

changed into something else in just a slight second. Nkosi seemed so frustrated as he followed her.

Mayi: I hate seeing her like that

Kamo: Trust me, no one does. I literally get so scared of her

Zandy: The story isn't over, who are we mourning here? What does Ndiphiwe have to do with the Ngcobo's?

Me: The woman who gave up her heart for Ndiphiwe is Namhla, Phila's sister. Now that's how the Ngcobo's come in.

Siya: Oh

There was an awkward silence and I just focused on my food too. Only the sound of cutlery was heard. Paula decided to break the ice

Paula: We are all very sorry for your loss Mr and Mrs Ngcobo. I do hope that God will give you strength to move on from this tragedy.

She squeezed Brians hand and he had a few tears in his eyes.

MaNgcobo: Although Namhla was such a problematic child. She was still my daughter and she doesn't deserve to die.

MrN: No parent deserves to bury their

child.

Those were the only words that he had uttered since we got here and they were the last. He stood up and went upstairs to his room. Phila followed him and so did Brian.

Nandi: Mom wants it to be a small intimate funeral and it will happen tomorrow

Me: That is so soon

Danny: Everything has been arranged. They don't want to drag this.

Siya: She didn't do right by me but dear Lord, forgive her for all her sins and accept her soul

Bee: Amen

This was making me see something different about these people. I could see it in Siya's eyes that she wasn't hurt by her death at all. She wasn't showing any emotion and what she had just said, it was blank and without meaning. I guess Namhla really did do bad things in her life. As for Ndiphiwe, that's another story that I do not wish to see how it unfolds.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

Clarity on the kids names and who is the parent.

Cause most people are confused and don't know the babies names

Siqalo- Ntokozo

Kwenzokuhle- Naye

Emihle-Naye

Luthando- Belinda

Thembelihle-Kamo

Ngcebo- Siya (Quad)

Mnqobi- Siya (Quad)

Lisakhanya Sabelosababakhe -Naye

Khanyakwezwe- Siya (Quad)

Onika Lethukuthula - Nasi

Kabelo- Zandy

Danver Mpendulo- Nasi

Masande- Siya (Quad)

Siphosenkosi-Naye

Buhlebenkosi- Naye

Mbonisi Siphetho Mkhize- Naye

Ntandokazi- Bee



Thandokazi- Bee

Lesley Junior- Siya

Ziyanda- Sneh

Alwande-Phelo

Siphesande and Sphelele- Bee

Jane and Jenna- Dannys little sisters

Taylor Siphephelo- Nasi

Langaletu Hope - Kamo

Ndaloyenkosi Shezi- Ngamso

Sandile- Nceba

Kgotso Lebone- Zandy

## Insert 82

We came back from Lady Smith yesterday, the funeral went on and it was a dignified funeral and she was laid to rest peacefully. I was happy to see Phila cry, to me it showed that he still had a little something for his sister. He was just filled with anger that was caused by her actions. I don't have any right to judge them since I was not here when everything happened with Namhla. I was told but I wasn't there to experience the

intensity of it and to me that made me feel I had no right to judge. The kids were taken to Cape Town at a safe house with their grandmother's. I'm not sure why but Phila said it is necessary that they go there and they will be home schooled. We were all just getting the feeling that things are about to get rough and we had to make sure that the kids are at a safe place. I did my morning routine and went downstairs

Me: Danny!! Where are you?

Danny: The gym

I went to the gym room and he

looked so sexy

Me: What a beautiful sexy sight to see early in the morning

Danny: Well I'm glad you appreciate what you see.

We kissed and he went to shower while I made breakfast for him. I dished up for him when he came downstairs

Danny: You're not eating?

Me: I'll have fruitsalad

He nodded and I made myself fruitsalad and ate. My phone rang and it was Siboniso

Me: Dr Butterworth

Siboniso: You're needed, this woman who only wants you to monitor her is awake and she needs a check up.

Plus the woman who came with her wants to see you when she gets here

Me: These people seem to be very demanding. I'll be there in 30mins

He dropped the call and Danny was looking at me.

Me: What is it?

Danny: Why is he calling you?

Me: It's work related

Danny: Why can't it be Venes calling

not him? Or the other receptionist , JJ?

Me: Because I work closely wuth the Siboniso. Plus Ndiphiwe is the one who demanded that I be the one that should be taking care of her.

Danny: We need to see her, she needs to be questioned.

Me: I don't think she'll speak if she sees you guys, especially Naye and Nkosi

Danny: You'll find a way, Naye will want to see her whether she likes it or not. Ndiphiwe isn't going to get Kwenzokuhle, Naye won't hesitate to kill her if she causes trouble.

Me: I'm leaving now

Danny: It's like you're running away from this conversation

Me: I am, I just have a bad feeling about all of this. There are too many missing pieces. When are you leaving?

Danny: Where to?

Me: Another mission Danny

Danny: When you're 3months pregnant, I want to be here on the early stage of your pregnancy.

Me: Oh

Danny: You seem irritated

Me: You're irritating me

Danny: What did I do now?

Me: Will you drive me to work or I should do it myself?

Danny: I'll drop you off then go to HQ

Me: Fine

He twisted his eyes at me and just seeing his face made me want to vomit.

Danny: I wonder what I did to you

Me: Why are you smiling? You showed your ugly face

Danny: This will be a very long pregnancy. It's taking a toll on me already



Me: If you knew what a condom was,  
we wouldn't be here

Danny: A condom is a sin babygirl.

He was so serious I ended up  
laughing at him

Me: Argh Danny, you're just  
something else.

He dropped me off at work and I  
went to put my bags in the office

Venes: Want some coffee?

Me: Yes please

Venes: Your brother made an  
appointment

Me: Which one?

Venes: Ntsikelelo Nyathi

Me: Oh wow, he's back in town.

Venes: I think that's his car parking there

I rushed outside and he smiled when he saw me running towards him. He looks like Nkonzo but he doesn't have the same personality as him nor his mother and sister. I have so many siblings yet I don't spend enough time with them

Me: Hey little brother!!

Ntsikelelo: Big sis, how are you? You look beautiful

Me: Thank you very much, you don't

look too bad yourself

Ntsikelelo: It's been a while

Me: It's been too long

We went to my office and had coffee

Me: Ayboh! I forgot I shouldn't be having coffee, but one won't hurt right?

Ntsikelelo: You're pregnant?

Me: Yes

Ntsikelelo: Congratulations sweetie, drink a glass of water afterwards

Me: Will do, so whats going on in your life?

Ntsikelelo: Nothing much, just

graduated and I was bombed that  
you weren't there

Me: You know your mother, she didn't  
want me there

Ntsikelelo: I know, she's just so evil.  
She irritates me. But other than that it  
was awesome. Sis Nasi, I'm looking  
for a job

Me: Oh okay, so what can I do for you?

Ntsikelelo: You forget that you own  
Nyathi Mining

Me: Oh! I really forget, well you  
shouldn't worry. It was your father's  
company too and you'll work there  
but we have to do things by the book

Ntsikelelo: Thank you very much, I'll email my CV to the head of HR

Me: Do so and I'll talk to her.

Ntsikelelo: Thank you very much sis

Venes: You need to do your rounds  
Nasi

Me: Boy, I need to get to work

Ntsikelelo: I'm so old for you to call me boy, I'll see you next week and I'll come with Cebo. We miss you

Me: I'll visit you soon.

Ntsikelelo: Do you promise?

Me: Yes I do, as long as MaCebisile ain't there. Send my greetings to

MaZethu, I'll call her this afternoon.

Ntsikelelo: Will do

We hugged and I walked him to his car. I went to Ndiphiwe's ward.

Me: Good morning

Ndiphiwe: Hi

Me: Sit up please

I did check ups on her and she was well.

Me: You're responding well to the heart and that is a very good thing. You'll be out of here soon.

Ndiphiwe: And I will fetch my son and go somewhere far

Me: Are you that stupid?

Ndiphiwe: What do you mean?

Me: You know Nkosinathi very well judging from what I've heard and what I've seen by knowing him for these years. Do you honestly think he will give you Kwenzokuhle?

Ndiphiwe: He will, he has no choice, I am Kwenzo's mother

Me: That's where you're mistaken, Naye is Kwenzokuhle's mother.

Ndiphiwe: I gave birth to him!

Me: No need to shout, it's not good for your heart. Plus we're having a conversation like adults

Ndiphiwe: I'm sorry

Me: Yes you gave birth to him but you've never been a mother to him. Giving birth to him doesn't really count right now.

Ndiphiwe: I need you to help me

Me: I can only help you if you tell me the whole story, what brings you and Namhla Ngcobo together?

Ndiphiwe: I cannot tell you right now

Me: Then I'm afraid I cannot help you.

Ndiphiwe: Can I trust you?

Me: Can I trust you?

Ndiphiwe: You're impossible. Namhla



and I met at the Columbian Drug Force. Well a man called Duo approached me and told me that he has a job for me, I was in need of the job and I took it. Little did I know that he just wanted to have something against Nkosi, what he didn't know is that Nkosi doesn't give a shit about me. So when he discovered that, I had to go work and transport drugs to different countries. That's when I met Namhla because we did the same job. She told me alot, she told me what she did and how everyone thought she was in jail. Duo helped her escape, she only stayed there for

just one year. Things got tough there so tough we wanted to run away but we couldn't, the only way out is death. So when Duo was killed, we saw that as an opportunity to run away, but Tropez wife thought otherwise and bombed us. She is the one who brought us here, she is coming to avenge all of you. If you don't get me out now, we're all in trouble.

Me: Who is she?

Ndiphiwe: I cannot tell you

Me: I will call the others and they will be able to help you.

Ndiphiwe: No!

Me: WeNdiphiwe, don't irritate me please. Do you want help or not?

Ndiphiwe: I do

Me: Now?

Ndiphiwe: Sorry

I called Danny and told them to come. Apparently they were already on the way. They got here and Naye was the first to come in.

Naye: We meet again Ndiphiwe

Ndiphiwe didn't say anything. In all honesty I was scared for her. The look Naye gave her was just too creepy

Nkosi: Talk! What are you doing here?

Me: You have to calm down, she doesn't need stress.

Jabu: Sometimes, you don't need to be a doctor in such situations. Even if this heart fails her, it would be okay.

Me: Jabulani

Jabu: What? I'm just saying

Ndiphiwe told them everything she told me.

Naye: You do know that we can help you escape but you will not get my son

Ndiphiwe: He is my son!

Naye: Oh really? So dear mother, where have you been for the past years where I have been raising Kwenzo? What do you even know about being a mother to him? What size does he wear? How old is he! What school does he attend? What is his favourite colour, food, song and activity? You don't know anything about him and you wont know anything. You had a chance in his life and you ruined it!! You bastard

Naye slapped her and Nkosi held her back. She was screaming and shouting telling her she will kill her if she tries to take her son away.

Lucas: Hey! Calm down! We are at a hospital for Pete's sake! Tone it down

Me: Thank you Lucas

It was better that the rest of the girls weren't here. We would be having too much noise. Only Sneh, Siya, Naye and Bee were here. Venes running in

Venes: You have a visitor Ms Ndiphiwe and she wants to see your Doctor

Me: Send her in

Venes: Are you sure?

Me: Why are you so freaked out?

Venes: I... I.. am not... freaked out.

Voice: You seem to be taking your own time young lady

The voice had a an accent and she just walked in. I closed my eyes and breathed in and out. It can't be, it is her. She's... She's here

Danny: Ziyanda?

She looked around and it seemed as if she didn't know anyone here

Zee: Who is Dr Nyathi? I need to speak to her

Me: That would be me

Zee: Dr Nyathi, it's a pleasure to meet you. I'm Camilla Tropez, Ndiphiwe's friend.

Me: Ms Tropez, uhm do you....

Zee: Not to be rude but it's Mrs Tropez, not Ms

Danny: Ziyanda!

Sneh was in shock, we were all in shock. We were just trying to digest everything that was happening in front of us.

Me: I can't breathe properly

Danny: Nasiphi! Nasiphi, baby breath in and out. Nasiphi! Nasiphi!

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's



of friends

#LBAR

Insert 83

I opened my eyes when I felt a cold  
substance on my body

Me: WTF!!

Danny: Baby, baby you're okay

Zee: Oh Stop being so dramatic now  
Triston!

Danny: Oh so you know me now?

Zee: Ofcourse I know you, Thor.

Me: So I wasn't dreaming? She's really alive

Sneh: I wish it was a dream.

Zee: Could you just stand up and discharge her?

Me: She's not ready to be discharged yet. I will discharge her in a week

Zee: A week!! Oh my God

Her accent was so unique and she was totally different from the pictures I've seen, from the stories I've heard about her and how her personality

was described. She, she was just something else. This is isn't how I imagined her to be, even if I was given a chance to meet her again, I would never in my wildest dream think that I will meet someone like this. I looked at Danny as he was staring at his wife. He was lost, he was confused most of all he was hurt.

Nkosi: Ziyanda

Zee: I am Camilla Tropez.

Nkosi: Camilla, where do you come from?

Zee: What do you mean where do I come from? From Columbia

obviously

Siya: I think we should leave

Zee: Yes you should.

Mpho: We are not leaving here till we get an explanation!

Me: Let us leave, please.

I looked at Siya, I knew she had a plan.  
I just had to trust her.

Me: You should all leave, I have to give my patient her medication, Venes, call Nurse Judy for me with Ndiphiwe's medicine please.

Venes: Yes Dr Nyathi

They all left besides Zee, in all

honesty I was so afraid of being in the same room as her. Being in the same room with a ghost! Okay, she is not a ghost. Whatever she is.

Me: Please sit up, I need to connect you to the drip. You'll lay down once we're done

She nodded and she was in fear.

Zee: So what are you going to do with this messed up face? My clients can't see her like that

Me: The burns were intense, she might be like this for her entire life.

Zee: Perform a plastic surgery on her

Me: That is not my field but if she

agrees to it I can appoint a doctor to assist her tomorrow. And see if she's ready for one

Zee: How long will they take to heal?

Me: A couple of days

Zee: What are you up to Pearl!? You seem to be delaying everything

Me: So you do know me?

Zee: Trust me, I know all my enemies

Me: I didn't know we're enemies but I'm glad you informed me.

Zee: Don't act smart with me

Me: You're way more smarter than I am, I wouldn't dare do that. Tell me

something, did you plan all this? Did you ever really die?

Zee: I don't know what you're talking about.

Me: I'm not dumb!

Zee: I'm not dumb either, I hate that we come from the same virgina

Me: You seem to be well informed for someone who pretended not to know any of us

Zee: It's always good to fake a little drama just like that stunt you pulled, you really didn't faint did you? You just wanted the attention

Me: You're sick

Zee: I am not sick!!!

She screamed and I was certain that she is sick

Ndiphiwe: Don't upset her

Me: Please leave Mrs Tropez, you're stressing my patient.

Zee: I will be back tomorrow, I don't know why she wanted to be treated by you!

Me: I'm the best at what I do, that's why. Leave

She stormed out and I waited for about 30mins. Venes came in with a bag and I tossed the tracksuit that was inside to Ndiphiwe



Ndiphiwe: What is going on?

Me: You're leaving with me. Venes,  
get your car ready

Venes: Yes mam!

Me: You better hurry up

She got dressed and I signed her discharge papers forging Zee's signature. Perks of having the same handwriting. I had to sign the discharge papers, as much as I'm the owner of the hospital, she can lay charges against me and have me arrested. Not that it would actually happen but hey, I'm just saying. We got out and Venes drove to HQ

Siya: Took you long enough, I knew you'd get me.

Naye: You're so full of tricks

Me: Did you tell the other ladies?

Siya: Everyone has been briefed already

Me: How's Sneh taking it?

Siya: Very hard

Danny: Come sit and explain everything Ndiphiwe, do not leave out a single detail because if you do, your life is at stake.

Ndiphiwe: Water please

Sbahle passed her a bottle of water

and she drank it. She then closed her eyes and started speaking.

Ndiphiwe: I didn't know you alot, I didn't spend enough time with all of you to be able to know what kind of personalities you had but I was very sure that the Ziyanda you all knew wasn't the Ziyanda or shall I say Camilla that we knew in Columbia. When I got there I was shocked to see her, I knew that she was dead but at that time it seemed as if she was mentally disturbed and tortured. I was so confused and when I met Namhla she told me everything she knew. She told me that she had

helped in the planning of Ziyanda's fake death. Ziyanda knew nothing about it then, they knew that without Ziyanda, your force is nothing. They wanted it to be a car accident and then steal her body there but Namhla didn't agree to it. She said it would be something you'd dig dip in. That they needed to do something that will show that she died of a natural cause. So she came up with the plan and it was a success. It took them about 2years to do everything and plan everything carefully

Danny: Why didn't they do it when she was pregnant with Danver?

Ndiphiwe: She said that her first pregnancy was not as complicated and intense as they wanted it to be, they needed to really pull this off, they had to wait and hope that she would be pregnant again and indeed she did get pregnant. Thabo, he was around you, he was a part of you so that worked in their favour, he used to give Zandile drinking substances whether it was water, tea or whatever that is liquid, now that is what caused the complications she had on the pregnancy and the poison there affected her and the child but couldn't be identified if tested for anything.

causing the complications. So knowing you, they knew that Naye would be delivering Zee's baby, and she needed assistance, the room next door to the one she was giving birth in was the room where Namhla and her team was. The doctor that was assisting Naye and another nurse who was there too was part of Namhla's team. It was expected that she would have complications while giving birth so it worked to their advantage, the injection she was injected with didn't kill her but it made her unconscious. When Naye went to deliver the bad news of her passing,

thats when the bodies were exchanged. Most of Muzi's children, which I suppose is your father, are identical in a very creepy way.

MaZethu, she gave birth to a baby girl which was claimed dead, that was before she even married Muzi, that baby girl was not dead and that girl was the same age as Ziyanda. Duo's father, he had been enemies with Muzi ages ago! Before we were even born, he is the one who stole the child and raised her, training her and he, he was very fond of the child because she turned to be exactly how he wanted her to be, he named her

Camilla. Duo wasn't happy about his father loving a child that was not his more than him. He killed his own father and started using Camilla as a tool. When they needed someone who looked like Zee, he took the opportunity and they killed her and exchanged bodies. You were sad, you were heartbroken and you didn't notice that Camilla was a size 32 while Zee was a size 34. She was slimer than her, but who would pay attention to that at such a tragic moment, you did bury someone, but you buried the wrong body. You buried Camilla not Ziyanda. At that



time Ziyanda was being moved all the way to Columbia. Namhla's plans had worked and she was greatly rewarded for everything she had done. Duo, Lapita, Tropez were very happy with her and that's when they started drugging Ziyanda. They have hard drugs and they have very very good doctors and scientists who have been working on Ziyanda for years, it took her 3years to be finally what they wanted her to be. She didn't forget about you all but she knows that she has no child with you, all the information that she was working on, everything involving her family and

finding you Nasiphi, she spoke about that and they managed to twist the information alot. She was turned against you and she is seeking her revenge. Mr Tropez always had a soft spot for Zee, thats why he didn't hesitate to marry her. Unfortunately she couldn't have babies anymore because of the poison she was fed. She believes that it is all your fault Naye, that you damaged her womb. She was fed alot of lies and turned into something else. When Duo, Tropez and Lapita were killed and you taking over their cartels, she was certain that you all killed them and

she, she is here to seek her revenge. She is very dangerous, she won't stop until she kills Nasiphi, Naye and Danny. Those are the people she is loathing blood for. And she will kill me too. I tried to escape, that is a death sentence for me. Namhla, she was having so many regrets, because of the way she was now treated and she finished all her money on drugs, she wanted to come clean, but Zee caught her and she is the one who threatened her and told her that she will give me her heart because I was starting to have heart failure. That's how she managed to get Namhla out

of the picture. Namhla had written many, many letters telling everything. But they were burnt when Zee set up a bomb in our room and I was there. That's why I'm like this. For the past years, this is the life we've been living. And that is how Ziyanda is Camilla Tropez

Me: Wow

Sneh: I have no words at all

Me: This life, this life that we live is not a good one. Look at how things have turned out, look at the mess we are all in. Ziyanda has suffered! The sister we didn't know about has

suffered and ended up being dead. Your sister Phila, she is dead. Can't you see, the only way out of this life is death! When will this all end, when will we be at peace! We are about to be on a life threatening war, that demon in Ziyanda is out for blood and she is going to get it one way or another. Trust me, the only question is, who is going to die next! Who is next!

Paula: Nasiphi calm down please

Ngamso: She is right but right now, sulking about it won't help. The damage has been done and we have to fix the bits and pieces that we

have left to fix. Call Jomo

Bonga calles Jomo and he came in.

Ngamso: Take Ndiphiwe back to the hospital

Us: What?

Jabu: She will be safe there, Zee will think that she hasn't spoken nor has she betrayed her because she is afraid of dying.

Danny: KJ, tighten up the security in Cape Town. Asanda, call all our best agents, they need to come down and work with us.

Me: Don't you think we need Razor?  
I'm just saying

Phila: They will be called

Ndiphiwe: Zee is not working alone, she is working with the sons of the men you killed. Be careful

Me: We will and Thank you Ndiphiwe

Nkosi: Yes, thank you.

Naye: Maybe I'll allow you to see a picture of Kwenzokuhle

Ndiphiwe: Thank you, thank you very much

Naye: Don't thank me yet, I will think about it.

Kamo: Lubah, organise all weapons.

L'yanda: We are not taking any

chances, Paula, Nasi, Phelo, you need the final stage of training.

Zandy Nasi is pregnant, L'yanda.

Me: I can handle it, I know I can.

Danny: No!

Me: Triston, this involves me as much as it involves you. I need to know how to protect myself in every way possible. I will protect my baby and myself. Please, just trust me Danny.

He came close to me and held me. We kissed and he looked me in the eye.

Danny: I trust you



Me: I wouldn't be Mrs Thor for nothing right?

Danny: Yes

Me: I know this is hard on you, she's your wife and she's been through a lot but we will get through this. I don't know where this will put us but if possible, we will save her life.

Danny: You're my wife, no matter what happens, know that I love you and only you. Remember what I used to say?

Me: I'm yours Danny McKenzie, I am yours

Danny: Good. I love you Amahle

Me: I love you too Triston

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's  
of friends

#LBAR

Insert 84

#Danny

Life has a way of doing mysterious

and unexpected things. Where I am right now, my current situation in life isn't a pleasant one. I feel as if God is punishing me for all of my sins. I feel as if I'm being pushed into a corner and I am suffocating. I feel hurt, betrayed, upset and a lot of mixed emotions, happy isn't one of them. Years ago if Zee would've come back in my life I would be thrilled, I would be so happy but right now, in not. I'm stuck between feelings that were forgotten but came back by just seeing and hearing her voice, feelings of being deep in love with my wife who is my ex wife's sister. My life is

so complicated. I looked into Zee's eyes when we saw her, she, she is damaged and she needs help. I can't let her be like that and Nasi feels the same way.

Bonga: I know its a stupid question that you don't wanna hear but what will you do?

Me: I don't know gents

We were having beers at Phila's house. I needed a breather and I couldn't be at home with Nasiphi, I couldn't face her yet. She just has a way of reading right through me and I don't want to hurt her at all.

Danny: What I do know is that I should help her get back to her normal state. It might not be easy but it has to be done

Thaps: Once she's okay? What will happen? Surely she might expect to have the life she had before all of this happened

Me: True

Mpho: So you'll have two wives?

Me: As much as I love them both, I will not have two wives.

KJ: I just want to know one thing and one thing only.

Mayi: I just feel as if he won't be able

to answer it.

KJ: What happens if you need to choose, I mean who will you choose?

Me: I don't have an answer to that.  
Can we just stop talking about me for a second.

"Danny" oh god, I knew that voice from the back of my head. It was Nasi and we were all wondering how long has she been standing there. She seemed so down and so hurt, I concluded that she had heard everything.

Athi: MaNyathi

Nasi: Hey guys, just wanted to tell

Danny not to leave me when he goes,  
Siya and I are having supper in her  
room

Me: Okay babe, you look beautiful

She nodded and went back inside the  
house. I sighed and Athi chose to  
laugh at me

Brian: Really? You look beautiful? Is  
that all you could come up with?

KJ: Wrong move man!

Me: Whatever man, I just needed to  
say something

Nkosi: This is shit

Me: You can say that again.

Mpho: I found the hotel she is in

Lubah: Let's go

Me: We can't all go, it's going to blow our cover. Surely she has body guards all over.

Nkosi: Danny, KJ, Athi and Lucas, you all go and we'll stay behind.

Me: Let me tell Nasi I'll come back and fetch her.

I went upstairs to Siya's room and Nasi was sleeping peacefully as Siya was covering her with a blanket.

Siya: She fell asleep, she was pretty hurt so she didn't even pay attention to the movie.



Me: I'll come fetch her

Siya: Don't, she'll sleepover. We need to cuddle and I'll comfort her, I don't think you're in a position to do that.

Me: What do I do Siyamthanda?

Siya hugged me and whispered in my ear

Siya: Do the right thing Danny, do the right thing.

Me: What is the right thing?

Siya: Only you will know.

I sighed and kissed Nasi even though she was fast asleep.

Me: I love you

She opened her eyes and smiled at me. Then closed her eyes again and slept.

Me: Is she even sleeping in a good position? Isn't she squashing the baby?

Siya:(laughs) No she isn't. Now go, I'll take care of her. Tell Phila he must use another room.

I went downstairs and told Phila

Phila: Hah why now?

Me: My wife invaded

We took off going to the hotel that Zee was using while on the phone with Mpho.

Me: How does this drug work?

Athi: It will dissolve in water, it won't be visible at all. She just needs to drink the water and it will be in her system. The molecules in this pill, will travel in her brain and refresh memories of the past to her. It will get rid of the drugs she's been fed and it will cause a bit of damage

Me: Athenkosi, she's suffered enough. Isn't there another way?

Athi: Let me finish, it will cause alot of confusion to her but if she takes pain killers and sleeps, then wala! It will not cause much damage. Don't

be shocked, she might seem a bit crazy.

Lucas: Seems as if there's no easy way to do this. She has one woman working for her at the hotel and she is there now, she is the only one who brings her food, water, towels and everything she needs. Her name is Goodness and she has two sons, one is disabled, he's name is Mthobisi and goes to a special school. The other one is Monwabisi, and he is normal and still stays at home

KJ: I don't like this but we'll have to threaten her with her kids.

We looked at her pictures and she would be easy to spot.

Mpho: " Okay, its safe for you to get in, she's the only one on the helpers desk."

It was not the fancy hotels we're used to. I guess she didn't want to blow her cover. People know her and people think she was dead, well that's if they can tell her apart from Nasi. I mean, who wouldnt know her? She was married to me, okay let me not blow my own horn.

We looked for a basement with Athi while KJ and Lucas worked on

getting Goodness down to the basement. The camera's had been shut down by Mpho so they wouldn't be able to see us. They came down with her and she seemed terrified

Goodness: I don't have any money, please don't harm me.

Me: This will be quick and easy

Goodness, you just need to listen

Goodness: I know you

Me: You know me?

Goodness: No, not you, him. We went to high school together. Uhm

Athenkosi Buthelezi right?

Athi: I don't remember you, but it's

much better now. You'll do your high school mate a favour and since you don't have any money, you'll earn so much in return.

Lucas: Now you don't tell anyone about this or you'll have to bury Mthobisi

Goodness: No, no, my child! How do you know about him?

KJ: That doesn't matter, if you cross us both Mthobisi and Monwabisi will be dead, am I clear?

She nodded as she was crying. This wasn't any fun at all. It was sad actually.

Athi: We need you to put these pills tonight and tomorrow morning in Mrs Camilla Tropez's water. That simple! You'll have to put this small camera on so we can see that you actually do the job and leave the camera there

Goodness: How will I do that?

KJ: Put it on her towels or something. Just make sure it's there. When you're done, come to the Jeep that's parked outside.

She nodded and took the pills. She put the camera next to her badge. We rushed back to the car and contacted Mpho



Me: Is it clear?

Mpho: Yes I'm connecting the system to your gadget.

It was connected and we could see and hear everything.

Athi: Goodness is praying, oh we're making the poor woman sin.

Lucas: This feels so bad but it has to be done.

She then poured the pills in the water and waited for a while. She took fresh flowers and put them in a vase

Me: Maybe she'll put the camera there

She then went to Zee's room and entered. Zee was walking around with only a thong and bra on.

Lucas: Fuck!

I looked at him and they laughed.  
These pervs!!

Me: That's my wife you're drooling over. Wow she has a tattoo now.

It was a tattoo all over her back of an eagle holding a snake in its mouth. She was so sexy I felt myself feeling things of the past. But I wasn't going to let that get to me.

KJ: Can she get dressed already?

Me: She won't. She loves staying

naked.

Athi: Yes she drank the whole bottle

"Goodness: You're that thirsty"

"Zee: Yes I am, plus I love water."

She took the second bottle and drank it all.

Athi: She's going to pass out.

Me: Overdosing has no effect?

Athi: I think so

Me: What do you mean you think so?

You should know!

Athi: Hey! Don't bite my head off, it's the first time I'm using it.

Me: Where did you even get this?

Athi: I don't spend hours in my lab for nothing.

Athi has always been just too serious about medicine and science. I remember in Varsity he used to spend days in the school lab coming up with stuff he never even used. In his basement, he has so many medical substances and everything that he has created. What I enjoyed was him making drugs that would make us so high for days!! Now that was the awesome part.

Lucas: Okay, she's out.

She was sleeping on the bed and

Goodness covered her. She put the camera on some flower.

KJ: Oh wow she had an artificial flower there, I was starting to wonder what will happen when those fresh flowers die.

Me: Let's go.

Lucas drove off and went back to Phila's.

Bonga: We're leaving now

Lucas: Why didn't you tell us so we wouldnt even bother coming here?

Me: Saving us time and petrol

Lubah: You have billions in your bank

account Danny, you can't be worried about petrol.

We talked for a while and went our separate ways.

#NEXTMORNING

#Nasiphi

I woke up feeling his lips on my lips. I opened my eyes and smiled

Danny: Good morning

Me: Move!

I ran to the bathroom and vomited.

Argh I hate morning sickness! It is the worst.

Danny: Okay so I guess it's not a

good morning.

We went to the room we use when we're here and I took a shower and got dressed in a tracksuit that he brought for me.

Danny: I'm sorry about what you heard yesterday.

Me: It's okay, you were being honest.

Danny: Nasiphi

Me: You don't have to explain Danny, I know you love your wife. When this is all over, you can go back to her and have a happy family. I'll see what I'll do with myself and you'll see your kids when you want to. For now, I'll be

staying here so you can clear your head.

Danny: I don't want to clear my head and I don't want you to stay here.

You'll come home, our home Nasiphi. I don't want to loose you.

Me: You still love her

Danny: I don't love her like I love you

Me: You're just confused. You know what makes me feel so stupid, was that I actually believed that you were over her and you love me. That I was not a replacement, but I'm thankful for her return, it revealed the truth.

Danny: You're not her replacement! I



love you!

Me: And you love her too, I'm sorry Danny but I can't share you. I want to be the only one in your heart and I'm definitely sure that it is what she will want to. We just need to settle this, help her recover and we'll see what happens from there.

Danny: I know I have to choose but I don't want to.

Me: You don't have to, I'll back off. All your lives were perfect before I was in the picture and it will be like that again. I'm happy for you Danny, I really am. Danver and Onika will

finally have their mother back and you'll be happy, you'll see.

Danny: Don't speak like that Nasiphi  
I kissed his cheek and went downstairs. I was saving myself the heartbreak. I know if I make him choose he will go for Ziyanda. So I'd rather back off before I even hear those hurtful words.

Me: Morning

The crew was arriving and everyone meant business today. We had breakfast and went to HQ

Phelo: I see you're avoiding eye contact with Danny.

Me: The less I look at him the better.

Phelo: He loves you

Me: You got to experience how he was with Zee and how he was with me, judging by that, who do you think he loves most?

Phelo: You're putting me in a tight corner

Me: That has already answered me.

I left her and went to sit next to Lucas and Mpho. We were monitoring Zee's room

Me: She seems like she's having fits

Phila: She is! Call Goodness

Me: Who is Goodness?

Danny: Let's go! We need to help her

Athi: We can't get in there, just call  
Goodness

Zandy: Who is this Goodness?

Lucas: Someone who is helping us.

The worry in Danny's face, he couldn't  
see the love of his life going through  
that pain.

Danny: We're going to fetch her!

Nkosi: I'll come with you, tell  
Goodness to go to the basement with  
her.

Bee: I'll be preparing something to

help her

Everyone was busy doing something but I was stuck in a chair, filled up with so many thoughts. I couldn't help but start comparing many things. I was lost in my own thoughts most of all I was thinking about how my life is about to change. I do want to save Ziyanda, she's my sister and I want what's best for her. She stopped having fits and Goodness carried her. She kept on calling Danny's name. Watching her on this big screen, tears fell from my face as I realized she was getting back to her senses and the first person she called was Danny,

the love of her life. Kamo passed me a bottle of water and tissues. What did I get myself into? Why did I fall inlove with Danny? I sighed and we waited for them to come back. They came back and rushed her in the room Bee had prepared

Me: Is she okay?

KJ: She'll be fine, the drug is working on her.

Athi: She'll keep on having flashbacks and hopefully things work our way

Ngamso: Did the guards see you?

KJ: No

Ngamso: You do know that you

kidnapped her? The first suspect will be Goodness and her life is in danger, in less than 15mins the sons of Duo, Tropez and Lapita will come to her hotel room. They were supposed to have a meeting and the first person they'll attack is Goodness because she is working closely with her.

Bonga: Jomo, Stix! Get Goodness and her family. Take them to the closest safehouse

Ngamso: Take them to the Cape Town safehouse.

Bonga: We don't have that time

Ngamso: We can't risk other peoples

lives just like that! Just go Jomo!

Lucas: Why are you getting emotional about this Nangamso?

Ngamso: She has a disabled child for crying out loud, who will take care of that child when she dies?

Jomo: So what do we do boss?

Danny: Do what Nangamso says.

Zee was waking up and she was speaking in a language that I didn't understand and Lucas was responding.

Sneh: What is she saying?

Lucas: That we should let her go



Danny: We can't let you go, you need help

Zee: Help! Help!

Naye: We are your friends Zee, please stop

Zee: You, you killed my baby and my womb!! Danny, you killed my husband! How could you kill Tropez!

Naye: I didn't kill your baby nor did I damage your womb

Zee: Where is Zandy?

Zandy: I'm here

Zee: Where is the chip?

Ziyanda's accent was so sexy and so

different.

Me: I destroyed it

Zee: So you didn't have enough when you killed our parents now you destroyed the chip! I shouldn't have told Dad about you

Me: What do you mean?

Zee: I told him about you long before I could find exactly where you were. But you, you found him and killed him! Suddenly there were alot of gunshots firing.

Zee: Let me go so they dont kill you

Ngamso: Why the sudden change of

heart?

Zee: Just let me go

Danny: Let her go

Ngamso: Don't do that Danny

Zee: Triston, please let me go.

She looked at him with pleading eyes and Danny nodded. He was shaking a bit and I could see the hold she still had on him.

Zee: Nasiphi, meet me by the warehouse at 6pm

Me: I don't have to

Zee: Trust me, you don't want your precious Bulelwa and Ntsikelelo to

die don't you?

Me: No! Don't harm them, those are your siblings too.

Zee: I'm a Tropez, not a Nyathi.

She walked out and stopped her men from shooting. She took a bottle of water and she drank it then held her head screaming.

Danny: Ziyanda!!

She turned and looked at him and got into the car.

Athi: Let her be, her mind is generating her memories now its all getting too much for her. She's stuck between her past and her present.

Ngamso: I don't trust her

We all turned and looked at her.

Danny: What do you mean by that!?

Ngamso: I just don't trust her, I'm allowed to have my own opinion of this.

Nceba: This is complicated

Nkosi: Prepare your weapons for tonight, Nasiphi follow me.

I followed Nkosi and we went to the basement.

Nkosi: Slap me

Me: Are you crazy?

Nkosi: Slap me!

I laughed at him and he was so serious.

Me: You're serious?

He nodded and I slapped him

Nkosi: Good, now punch me.

Me: I'm not doing this.

Nkosi: Danny is supposed to be doing this but I don't think he is in the right mind to do it. This is tough on him now fight!

Me: I can't fight you, have you seen yourself? You look like hulk

Nkosi: Danny doesn't love you

Me: What!

I punched him twice without even thinking.

Nkosi: So you fight when you're angry?

Me: Stop it! Don't touch me!

Nkosi: Fight me, prove me wrong!

Why is Nkosi such an idiot? I tried hitting him but he kept on dodging and it upset me so much. I threw punches at him and we were fighting. Well I was fighting him, he then carried me on his shoulders

Me: Put me down! Put me down!

Nkosi: You do know if you really love Danny you need to fight for him!

Me: But he loves her!

He put me down and threw a punch  
on my face

Me: Ouch!!!

Nkosi: Did he tell you he loves her?

Me: No! He doesn't need to say it  
because I can see it

I hit him and pinned him on the wall  
and kicked him. He carried me in the  
air and he doesn't knock me down.

He is careful because I'm pregnant  
and so was I. This was the training I  
needed? We stopped fighting and he  
used words to upset me while giving  
me guns and shooting. We were at



the shooting range and I was was wearing my bulletproof specially made for me which was only covering my stomach and it was so hard.

Nkosi: What if you have to kill Danny? Will you do it?

Me: I'm not doing that crap!

Nkosi: What if you have to kill Zee?

Me: I won't do that, she's my sister.

Nkosi: Danny loves you

All this while Danny and KJ were watching me through the window.

Danny seemed to be so deep in thought. I looked at him and he left.

What was going on was really hurting me but I wasn't about to show him that

Mayi: Are you ready?

Me: Let's go

I got a call from Mbulelo

Me: This is not a good time

Mbulelo: Ntiskelelo is not answering his phone and he isn't in his apartment

Me: Oh don't worry, I sent him somewhere. He left his phone because it had no batter

Mbulelo: Why didn't he charge it in

the car?

Me: Just leave a message Mbulelo, I'll tell him when he is back

Mbulelo: I'll chill here and wait for him.

Me: Okay. I love you Mbu

Mbulelo: Mbu? Really now? You sound like you're dying twin, are you okay?

Me: I'm fine, I miss your crazy ass, I'll come visit you.

We said our goodbyes and I told him I love him again. I do hope I come back with Ntsikelelo and Buu. I have to, this has nothing to do with them.

Ngamso: I'm driving with you Nasi, alone.

I nodded, she was behaving very strange. Well she is always strange and weird. We got into the car and she held my hand

Ngamso: I don't trust Zee, I feel as if she's up to something and this, this is all an act.

Me: That's not true

Ngamso: All I am saying is, if you have to kill her. Kill her before she kills you first.

Me: She won't kill me, she's just not in her right mind.

Ngamso: I don't buy it. Save yourself first.

She seemed so worried and I didn't know what to believe. Why would it all be an act? She saw how she was and it's true. I sighed and closed my eyes. Only God can help me out of this one.

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's of friends

#LBAR

## Insert 85

Sometimes in life you have to compromise. You have to give up your life to give others a chance to live. That is the mentality I had, I had known and had made a decision that if I have to give up my life for Buu and Ntsikelelo than so be it. But I wasn't just going to give up my life without a fight, I had to fight first. When we got there, she was already waiting for me with Buu and Ntsikelelo tied up on a

chair. She had guns on their heads  
and I came out

Ngamso: I don't think it's right for you  
to go there alone

Danny: She isn't going alone, take this  
Nasiphi

I looked at him and he smiled at me.

Me: Thank you

Lubah: Okay, this is not the time to be  
all lovey dovey. You're going to her  
and we'll come through from the back,  
Lucas, Nganso, Phila and Bee will  
remain here.

I went towards her and the car drove  
off.

Zee: Guards!! Take all her weapons

They searched me and took the weapons I had.

Me: Just let them go and we deal with this, just the both of us Ziyanda

Zee: The name is Camilla! We are not going to talk about anything, I am going to kill them and you

Me: And how do you live with yourself afterwards? You'll kill your siblings? The people that matter in your life, the people that love you. Don't do this, we're your siblings

Zee: Don't play the siblings card on me! You killed Nkonzo and Zipho



Ntsikelelo: What! Nasiphi how could you?

Buu: Oh shut up Ntsikelelo! She had to

Ntsikelelo: So you knew about this! This family is twisted.

Me: I had to do it Ntsikelelo, Nkonzo wanted me dead! And he was working with the Russians and Colombians. And Zipho, she was working with Lindelwa ruining my marriage. They deserved to die and Buu and Ntsikelelo don't deserve to die because they did nothing to you. You have no reason to kill them, this,

this isn't about them. It is about me and you, let them go.

Zee: No!

Me: You're sick Ziyanda, you need help

Zee: Stop saying that!

She lifted her gun but Buu flipped herself and was able to make her fall on her face. I quickly untied Buu and Ntsikelelo. Zee got up and slapped me. Her team then came rushing in and so did mine. We also had agents on stand by and Kamo passed me a gun. There was a lot of shooting going on while Paula took Ntsikelelo

to the car. We fought and I managed to kick away her gun and she ran away. I followed her to where she went, my plan was not to lose her and convince her to get help.

Me: Ziyanda, stop it! This is not on, you have a life that you had before you went to Colombia. You have a very smart beautiful daughter and very smart handsome son. Onika and Danver need their mother, and this, this Camilla is not the mother that they need!

Zee: She's smart?

Me: Just like you

Zee: Well that's her downfall! Do you think I love this is normal!!

Me: It's a gift

Zee: It is a curse!! You are lucky you didn't get this! I envy to be you! This intelligence drives me crazy, I've done so many things in my life, so many things that have put my life in danger. The curiosity and anxiety I get when I don't follow up a lead I get drives me insane! I had no one to talk to about this because no one knows what I'm going through and no one can relate. I'm smart huh? But why can't I remember! Why can't I remember everything before my death was

faked? All the flashbacks I keep on getting? How do I know they are true? How do I know that what they did to me is what you are doing to me? I am suffering, being dead might even feel better than this!

Me: Stop, stop everything you had planned for today and leave with me, I can help you. We are sisters and I love you and I want to protect you

Voice: Nasiphi!! Nasiphi!!! Where are you?

Me: I'm here!! We're coming. Let's go Zee

She nodded and held my hand. I felt

like I was winning her over. It felt good to genuinely hold my sister's hand and we went over to where Danny and the others were standing. He came over to me and kissed my forehead

Danny: You're okay?

Me: Yes, Get the car please

He went off and he was followed by Mpho and L'yanda

Sneh: Ziyanda

Zee: Hi

Zee's face was getting red and I could see that she was nervous

Zee: Thank you Nasiphi, I chose to believe you're not lying to me. Let's hug it out

Me: Sure

Naye: What is that!

Zee held me and what I felt on her waist was shocking.

Me: Ziyanda, please let me go!

She laughed and she had a bomb that was attached to her and me. I tried fighting her but I couldn't, she had a hold on me by attaching a strap around my waist. The timer was ticking and there were just 60seconds left. The girls were

panicking and so was I. I screamed when there were two gunshots fired and one hit my shoulder and one hit Zee's shoulder. In the little amount of time we had, I was able to unstrap the belt the bomb was attached to from the both of us and threw it far away from us.

Ngamso: Run!

Me: I can't leave her!

Zandy: Watch out!!

She had a gun pointed at me and I knew that my time on Earth was over. I closed my eyes and I heard several gunshots fire but felt no pain. I



opened up my eyes and they were both laying on the floor. Blood was scattered all over and Danny had took bullets for me.

Athi: He's still alive, but he's loosing too much blood.

Ngamso: She's dead

Me: What happened! Danny! Danny!!

Paula: He took bullets for you, it happened so fast! When Zee was pulling the trigger, he threw himself while firing shots at her and they shoted each other.

Me: Danny, stay with me babe please.

Danny: I love you and I'd choose you

over anyone and over and over again.  
You're my life.

He closed his eyes and I held his  
hand.

Nkosi: Put her body in the boot

Me: What why? Shouldn't we call an  
ambulance?

Athi: No

The others arrived and we were all  
headed to the hospital

Athi: Tell Venes to open the back exit  
and make sure no one is in the  
private rooms.

Sbahle called her and instructed her. I

checked Danny's pulse and he was still alive.

Bee: I've removed the first bullet, pass me the scissor please.

When we got to the hospital she had removed all the bullets besides the two that were near his heart.

Athi: You okay?

Me: Yes

Athi: You have to do this, remove the bullet Nasi

Me: Oh God

Having to work on my own husband was very scary for me. I took off the

bulletproof I had on and changed. I prayed and went into surgery. I was able to remove the bullets and he was still breathing and I was happy that he was still alive. This man risked his life for me, when I was naive, stubborn and in denial. When I believed that he would chose Zee over me, when I believed that all this time what we had was a lie, when I didn't believe in us and I didn't believe in him. He proved me wrong. I went to change and wash my hands

Buu: He is awake and calling for his wife

I ran back to his ward and there he

was, he was sitting up on his bed and talking to the others.

Me: You should be laying down and getting some rest.

Danny: I don't need to rest, I just need you.

I sat next to him on his bed and he kissed my forehead. He was bandaged and had a cast in his arm.

Danny: Where is Ziyanda's body?

Sneh: In the boot

Danny: Get me my tracksuit, we need to bury her body

Zandy: Are you insane? Its 11pm

Me: We can't just bury her

Danny: What do you want to do with her? Have a memorial service and another burial for someone who is believed to be dead? Will you answer all the questions people will ask? The questions that our families will ask? No you won't. No stop being stubborn about this and listen to me. We're burying the body

Sneh: So you're going to bury her just like a dog?

Danny: She turned into a dog when she tried to kill my wife. Plus, we've given Zee a proper funeral before

what more would she want?

He was spitting fire and going against him right now was not a good idea at all. He got dressed and we went to the cemetery as he had instructed us. The men dug right next to her grave and tossed her body in there. We had our own mini funeral at dawn and it was over, just like that. Her story had come to an end and her journey was a tough one. To me, many questions were unanswered, many things were still confusing to me but there was no way of getting answers now.

Danny: This is over and we're never

getting back to this chapter. This part of our life is over.

I didn't really understand his words but right now no one was questioning him. We all obeyed what our leader was telling us and this side of him installed fear and respect for him all at the same time.

Danny: Let's all go to our homes and rest. We're all meeting at L'yanda's at tomorrow at 11am. Don't be late

We got into the cars and went our separate ways. When we got home he went straight to the basement and I went to our room. I took a shower



and got into bed. After a while he came to our room and took a shower.

Danny: Help me

I stood up and helped him address his wound and re-bandaged it.

Me: Do you want pain killers?

Danny: Food first

We went downstairs and I made food for the both of us. We ate in silence and I was staring at him

Danny: What?

Me: Aren't we going to talk about how you risked your life for me?

Danny: What is there to talk about?

Me: Why did you do it?

Danny: What kind of question is that?

Me: I just want to know

Danny: Because I love you

I nodded and he just giggled.

Me: What is it?

Danny: I know you're not satisfied with my answer. I know lately I was acting strange and I was caught between feelings, feelings that were awakened by seeing Zee and that, that put me in a position where I got to think a lot. Where I ended up comparing my life when I was with Zee and my life when I was with you.

I actually found myself knowing the difference between being inlove and loving someone. To me, I loved Zee and I thought she was everything and the only one I'd ever love but then you came along, you showed me something, you gave me the love that I had definitely had never received from any woman I've been with in my life. You gave me a different kind of love and changed me to the better version of me, something I had longed for but I was never able to reach. I fell loved you and most importantly, I fell inlove with you, I feel deeply deeply inlove with you and

I wasn't going to let that special kind of love go. I hated myself for even thinking about Zee and second guessing what we have. From the get go, I should've been certain that you are the one for me and no body else. I gave you reasons to doubt me and for that I am very sorry Nasiphi.

I nodded, I honestly had no words for all that he has said but I was certain that I love him and I want to be with him for the rest of my life.

**#NEXTMORNING**

I was still peacefully sleeping when Danny woke me up and told me

breakfast is ready. It was 9:30am and I took a shower and got dressed. My stomach was starting to show and that was weird cause it is a bit early for that. But I guess I'll have a big belly. I went downstairs and we had breakfast.

Danny: Go get your bag, we're going to the doctor

Me: We don't have an appointment

Danny: We do, after yesterday, I want to check if everything is okay with the baby and you ofcause

Me: Okay, please go get my bag. I'm lazy to go upstairs

Danny: Wow, I'm being sent around already.

Me: You're such a sweetheart

Danny: And you owe me.

He went to get my bag and came back then we left heading to Doctor Shulman, apparently he had just moved from LA to South Africa and has been a friend of Danny's from a young age.

DrS: Danny!! Oh man, it has been too long

Danny: Far too long Shulman

They fist bumped and Danny introduced me.

DrS: Pleasure to meet you Mrs  
McKenzie

Me: Likewise Dr Shulman

He checked up on me and he seemed  
surprised

DrS: Oh wow! This is beautiful

Danny: What is it doctor?

DrS: Mr and Mrs McKenzie, it seems  
as if you need to prepare three rooms

Me: What do you mean?

DrS: You're heaving triplets.

Danny: What!

Oh Lord, I was so happy but I was  
holding it in to see Danny's reaction

towards the news. Danny had tears in his eyes and he helped me up and kissed me

Danny: Thank you MaNyathi.

Then I let the breathe I was holding in go, he was happy! We were both very happy and excited. We made a video call informing Onika and Danver need the grandmothers. We then left and headed to L'yanda's house and we were the last ones to arrive

Ngamso: And then you said we shouldn't be late

Danny: We have a valid excuse

Mpho: 10minute quickie?



Me: No man! We're having triplets!!

Sbahle: Oh Jesu!

We laughed at her and the girls screamed their lungs out. Everyone was happy and it seemed as if what happened yesterday was just forgotten. That chapter was just closed and we were moving on.

Asanda: Congratulations mom, I'll be a big sister of 6 now.

Naye: You've joined me in having 6kids!! Well you have more!

Sbahle: You guys are just something else

Kamo: This calls for some shots!!!!

Besides the preggy mamma

Me: Juice for me!

We had drinks and sat outside just chilling and having a conversation

Lubah: We have surely been through alot yet again but we still standing.

The journey we've had since day one, I don't think any other people live the lives that we do.

Ntoko: It sometimes just feels like a movie

Bee: You can say that again, we just have our own world.

Danny: I have an announcement to make

Mayi: The stage is yours

Danny: You've been through a lot as Lubah has said. Many things have happened and there were many changes in our lives and things we had never expected. We have cried and laughed together and we do not know what the future holds for us and where we are going from here and what might happen tomorrow. But all in all, each and everyone of you who is here today, I would like to thank you for your loyalty and for us sticking together till this far. I have felt love and support from each and every one of you. But this time, from

now onwards it is time for us to give that love and support to someone else. I've been thinking about this alot lately and my final decision came when I received the news of having triplets in just less than 8months from now. I have decided to step down as Head of the force

Me: What?

We were all surprised and I knew nothing about this.

Danny: As I am stepping down it is my duty to appoint someone else who will take charge and I saw it fitting to be taken up by a man who

has committed himself to the force better than any one of us. A man who has a drive and a vision of where he is going and a man who is working on himself to be greater than what he is now. It is a pleasure to give this opportunity to someone who is deserving of it. I hereby than give off my position to Kaitso Jwara.

The shock on KJs face! He was really not expecting it and I wasn't either. It is true that he is committed and dedicated to what he does at the force and Danny had made a good decision. They shook hands and KJ accepted. He was so overwhelmed

he ended up crying. It was such a beautiful yet so emotional moment

KJ: Thank you, thank you so much for believing in me this much to see me worthy of this position. I surely have big shoes to fill, from serving Mr Triston Raymond McKenzie which we all know as Razor to serving Mr Danny Triston McKenzie, I have learnt alot. I have learnt alot from each and everyone of you and for that I thank you and I will lead the force with your guidance because I cannot do this alone.

Phila: We have your backs man, we got you

Nkosi: Is that all you want to say  
Kaitso?

KJ: Nkosi! And no it isn't that only.  
Being with you guys have also taught  
me something very important in life,  
something that everyone needs and  
that is love. It is something I've found  
here and I have been afraid to act on  
it. With my new position now, I most  
definitely need a woman by my side  
and I know this is crazy but crazy is  
my middle name, I'm willing to take  
this risk and this chance

He went to Sbahle and she stood up  
and he took her hand. He went down  
on his knees and took out a ring

Zandy: OMG!!! Is he proposing!!!

Naye: Shut up Zandy!!

KJ: Zungu, Sengwayo, Gwabini, MaNcwane omuhle, I know things have been up and down between us and we never really knew what exactly was happening between us. Today, I want to tell you that I love you and I want to spend the rest of my life with you by my side, I want us to go through this journey of life together and love one another unconditionally. With that said, will you marry me?

Sbahle: Kaitso, ofcause I'll marry you.



We cheered and were screaming all over. Us girls, we're very dramatic!!

KJ: Wait! Wait, we're not done here.

Bee: What do you mean?

Brian stood up and and took Paula's hand, he was so nervous and he's face was turning red.

Brian: Ever since I started dating I've always been a player, a casanova and I barely ever knew what a stable relationship was until I met you. Due to my bringing up and watching my parents split, it installed a fear of marriage to me and I always feared commitment. I've hurt you, I've made

you cry and I never understood how you'd just forgive me and continue to love a messed up person like me. You never gave up on me and you said that it is because you know I'll never give up on you. You've shown me unconditional love and you've made me be able to love myself and love you. I don't want to be with anyone else in my life but you MaNyathi. I love you and would like you to do me the honour of being Mrs Ngcobo, will you marry me Paula?

Paula: Yes, yes I will.

Me: Aaaah!!! This is so beautiful!

Congratulations!

We all congratulated them and it was a very happy and beautiful moment for all of us

Belinda: I guess we have a double wedding to plan!!!!!!

Siya: Raise your glasses please. A toast To Everlasting Love And Everlasting Friendship

Us: To Everlasting Love And Everlasting Friendship

We toasted and cheered together. Indeed indeed, it is true when they say love has the ability to break you into pieces and it has the ability to restore you and put together all the

pieces that were broken. We've been through our fair share of heartbreaks and hardships but we still survive. Here we are, we're still able to love one another and spread love to all those who have given up and who have thought love wasn't for them. I can surely say, there is still hope and I still believe that true love does still exist. You just need to allow yourself to find and and for it to find you, and when you do find it. Never let it go. Love doesn't hurt, love is real, love is pure, love is genuine, love is kind and most importantly, love is within each and everyone of you.

The End

Hope you enjoy

Please like and comment

Suggest page to friends and friend's  
of friends

#LBAR